

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS

VOLUME XV

**The White Throne
Judgment**

Part I

**God's Sabbath
And Holy Days**

Part II

God's Will

Part III

Satan's Image

Part IV

God's Kingdom

Part V

**The
Wedding Feast**

Part VI

God's Two Priesthoods

Part VII

**Truths, Creeds
And Doctrines**

Part VIII

House Of God

Part IX

Kings And Rulers

Part X

By

Art Mokarow

**THE
WHITE THRONE
JUDGMENT**

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 1

**BY
ART MOKAROW**

Copyright Pending – *The White Throne Judgment*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT	1
HOUSEHOLD OF GOD	11
BLINDNESS OF JOB	21
WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?	31
ONE THOUSAND YEARS	43
WHY HAVE WITNESSES?	49
WHAT IS A PROPHET?	55
THE REVELATION	65
COURT CONVENES	75
THE JUDGMENT	83

PREFACE

This is known as “the end days” in *The Bible*, when all humanity from the time of Adam and Eve until the new heaven and new earth is resurrected. All who have ever died will be resurrected as human beings again. It is the time of God’s final judgment of the world. In this judgment, God, through Christ, as The Judge will separate “the good” from “the bad.” Those judged as good will enter God’s “**kingdom**.” The rest will be thrown into the Lake of Fire or the final “hell.” What happens to those thrown into The Lake of Fire? Some believe those in “hell” will burn in torment forever. Others believe those in Gehenna will be destroyed forever, never to exit again. But, what does *The Bible* teach? Biblically, you will find, those in The Lake of Fire will not burn eternally, or be destroyed forever. God’s love for His creation is to save everyone.

No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms. Ask for your free CD containing eleven books which you can read on your computer. Also, feel free to ask biblical questions by mail or e-mail.

Art Mokarow

Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: art@mokarow.com

Web site: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

Download all books free of charge

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Work

Revelation Uncovered

Christ In You

The Great Apostasy

The White Throne Judgment

Discovering God

God’s Original Bible

Faith With Works

God’s Story

Bible Study Made Easy

God’s Will

God’s Sabbath And Holy Days

Children’s Books

God Two Trees

God’s Magical Ten Words

God’s Three Houses

CHAPTER 1

RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT

Jesus said, “Judge righteous judgment” (John 7:24). Three simple words but spiritually they are loaded with great spiritual meaning. Many Christians view judgment as referring to The White Throne Judgment (Revelation 20). This happens just before the beginning of the new heaven and new earth. Most believe it is The Great Judgment, which everyone seems to fear.

The word “righteous” in Greek, is “dikaios” which is defined as “equitable,” “just,” “Holy” or “innocent.” Certainly this has a deeper significance than just “doing what is right.”

To be “equitable” presumes “fairness” and not merely “what is just.” It also conveys “being Holy” or “unblemished” and “without spot.” To be totally clean, without sin, presumes perfection. You will find you have to go through the entirety of *The Bible* to understand righteous judgment from God’s point of view.

WHAT IS THE DEFINITION OF “WHITE?”

The final judgment is a White Throne Judgment. The Greek word for “white” is “leukos” or “light.” It is a judgment, which brings the truth of God into the light. Everything will be revealed. Jesus said there will be nothing that is covered that shall not be revealed. Sin will not be revealed. What will be revealed is God’s truth which is the mystery of God. Jesus said “What was said in darkness shall be heard in the light” (Luke 12:2-3). The White Throne Judgment is not the revealing of sins but a time of openness or truth which will get to

the very **heart and mind** of each and every being that appears before Christ's **throne**. It is the time for revealing or exposing all of God's **truth**. Jesus can and will **save everyone, but only after they repent**. You are on Jesus Christ's list **to be saved** (I John 4:14).

The Greek word for "judgment" is "*krima*." It means to "go to The Law" or "one has been accused and is put on trial." This is a time of confession. Jesus said this is a time when those **tried** shall **confess** with their mouth, that **Christ is The Savior**. **And if they believe from the depths of their hearts that God has raised Jesus from the dead, only then shall they be saved**. With **the mouth, confession is made unto salvation** (Romans 10:9-10)! There it is. The White Throne Judgment is openly admitting those who are **tried** are **the ones who first denied Christ**. Since nothing is hidden; this, too, will be revealed. Remember, this is **not** a time for revealing anyone's sins. When individuals have been denying any **belief or faith** in Christ that too, will be revealed. Those who **literally** and **purposely** denied Christ in past generations and continue to deny Christ today, it shall, also, be exposed. The denials and **lack of faith** will be exposed.

Who and what is involved in this **judgment** or **trial**? Jesus, along with everyone else, who has proven **faithful** (including those who have been martyred for **the truth**) will be the ones **judging** those on trial (Revelation 20:4). This is quite different than Christ, **alone**, being The Judge. Those sitting on these **thrones of judgment** can be compared to **jurors** at a trial who carry authority to be part of the decision in reference to those on trial. These **judges** are like **the grand jury** today. These Christian jurors will decide, with Christ, who is to be indicted. In Christ's day this was called **the council such as a grand jury** (Matthew 5:22).

Paul, The Apostle, said, "**The saints shall judge the world including the angels who will also be judged**" (I Corinthians 6:3). This is The White Throne Judgment. Christ and **the saints** will **judge the world**

and both must judge with **righteous judgment only**. How does Jesus, along with **the saints**, receive this **authority**?

JESUS, THE WORTHY ONE

Christ declared that it is God, The Father who **resurrects everyone** and Jesus Christ, Himself, will be “**the one**” who gives **life-energy** to everyone (John 5:21). How is Christ able to do this?

God, The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all **judgment** unto The Son (John 5:22). Then, Jesus tells the reason He has been given **this right** to be a **Judge**. **The reason is simple**. When He was **The Son of Man living on this earth**, He proved He could conquer His human temptations while in His flesh. Christ was human and lived as The Son of Man. Paul told you Jesus had suffered, being tempted by the innate human nature, and you, also, have to endure being tempted in your lifetime.

Paul said Jesus will succor those who are tempted (Hebrews 2:18).

Jesus is able to be your High Priest making reconciliation for your sins in things pertaining to God. Jesus, is The Righteous Judge because He lived the human experience and remained **faithful** to God in spite of the human lusts of the flesh with all its temptations. **Christ was a faithful witness** for The Father and is accounted worthy to be **The Righteous Judge**. In turn, God, The Father, gave all **judgment** to Christ. Jesus paid the price with His **obedience** to God and His **sufferings** for all of us and is worthy to be The Righteous Judge. God, The Father, never lived a human life, so, to be fair, He had to give all **judgment** to His Son, who lived as a human and lived a perfect life. What about Christians who sit on this **throne** during The White Throne Judgment? Are they **worthy**? They are, indeed, worthy (Revelation 20:4). But, **why** should they be **considered** worthy?

God's HOUSE

Paul refers to “**the church**” as “**a great house**” or “**mansion**” which holds vessels of gold and silver along with wood and earth. The purpose for some of these vessels is for **honor** while the other vessels are allocated for dishonor (II Timothy 2:20). Paul said if a man purges himself, he shall be sanctified for The Master’s **use**. A Christian, whether a **servant, witness, priest** or **judge** must become **worthy**. How do **the saints** prepare to be **worthy** or **righteous**? Peter makes a **warning statement** concerning **salvation**. Peter declares **judgment** must begin at The House of God (I Peter 4:17). Why? Those **not** being judged **now** will be judged **later** in The White Throne Judgment. To be a **righteous judge** a Christian must be **judged during their human existence**. They must **qualify** to be able to sit on a **jury as the grand jury or council**. This is how Christ became **worthy**. Judgment of God’s people began **at the beginning** (in Genesis) in The Garden of Eden.

Paul said, “**By faith, Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain had offered**” (Hebrews 11:4). Paul said Abel was **righteous** by his **faith in God**, while Cain lacked that **faith**. Abel was being **judged** or **tried** to see if he was a **faithful witness**. God did not count the sins or offences when Abel proved his **faith**. He just gave a **more righteous sacrifice**. Abel proved to be a **Righteous Judge** because he proved **faithful to God**.

This was Paul’s retort: “**Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us**” (Hebrews 12:1). Paul knew **judgment** was upon God’s **house** during the lifetime of His servants from Abel to this very day. Christians are continually **tried** and **tested** for their **faithfulness** during their lifetime.

Paul wants you to look to Jesus because, even though He was **innocent**, He endured shame and was despised to the very end. Through His **faithfulness**, He now sits on The Right Hand of God's **throne** as Savior and Judge. He is The Righteous Judge because He trusted His Father in spite of all the false slander that befell Him. He remained **faithful** to His Father and always followed God's "**word**." It was His **faith** which made Christ, The Righteous Judge. The same applies to every Christian from the time of Abel until **Christ does return**. **Judgment is given to those who remain faithful to the end.**

A TIME OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

As shocking as it may seem, The White Throne Judgment is **NOT** a **judgment**, separating humans; some to be **saved** while others are destroyed or tortured forever.

Now do you see The White Throne Judgment is only a time for everyone to come to **the truth**? The word "white" is biblically defined as "a light" or "**truth bringer**." That was Satan's name before he chose to be God's adversary.

In Hebrews, the word "Lucifer" conveys "brightness" or "the bright and morning star" (Isaiah 14:12). Satan could have been "a" **savior** if he had not turned against God. By going against God the first chance he had in **the garden**, he completely let his vanity get the best of him. So, "**Bright and Morning Star**" is **Christ's title** because Christ **earned** His **victory** by obeying His Father (Revelation 22:16). Christ is now "**the light**" or "**truth bringer**" (John 1 and Hebrews 1).

"Lucifer" "the light bringer," wanted **to sit on the mount of the congregation**. He said he would be **the head of the congregation** or **the church**. Where? It is located on the sides of the **north** where God's **throne** is located. Jesus is "**the one**" sitting on **the right hand of**

God, on the sides of the north (Isaiah 14:13). Satan really wanted to be “**the light bringer**” or “**the judge**” in **The White Throne Judgment**. Instead Lucifer because of his **ego-driven nature**, **ended in demon possession** (darkness) and wanted to do everything **his own way** and not God’s proper and only **right way** (Ezekiel 28:2). Because of **his rebellion Lucifer became Satan**. **The White Throne Judgment** is a time Jesus, The Savior of The World, brings everyone to **the light** or **confession that Christ is The Lord and Savior of The World** (Phiipians 2:9-11).

The White Throne Judgment is a time of worldwide salvation (I John 4:14). The truth always turns out to be completely different from what mankind tries to figure out with their logical attempts (Isaiah 55:8).

RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT

Since God is “**love**,” His “**righteous judgment**” allows Him to always be thinking of the good He can do for others, even though some of those “others” may actually be **bad** or **evil**. That is why God said, “**Who hath heard such a thing**” (Isaiah 66:8)? “**Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? Or shall a nation [Israel] be born at once? For as soon as Zion [Jerusalem] travailed, she brought forth her children. Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? Saith the Lord shall I cause to bring forth [born] and shut the womb? Saith thy God**” (Isaiah 66:8-9). God will **save the entire earth** but **not in one day**. God reveals He will never **abort** anyone. **Jerusalem is the mother of everyone** in the world (Galatians 4:26). This is Paul’s prophecy about the future New Jerusalem when God will bring forth all **His children**.

None will be aborted, none will be destroyed and none will be in eternal torture. New Jerusalem **breaks forth** and everyone will be

saved (I John 4:14). That is what The White Throne Judgment is all about! It is a **dispensation** or **time** when everyone is **saved**. Some will be judged **worthy** and be **immediately saved**. The others, who are not judged **worthy**, will be accounted **guilty** so there is **no way** they can be immediately **saved**. They will have to **pay** the last farthing in The Lake of Fire (Luke 12:57-59).

Jesus explained, to have **righteous judgment**, you must be **just**. Justice is always **fair** or **righteous** in a **court**. Those who are **worthy** are guiltless, even though they had sinned; those who are **unworthy** will be called **guilty** and not necessarily because they committed **more** sins, but because they did not **repent** or **confess** before God's **throne**. **Jesus, on The Right Hand of God, as Melchizedek, is your intercessor and your defense attorney and will forgive you.**

SHEEP AND GOATS

How does Jesus render **the final judgment**? The Greek definition for "**the final white throne judgment**" is "*krisis*" or "**crisis**." It means exactly what it states. The final judgment is a time of **crisis** and **stress**. Why? Some are judged **guiltless** and others are judged **guilty**. Christ tells you about this **glorious** future event. Jesus, The Son of Man, having gone through all the human temptations, will come with **the angels** to His Glory. He will, then, sit on His Throne of Glory which is The Judgment Seat.

Before Him shall be gathered **all nations**; **everyone judged** at the **same time**. It will be at that time when He will divide the nations; the **sheep** from the **goats**. The **sheep** enter "**the kingdom**" and the **goats** are thrown into **The Lake of Fire**. This **judgment** is truly a time of "**crises**" or "**crisis**" but not a time of **condemnation**. It is a process or **time of separation**, a separating of the guiltless from the guilty (Matthew 25:31-41).

Why does Jesus call the **guiltless**: “**sheep**” and the **guilty**: “**goats**?” Remember both are **clean animals**! Neither have **the mark of the beast** with the actions of a **lion, bear or leopard**. None of those in The White Throne Judgment are **wild or unclean animals**. Why?

God Almighty and Jesus are present. No one can be in **denial**. They will see God and His Son are truly **real** and that everything has been done for **all** of mankind. Everyone confesses Jesus is The Christ, The Savior (Philippians 2:10-11). When Christ **returns** all the unrepentant ones will have **the mark of the beast** and look totally wild and ravenous much like a lion, bear or a tiger. How does everyone, in all the nations, end up being called **clean animals**? As you continue to read subsequent chapters in this book it will reveal exactly what takes place so everyone finally **grows spiritually**. They grow, **spiritually**, from a wild animal to a docile or clean animal in God’s sight (metaphorically speaking).

Sheep are docile. A shepherd leads them. **The sheep know or understand His voice and follow no other shepherd** (John 10:1-9). The **sheep** are **saved**. So, what do the **goats** lack?

The Greek word for “goats,” in this case is defined as a “**hairy kid**.” They are only young, newborn goats. They are still **carnal** (I Corinthians 3:1-2). What is vital to understand is **they are clean**, not **unclean or wild or unrepentant animals with the mark of the beast**. Nevertheless, they must still go through The Lake of Fire. Obviously, The Lake of Fire **doesn’t** destroy them or continue to have them, **eternally**, in torment. The **goats** are now clean animals because Jesus Christ has **saved** them; nevertheless they are only **babes in Christ** (I Corinthians 3:1-3).

God accepts the sacrifice of **clean animals only**. **As unclean, wild animals, God would never have accepted their sacrifice**. So The Lake of Fire has a totally **different purpose** than many realize. As a

further point, The Apostle Paul states these **babes in Christ are still carnal** (I Corinthians 3:1).

KIDS

These are baby goats called “kids.” The Law given to Moses is very clear in reference to what needs to be done with regard to these **kids**. God told The Israelites when they bring their **first fruits, not to seethe a kid in his mother’s milk**. Why not? A newborn kid, being **nursed** by its mother cannot, and should not, be offered as a sacrifice (Exodus 23:19). What is the reason?

In Hebrews, the word for “goat,” is “*ghedee*.” It means “a young goat” or “kid.” In fact, “*ghedee*” comes from a Hebrew root “*gadah*” or “to cut off.” God’s Law forbids the killing of young goats or kids while being nursed by its mother. Only mature goats, without blemish, can be sacrificed just as with humans. Only adults, not children are held responsible for their sins. Read Luke 12 to learn about the stripes which are received as punishment. Those **who knew less will receive less punishment** and those who knew much more will have their punishment in direct proportion to the amount of **truth** they had but did not act upon.

The Hebrew word for “seethe” is “*bashal*.” “*Bashal*” refers to “any type of cooking,” “roast,” “seethe,” “bake,” “boil” or “any type of cooking with the use of fire.” It doesn’t matter whether **kids** or **young goats**, they must be allowed to grow beyond **the nursing stage** to be acceptable as a sacrifice or **witness** for God. This is the reason they must confess Jesus is “The Christ” before they go into The Lake of Fire. Paul, also, referred to **babes in Christ as still carnal** (I Corinthians 3). When they are guilty, they must **pay the last farthing** in The Lake of Fire. They need to be brought to **maturity before being sacrificed**, and although they are clean animals, they still cannot be accepted by

God as a sacrifice. These kid goats must mature to be an acceptable sacrifice by God. These kid goats, by burning in the fire, will become mature goats.

Righteous judgment has everything to do with **God's system of justice**. It demands a certain **legal knowledge** of God's Laws, especially when **being judged**. Those who are still **not mature in mind** must go into **the fire** (I Corinthians 3). When humans go to **court** they must know or understand The Law or Ordinances in God's "**court**." Unless you understand how God **judges righteously**, your human reasoning can run amuck. You need to understand how **God judges** and for what **exact** purpose. Those judged must have everything revealed to them.

CHAPTER 2

HOUSEHOLD OF GOD

Judgment must begin at The House of God (I Peter 4:17). Paul warned that if judgment begins, first, with God's "household" what shall be the end of them that obey not *The Gospel of God*?

Amazingly, Christians have A White Throne Judgment, but **not at the same time**, as the **unrepentant world** does. The unrepentant or unbelieving ones have theirs at a different time. The White Throne Judgment occurs just **before the time of the new heaven and new earth** (Revelation 20 and 21). Peter said God's **called-out ones** or **the elect will have their own personal judgment while living their human-lifetime span** on earth. This obviously goes all the way back in history to Adam and Eve and all those who chose to follow and obey God.

Everyone in each generation who is called by God during their human existence is having their White Throne Judgment in their own individual lifetime. That is the reason Peter said, "**Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you**" (I Peter 4:12). Jesus said the same thing. "**I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled**" (Luke 12:49)? The Greek word for "kindled" is "to light." Those called by God to understand **the truth** go through The White Throne Judgment at the same time as being called to **the truth**. Jesus is telling you The Lake of Fire or "**hell**" is now on this earth and applies to you and all Christians who have **repented** and are God's **witnesses**. Biblically, if you are being called, and are destined to be God's Sons, you will have to go through Gehenna, "**hell**" and The White Throne Judgment during the time you live on this earth.

WHAT IS SIN?

Many believe **the judgment** is the time period of counting your sins or advertising all the wrong things you did during your lifetime. But, remember, God **already** knows your sins along with the sins of everyone else (Romans 3:23). Everyone comes **short** of God's "**glory.**" More than sin is involved. God could **by all rights** have everyone thrown into "hell" but God's **purpose** and **will** is to **save you** and all the children He has ever created (I Timothy 2:4).

Paul did say, "**Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit The Kingdom of God? Be not deceived; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor coveters, nor revilers, nor extortioners shall inherit The Kingdom of God**" (I Corinthians 6:9-10). That seems quite conclusive. Never forget, sin does matter because if you keep sinning and do not **repent**, you can and will be kept out of God's **kingdom**. But, what is The White Throne Judgment all about? Sounds like everyone's sins are to be exposed. Do you know, for sure, everyone's sins will be exposed? Never forget "**no dogs, sorcerers, whore mongers and murderers, idolaters and whoever loveth and marketh a lie will be allowed to enter New Jerusalem**" (Revelation 22:15). **Sin**, obviously, is the **culprit**. So, again what is The White Throne Judgment all about?

Jesus makes an amazing statement when He mentions that once you start to understand **the truth** of God and can **hear with your ears and see with your eyes and are converted**, Jesus, The Christ, **will heal you** (Matthew 13:15). Once **repentant** and **converted** Jesus **must save you**.

Christ guarantees when one of His **sheep** gets lost, He leaves the ones that are safe and goes to find that **one sheep** that is lost. He has no

choice (Luke 15:7). Christ has a big job and that job is to **save the world** (I John 4:14) and you have seen and do testify that The Father sent The Son to be The Savior of The World.

GOD'S PEOPLE JUDGED

Why did Peter say **judgment must begin at The House of God** (I Peter 4:17)? You must understand that all those becoming **jurors** or **judges** with Jesus have to be **fair, honorable** and **just**. They can be relied upon to **judge truthfully without any prejudices**. **They cannot judge by appearances and cannot commit judicial fraud**. They therefore, must be **worthy judges** who are, with Christ, deciding those on trial as to their **guilt** or **innocence**. **The grand jury** selection is being made right now! That is the reason **judgment** must begin with The Household of God. It is your **training period**, and it teaches you to become Priests and Kings with Jesus as Melchizedek. Then, during The Millennium, The Bride of Christ will have become Priests and Kings who will **do the judging with Christ**. Christ is already your **Righteous Judge** because He became worthy as Melchizedek. What is the purpose of Christ's **judgment**?

Christ is "**the one**" to whom God has given all **judgment**. God, The Father, already knows His **judgment** will be **fair** and **just**. Why? Because Christ, as Melchizedek, only seeks His Father's "**will**," (who has all wisdom) and by obeying God, you know, for sure, He will be a **Righteous Judge** (John 5:30).

When individuals wonder what God's **will** is, it can be answered simply: God's "**will**" is to **save the entire world** and that is Christ's job. (I Timothy 2:4 and I John 4:14). Now you have the foundation of God's **judgment** – which is to **save the world**. The very **purpose** of The White Throne Judgment is **salvation**. Jesus must **save** everyone and by doing so, the very last enemy Christ defeats will be **death** (I Cor-

inthians 15:26). Death is only caused by sin (Romans 6:23). Jesus therefore must **end** sin so death can and will be abolished. This is what The White Throne Judgment is all about (Matthew 18:11). It is about the destruction of ALL SIN but not **the Spirit in man** in Gehenna (I Corinthians 3-5).

Since **the last enemy is death**, those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire **cannot die**. Those who go into “hell” will live again and then **death**, the last enemy, will be abolished (Revelation 20:14). It is when **death** and the **grave** are burned in The Lake of Fire that death ends forever. This is **the second death**, with the destruction of death in The Lake of Fire those in The Lake of Fire are then **saved**. Since death is ended they are **saved** and changed in a twinkling of an eye (I Corinthians 15:52-55). **The second death is the end of death and the grave**. Those who are **guilty** are thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 22:15). Dying will no longer be man’s problem when death and the grave are burned in The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:14). Fully understand this is **the second death**. **The second death** is the end of the grave and death! Then, those who are guilty are thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 22:15). Believe your *Bible*, it is The Word of God.

The White Throne Judgment is **not** a time of **destruction** or **eternal punishment** but a just decree from God, His Son and **the saints** for those who qualify or are worthy to be **saved**! They are **saved** without going into The Lake of Fire. **They already have experienced “hell” in their life on earth**. **The righteous ones** had given their bodies as a **living sacrifice** already while living on this earth (Romans 12:1). God has accepted the sacrifice of His **saints** already.

This human existence, from the time of Adam and Eve, until The White Throne Judgment is a **judgment** of **the entire household** of God to prove **themselves worthy** to be **just judges** in The White Throne Judgment as Priests and Kings after The Order of Melchizedek (Revelation 5:10).

A WHITE THRONE

Why is the color “white” used for Christ’s Throne of Judgment (Revelation 20:11)? The Greek word for “white” is “*leukos*.” The root for “*leukos*” is “light.” In Greek “The Levitical Priesthood” is defined as “Leviticus,” “a Levite” or “white.” That was the express reason The Priests wore “white” garments. The Levitical Priests were to bring understanding to “light” or to “**the truth**.” By so doing, they will divide the innocent from the guilty.

The Household of God, “**the church**” which becomes The Bride of Christ, has a garment that is also “white.” This **white garment** is **biblically** defined as **the righteousness of saints** (Revelation 19:8). They are clothed with a King’s or Priest’s **garment**, which is **righteousness** or a **righteous judge**. There it is. Both Jesus and The King/Priests, after The Order of Melchizedek, are worthy to qualify as **the faithful judges** in The White Throne Judgment. Why? Along with Jesus, they themselves became **true witnesses** of God, The Father. They are **now** worthy to be **righteous judges** with Jesus.

CHRIST’S JUDGMENT

Since Jesus is **The Worthy Judge**, what type of **judgment will He render**? When The Pharisees held council to destroy Jesus, The Christ, He continued to heal anyone who asked to be healed (Matthew 12:14-15). Why would Jesus continue to heal the sick? You must look for the answer in *The Bible*.

Quoting Isaiah, “**Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; My beloved, in whom my soul [life] is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break and smoking flax shall he not**

quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name [His authority] **shall The Gentile's trust"** (Matthew 12:18-21). Are you listening to the Words God is **allowing you to understand**? This is your **biblical proof** of The White Throne Judgment.

The Gentiles are those **without God** who were given over to a reprobate mind (Romans 1:21-25). During The White Throne Judgment, The Gentiles are those **without God**. Those who were unrepentant are suddenly going to turn to Christ, who is now **The Righteous Judge** for **victory** (I Corinthians 15:54). They confess their sins (Philippians 2:7-11). Every unrepentant being at this White Throne Judgment turns to Jesus so they too can be **saved** (Romans 10:8-10).

Paul said The Word of God which gives **salvation** is near, not only for you, it is near for **everyone** (Romans 13:11). But, how does all of this happen? **Repentance** requires you must **bow your knee in prayer** and **confess your sins in Jesus' name**, so you can be **saved**. All Gentiles, all the unconverted ones, during The White Throne Judgment, will eventually confess Jesus is The Lord and then He will **save** them also. What is this "**victory**?"

VICTORY OF CHRIST

In Isaiah, Jesus gains **victory** during The Judgment. The Greek word for "victory" in Matthew 12 is "*kebesh*" and defined as "footstool." Its root comes from "to conquer" or "subjugate." Over and over again God calls **this earth** His **footstool**. God considers **the earth** as His "**footstool**" and by putting His **foot down**; all His enemies will be conquered forever. If during the Judgment **ALL** are alive on earth, they will see God conquering all His enemies.

Paul prophesied that at God's right hand, Christ sits as a **Judge** and as Melchizedek and The Anointed One, who will continue to make His

enemies, His **footstool** (Hebrews 10:12). Jesus is “**the one**” responsible to conquer all of God’s enemies. The last enemy to be destroyed will be **death** (I Corinthians 15:26). How does Jesus bring the end of **death** to all the remaining, unconverted Gentiles? Keep in mind, **only all** of The Israelites are **saved** during The Millennium (Romans 11:26).

The only unrepentant humans left to be **saved** are The Gentiles. Now all humans have confessed and understand Jesus is The Lord or Master to whom they can turn to for **mercy**. This is **the time of the mercy seat** or The White Throne Judgment. Only Gentiles are left and they throw themselves upon **the mercy of the court**. This is The White Throne Judgment.

THE FOUR HORNS

On **the sacrificial altar**, in **the temple**, were four horns. Whenever **mercy** was needed or requested, the accused would run to **the temple** and grab hold of the horns, pleading mercy from The King. Read the account of Adonijah, the son of Haggith, who tried to become the King when David was getting old (I Kings 1:50). When Adonijah heard that David knew of his treasonous plans, he ran and **grabbed the horns of the sacrificial altar**. Why in the world would he have done this peculiar gesture?

The **sacrificial altar** was where clean animals were sacrificed. Horns are a **symbol of government**. In fact, you can verify that The Four Gentile “governments” are **the four governments**, which Christ will defeat at His **second coming** (Daniel 2). The Fourth Beast, in Daniel 2 will be destroyed by Christ in Armageddon. You must read *Revelation Uncovered* for greater insight and happenings at **the end-time**.

When a clean animal was sacrificed or burned, the last farthing or penalty had to be paid in full. The sacrifice of the clean animal had

to be completely destroyed even though it was unblemished. This is the sacrifice of those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Once completely burned, their false teachings are paid for and completely erased or eliminated (I Corinthians 3:15). Their personal ideas are purged by fire. Remember, Christ is Judge at this time, not as The Savior, but as the Judge who **saves**. Redemption is over. This is why Adonijah grabbed **the horns of the altar**. He knew he was guilty and he immediately confessed. Just as The Fourth Beast in Daniel is thrown onto the sacrificial altar; Adonijah was throwing himself on **the mercy of the court**.

Those Gentiles who are still unrepentant **now** have confessed that Jesus is Lord or Master Judge. However, remember they are only **babes in Christ**, which means they are still **carnal** (I Corinthians 3:1-3). Now they are clean “**kid**” goats.

In The White Throne Judgment, the **sheep** are guiltless and enter God’s “**kingdom**” and have a right to enter New Jerusalem for The Wedding Feast. They can join in the feasting and partake of The Tree of Life. Those left out, cannot enter **the city** or eat of The Tree of Life, but are only **babes in Christ** and must drink from **the river** which has **the healing waters** of God’s Holy Spirit. For a clearer insight read Revelation 22. These Gentiles, who have confessed, will then acknowledge God and plead before **the court for mercy**. They will grab the horns of the altar just as Adonijah had done. Those who prove unworthy are thrown into **the altar’s fire** or “hell.”

Obviously, The White Throne Judgment is not about your sins in general, but entails something entirely different. After looking at all the different facts that have to take place, how does Christ, along with the **full court, judge** those who are tried as to their **guilt** or **innocence**? All have confessed their sins so this **victory** has nothing to do with sin. Notice **the victory** is when The Judgment is **completed**. Paul said after your corruptible bodies become incorruptible or “**Spirit**” then, and

only then, will **death** be swallowed up in **victory** (I Corinthians 15:52 and 54). This is fabulous news for you and every human being who had to suffer throughout some of the pain and agony in their lifetime.

In Greek, the word “swallowed” means, “totally destroyed.” Then in **a twinkling of an eye, the victory** comes and **absolutely** everyone is then **spiritual**, which means there will be no more death. Death will be non-existent. The Greek word for “victory” is the same as mentioned in Matthew 12:20, when this occurs during The White Throne Judgment. For a fact, The White Throne Judgment doesn’t destroy anyone and no one needs to be in **eternal torment** because everyone in The Lake of Fire will be changed in a **twinkling of an eye**. Those **paying the last farthing** are given **spiritual bodies** with “**the Spirit in man**” and will be called “**the least in God’s kingdom**” (Matthew 5:19).

Since sin is not the issue during The White Throne Judgment, then what is **the purpose of this judgment**? Since death is extinct, sin will never be a problem again. The last farthing will have been paid. All have **repented** and are dead to The Law (I Corinthians 15:55-57). The Judgment is based upon something else than sin or sinning. Job will give you part of the answer.

CHAPTER 3

BLINDNESS OF JOB

Job was a perfect man. He was righteous and perfect before God in all his ways. Job kept The Law. He was prosperous, famous and full of wisdom. He was held in high honor and was sought out by many individuals for his wisdom and knowledge. Job had a wonderful family with a good wife. Job seemed to have had it all.

Then Satan as **the accuser** came before God to accuse some of those who followed, believed or obeyed God. Satan decided to focus on Job so he became a prime target. Satan told God the only reason Job was **righteous** was because he was blessed in everything in his human existence. So, God decided to test Job and gave Satan the right to put Job through the ringer in every way, except Job's life could not be taken. This turned out to be Job's **ultimate test**. Job went through the fire in his lifetime.

Satan took away Job's family except his wife and he was given every imaginable sickness causing him great pain all over his body. He had festering open sores from his head to his toes. Life was unbearable. Job felt life was no longer worth living. Though Job still believed God and always kept God in high esteem and held great reverence for Him, he began to wish he had never been born.

Eventually, three of his closest friends came by, presumably, to console him. Every time these friends reasoned as to why God was allowing Job to be afflicted; they blamed Job for causing his own suffering by being in the wrong. Although Job never blamed God, he felt he should

have **his day in court**. Job wanted **his** White Throne Judgment. He wanted to understand why God would permit him to be plagued since he had always tried to please God and do what was right. What were Job's problems? Why did God allow Satan to afflict him?

THE OLD AND NEW COVENANT

What is amazing is the problem Job had was his own **blindness**, which was very similar to the very problem The Pharisees and The Sadducees had concerning the understanding of *The Old Covenant*. The only difference was Job was truly a **righteous man** and not a hypocrite as were The Pharisees and The Sadducees. But, in both cases, the problem was their own blindness to understand **the purpose** of *The Old Testament*. What all of them failed to realize was that being **righteous** by **human** effort does not and cannot change their human nature. God's **purpose** is for God to make you Holy as He is (Ephesians 1:1-3). Attempting to be **righteous** by your own human effort is not what pleases God (Romans 8:8). So not only Job, but others thought their righteousness was accomplished by the keeping of God's Law and that by doing so it would please God (Romans 8:8). But it did not please God then, and does not please God **today**. God's **will** was that His only **purpose** in creating mankind was to have everyone eventually **saved** (I Timothy 2:4). To have Job or any of The Pharisees and Sadducees succeed in their quest was to have them all become Holy as God is Holy (Ephesians 1:1-6). Job merely understood **righteousness** from the point of view of his own obedience in his own life. It went without saying Job was **righteous**. What more did God expect of him? But when one is **righteous**, there is a great possibility of **becoming** "self-righteous." So, in the end Job was self-righteous. He was, indeed, perfect in all his ways, so what more was God wanting Job to do? What did God want Job to see or understand? How does Job's problem help answer the question about how Christ will do the judging in The White Throne Judgment? Remember in The White Throne Judgment everyone will

confess that Jesus is The Lord of The Judgment. Sin was never the issue as everyone will have already confessed (Philippians 2). How was God judging Job and how will He judge those in the future White Throne Judgment? What makes the difference?

JUDGMENT UPON GOD'S HOUSEHOLD

Since Job was one of **the called-out ones** in God's **church**, Peter explained Job was **judged in his own very human lifetime**. There was something Job did not understand. God had to test him so he, of his own volition and choice, could come to the place to see and understand something was evading Job's consciousness. You will discover those who already confessed before Christ still didn't see fully; they were still **babes in Christ**. Much more had to be learned and had to be understood. Job hadn't fully understood the implications of his **righteousness** or **self righteousness**. What was missing? In Job's condition at that time, he could **not** have been **saved**. Why not?

HISTORY OF GOD'S HOUSE

From the time of Adam and Eve until The Noachian Flood, God gave humanity 1,000 years to live their lives to learn to obey God and most importantly, they had to understand they had to **repent** (II Peter 3:8-9). Instead, the future generations which were born, only seemed to follow **evil** and more of the wicked ways they could think to do. Everyone, that is, except Noah. From the time of Adam, when God removed him from **the garden**, God's **household** carried on the **witnessing** of *The Gospel* choosing **one** repentant and righteous human at **one** particular time.

When Abraham came along, God covenanted a **new promise** with him and the future generations. This is a promise of **faith** and **righteousness**. This was to be fulfilled by The Order of The Melchizedek

Priesthood. Eventually that Priesthood grew to the point it was to be carried on by a nation, which grew from Abraham's lineage. The Nation of Israel was to be God's only **witness** of *The Gospel*. Israel was intended to go to the whole world and **witness** God's **purpose** as The Household of God. At that time, it was The Nation of Israel who was to be **judged** and **tested** just as Job was tested. What happened when God gave His Ten Commandments to them? Almost immediately they sinned? They failed their **first test** or **judgment**. What did God see that was wrong? It wasn't because they **sinned** but because they had a **wrong heart** (Deuteronomy 5:29). They hadn't **repented** and refused to have a change of heart. For them to continue being His **witnesses to the world** God had no choice except to write down each and everything that was **wrong** and **right**, and then He gave them The Letter of The Law. This Law became their **righteousness** (Deuteronomy 6:25). As long as they perfectly kept The Letter of The Law, they could continue to be **God's witness** of *The Gospel*. This Law, known as *The Old Covenant*, was now a **legal document** by which they would be judged as being The Household of God. It had to be **kept perfectly** or they would receive no mercy (Exodus 23 and 33). This Law was only for people who had a wrong heart or were **still** unrighteous in their human nature just as Job had been. Paul said this Law was directed only to the **unrighteous** and the **unrepentant** people (I Timothy 1:7-10). As long as they lived every part of The Law, they could continue being God's **chosen people** or The Household of God. But because they couldn't keep The Law perfectly, this Letter of The Law only blinded them just as it had with Job (Romans 11:7-11).

This interpretation, because of Israel's sin and especially their wrong heart, has caused much confusion, not only for Israel as God's Church in The Wilderness but for The Church of God and The Gentiles, also. In too many situations, Job's problems were a **stumbling block** for The Israelites including The Church of God. Both, as God's "**household**," are being **judged** just as in The White Throne Judgment. In too many cases they were seeking their own **righteousness** by The Law or fol-

lowing other religious pagan systems to try to please God. This brings Israel and The Gentiles to The White Throne Judgment. Both were blinded and are still blinded by the same problem Job had. Job had a younger friend named Elihu. His other friends were a little older and reportedly very wise. So Elihu said, “Humility, with days or years should teach wisdom” (Job 32: 7). But as you find out, it isn’t always the case. He said **man** has a **Spirit** “**in him**” which allows God to give understanding to that “**Spirit**” or “**mind**.” This understanding can only be given or revealed by God. No man, even one who is wise, has it to give or reveal. No matter how righteous, wise or capable a man was or is, only God has the ability to manifest this secret. It is called **the mystery** of God. The book *Christ In You* will give you a more complete understanding of this subject. This **mystery** has been hidden for ages and only in Paul’s day was it revealed to God’s **saints** (Colossians 1:26). What is **the mystery** that Job and his friends just did not understand?

After Job’s friends stopped telling him what was wrong with him, Job told them they didn’t know what they were talking about. So, finally his friends refrained from talking. Job explained how great God was and that no one could ever contend with God. God was allowing Job to have **his day in court**. This turned out to be Job’s **judgment day**. God told Job he was contending with his Father, The Almighty God! No matter how good he was, keeping all of God’s **commandments, statutes** and **judgments**, as perfectly as Job did (Paul kept them perfectly also) his human effort or any effort by the flesh just did not please God (Philippians 2). It is not what God really wants from His people, either from Israel or The Church of God (Hebrews 8:8). Does this mean you can sin all you want? “**God forbid**” as Paul said (Romans 6:12). If you do **not break** The Ten Commandments you will have a good life; a much better human existence, but you still cannot be **saved**. In fact, in The White Throne Judgment you will not get a pat on the back: **instead you will be found guilty**. God had an important lesson for Job to learn. God wanted something more vital for his **salvation**. But, what did God want Job to understand? God will give you the answer.

GOD'S GREATNESS

God, as Judge, answered Job from out of the whirlwind. From Chapters 38-41 God explained some of His **powers**. Only He could perform what He **purposed** and **planned** in **the lifetime of each of His children**. Job finally had his blinders **removed** and got the understanding from God, through His **angel**. Finally, Job understood **the mystery of God**. Job started to **truly repent for the first time in his life**. Job said: **“Who is he that hideth counsel without knowledge?”** [How can an intelligent person make a right judgment without knowing all of the facts]? **“Therefore have I uttered that I understand not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.”** There it is. Job finally understood what he was trying to do, or be, was not within the ability or capacity of what human beings could accomplish. No matter how much Job wanted to be **good** or **righteous** and **please God** it is not within the human capability of mankind to be able to do it. Only God had the ability to fulfill His **will** or **purpose**. So, what is God's **will** or **testament**? It has only one **purpose** and that one aim or plan is to **save everyone** (I Timothy 2:4). Only God can bring a person who has died, back to **life**. Job finally got it. Job declares; **“I know that thou can do everything and that no thought can be withholden from you.”** Then Job finally repented and said; **“Wherefore, I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.”** Job was awe struck and speechless. He got the message (Job 42:6). Job finally realized there is nothing he, you or any person can do, no matter what human works he, you or anyone tries, because only God knows how to make a person become perfect (Ephesians 1 and Matthew 5:48).

BEST OF MAN

As a wise man, Solomon said, **“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter. Fear God, and keep His Commandments: for this is the whole duty of man”** (Ecclesiastes 12:13). The word “duty” was

added and was not in any of the older manuscripts. Jesus said the same thing, “**So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants; we have done that which was our duty to do**” (Luke 17:10). Why did Jesus say if you did everything right, just as Job did, you are still an unprofitable servant? Christ will tell you. It is **the “Spirit”** or “mind” and heart that quickeneth, which gives **life**. The flesh profits nothing (John 6:63). It can’t be any clearer.

The best a man can do is to keep God’s **commandments**, but in this life it is all any human should do which is your only duty to God. Only God has the ability to make you Holy like He is Holy (Ephesians 1).

By your religious effort, even if it is what God wants you to do, it just isn’t going to change your human nature. Only complete **faith** in God and His Son, Jesus can save, so you can be one of God’s “**sons.**” **Righteousness** without complete **faith** in God and His Son or any of your **own** righteousness can’t and doesn’t get it done (Deuteronomy 6:25). It all gets down to one point, only God and His Son can make it happen. That is what Job learned. He finally got the message and understood as God unfolded His powers to him. This is exactly what Elihu, Job’s young friend, was trying to say (Job 32:8).

WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

Are you starting to understand what God is telling you about The White Throne Judgment? There is much more than **sin** involved in The White Throne Judgment. It has to do with what **only** God and His Son, Jesus, can do. You now are almost ready to attend God’s **court**, The White Throne Judgment. Biblically, if you are now being called by God and are destined to be His Son, you are going through your own Gehenna, “**hell**” and White Throne Judgment at this very moment. This is a chilling thought, is it not?

To know what **judgment** Jesus will render during The White Throne Judgment you merely need to see how God **judges** His “**household**” in your own life, today. Since Jesus said your **judgment** or “hell” is right now, you need to study *The Scriptures* to compare these two different time periods to clearly understand how God will **judge** the others during The White Throne Judgment.

IT IS NOT SIN

Many believe **the judgment** is the time period of counting all of your sins. But, God already knows your sins (Romans 6:23). So, you and everyone come short of God’s “**glory**.” It seems more than sin is involved. Paul did say, “**Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners shall inherit the kingdom of God**” (I Corinthians 6:9-10). That seems quite conclusive. Sin matters, and if you continue to sin it will keep you **out** of God’s **kingdom**, so what is The White Throne Judgment all about? Sounds like everyone’s sins are to be exposed, but how will they be exposed?

Always remember “**no dogs, sorcerers, whore mongers and murderers, idolaters and whoever loveth and maketh a lie will be allowed to enter New Jerusalem**” (Revelation 21:15 and Revelation 22:14). Sin, obviously, is the main culprit. What is The White Throne Judgment all about?

Jesus makes an amazing statement. He tells you once an individual starts to understand **the truth** of God and can **hear** with their **ears** and **see** with their **eyes** and is converted, then, that person will be **healed** (Matthew 13:15). Once you repent and are converted Jesus must heal or **save you**. Christ guarantees when one of His **sheep** gets lost He

must leave the ones which are safe and go find **the one lost sheep**. Now you have Christ's job description (Luke 15:7). Christ's job is to **save you, along with the entire world** (I John 4).

CHAPTER 4

WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?

Job's blindness and lack of repentance was due to reliance upon his own human ability to try to be righteous. Job thought he could please God by the keeping of The Law which was indeed, God's Laws. Finally, Job learned only God could make a person "spiritually righteous." To be "spiritually righteous" and this concerns God's "righteousness," you need to have a change of your mind, heart and your very nature (Romans 2). It is more of a circumcision of the heart which matters and not your religious acts or works in attempting to become "righteous."

An example might be when a boy baby is circumcised. Circumcising the baby will never be able to change the baby's heart or mind as he grows to adulthood. What you may do religiously, by your human acts or efforts, means nothing to God (John 6:63). Nor will keeping The Letter of The Law or any other human WORKS change a person's heart or mind.

You, as a Christian, must **grow spiritually**. The White Throne Judgment is a **spiritual** matter and cannot be earned by physical **works** of any kind. God does not give "**brownie points**" for doing "**works**." God wants all Christians to worship Him **spiritually** only. Why does God want you to worship Him **spiritually**?

Jesus said, God is a "**Spirit**" and you must **worship Him** in "**Spirit**" and "**truth**" (John 4:23-24). God wants you to be Holy as He is Holy, by becoming a "**Spirit**" as He is (Ephesians 1). **Salvation** is totally de-

pendent on you being able to grow **spiritually**. It is only God who can make you Holy. Job found this out the hard way. How do you begin to grow **spiritually** and **what is spiritual growth**?

A CHANGE OF MIND

God writes His Law in your heart and mind by changing your very heart and mind. God must bring you to **righteousness**, when you freely choose to diligently seek God, to become as He is (Hebrews 8:10).

There is no other way and you have no other options. No human effort or human works will ever please God (Romans 8:8).

Paul, The Apostle explains how God changes you in your heart and mind and by doing so, writes His Laws as part of your **very nature** (Hebrews 8:10). You are literally **spiritually** “**circumcised**.” There has been a **removal** of your carnal mind and then you are free or, at **liberty**, to grow **spiritually** (Romans 2).

To define how God changes **your natural human mind** and **heart** into a **spiritual nature**, you must read I Corinthians 2 and 3 thoroughly. Paul said what he preached was not based upon human wisdom or human knowledge (I Corinthians 2:1). He only wrote and spoke “**the testimony**” of God. A **testimony** represents God’s “**will**,” which is to **save the world** (I Timothy 2:4). A **testament is a will** that is witnessed to be true. The word for “testimony” in Greek is “**martur**” or “a witness to the death, meaning God’s “**will**” is “**the truth**” (John 17:17). Paul says this can only happen by Jesus Christ, **crucified** (I Corinthians 2:2). How clear and how plain.

This **wisdom** of God is a **mystery** and can only be **spiritually** discerned (I Corinthians 2:6-7). The natural man cannot discern or know the things God has prepared for those who love Him (Verse 9)!

THE PROMISE

God by His Holy Spirit has revealed this **mystery of spiritual growth** which is **IN YOU**. Paul continues, “**For what man knows the things of a man, save [except] “the spirit of man” which is in Him**” (I Corinthians 2:10). Even so the things of God knoweth **no man**, but **The Spirit of God**. How clear. This is exactly what Elihu, Job’s young friend, told him (Job 32:8). **Spiritual growth** can only occur by God’s Holy Spirit revealing **the truth** or giving understanding to **the natural Spirit “in man”** or “a man’s mind.” There it is. No religious system can produce **spiritual growth**. **Religious works** are **shadows** only, which are only a type of **the real** or **the truth**. That is why Paul calls them **dead works** (Hebrews 6:1). They lead you to death. Included in this are any religious works or systems, some of which can be of God, like The Letter of The Law; but no pagan rites or religious holidays or ideas nor any human philosophies can ever change you. Your **human efforts** or **works** or **deeds** of your flesh **will profit nothing** (John 6:63). Humanly, you do not have the ability to change your human nature. **ONLY GOD CAN!** Now you are getting closer to realizing how humanity will be **judged** in The White Throne Judgment. It is only God’s Holy Spirit, which can change human nature and change “**the spirit in man.**” God, therefore, only wants you to **worship Him spiritually**. This is what Jesus explains to you when He declares “**God is a Spirit and they that WORSHIP HIM MUST WORSHIP HIM IN SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH**” (John 4:24). Now to find out what is **GOD’S TRUTH**. **GOD’S WORD IS TRUTH** – **nothing else!** Notice, Paul’s ministry and doctrine only revolved around this **TRUTH** (John 17:17).

When Paul wrote to The Colossians he told the local minister, Epaphras, he had heard about the “**love**” **they had** in God’s “**Spirit**” (Colossians 1:8). The Colossians loved God’s Holy Spirit. Why? In Colossians 1:9 Paul explained. They loved God’s Holy Spirit because it

revealed **all wisdom** and **spiritual knowledge in God's "will"** or "testimony." Only by **spiritual growth** can Christians be **saved** and not by any other human contrived religious works of the flesh. It can never be done with any works, whether The Letter of The Law, pagan works or by any human philosophy. Now can you begin to understand how you will be **judged** by God's Son, Jesus, in The White Throne Judgment or any **works**? **Spiritual growth** is the point and not any **doctrine** or any **judgment** or works. Even sin is not the point but **growth** "in truth" by God's Holy Spirit!

Paul answers the question of **spiritual growth**: "**Whereof I am made a minister** [preaching servant] **according to the dispensation of God** [God's time and place] **which is given to me for you to fulfill The Word of God**" (Colossians 1:25). It all comes down to each and every repentant Christian having God's "**word**" – "**completed**" or "**fulfilled**" in them. This is God's **biblical** definition of "**spiritual growth**." God makes it easy for you to understand by making it logically clear.

Exactly how does God make all this happen? Your **salvation** is dependent upon you becoming The Word of God or "**logos**," just as Christ. "**Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of The Son of God, unto a perfect** [blameless] **man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ**" (Ephesians 4:13).

The word "measure" in Greek, is "*metrone*" or "a limited portion" such as "a unit of measurement." The Greek word for "stature" is "*hilikis*" which is defined as "maturity" or "the same age." The word "fullness" in Greek is "*pleroma*" which is defined as "completeness" or "all full."

To be **saved**, each of you must achieve whatever "measure" or "limited portion in your own Christian life" to be "full age" or "as close to Christ's maturity when He offered Himself as a living sacrifice with His death." For each and every Christian with God's Holy Spirit it will begin to change for your human nature into **God's Holy "nature"** al-

lowing you to **grow spiritually**. Then you can begin to do everything Jesus did when He lived upon this earth. The ultimate **sacrifice** was giving **His “life”** for your sins. That one sacrifice, completely undeserved, shows His **supreme sacrifice** of God’s “love” (John 15:13).

PAUL’S WARNING

After Paul described the **process of growth** for a natural man, “**the Spirit in man**” is to become **holy** in your heart by God’s Holy Spirit. Then Paul warns The Corinthians. What is the warning? Paul said The Corinthians were **CARNAL** or just **babes in Christ** (I Corinthians 3:3). He states because they are **carnal** they were creating strife and division within themselves (I Corinthians 3:1). These divisions or denominations occurred because each followed their own **preferred preacher**. Each chose **the church of their choice**. Just as Christianity and Judaism have created so many splits, Paul said this is **CARNAL**; there should be no denominations or divisions in **the churches** or **the synagogues**. No one should pick their own preferred preacher or rabbi. This is just **carnality** showing its head (I Corinthians. 3:4-5).

Paul said it doesn’t matter even if they are **true preachers** of Christ as Paul, himself, or Apollos. The only way you know if he is preaching **the truth** is when the preacher only teaches what **Christ said** (I Corinthians 3:11).

Each preacher will ultimately be held responsible for everything he teaches. The false preacher will be thrown into The Lake OF Fire. If a preacher is not teaching **the true Word of God** he will be thrown into “hell.” Until all his false ideas and false teachings are burned he will continue to stay in **the fire**. Once he **repents** of false teaching only then will he be **saved spiritually**. Read the account in I Corinthians 3:12-14. Paul warns that even what he and Apollos taught, if false, they too would have to be cleansed in The Lake of Fire. Paul warns not

to trust **any preacher or man**. Even Paul himself is not to be trusted. Jesus warned that many preachers will come in **His Name**, that is, by Christ's **very authority**, and yet **deceive many** (Matthew 24:4-5). Paul and Jesus said Christians are not to trust any man or preacher. How can one know **the truth** and know if what is preached is **the truth of God**?

A CHURCH SERVICE

Paul gave specific instructions how a church service or a Christian assembly should be held. Read I Corinthians 14:26-29. Paul said when **the church** assembled together for a service, there may be a member wanting to sing a specific song, another had a **new doctrine** to teach and some were speaking in tongues (different languages) and some had some new understanding of God's "**word**" or **revelation**. Quite a different situation from most services today. Notice, the different doctrines didn't matter. Creeds and doctrines did not count. For **spiritual growth** to take place, **a church** cannot and should not have creeds. Only **Christ "In You"** is required (II Corinthians 3:1-7). Only **spiritual growth of every member** is to take place. A **church** cannot and should not have creeds. The only requirement Paul had for holding **a church service** was it had to be **orderly** and **not cause confusion** (I Corinthians 14:31-33).

Paul understood each Christian was at a different level of **spiritual growth** or **spiritual understanding**. Some **church members** were babes just beginning to mature. This is what **spiritual growth** is all about! Everyone is at a different level, doctrinally, and in understanding **the revelation** of God's "**word**." What was **the church** supposed to do about it? One person felt they learned **truth** from one minister but not from another minister; at least that's what he/she sometimes thought. Following one's chosen minister can cause the start of different denominations or splits in **the churches**. Remember, Paul said

that choosing your preferred minister is being **carnal**. What is the **true answer**?

The Prophets and inspired preachers are to speak “**in order**” and that each church member is to be responsible to **judge them** against God’s “**word**” (I Corinthians 14:29). Christians are to personally judge each preacher to see if they are truly inspired and have **God’s truth** by making sure their *Bibles* validate what they are saying about God’s “**word.**” That is why The Bereans were mentioned as being “nobler.” They checked **scripturally** to see if Paul was following **the truth** in **The Word** (Acts 17:11). In I John 2:27 it states: “**But the anointing** [God’s Holy Spirit] **which ye have received of him** [Christ In Him] **abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing** [God’s “**Spirit**”] **teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.**” There it is. **Christ “In You”** is what counts. Yes, you should listen to what a preacher teaches, but each Christian, individually, is held responsible to check God’s “**word**” to see if it is what your *Bible* confirms. It is each Christian’s personal responsibility to judge each preacher based upon **scriptural proof**. Agreeing doctrinally in a church is not the issue. When a Christian grows **spiritually**, it will demand a different understanding for each individual’s **growth**. Each of you have your own individual level of **Christian faith** (Romans 14:23). This should never cause schisms or denominational splits if all have **the mind of Christ**, which is **God’s mind**.

DIFFERING FAITHS

Read all of Romans 14. Paul tells you some Christians are weak or understand very little – for example, one might be a vegetarian. There were those who believed you couldn’t eat meat. In The Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were vegetarians, so some Christians in Rome assumed all Christians should be vegetarians. They were at that level

of doctrinal belief. Some preferred a Sunday while others chose Saturday to worship. Instead, Paul said it is up to each Christian to decide on their own in relation to their level of understanding and individual growth. Paul asked why do Christians judge one another when it comes to doctrine (Romans 14:10-11)? When Paul spoke of The White Throne Judgment he said each Christian will stand before Christ's Judgment Seat and confess their sins (Verse 1). It is not another Christian's responsibility or their place, let alone a preaching minister, to judge another Christian's level of **faith** or **spiritual understanding**. That is why Paul declared whatsoever is **not of faith is sin** (Romans 14:23). Because each Christian or human will not be judged as a "**church**" but as an "individual" Christian or an individual minister – no one should attempt to judge one another! This is all about The White Throne Judgment and **not sin**. Paul said if one believes that drinking wine is a sin, others should not drink wine in his or her presence. Christians shouldn't judge ministers or other Christians and never offend each other. As Christians and ministers you are commanded not to cause any brother to stumble or cause any brother to fall. You are never to be the cause for any individual to stop **growing spiritually**. Everyone is to allow everyone else to become **Holy** like God and Jesus Christ. That is why each Christian's level of **faith** is a personal matter and not a matter of doctrine, or anyone's business for that matter. The only time brethren should be disfellowshipped from **the church** is when they refuse to stop sinning against The Ten Commandments. Read the example of the fornicator (I Corinthians 5). But once he or she **repents** **the church** must accept that person back into their fellowship. That's it! Doctrine is a matter of **spiritual understanding** and only God will give this to you through **Christ "In You"** by God's "**Spirit**."

CAUSING SCHISMS

A heretic or one who has doctrinal differences is allowed in God's fellowship as long as they do not cause a schism or split. One is not to

judge another Christian's **faith**, because it is a personal matter of **spiritual growth**. Jesus said some will grow thirty, fifty or one hundred percent. Every one of you is "**spiritually**" at different levels. Christ said some take God's talents and increase to two, five or ten talents. Each level of **spiritual growth** gives you a different reward. Christ said the one who only kept the one talent given him would have it taken away and given to the one who grew ten talents. The more you **spiritually grow** – the more of a reward you will receive. It is all an individual matter between you and God and His Son, Christ. No one man or **any man** should be the judge over you – only Christ can and will judge you.

THE MIND OF CHRIST

What is the solidifying **spiritual factor**, which keeps The Church of God of **one mind and united**? You now know following a preacher is not correct. One follows **a man** only as he follows Christ. Paul said the same (I Corinthians 11: 1). Now, you understand man cannot build upon any other foundation. How can you know if a preacher is building upon **the foundation of Christ**? A true preacher of Christ must have **the mind of Christ**. Doctrines and creeds have nothing to do with it. Many denominations or church groups, which hold to creeds and doctrines, do so as a matter of power or control over the congregation. In some cases it is a career, based upon **filthy lucre**. Paul called groups which separate and follow a specific preacher as being **CARNAL**. This is pretty clear.

Jesus forbids any church ministry to be viewed as a **rank of authority** or one putting himself as the **chief or overlord**. Read the book *God's Work* for proof. Christ said the one who serves the most is actually the greatest. Question: Does service to God's people justify having a rank in the ministry? No rank should be in the ministry to serve God's people. There is only **One Lord or Master in the church**. Jesus is

that Master and all are to be **His slaves**; no one should put another person on a pedestal. A true preacher only **serves the church** and that preacher is only to be followed as He follows Christ (I Corinthians 11:1). Who is **the foundation of all doctrine**! You must **scripturally** prove Christ is **the foundation** of God's **churches**.

Paul said to fulfill his joy. How? Christians must be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord and of one mind (Philippians 2:2). How does The Church of God have the same mind? By loving each other and not being concerned with any **creeds** or **doctrines**. If people love one another, as they should; they do not split or cause schisms just because they understand doctrines differently. **The “mind” of Christ**, which you are to have, is thinking of the welfare and benefit of your brother rather than what you or any minister might think about themselves (Philippians 2: 3-12). Then Paul describes how Jesus at His baptism, as The Son of God, didn't think He was anyone special, but chose to be a humble servant and was willing to give His **life** for you. He certainly set an example as the **greatest of servants**. There is your answer. **The “mind” of Christ** thinks of the welfare of others and not his own welfare as a primary focus, even willing to die for the benefit of others. That is THE MIND OF CHRIST.

That is what keeps **church unity** and not any creeds or doctrines. Paul said each Christian should work out **their own salvation** with fear and trembling or humility (Philippians 2:12). Now you have it. The White Throne Judgment is how you **spiritually grow** as a Christian and not by following any particular preacher or denomination.

APOLLOS

Observe a minister, or a preacher who has **the mind of Christ**, especially when he preaches. Apollos was a Jewish preacher, from Alexandria, Egypt, who believed in Christ. He, however, only knew The

Baptism of John when he came to **repentance**. He knew nothing about God's Holy Spirit. However, he was a preacher who was "**mighty**" in *The Scriptures*. He was **spiritually** gifted in his understanding of *The Old Testament*. That is all there was at that time. Apollos knew **the purpose** of *The Old Testament*, especially The Law which would lead people to **repent** and follow Christ.

Apollos was a true preacher of Christ. Notice how he as one of God's ministers, had **the "mind" of Christ** (I Corinthians 3:5). After Apollos had finished preaching in The Synagogue, a married couple, Aquila and Priscilla, who were not part of the preaching ministry, approached Apollos. Apollos was the minister and mighty in *The Scriptures* who allowed himself to be taught by Aquila and Priscilla. He had **the "mind" of Christ**. This married couple taught the minister more perfectly than he **scripturally** had understood, even though he was gifted **mightily** in God's "**word**" (Acts 18:24-28). This is a true preacher of Christ with **the "mind" of Christ** – one thought more highly of the other.

This is what real **spiritual growth** is all about. As long as anyone is in The Body of Christ, "whatever his or her gift or calling" and as a humble, teachable child, then, they too will have **the "mind" of Christ**. The White Throne Judgment is all about **spiritual growth** and the humility of accepting the teachings of God's Holy Spirit when it might be different than what you humanly previously understood.

CHAPTER 5

ONE THOUSAND YEARS

The Apostle Peter makes a profound statement concerning The White Throne Judgment. He said Christians could look forward to the time of “the new heaven and the new earth.”

Why? Because, in this new heaven and new earth, only **righteousness** can exist. How? Because God’s **long-suffering** will finally bring **salvation** (II Peter 3:12-15). What does “long suffering” mean? At the time of the new heaven and earth there will be reserved “**a fire**” against The Day of Judgment (II Peter 3:7-9). This is The White Throne Judgment which you read in Revelation 20.

Then, Peter acknowledges that God considers one day as 1,000 years. So 1,000 years can be counted as **one day** (II Peter 3:8). Why? God is long suffering and He is not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance (II Peter 3:9). You now can have **two new thoughts** about what Christ, The Judge, will do during this trial.

First, God gave individuals 1,000 years **to repent** and then be **saved**. Secondly, God allowed those being judged to repent during the 1,000 years. Biblical history verifies Peter’s statements.

ADAM TO NOAH

Many have doubted that humans could live for 1,000 years. But, *The Bible* states from Adam through Noah’s day humans did, indeed, live almost a 1,000 years. In fact, God allowed humans two – 1,000 year periods (approximately) from Adam to Noah, to **repent**. Unfortu-

nately, only God's Prophets repented. The longest living person was Methuselah who lived 969 years. The shortest time for a person to enter God's **rest** during this long lifetime was Enoch. Enoch, God's Prophet, was living this human life for a mere 365 years. Why? Because he walked with God during those years and did not see death. How could that be? Apostle Paul answers the question by saying, instead of dying, Enoch was **translated**. The word "translated" in Greek is "metatithami" meaning "to transport" or "change sides" (Hebrews 11:5). It connotes a "carry-over from the flesh to the Spirit." There is "**a Spirit in man**" in each of you (Job 32:8). When a human dies, the body returns to dust and "**the Spirit in man**" – "**returns**" to God who initially gave it (Ecclesiastes 12:7). This "**Spirit**" is the "**life energy**" from God which makes humans able to live.

Enoch merely disintegrated physiologically. All of his molecules turned to dust and his **spirit** went back to God. *The Bible's* example is when Christ returns, those who are alive will be changed in a "**twinkling of the eye**." This is **instant change without dying** (I Corinthians 15:52). Enoch never saw death because he repented and walked with God almost all of his life. In the case of Enoch, he just did not need the 1,000 years to **repent**. God **saved him** the trouble of living this stressful (at times) life.

By the end of two 1,000 years – when humans could live 1,000 years in order to have enough time to **repent** – Noah, proved to be the only **perfect** one in his generations. Even though God allowed individuals to live up to 1,000 years, having enough time to **repent**, everyone (except Noah) became evil, in various degrees. So, God decided He had to start over by having the earth flooded and **saved** only **righteous** Noah. Noah's family benefited from His obedience to God and they too were **saved**. God could see by allowing individuals to live a 1,000 year period without God, humanity still could not become perfect or good. God allowed two – 1,000-year periods to be **witnesses** of God's Law.

Two or three witnesses establish a **truth**. Read and recheck Genesis 1 to Genesis 10.

From Adam and Eve's creation approximately 2,000 years passed before God had the earth flooded. Noah, God's "**Comforter**" or Prophet, once again witnessed **God's truth**. Just before the flood Noah warns the civilization at hand of the impending flood if they will not repent. Instead of repenting, they mocked Noah just as many individuals mock Christians today. Then came the flood and destroyed everyone except Noah and his family. Then, there was a new chance for humanity.

Noah teaches and preaches **the truth** to his family. But only Shem followed Noah's example, while the other two sons did not. Japheth was too busy building his family and his fortune. Nimrod, Ham's grandson, went completely against God and became God's enemy. The earth once again was divided between God and Satan just as in Cain and Abel's day.

THE PROMISE

Approximately 1,000 years later Abraham is born. Because of Abraham's **faith**, he proves himself **righteous** in God's "**thoughts**" and becomes a Prophet. He was ready to sacrifice Isaac, his only legal son, because God told him to. Abraham was a **faithful witness** of God's **new promise** which was guaranteed by God. Isaac was **saved** and instead a **ram** was offered in place of the human sacrifice.

This Abrahamic Covenant (contract) was God's **promise** of **universal salvation** through Abraham's seed or progeny. Again, after 1,000 years God manifested a new opportunity, a fresh chance for society to be saved (Genesis 22:12). History continues until a nation comes from the seed of Abraham's son, Isaac. Isaac engenders Jacob whose name was changed to Israel and he had 12 sons. These 12 sons and their gen-

erations became The Nation of Israel. Israel was God's **chosen people**, according to The Abrahamic Covenant. The Nations of Israel were to be God's **witnesses** to the world. Instead, they sinned, and ended up wandering through the desert **attempting** to repent but in the end this generation also failed. This sinful generation dies in The Wilderness (wandering) and the new generation had their opportunity under Joshua and they entered the promised land. Finally, in the time of King David, Israel is blessed as God's **people** and attains their Golden Age as God's **witness** to the world during Solomon's rule (David's son). This is approximately 1,000 years after Abraham's birth which makes it about 2000 B.C. Once the world has a witness of God's **truth** they are able to **repent**. Paul speaking of "God's **rest**" or "**paradise**," states in David's day, Israel and the rest of the world had yet another opportunity to repent of their sins (Hebrews 4:7).

THE MESSIAH

Israel was **faithless** and just would not follow God, so **another day**, or another 1,000 years, had to transpire for another witness to bring yet another chance for mankind to repent. Then 1,000 years later, Christ, The True Promised Seed came through Abraham. Jesus Christ came and once again the world could be **saved** through **repentance** (I John 4:14). But, Jesus was rejected and was crucified. The Church of God, on The Day of Pentecost, with God's Holy Spirit were to be **witnesses** of Christ (Acts 1:8). This was approximately 30 A.D. About 4,000 years have passed and now The Church of God was again to be a **witness** for God. Again, God gave another 1,000 years for them to **repent**.

THE DARK AGES

By 50-55 A.D., many antichrists had entered The Church. By the end of the first century, The Church of God was led into deceit. The True Churches of God were taken over by The Roman Empire un-

der Constantine, which is the The Fourth Beast in Daniel 7. In 325 A.D. under Constantine at The Council of Nicea they brought in pagan teachings (II Thessalonians 2). By the end of the first century, The Church of God was again led into deceit. The True Churches of God were taken over by The Roman Empire under Constantine, which is The Fourth Beast in Daniel 7. Satan infiltrated God's true church almost four hundred years after **the birth of Christ**, and with the loss of God's **truth**, thus began **The Dark Ages**. With the onslaught of The Arabs, the capture of Jerusalem turning Muslim, The Crusades followed. Next, Genghis Kahn, along with others worked havoc and almost all Europe fell. The Christian Church was once again in jeopardy. Constantine took over Christianity in 325 A.D. and almost 1,000 years later (about 1200 to 1300), The Huns were finally defeated. The Dark Ages once again emerged into The Reformation or New Age. By 1400 A.D. printing was invented by Guttenberg and *The Bible*, God's "**word**" was now available for the first time to the world. Once again, God started a new 1,000 years to bring the world to **repentance**. The Renaissance had begun.

HUMANISM

At the same time **science** started to take precedent over *The Bible*, and *The Bible* began to be measured by The Rules of Science. No longer was God's "**word**" an act of **faith**. Instead The World's Universities began to analyze God's "**word**" to prove whether or not it was indeed God's "**word**." However, they did not use *The Bible* as their main source; instead they used their humanistic logical minds. The Renaissance Universities started to teach God's "**word**" in their Theology Departments. However The Colleges of Philosophy shifted their emphasis from *The Bible* as the foundation, and used, instead, the study of science. *The Bible* went under the microscope and Humanism evolved; with humanity once again believing they, themselves, could eventually produce a paradise on this earth, on their own, without the help of

God. They rationalize that people with their own ability could eventually learn to be good and erase all evilness. Humanism has attacked Christianity ever since. From 1,000 A.D. to 2,000 A.D. you find “**humanism**” has turned the world of Christianity “upside” down. In fact, **secularism** has gained by leaps and bounds. The latest statistics, show in only fifty years Europe has gone from a Christian base to now only 5 percent believe in a God! Latest “poll” taken in Israel, have found 70 percent of the population are secularists. This is according to recent polls. Europe is presently **secularist** and with the influx of Muslims who hold the world and Europe in **contempt** because of Christianity’s rapid rise of immorality. In fact, Judaism and Christianity are blamed as the sole cause for all of the moral decay in today’s society. And in many ways, they are right.

SIX THOUSAND YEARS

Six thousand years have elapsed since Adam and Eve. You are now close to **the beginning of the seven thousandth year**. A new millennium is just around the corner. The **Return of Jesus** may be more imminent than you may think. In fact, the world scene seems prophetically close to the end. Read *Revelation Uncovered*. God once again starts with a new 1,000 year period to proclaim REPENTANCE TO THE WORLD. Again God’s MYSTERY which is in His “**word**,” *The Gospel*, 1,000-years must be **witnessed** once more, just as was done during each of the 1,000-year periods. God begins anew again and God gives you another chance for a new beginning. This new beginning must usher in new witnesses. Who are God’s new **witnesses** for the next 1,000 years? It will be revealed to you that God’s **witnesses** are a very important key to The White Throne Judgment and is another **vital element** concerning The Day of God’s Judgment.

CHAPTER 6

WHY HAVE WITNESSES?

The Apostle Paul revealed God's "house" still has a contract under *The Old* and *The New Testaments*. This contract was based upon The Apostles and Prophets with Jesus Christ, Himself being The Corner Stone (Ephesians 2:20).

Christianity and God's **temple** is based upon **Christ** as **The Corner Stone**, followed by The Apostles and Prophets (Hebrews 3:1-4). Jesus, The Apostles and Prophets all said they would **witness the truth**. **Jesus Christ is The Faithful Witness of God's "truth"** (John 17:17). Christians in **the church** are, also, to be God's "**witnesses**" (Revelation 3:1). **The two witnesses** are defined in Revelation 7 as The 144,000 Israelites (The Church in The Wilderness) and an innumerable multiple of Gentiles as The Church of God.

Why does God need **witnesses**? Some Israelites and many Gentiles were, and are, God's **witnesses** throughout their lifetime. Why does God need **witnesses** to declare God's **truth** during their individual human existence? Remember, for one to be found innocent or guilty, in God's "**court**," The Law demands two or three eyewitnesses. Let's **biblically** examine why God wants Christians to be a **witness** of God's **truth**.

WHAT IS A WITNESS?

God has two contracts specifically made with mankind. One is called *The Old Covenant* (contract) and the other is a *New Covenant* (contract). *The Old* has to do with physical blessings and a good, long life. *The New Covenant* had to do with riches in Christ so God can give you salvation. In fact, these two covenants or contracts are called a "**will**"

or “**testament**” (Hebrews 8 and 9). A “**will**” requires at least **two witnesses** by The Law (Deuteronomy 17:6). A **witness** is one who testifies a **contract** or **will** is correct. Those receiving the benefits of the “**will**” are, also, **true witnesses**.

That is why Jesus is a **faithful witness** just as God’s people need to be as **faithful** as He was (Hebrews 11). By so doing, it validates the “**will**” or **contract** as being **dependable** and **guaranteed!** This “**will**” or **contract** is to be **witnessed to the entire world** (I John 4:14).

When a person goes to **court** because a “**will**” is being contested, the **witnesses** are called upon by **the court** to certify the “**will**” or **contract**. Once **the court** approves **the “will”** as being **genuine**, The Executor can enact **the “will”** or put “**it**” into force. That is the reason **a witness** is mandatory. You now have proven God has repeatedly called **witnesses** to **repent** and be His **true witnesses** every 1,000 years. Since Jesus died for your sins, *The New Covenant* is in force at this very moment.

Why does God want **witnesses** to Christ’s “**will**” or “**testimony**” when *The New Testament* or **covenant** is already in force? God, at this time, is giving His Holy Spirit to you so you literally can **become** a Son of God (Romans 8:14). The **inheritance** is already in force (Ephesians 1:13-14). Since a **witness** is to validate a contract or “**will**,” then, there must be a reason God calls people to **the church** long before Christ intends to **return to this earth**.

A MATTER OF FAITH

Presently there are some rejecting *The New Covenant* and God’s Holy Spirit which He wants to give. God’s **purpose** is for God to be “**all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). God also wants to **save everyone who has ever lived** (John 3:17). Amazingly, God did not send Jesus to **condemn the world**. God sent Jesus to **save the world** (I John 4:14). It is God’s “**will**” that **no one** should ever be lost. But, this means those

who are rejecting God in their lifetime must have another way to be **saved** (I Timothy 2:4 and II Peter 3:9).

Scripturally, it becomes clear that those going into The Lake of Fire must somehow be **saved** in order to fulfill God's "**will**." *The New Covenant* requires **witnesses** because Christ's "**will**" benefits humans in different periods of time. Even though the "**will**" is in force, most will have to wait to receive their **salvation** sometime in the future. *The New Covenant* has conditions, which must be met before **salvation** can be given to everyone. What does God's "**will**" require you to do? Jesus answers the question in John 5:22-24. Christ said God has given **all judgment** to The Son, which includes The White Throne Judgment. It is a conditional contract! When it is said "**ALL MEN**" it means "**universal salvation**." All should honor The Son since Jesus is The Judge (Verse 23).

When you honor The Son, you will be honoring God, The Father. Then, Christ said **everyone** must hear His "**words**" and believe in God. If you believe Christ's "**words**" and have **faith** in The Father, you will be **saved**. It is very clear. It can't be any clearer. It is a matter of **faith** and believing Jesus only speaks His Father's "**words**" (John 3:34). In order to be **saved**, you must **live** by **every Word** of God (Matthew 4:4). In order to be a **witness**, the measure of **the degree** of your **faith** is **paramount**.

THE JUDGMENT

God's "**word**" tells you if you live by every **Word** of God, it will manifest your **faith** in Christ. That is why Jesus was the **first true witness** of God's "**word**." Jesus acknowledged He could do nothing, in His human flesh, but in **faith** totally LIVED by every "**Word**" of God. That is what made Christ, a **true witness**. You, too, must live your life the way Jesus did (John 5:30-39).

THE UNSAVED

God has called His **church** to be His **witnesses** by His Son, Jesus. Why? Because too many just **do not believe**. They have a reprobate mind which is hostile to God (Romans 1:19-28). In the beginning, in Eden, Cain knew God but he and his progeny did not **glorify God** or accept Him as **the true God** (Romans 1:21). In the process they all lived **evil lives** and became very foolish. This became the birth of The Agnostics and The Atheists and all the others who turned their back on God and rejected Him totally in the end.

God's **wrath will** be upon all unrighteous people (Romans 1:18). God's **righteousness** is revealed from FAITH TO FAITH (Romans 1:17). Plainly, God declares THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH. There it is. A true **witness** which certifies the authenticity of *The New Covenant* or God's "**will**," is **the faith** you manifest in your life. In this way you automatically testify *The New Covenant* is **true** and **real** and testifies you are a Christian living a life manifesting *Christ "In You"* (Revelation 1:5). God seeks **witnesses** of *The New Covenant* because The Day of His Wrath is very near. The Lake of Fire will be all too real to the ungodly who do not live by every **Word** of God (II Peter 3:7).

GOD'S STRATEGY

God's **plan of action** has what is known as a "dispensation." In Greek the word "*oikonomia*" refers to "an administration of an estate and how the estate or household is run." "**Stewards**" are appointed to care for God's "**house**." It especially connotes the economics or its financial profitability.

Each "**manager**" is commissioned with varied responsibilities based upon the skills or gifts of that "steward" or "manager." In Hebrews 3 you find God's "**house**" or "**estate**" is organized so each manager ful-

fills each task as Jesus Christ, The Head Steward, mandates! If each **servant** is **faithful** in their duties today, they, in the future, will inherit their own estate for all eternity. Read Ephesians 1:1-12. This has been **God's strategy** and **plan** all along. All these responsibilities are temporary. But, when **the owner of the estate returns**, each of you will be rewarded to the degree you have proven how profitable you have been. This House of God, The Church, must prove **faithful** as **wise stewards**. Jesus warns you to be a **diligent** and **faithful servant** (Luke 12:40). Christ said to expect Him at any time. If you have been **faithful** and **wise** when The Lord or Master **returns** then The Lord will make you a ruler over His "**household**." This will include all the riches from The Lord's "**estate**" (Luke 12:42). No sleeping or complaining on this job if you expect to win the reward in the race you are running.

LIGHT TO THE WORLD

Why does each Christian have to be **diligent** and **faithful**? Because the salvation of the world depends upon a Christian being a **faithful** and **diligent witness** at **all times**. Why? So they can be a **light** or **witness** to the world and to those who do not know God or His **purpose**. John 1:9 reveals Jesus is that **first** true **light** and Christ will be the **light** for every man in the world. Jesus, The Christ, will **save everyone**. By making each human a "light" just as He is, you also, if you choose, are to be that **light** or **witness** to "**the world**." A **light** makes it possible for others to see. You are to show **the truth** of God, by living His "**Word**" (John 17:17). The word "light" gives humans the ability to see **the truth**, which is God's "**word**" so others can see they have seen a **faithful witness** (John 7:17). Once a person sees **the truth** of God's "**word**" they too, can receive **salvation** and show their "**light**." This is how God wants **stewards** or **managers** to manage His "**house**." To be a **true witness**, whatever talents or abilities God gives, He expects **spiritual growth** so He can accumulate His profit when He **returns** (Matthew 25:13-23).

God's profit will consist of everyone being **saved**. This will happen by and through His Son, Jesus Christ (I John 4:14). If you, yourself, are judged a **faithful witness**, then you, in turn, will be a Judge and **judge** others during The White Throne Judgment. **Witnessing** is an integral part of the final **judgment** and **resurrection**. Christians will **judge the world**, but how can Christians do any judging? By being **true witnesses** on The Day of Judgment they will have proven their **faith**. Christians can and do reveal their choice to obey God by living **every "word"** of their Father. You are to become as Holy as God (Ephesians 1:4). God will then be "**all and in all**." When at **the resurrection**, you are changed to "**spiritual beings**" you will be like God as one of His Sons. Once you are like God in your hearts and minds with a **spiritual body** like Him, you will see Him as **He** is (I Corinthians 13:12). Only then will you understand **all truth** as God intends for you to understand. God reveals you will then have complete **liberty**. There will be no reason to set any conditions, laws or restrictions because you will always make **the right** and only decision. Since you will be like God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, you will have complete and total LIBERTY (Romans 8:21). The Greek word for "liberty" is "*eleutheria*," defined as "licentious" or "**no restrictions**." It's root conveys "unrestrained," or "to go at pleasure." You will be totally free to do whatever gives you pleasure. As a Son of God, you will have God The Father's

ability or strength to do whatever gives you pleasure. God will see your absolute **faith** to be as He is and therefore become a **faithful witness** like His Son, Jesus. All of you as **God's witnesses** having God's **righteousness** will be **righteous judges** with Jesus Christ. The White Throne Judgment will be predicated upon **total justice**. God's "**kingdom**" will consist of a **family of righteousness**.

CHAPTER 7

WHAT IS A PROPHET?

In The White Throne Judgment, Christians are to be “righteous judges” just as Christ is A Righteous Judge. In addition you will be Priests and Witnesses. By growing spiritually, like Jesus, you, then, are qualifying to be God’s Witnesses, Priests, Prophets and Judges.

YOU ARE TO PROPHECY

Writing to The Corinthian Church of God, Paul declares that in their Christian life, The Corinthians were **enriched** in all utterance (“logos” God’s “word”) and knowledge including **the testimony** which they have in Christ (I Corinthians 1:5-6). Why? Paul states you will **not** be left **out** from receiving **gifts** while waiting for the coming of Jesus, The Christ (I Corinthians 1:7). The Apostle Paul was writing to The Corinthian Church for a specific reason. He reminded them they should continue to **grow spiritually** in the **gifts** and **talents** God had given them and will continue to give them. The majority of The Corinthian Letter deals with God’s **spiritual gifts** which are “**in Christ**.” Many of **the spiritual gifts** which God gives to **the church** are outlined in I Corinthians 12, 13 and 14. Then, Chapter 15 summarizes **the order** of **salvation** to become like God and His Son, Jesus. Those who are growing in **God’s “spiritual gifts”** given by God, will be God’s **true witnesses** and Priests. Contrary to what many Christians believe, I Corinthians 14 is not primarily speaking about **tongues** as a gift. The cardinal point of this chapter concerns **prophecy** (I Corinthians 14:1). Paul explains the **subject matter** for this chapter: “**Follow after charity [or love], and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye MAY PROPHECY.**” **Prophecy** is what Paul wants “**the church**” to pos-

sess and grow in. From the beginning Paul describes how a “**church**” gathering or service should be held. When The Church comes together for a service, Paul mentions that one person wants to sing a particular song but another person wants to sing a different Psalm (I Corinthians 14:26). Later, another individual wants to bring up a new or different doctrine or teaching. Having different doctrines doesn’t keep “**the church**” from being of “**one mind.**”

While some members spoke in **different tongues** or **languages**, others had a **revelation**, while another became an **interpreter**. Now Paul comes to the point, let a **church gathering or service** be done in a manner that benefits **everyone**. This is very different from most **church services** today. Some are **filled with ritualism** while others are wild and unorganized with no sense of purpose. Then, there are churches filled with all sorts of emotional displays. There are services that are completely quiet or silent while others are totally unrestrained. That is why Paul warned that **God is not the author of confusion** and there should always be a friendly order where two or three are gathered together (I Corinthians 14:33). The Apostolic Church was democratic since members were at liberty to have differing doctrines with a selection of Psalms or songs. All services, however, had to be conducted in a mature manner (I Corinthians 14:29-30). What a difference from so many Christian church services today! Then Paul makes a summary statement. “**For ye may ALL PROPHECY one by one that all may learn and all may be comforted**” (I Corinthians 14:31). **All church members are to prophesy**. So states The Apostle Paul in God’s “**word**” (I Corinthians 14:1). Why did Paul desire that each Christian should have **the gift of prophecy**?

ALL MAY LEARN

Paul said it will simply be for everyone’s benefit. Paul further states God had set the members in the body (Christ’s) as it pleases Him

(I Corinthians 12:18). How? God **grants the gifts to each and every member**. Everyone in **the church** is given the riches in Christ by **the spiritual gifts** God bestows upon each member. By every member using and growing in **God's gifts**, this benefits **the entire body of the church**. Paul tells you God grants each church member many special **spiritual gifts** through His Holy Spirit (I Corinthians 12:11). Christians must keep **growing spiritually** for their own good and the good of all the other members in **the church** (I Corinthians 12:27).

Paul lists many of **the gifts** God gives to those who follow Him. Many try to translate these **gifts** into **ranks** or **offices of authority**. These **spiritual gifts** which God gives to His "**church**" are not **an order of rank** but a list of **gifts** (I Corinthians 12:28-31). First mentioned are The Apostles being sent from God, then the other gifts, including **miracles, healing**, or local church responsibilities; and lastly, speaking in **tongues or different languages**.

These obviously are not referring to the ranks of authority because healing miracles cannot be considered ranks. All of these gifts, as God gives them, are given so they can adequately serve "**the church**" of God. The word "minister" in Greek is "diakonos" or "a servant who waits upon tables." This makes it quite clear. Now, Paul declares you must **EARNESTLY COVET** the **best gifts** and a more excellent way will be shown you (I Corinthians 12:3). With **all the gifts** Paul mentions there are many more excellent gifts than those just stated which includes the preaching ministry or preaching servants. The best gifts are **faith, hope** and **love** or charity which are far more beneficial to "**the church**." But, **the best gift** of all is **love** or God's "**love**" (I Corinthians 13).

Paul completes his listing of **spiritual gifts** by saying: "**Follow after charity** [or God's love], **and desire spiritual gifts but rather that ye may prophesy**" (I Corinthians 14:1). So, one of the most important **spiritual gifts** each **church** member should have is **prophecy**. That

is an astounding statement by The Apostle Paul. All Christians are to **prophesy**.

A DEFINITION

Most humans believe a **Prophet** is one who **receives revelations** from God and can **foretell future events**. This is true if The Prophet God uses is given the responsibility to **foretell future events** beyond or besides **the knowledge of God's "word"** or *The Bible*. This is a God-given commission to prophesy an event not revealed in *The Bible*. But there are two types of **Prophets**. One prophesies "**future events**" as directly told to The Prophet in visions or dreams. These dreams or visions show The Prophet what will transpire in the future which is not revealed in *The Bible*. The **other** reveals "**the future**" taken directly from *The Bible*. This second type of Prophet can also have God disclose **His mystery** by visions and dreams (Ephesians 1:9). Remember, only "**the saints**" in The Church of God have been given **this gift**.

There are two Greek words for "**prophet**," one is "**prophetes**" which carries two definitions. The first is "a foreteller of the future" and the second is "an inspired preacher" or "one who understands the **mysteries** in *The Bible*." The other Greek word for "prophet" is "**prophet-eia**" which simply means "**a foreteller**." This type of Prophet foretells the future by commission from God as Isaiah and Ezekiel in *The Old Testament* or Agabus in *The New Testament*. When Paul refers to a Prophet as an **inspired preacher** he is referring to **the entire Church of God** (I Corinthians 14:1). The whole church is expected to understand what **truth** *The Bible* reveals. According to **the gifts** God gives each church member, they should be able to understand **the biblical truth** and be ready to give an answer when asked (I Peter 3:15). Both of these types of Prophets are **true prophets of God**. The foreteller predicts the future without *Bible* revelation. This Prophet has **an extra special gift in an office commissioned by God**. The second type of

Prophet, a Christian, is given insight **to understand the mysteries of *The Bible***. Paul encourages each “**church**” member to seek either of these **gifts of prophecy**.

UNWISE VIRGINS

Read Matthew 25:1-13 as it relates to the parable of the ten virgins. Both sets of virgins are potentially The Bride of Christ. But only **five are wise and prepare for the wedding**; the other five are unwise and do **not** prepare for The Wedding. The **wise** and the **unwise** are both asleep when Jesus, The Bridegroom **returns**. Both are asleep because Christ told them only God, The Father, knows when **He will return**. **The virgins and all Christians** are told to constantly watch for The Bridegroom and His **return** (Matthew 24). How can they watch and prepare when they don't know when He will **return**? All virgins need to have the gift of prophecy or watch future events as revealed in *The Bible*. It isn't the date of The Groom's **return** which is important, but when He **does return** will they be **ready** to be The Bride and prepared for The Wedding (Ephesians 5)? The wise virgins are continually growing in God's Holy Spirit, so they can be prepared for The Wedding. Why? So they can be a **light** to the world and constantly **witness** Jesus in them. That is the **difference** between **the wise** and **the unwise virgins**. The **wise virgins** are testifying Christ as “The Prophets” disclosing the future. These virgins have **the testimony of Christ** which is **the spirit or mind of prophecy** (Revelation 19:10).

Notice, both are virgins and are not guilty of sin, they are not fornicators. They are told it is their duty not to sin (Luke. 17:10). To be Christ's Bride, the significant point is to keep **witnessing** Jesus as a shining light on a hill. That is why Jesus reveals **the seven churches** in Revelation 2 and 3 are **candlesticks** (Matthew 5:14). Amos, The Prophet prophesies that God will do nothing except He reveals His secrets through His **servants**, The Prophets (Amos 3:7). Before God

intervenes in world affairs His Prophets **must witness the future**, and only then, will God punish the sinners. God expects His **servants**, His Two Witnesses, The Church in The Wilderness, and The Church of God to **prophesy** just before **The Return of Christ** (Revelation 7:3). Then these **servants** are sealed as **genuine witnesses** of Christ's **prophecy**.

LABORERS ARE FEW

Jesus sent His **seventy disciples** to testify of Him. Then He made a significant statement: **“The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth laborers into his harvest”** (Luke. 10:1-2). Of course the harvest is great as it includes **the whole world** (I John 4:14). The reason Jesus came in the first place was to be God's first **faithful witness** and Prophet. Later you will learn being God's Prophet (inspired by God's **“word”**) is a major requirement as God's **judge** in The White Throne Judgment. Unless God's **servants** become **true witnesses** by prophesying *The Gospel* they cannot be a **judge** in The White Throne Judgment. That is why Christ's Bride must prepare herself for The Wedding Feast. If she does not qualify, her reward changes and she becomes a guest or a bridesmaid at The Wedding or will have to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Remember, **many are called** but **few are chosen** (Matthew 22:14).

NOT WORDS BUT A LIFESTYLE

In the book, *Christ In You*, you can prove the difference between those with **the mark of the beast** and God's genuine seal of His Holy Spirit which will be determined by the way you, as a Christian, lives. It isn't what is said as much as what Christ does **“in you”** which makes you a **witness who prophesies *The Gospel***. Jesus, for this reason said, **“Go not from house to house.”**

Christians only **witness the truth** of God's "**word**" where The Son of Peace dwells (Luke 10:5-7). Then Christ related, "**Whatever house ye enter, first say, peace be to this house.**" [He also said] "**Go your ways, behold I send you forth as lambs among wolves.**"

Jesus finally concludes His instructions to His Disciples with a warning. What is the warning? It directly concerns The White Throne Judgment. Christ declares "**woe**" to those who do not peaceably respond to His Disciples and their message.

These "**woes**" relate directly to **the three woes** in *Revelation* (Revelation 8:13). These **three woes** are **three wars** which will be finalized in The Battle of Armageddon. This is only the introduction to God's **wrath** poured out upon the earth in Revelation 15 and 16. This insight from **Christ, Himself, laid the foundation for the time of judgment.**

WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

Because those with **the mark of the beast** will have to go through God's **wrath**, Jesus refers to the final judgment and makes some startling declarations. In **the judgment** He warns it will be more tolerant for Sodom, Tyre and Sidon which were those cities and towns not accepting and not hearing *The Gospel* as revealed by His **servants** (Matthew 12:12-16). Jesus states those who hear His **servants** prophesy **the truth** of *The Gospel* are actually hearing Christ (Verse 16). Why? Because His **servants** have Christ "**in them**" and are the **true witnesses** of God's Son.

PURPOSE OF PROPHECY

You can see why The Apostle Paul prayed and hoped all Christians in "**the church**" would have **the gift of prophecy** (I Corinthians 14:1). Paul propounds that by prophecy, even **unbelievers, atheists, agnostic,** and the **ignorant will be convicted,** and then will understand and

believe (I Corinthians. 14: 24-25). Then these babes, now in **the truth**, will disclose their very hearts and **repent**. They will, then, worship **the true God**. In addition, those who prophesy will make it possible for all The Church to learn and **grow spiritually**, and all the newly converted and all of God's "**churches**" will be **comforted**. Because of **prophecy**, knowing God's inspired "**word**," everyone will be benefited. Also, more laborers will be added to the harvest of the world which is why Jesus came in the first place (I John 4:14).

Remember in **the parable of the sower and the seed, the field is metaphorically spoken of as the world**. Christ came as **the seed of The Word of God**. This is the very reason Christ came. The **seed is The Word of God**. The commission of God's **servants**, as His **prophets**, is **to save the entire world**. But, notice a rather unusual and amazing parable concerning this **seed – God's "word"** was **spreading throughout the field or the world** (Matthew 13:33). Jesus explains God's **kingdom** is like a woman taking leaven, which is **God's "word"** and hid it in three measures of meal or flour. This flour is like the field with **the seed** which represents **the entire world**. Then, this leaven in the bread begins to grow, which is **God's "word"** until the entire loaf, the **world, has accepted the leaven or God's "word."** The entire world finally receives the message of **the truth and repents**.

When Jesus **concludes the parable of the seed, He** proclaimed: "**He that hath ears to hear, let him hear**" (Luke 8:8). His Disciples came to Him and asked about this parable and what it meant. Hear what Christ's reply was and what it means. "**Unto you it is given to know the mysteries [puzzle] of The Kingdom of God: but to others these parables are literally a hindering block not allowing them to see and when they hear they just do not understand**" (Luke 8:10).

This is quite a statement by your Savior. Jesus declares only His **servants and fellow laborers** know and can understand God's **mysteries**. Therefore, besides God's **preaching servants**, God defines **all Chris-**

tians who understand the mysteries of God as His Prophets. The word “**prophet**” in Greek, means “**one who is inspired to understand and know God’s mysteries or truth.**” Besides the inspired preaching by God’s ministers, including the fellow laborers who are Christians, are also **Prophets of God.** Now, the real meaning by The Apostle Paul becomes clear. Who can be a “**Prophet?**” Besides those who prophesy “the future” **without *The Bible***, there are GOD’S PROPHETS who preach from *The Bible* and Christians WHO HEAR and understand God’s **mysteries** by inspiration of God’s Holy Spirit. This is fantastic news for all Christians. Paul was right. Paul wished that you, and all Christians, would prophesy.

CHAPTER 8

THE REVELATION

When you read when Jesus states “all things are to be revealed” this leads you to think about your sins and that everyone is finally caught. Everyone is going to hear their sins publicly announced before God’s throne. It certainly does seem logical. All your life you try to hide or be deceptive about all of your short-comings. So it seems you are literally caught. Many believe The White Throne Judgment is the time when Peter is at the pearly gates and all will have their sins openly declared before Christ’s throne.

The human mind loves to interpret **scripture** any way they want to, even when *The Bible* does not agree. Many believe Peter is going to stand at the pearly gate when you enter God’s **kingdom**. You are in for a big surprise. Biblically, Peter is part of **the foundation** of New Jerusalem and is not a gatekeeper. It is The Twelve Tribes of Israel who are the **keepers** of the **gates** (Revelation 21:12). Peter is part of “**the foundational walls**.” Read Revelation 21:14. The Apostles are named in the foundation and **not the gates**. And many similar examples can be cited. As humans one can sure come up with many versions of what *The Bible* says. Jesus did say that there will be nothing hid and nothing covered. Everything shall be revealed and known according to Matthew 10:26. The question you should ask is what will be made known according to The Word of God and not from mankind’s personal point of view. Jesus said, “**Man shall live by every word of God**” and not by “**man’s word**” (Matthew 4:4). In The White Throne Judgment everyone is resurrected and each, according to their works,

will be **judged** (Revelation 20:12-13). All books will be opened as well as *The Book of Life*. It certainly seems logical to the human mind to conclude the books refer to *The Bible*. The Greek word for “Bible” is “*BIBLIOS*” or “books.” You can conclude that these books are *The Bible*. So, what does *The Bible* say about your personal works and how you will be **judged**?

Human imagination certainly can conjure up many different answers. Remember you must live by every Word of God, “**not the word of man.**” Some teach, in **the time of the judgment**, God is going to reveal each and every one of your sins and *The Bible* will be used to condemn sinners to hell.

A MULTITUDE OF SINS

The Apostle Peter, when explaining how Christians should behave makes an amazing statement (I Peter 4:8). “**And above all things have FERVENT CHARITY among yourselves.**” [Why]? “**For CHARITY SHALL COVER THE MULTITUDE OF SINS**” (I Peter 4:8). God’s “love” shows through over and over again. He is not interested in disclosing sin but blotting out or getting rid of your sins.

Notice what brings Peter to the place to reveal this wonderful **truth of God**. “**Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead? For, for this cause was The Gospel preached also to them that are [now] dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit**” (I Peter 4:5-6). Peter is talking about **righteous judgment**.

He tells you not to judge as humans who will gossip about others sinning or are always ready to blame someone else for their mistakes or sins. Instead, you should live God’s way in “**the Spirit.**” That is wonderful and great knowledge for everyone to have. It can eliminate a lot

of worry you may have especially when you aren't always walking the straight and narrow path.

What is God's **way**? Since God is "**love**" He covers sins and He doesn't disclose them for all to see or know. The Apostle James tells you the very same thing. James announces that when a sinner **repents** from error, a multitude of sins shall be hidden. Then, automatically, that sinner is **saved** from **death**.

Christ said all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men (Matthew 12:31-32). This is unbelievable. How generous, great and all loving is Jesus and God, The Father! All manner of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven. It can't be any clearer. God's "**word**" reveals any and all manner of sin will be completely forgotten. You should prove this vital point.

God does say that those who are **righteous** shall live, but if a person trusts in his or her own **righteousness**, as Job did, and continues to sin, he or she shall **die** (Isaiah 33:13). Those who trust in their own **works** of **righteousness**, but continue to sin, will **burn** in the end. You have already read in the beginning of this book, sinners will burn.

However, the subject of this book is how God will **judge the world** in The White Throne Judgment and **not sin**. You have **biblically** proved **the judgment** will not be about disclosing mankind's sins. Instead, God is love and hides your sins. **The judgment** must, therefore, be about something else. What will be revealed at **the judgment**? What type of **works** will Christ actually reveal?

At this time God writes His Law in your **heart** and **mind**, and Paul makes a profound declaration: "**FOR I WILL BE MERCIFUL TO THEIR UNRIGHTEOUSNESS, AND THEIR SINS AND THEIR INIQUITIES WILL I REMEMBER NO MORE**" (Hebrews 8:12). Nothing can be stated any simpler. Can you comprehend **the true love**

God has for His **creation**? It has never been God's **purpose** to disclose sin because of His **love for everyone**. God's intention is to get rid of sin. How can this happen?

THE BOOKS

What books is God referring to in Revelation 20? You know *The Book of Life* is opened, but why is it opened? Anyone not written in *The Book of Life* will be cast into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:15). It isn't a revelation of who committed the various sins, and didn't repent, but a **revelation of who does not get thrown into "hell."** My, how different from what many have been taught in all **the churches**. When Jesus states all things shall be revealed, he is referring to those **saved**. Remember, **the judgment** is a separation of **sheep** from the **goats**. Both are clean animals and only clean animals could be sacrificed. The sacrifice of the **goats** is only acceptable when they are mature and completely unblemished. These goats are **kids** or **babes in Christ** and are not acceptable as a **pleasing sacrifice** to God. The Law does not permit **kids** to be sacrificed while being milked or nursed by the mother goat. God only accepts the sacrifice of unblemished, mature, clean animals! You are, now, finally coming to **the biblical answer** of what is going to be revealed at The White Throne Judgment.

The books which are going to be opened in Revelation 20 were written in *The Book of Malachi*. God states that when Israel, God's people, are made up as jewels at **the judgment**, God will spare them as a man spares his own son who serves him (Malachi 3:17). At that time God will discern between the **righteous** (sheep) and the **wicked** (goats). God will know those who do their best to serve Him and those that serve Him **not** (Verse 18).

Now, you have **God's own answer** from **His own "words."** During The Judgment, God with Christ and **the saints** as **judges** will reveal

the righteous from the **unrighteous**. How will Christ and **the saints** know? *A Book of Remembrance* was written about a group of people (Malachi 3:16). Each **righteous individual** has an **autobiography** written about him or her. What do these books write about **the righteous**? The Prophet records some of The Israelites complaining about serving God (Malachi 3:12-16). What was their complaint? During their human existence, they said it didn't make sense to follow God and worship Him. Why? Because there wasn't any justice or fairness in the land. So, they figured, why should they bother with worshipping God?

In spite of this "hell on earth," some in **faith** did follow God's **Word** and did put their **trust** in God (Verse 16). Because of this, God gives each **faithful** person a **recorded autobiography** about their **faithfulness**. Remember, their sins aren't ever going to be remembered. This is truly a book listing everyone who is **righteous** in *The Book of Remembrance*! This is the book to be opened along with *The Book of Life*. These are God's **true servants** and are His Prophets who are **witnesses** of His. This is what will be revealed and nothing will be hidden.

Those who are **faithful** have these books recorded about their lives. Read Hebrews 11 to confirm what you are reading. The more you learn, the more you understand how "**GREAT**" **God** is. You are now coming much closer to understanding what The White Throne Judgment is all about. The color "white" stands for "light" or "a disclosure." What type of revelation or disclosure? It is a time of **the revelation** of **the righteous** and their **faithfulness**. That is how the separation of the **sheep** and **goats** takes place.

THE RICH MAN

A rich man asked Jesus what he must do to inherit **eternal life**. What the rich man was really asking is, as a human man, what is it he could

do on his own, to receive **salvation**. At the same time, he had not repented and was not seeking God's **will** concerning his **salvation**. Christ answers him and states as a human what you need to do to **inherit eternal life** is keep The Ten Commandments. Since each human was carnal, that is all he, with his own ability, could do. He tried to explain that he had kept The Ten Commandments since his youth. And, because he did keep The Commandments, Christ loved him. Then the rich man asked, "But what do I lack?" Many individuals get into many debates about what one must do to be **saved**. Clearly, all that is required, according to God's "**word**," is the keeping of The Ten Commandments plus whatever the rich man lacked. So, what did he lack?

Since the rich man really wanted to know, Jesus told him he must sell all he had and give it to the poor. Since he was rich for so long and comfortable in his status, he couldn't imagine not being rich. So, it ended that he just couldn't give his riches away. What Christ wanted him to understand was he had an **unconverted** or **carnal heart**? You can keep every bit of The Letter of The Law, but for **salvation** it was meaningless. Christians must have God change their human nature to be Holy or perfect like God (Ephesians 1:1-3 and Matthew 5:43). Any human righteous efforts to **save** yourself are useless. It never pleases God (Romans 8:8). In summary: Jesus finally answers the question of **salvation**. Read all of Matthew 19:16-26. Christ told you a rich man cannot get into God's **kingdom**; it is not within man's ability to do so (Verse 26). But, "**with man it is impossible but with God all things are possible**." Only God can change one's heart in order to be **saved**. So what was the final outcome of this rich man?

LAZARUS AND THE RICH MAN

Jesus states, "**no man can serve two masters**" (Luke 16:13). He said, "**if ye are not faithful in the unrighteous mammon, that is the riches of this world, no one is going to give you the true riches or eternal**

life” (Verse 11). This is the answer to the rich man who wouldn’t sell the mammon he had. He coveted the riches he had amassed. The rich man didn’t want to use his wealth for the poor because he had a carnal heart, and in a nutshell, he just wasn’t converted. Jesus told him those who have more than they need should be helping the indigent. That is the proper use of whatever God has given you in this life. This was the rich man’s problem. Since he wouldn’t repent Christ allowed *The Bible* to reveal the rich man’s outcome.

The parable of Lazarus and the rich man gives you the result of the rich man’s greed (Luke 16:19-31). You will understand how this parable gives you insight when referring to **The Day of Judgment**. Both Lazarus and the rich man live their lives, and then, they both die. Lazarus will end up in God’s **kingdom** and **the rich man** sees Lazarus and Abraham in **the kingdom**. How wonderful to know you will **recognize** and **know** each other in God’s **kingdom**. The rich man recognized Lazarus. But the real significance is **the judgment** time was over. Remember, Christ separates the **sheep** from the **goats**. Paraphrasing, Lazarus is one of the **sheep** and has already made it into God’s “**kingdom**.” On the other hand, the rich man **did not make it into “the kingdom.”** As an analogy you could say he was a “kid goat.” The parable reveals he was ready to be thrown into The Lake of Fire and already felt the torment. In this case, the rich man’s **judgment** was rapid as he looked up from “hell” he felt **the heat of the fire**. The word for “hell” is not “*gehenna*” but “*hades* – the grave.” When he displayed the concern for his brother’s **salvation**, He wasn’t fully aware of the time frame (Luke 16:28). He thought his brothers were still alive. He was showing a great concern for his brothers.

Then Jesus reveals it wouldn’t do any good because there is a big gulf called **death**, between the rich man and the others. The rich man had to pay the last farthing for his transgression to God and His Son, Jesus, The Righteous Judge. This allows some real **biblical** understanding

about the time of The White Throne Judgment. Remember, everyone confesses or repents before they go into **the fire** (Philippians 2:10-11).

At this point, Abraham makes the rich man aware that he and his brothers should have listened to Moses. The rich man had refused God's "**Spirit**." Remember, as mentioned in the other parable, the rich man kept all of God's "**commandments**." He kept The Letter of The Law, but self-righteousness gained by The Letter of The Law will not give anyone **salvation** (Romans 8:8 and John 6:63). Only God can write His Law in your heart and mind. The Righteousness of The Law does not give **salvation**. Keeping The Letter of The Law is self-righteousness or one's own righteousness (Deuteronomy. 6:25). This was the rich man's problem.

THE INDICTMENTS

The parable of Lazarus and the rich man opens the door for **The Day of Judgment**; Jesus reveals what, this the **court session**, will be all about. Remember, The White Throne Judgment is not about the world's sins, but it is about something that the rich man **did** or **did not do**. The rich man thought his brothers were alive, so now you will read the answer Abraham gives to the rich man about his brothers who he thought were **still alive**. Abraham told the rich man that if he and his brothers hadn't heard Moses, though they kept The Law, they wouldn't listen to anyone, including someone raised from the dead; nor would they have repented either (Luke 16:31).

Malachi stated those who are **faithful** to God, in this human existence, are written in *A Book of Remembrance*. This, then, places them in *The Book of Life* which is *The Marriage Registry*. Remember, this time period concerning *The Book of Remembrance* is a time when God makes up His "jewels" (Revelation 20-22 reveals all of God's jewels). It is right after The White Throne Judgment. If nothing is hidden, what is

going to be revealed by Christ? It is each person's life and how they lived it. Not going over their sins since all have sinned and come short of God's **glory** (Romans 3:23). Paul clearly states by the deeds or keeping of The Law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight. How good one is doesn't really matter in The Judgment. What really is important is something else and it will be discussed later. But, for now, we will zero in on **the indictment on The Day of Judgment**.

It isn't sin that is the issue or what makes the unrighteous guilty but the question of **why** didn't they **repent when they were surrounded** by all of God's **witnesses** and **Prophets**. Sin is the result of not repenting. Until you **repent** Jesus cannot **heal you** (Matthew 13:15).

In summary, Jesus clearly reveals how the unrighteous will be judged (Matthew 12:33-36). Christ said, it is not because of your sins which throw you into hell but **every idle word** that you speak and most humans speak. They will have to give an account in **The Day of Judgment**. Why didn't they **repent** and seek Christ? They cannot receive mercy by **the righteous judges**, but each has to burn in The Lake of Fire until they pay their full debt and until the last farthing is paid. Jesus told the people **the righteousness of The Law** never pleased God. The Law can only give a pleasant good life, or in some cases a very rich life such as the rich man had. Instead, God's **righteousness** is more than keeping The Letter of The Law as taught (Matthew 23:1-3). Christ reveals you must, indeed, keep God's Ten Commandments in your heart and only God can do that but only after you **repent**. If not, then you go before **the judge** and will be found guilty and have to go to jail (hell), until your full debt or last farthing is paid (Matthew 5:22-26). Now **the court** is ready to be held. The accusation or indictment is Christ, The Judge, will ask you, "**Why didn't you repent?**"

CHAPTER 9

COURT CONVENES

Before the trial or the court actually convenes, one needs to be indicted or accused. Usually this takes place before a grand jury. The prosecutors go before the jury and present the case. If the evidence seems compelling, one is formally charged with the crime and a jury date is set for the trial. In this case, it is all of humanity who is indicted except those who are in “the first resurrection,” as The Bride of Christ (John 5). This trial takes place 1,000 years later. The rich man repents immediately when he feels the heat from the fire. The rich man, from that time, throws himself before the mercy of the court.

The guilty one will be **the least** in God’s **kingdom**; even though he or she has to be burned **first** (Matthew 5:19). The others on trial will have to have **their witnesses accuse them before going to trial**. If **the witnesses are faithful**, then the indictment will be made. **Those witnessing must be worthy or have proved worthy and truthful in being able to judge**. That is **why it is imperative to have these Christians be righteous judges**.

God will have **given everyone an opportunity or a chance to understand**. Notice what Jesus tells you to do if you do have to go before **“the judge.”**

JUDGE AND PROSECUTOR

Christ said all judgment has been committed to The Son (John 5:22). In addition to Jesus being The Judge, He is also The Prosecutor. **His**

time of being a Savior has, at this point, been **completed and is over**. There cannot be anymore **redemption**. Christ states Christians must be **more righteous** or **exceed the righteousness of The Scribes and Pharisees** (Matthew 5:20). They only had to keep The Letter of The Law. If The Letter of The Law was not physically kept, a person would be put to death. However, those **not** keeping The Ten Commandments **spiritually** in their heart and mind **will be thrown into The Lake of Fire** (Matthew 5:20-21). What does it mean to **not keep** The Law **spiritually**?

A STATE OF MIND

Jesus continues in His example of a person being angry with his brother and yet attempts to come before the altar to bring his gift to God. He wants to ask for forgiveness, but **if** he has not forgiven his brother, he had better stop. God will **not accept** that gift. First, you must forgive your brother, and by doing so you are admitting guilt and will then have to go to “hell” or Gehenna. Your gift, being in **the fire**, will not be accepted until a full repentance takes place.

As Prosecutor and Judge, Christ tells you before you go to **court**, you must be reconciled with your brother and when that is done you can offer your gift to **the court**. Why? If you don't forgive your brother, Jesus warns, then you will be prosecuted and judged **guilty** and you will **stay** in The Lake of Fire until you have paid all your debts even unto the last farthing or penny. There will be no forgiveness, just as those Israelites who broke The Letter of The Law in Israel. This is a time to ask for mercy even if found guilty (Matthew 5:25-26).

Amazingly **it isn't your sins which convict you, but your unwillingness to forgive others**. Jesus is not convicting you over your sins but your attitude toward others. Since all have sinned and come short of God's **glory**, **everyone** is found **guilty** (Romans 3:23). Jesus, as Pros-

ecutor, **warns you had better settle out of court before your trial.** If not, you will be guilty anyway. The bottom line is each and every one must settle out of court, and that means **your repentance** rather than being concerned about any of your sins. **Jesus cannot forgive or heal you unless you do repent of your sins** (Matthew 13-15)!

THE WITNESS

All those who are unrepentant will have to go before **the grand jury** or **council** and **the witnesses** are brought in to determine which of them should go to trial. Who are these **witnesses**? Surprisingly, they are not fellow-Christians, who are now **judges** with Christ. Remember, Paul said Christians will **judge the angels** along with **the whole world.** These angels are the fallen angels who followed Satan (I Corinthians 6:2-3).

Jesus said not to be afraid of those who can only kill your body but be afraid of **the one** who can have you cast into Gehenna or “hell” (Luke 12:4-7). He declares humans are very important to God and certainly more important than birds or animals. But God is mindful of everything and he never forgets anything, not even His animal kingdom. How much more does every man, woman and child mean to God? So, **you must be extremely forgiving of everyone who sins against you,** and hope those you sinned against will, in turn, forgive you. Then Jesus states anyone who confesses Christ before men and then The Son of Man, Jesus, will confess before **the angels** of God. **The righteous angels** are part of **the grand jury** no matter how amazing all this sounds to you (Luke 12:8). This is why Paul said only if you confess The Lord Jesus with your mouth and believe in your heart that God, through Christ, **will save you.**

With the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto **salvation,** as Paul remarked (Romans 10:9-

10). It isn't a matter of sin, but **repentance** in your heart which saves you. It is a matter of **faith**, and **then** God will make you **righteous**. But, never forget it does get down to **you being able to make a free choice**.

If you do confess Jesus is your Savior and confess you are a sinner, then **Jesus has no choice but to forgive you and heal you**. This is a matter of **settling out of court**. **Then, Christ will save you even though you are guilty but remember without Christ, you would have been put to death**.

If you believe Jesus can and will save you, **then you will not be ashamed when you go before the grand jury** (Romans 10:11). **“For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved”** (Romans 10:13)! This is all to be done before being put on trial and sentenced.

Once you do have to go to trial you will be found **guilty** for all your sins (Romans 3:23). **To be saved**, you need to be forgiven **before** your trial begins. **The witnesses** against the guilty are those which have not been forgiven.

THE ACCUSERS

Since humans usually behave **naturally**, especially when they have done something wrong, they sometimes try to blame others, justifying what they did wrong. No human, on their own, would rationalize they could do evil, except when their conscience is totally seared. Since every natural born man is a mixture of good and evil they do have a conscience. With a conscience one does have a sense of **right** and **wrong**. Whatever good a human has in their conscience must be personally justified to commit **any evil**. A good example would be when

you protect yourself from harm. Jesus, on the other hand, did say to turn the other cheek. The justification to protect yourself reacts when the human heart and mind is somehow cleared and then you actually harm someone whom you regard as the enemy. This is natural to man. **Survival of the fittest comes first over doing good. Accusers are always ready to justify their evil behavior.** So it is as mankind stands before The Lord's **throne**, with **the saints and righteous angels**. Who are these accusers? Jesus clearly identifies the accusers of the guilty. Matthew 10:26 states, "don't fear those that can kill you because there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed and hid that shall not be known." Christ said not to think He came to send peace on earth: He came not to send peace, but a sword (Matthew 10:34). Now, to get to the **accusers**.

SON OF PEACE

Jesus sent out seventy of His Disciples in Luke 10:1-11. His Disciples were to preach *The Gospel* as well as to do as much good as they could for the people. They were to heal the sick, cast out demons (mentally ill) and resurrect some from the dead. These Disciples were sent to do "**good works**" to help those in need as Christ did. However, Jesus said only to **preach** *The Gospel* and do the same good works The Son of Peace did. The Disciples were only to go where they were welcomed. If they were not welcomed, they were to shake the dust off their feet. Why? Christ warned "WOE" to them that didn't favorably respond to The Disciples whom He sent (Luke 10:12-16). The warning simply had a clear message to those **who didn't listen and seek the truth**. What was the penalty? Jesus states, in **the judgment** it will be more **tolerant** for Tyre and Sidon than those cities **refusing to hear Christ and His Disciples**.

Finalizing, Christ said "**He that heareth you heareth me, and he that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me despiseth him**

that sent me [God]” (Luke 10:12-16). Notice, **not one word about sin but what a person is willing to hear and believe. The judgment** has to do with what Christ’s message was, as well as the good works He performed. His followers were, in turn, to be **witnesses** for God and do exactly what Jesus did. That is what Christ told The Apostles before ascending to His Father in heaven. Read Acts 1:8. Sin, in The White Throne Judgment, isn’t the point; the aim is how to **eradicate sin**. God wants to **save the world** (I John 4:14 and I Timothy 2:4). Many do not believe He can, but as was said “**WOE TO THEM WHO DO NOT BELIEVE.**”

THE ACCUSING WITNESS

Who are the ones who will testify against the evil generation of Christ’s day? For one, The Queen of The South (Sheba) will rise up in **the judgment** and condemn those who refused to listen to **Christ and His message**. Those from Nineveh who listened to Jonah and believed will, also, condemn the ones who didn’t listen. Those who didn’t know better, as Sodom and Gomorrah, will get **more** mercy than those who **heard and knew better**. Now you have it. The **witnesses** or **accusers** in The White Throne Judgment will be those who didn’t have as much of an opportunity to really know and understand Jesus and *The Gospel*. What a wonderful Father and God. He regards everyone including those who are guilty and knew better; also the babies who died at birth and didn’t have a chance; or the atheists who willingly had “**no chance**” or agnostics who couldn’t make up their minds or just weren’t sure, will actually have it a lot easier during **the judgment** than those who listened and understood and should have known better. You will see that the ones who knew better will be judged the harshest. The Christians who refused to continue to **grow spiritually** will receive the greater penalty. They believed, and in some cases they already had **the truth** or were the possessors of enough **truth; and they didn’t need to bother studying more truth**, but they will be sent to The Lake of Fire.

Hear what Jesus tells them, **“And that servant which knew his Lord’s ‘will’ and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes”** (Luke 12:47-48). But those that did not understand (The Atheists, Agnostics, Pagans, babies who died) and committed things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with **few stripes**. **“For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask more.”** Jesus continued, **“I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I if it be already kindled”** (Luke 12:49)? Jesus will be very just to everyone who will have been found unworthy. Sin is secondary; it is each human’s choice to choose to follow God and His **“will.”** **It is all a matter of free choice. But, he warns, choose rightly or there will be a penalty that must be paid.**

You will only be held responsible for your behavior as it relates directly to **“how much”** you knew and understood, and then with that knowledge how you grew **spiritually**. That is God’s **righteous judgment** on all those who didn’t know God’s **“will.”** God’s only aim is to **SAVE THE WORLD** (I John 4:14 and I Timothy 2:4).

THE INDICTMENT

So it isn’t the number of your sins that makes a difference, but it boils down to what you knew about God and His **“will”** or **His ultimate purpose**. Remember, God’s actual **overall goal and purpose** is to be **ALL AND IN ALL**. In the very beginning, before any creation, everything that was then, is today, or will be in the future, was and is in God, The Father. God was **ALL AND IN ALL** at the very beginning. When all is said and done, God’s **creation**, literally everything, is to become Holy as God is Holy (Ephesians 1:9-11). When God’s **PURPOSE** is fulfilled and all His enemies **ARE DESTROYED**, including **DEATH**, then God will have met His goal to be **ALL AND IN ALL**.

That includes everything in heaven and on the earth. All of God's creation and all mankind WILL BE SAVED.

God has **an orderly plan** and it will be fulfilled as He has **planned** it or **willed** it (I Corinthians 15:22-23). Then, and only then, God will have succeeded in being ALL AND IN ALL (I Corinthians 15:28)! Now for **The Judgment**, as God reveals His PERFECT PLAN FOR SAVING EVERYONE. But how does this perfect plan of **saving** everyone come to pass? It will be completed as you begin the unfolding of the full story of The White Throne Judgment.

CHAPTER 10

THE JUDGMENT

When the grand jury brings in their judgment when one is presumed guilty, the court must write up the charge or the indictment. Did Jesus tell you what the charges are? He certainly did. Amazingly, sin isn't even mentioned.

Christ's final warning was those indicted will only be charged for what they knew and will only receive a small penalty for what they didn't know, even though they should have known better. If only they had taken the time to find out. This is **perfect justice**. Remember, sins are forgiven as long as you **repent**. Now, the question is when will everyone **repent**?

IN HEAVEN AND EARTH

Paul reveals that Christians should have **the mind of Christ** which causes them to be a **servant** to everyone in God's **creation**. As Christians, you should think what is good for the other person rather than thinking only of yourselves. In reference to all humanity, each Christian should always think what is better for the other person and not yourself. That, my friend, is having **the mind of Christ**. Because of this **truth**, Christ always thinks of everyone's welfare rather than His own, which is why He died for your sins. The results of which are: **"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name [or authority] which is above every name."** He is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. He is the final Judge with full authority from The Father. **"At the name of Jesus every knee will bow, of things in heaven and things in earth and things under the earth. Every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is Lord [or Master], to**

The Glory of God, The Father” (Philippians 2: 9-12). Notice, everyone should work out their own **salvation with fear and trembling**. Every knee will bow down and confess Jesus is The Christ. This is true **repentance**. Just before Jesus separates the **sheep** from the **goats**, everyone **REPENTS**. Once a person **repents**, Christ must heal them (Matthew 13). Christ, in all His **glory and beauty and power** sits on His **throne, the judgment seat**. Everyone in heaven, earth and those resurrected from the dead **repents**. Sin no longer applies. Jesus, at this point, is your **Defender** and **Intermediary** and confesses to **the angels and saints** on your behalf. It will be a time when all **the angels and saints** sing for joy.

Now, for the **INDICTMENT!** **“He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say unto you, all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man [Christ], it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the holy spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world neither in the world to come”** (Matthew 12:30-32).

This is as plain as it can get. Even though everyone confesses their sins and is **forgiven** before **The Court of Jesus Christ**, those **speaking against** or **blaspheming** God’s Holy Spirit will **never** be forgiven. Sins are forgiven. Rejecting God’s Holy Spirit is **not** forgiven. The accusation in God’s **court** is clear as a bell. This is **the indictment** from Jesus, Himself and if one is found guilty he must go into The Lake of Fire until he has paid the complete debt or last farthing for refusing God’s **“Spirit.”** In Lazarus and the rich man, the debt was short lived. The rich man who kept The Commandments understood his false reasoning because he knew he had a wrong heart. So it is with each and everyone who refuses God’s Holy Spirit. Sins are forgiven and forgotten but refusing to listen or accept God’s Holy Spirit which leads you to **truth**, will never be forgiven (John 17:17). If you reject God’s Holy

Spirit and do not continue your **spiritual growth**, then The Judge will find you guilty and you will be condemned to “hell” or The Lake of Fire until full payment is made.

BLASPHEMY

The Greek word for “blasphemy” is defined as “falsifying” or “deceitful and rejecting.” Jesus was accused of being Satan’s servant. He said: “**And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you**” (Matthew 12:26-28).

That is why Jesus mentioned that to falsify God’s Holy Spirit is **blasphemy**. One is rejecting God’s very Holiness and, therefore, rejecting God, Himself. You are telling God you are not interested in Him or His **kingdom**. God cannot then be “**all and in all**,” and you will go into The Lake of Fire. That is **the court’s** indictment of crimes committed by your rejection of God’s Holy Spirit.

Sin isn’t the issue because all have now repented and confessed Jesus is The Lord. Christ concluded the matter by revealing either **the tree is good** and grows **good fruit** or is **evil** and produces **no fruit**. This is why the accusation concerns accepting or rejecting God’s Holy Spirit (Matthew 12:28-33). It is by God’s “**word**” that you choose to be Holy like God and His Son, Jesus. God’s “**word**” is TRUTH (John 17:17).

GOD’S WORK

When Jesus was asked, “What is God’s **work**?” He replied, “**This is The Work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent**” (John 6:29). There it is, God’s “**work**” is to believe Jesus and what He

did and said (John 5:30). Christ said of Himself, He could do nothing. He said as a Judge, He was “**just**” because He never would seek His **own will** but His Father’s **will**. What is the Father’s **will**? It is to **save** everyone (I John 4:14). The White Throne Judgment is about SALVATION not destruction or torment. Christ must **heal** or **save** everyone because all have repented as *The Bible* reveals.

To be Holy like God, one must understand and then choose **the truth**. This can only occur by God’s Holy Spirit which is a double-edged sword (Hebrews 4:12). God’s “**work**” as directed by His Holy Spirit pierces your life and “**The Spirit In Man**” will draw you to **the truth**. It can discern the intents and very thoughts of the heart. It becomes obvious when accepting and allowing God’s Holy Spirit to teach you, to have a change of mind and heart and then you become like Jesus, The Christ (Colossians 1:26). This is the very **work** of God. By living every **Word** of God you become **one** with Jesus and God. This is God’s **purpose** to become “**all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). You then have **God’s kingdom “in you”** (Luke 12:32). Now Christians are ready to do God’s **very works**. The White Throne Judgment truly reveals everyone’s heart and mind so they can be **saved**. You must **repent** and desire God’s Holy Spirit to come to **the truth**.

A WITNESS

Christ went to His Father in heaven; He commissioned His Disciples to be His **witnesses** to the world (Acts 1:8). Why? If you **witness** Christ, as He was upon this earth, then others will also begin to know of God’s **kingdom**. When they know God’s **purpose**, they become responsible to seek God’s Holy Spirit; and will start to grow **spiritually**. If not, they will be indicted for **blasphemy** of God’s Holy Spirit. God already knows who will be responsible to accept His **spirit**. Your choice is to **reject** or **choose** God’s Holy Spirit when you have the opportunity to receive **the truth**. If God’s “**spirit**” is rejected, you will be judged and

tried in **the judgment**. If you do receive God's Holy Spirit and yet refuse to grow **spiritually**, then The Lake of Fire is still a **certainty**. This is the **entire basis** of *The White Throne Judgment*. If you have rejected God's **spirit** and do not begin to grow **spiritually** you are guaranteed to be **tried** and **judged**. Sins are not considered since everyone has already confessed. The guilty will throw themselves upon **the mercy** of **the court**. Now, it becomes a matter of how God is going to give you SALVATION! It is a White Throne Judgment or a time of revealing who accepted God's "**spirit**" and in **faith** kept **growing spiritually**.

You must become God's Son and be an heir to His **kingdom** or you will burn. That is the INDICTMENT in **the time of judgment**. It truly is a time of CRISIS. Why do you need to become Christ's **witnesses**? When others observe Christianity and see **Christ "In You,"** then you are doing **the same works** that Jesus did (John 6:29). By doing so, the world has no excuse. They have seen God's **kingdom** by knowing and hearing **Christ "In You,"** and then, the **world must choose**. This is what the trial is all about. As a **witness** you are testifying to **the truth**.

GOD'S WITNESSES

The **sheep** enter God's **kingdom** just as Lazarus and Abraham. The **goats** go on trial. This trial is a separation, which determines the sentence. Jesus, The Righteous Judge, calls His **witnesses**. Doesn't this correlate with what Christ told the rich man? Christ said if the brothers didn't listen to Moses, as God's **witness** (Hebrews 3:1-3), then they would not repent even if they saw Christ resurrect the dead. Wow, this can't get any plainer. Receiving God's **witnesses** such as His Disciples, He told them to dust their shoes after they left (Luke 10). When that town refused God's Holy Spirit they were accursed to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. **Repentance** will be over and the last farthing will have to be paid.

All the goats grab the altar's four horns – figuratively speaking. They plead for mercy. At this point **the witnesses, the saints and wedding guests in God's "kingdom" give their testimonies**. They verify *The Gospel* was preached and their lives witnessed Christ, even to the death. This is how serious and important it is to be Christ's witness. As **judges**, even the angels testify as to the veracity and truth of *The New Covenant* or Christ's "**will**" which now is the fulfillment of prophecy. The **saints** as **judges** certify their **works** were finished and those not listening to their witness will be found guilty and go into The Lake of Fire.

This is why **spiritual growth** is so necessary for **salvation**. Without being a true witness of Christ, especially being as He was on earth, there cannot be a more **righteous judgment**. **Since Christians are to judge, they must be WORTHY judges just like Jesus**. If not, then the **saints** would not qualify to be **righteous judges in the time of judgment**. You can make your choice.

THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE SOWER AND THE SEED

The parable of the sower and the seed is a history lesson as well as prophecy for the entire world and depicts those who become sheep or goats during **the judgment** (Matthew 13).

When *The Books of Remembrance* are revealed and it becomes apparent who are the **sheep**, then they must testify about their witness. They stand in **the judgment** as judges. Those who are indicted have refused *The Gospel* message and therefore turned from receiving God's Holy Spirit. Just as Jesus uncovered the rich man's sin of not helping the poor with his wealth. The **first** of the guilty were those who heard about God's **kingdom**, but didn't have **time** or **interest** to follow up with the **truth**. Satan removed this seed from their minds. **Second**, the one who **accepted** Christ's message with joy but had a wrong heart

and when tested, just quit. The **third type** was like the rich man; too interested in the world and **therefore stopped growing spiritually**.

All these humans, to some degree, knew better and had ears to hear and understood God's **mystery** but refused.

PURPOSE OF THE BIBLE

The Bible was not written until 2,500 years after The Garden of Eden. Before Jesus came as a human being, even before *The Bible*, The Prophets preached God's **Word** (Hebrews 1:1). When did The Prophets begin? The Prophets began with Adam and Eve's son, Abel. Read all of Hebrews 11 for a list of **the elders** who had **faith**. Before *The Bible* was written The Prophets spoke God's **Word**. God's "**work**" and God's **Word** are synonymous. Jesus said He is God's **work** if you believe His **works** (John 6:29). Jesus is the "logos" or God's **divine Words** (John 1). God's **very Words** did God's work (Genesis 1). Obviously, *The Scriptures* prove God's **Works** and God's **Word** are the very same thing. God does His **work** By God's very WORDS. That is why Jesus was God's "**work**."

If The Prophets revealed God's **work** from the beginning why did God wait 2,500 years to have *The Bible* written? Moses refers to *The Book of The Law, the Torah, The First Five Books*, and said that this book **should be placed in the side of the ark** (Deuteronomy 31:26). But for what reason? The beginning books of *The Bible* were placed in the side of **the ark** as a **witness** against them. Now you know why God wanted *The Bible* written. The written *Bible* is a witness or a legal matter in a **COURT OF LAW**. This is **the final judgment** or White Throne Judgment. *The Bible* relates **the entire history** of humanity and their rejection of God's Holy Spirit. If humanity had **faith** in their Father and belived Him they would not have rejected His Holy Spirit which would have given them **the truth**. The indictment of mankind's crimes is not who sinned the most or who was the most evil but why did humanity,

as a whole, reject God's pleading to accept His Holy Spirit. *The Bible* was written and placed next to **the mercy seat** as God's **final witness**.

THE IGNORANT ALONG WITH NEW BABES

The final **witnesses** against those found guilty as **goats** come from those who didn't really know better. *The Bible* tells you The Queen of The South will witness against those rejecting God's "**Spirit**." This is The Queen of Sheba who sought out Solomon's wisdom even though she did not know *The Gospel*.

Those of Nineveh, also witnessed against those who knew better who related they had repented when Jonah preached. They hadn't known *The Gospel*. The Queen of Sheba and The Ninevites are only partly guilty so their debt to Christ is less and they do not have to burn for very long in The Lake of Fire.

Ultimately, even those who committed GROSS sins, as those in Sodom and Gomorrah, pleaded innocence confessing they didn't know better. They did not know homosexuality was a sin. The reason it's a sin, it contradicts God's very purpose to create sons and daughters in His **kingdom**. Men with men and women with women cannot produce future Sons of God. Even homosexuals and lesbians will not be held accountable for their ignorance. But, ignorance is no excuse – they do go into the fire although they will spend less time in **the fire**. Those who knew the most (Luke 12) and refused to allow God's Holy Spirit to keep them **growing** spiritually because they thought they had **the truth** and refused to grow will burn the longest. Christ said they will be regarded as unbelievers, or atheists. Since they knew better they will get the most stripes or be in **torment** the longest. They were truly without excuse. The Laodicean church is counseled by Christ to go into The Lake of Fire in order to be **saved**. This Christian Church believes they have **the truth** of God and need nothing more.

They will be like the rich man who kept the letter of The Ten Commandments but couldn't make himself help others. He had a wrong heart just like Job. *Revelation* states this group is The Laodicean Church. They believe they are the possessors of **God's truth** or **riches**. Jesus declares **they are blind** and cannot see **the real truth**. What is their problem?

They are steeped in "**human works**." They believe **salvation** comes by religious deeds, by human effort. They did not know what pleases God is to worship Him **spiritually** (John 4). This is the whole of it. They did not know God's **mystery**, which is *Christ "In You"* (Colossians 1:27). Only Christ can give you **salvation** through God's Holy Spirit.

The Laodiceans were rejecting God's "**Spirit**" and therefore guilty will go into The Lake of Fire. Notice Christ's advice to the Laodicians; "**I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire**" (Revelation 3:18). Clearly, Jesus regards The Lake of Fire as **purchasing gold** from Him. The Lake of Fire is not to destroy the **guilty** but turn them **into refined gold**.

In Daniel 4 Nebuchadnezzar had to wander seven years as a madman before he acknowledged God was supreme. Nebuchadnezzar was in torment for seven years. God chooses and approves the individuals who rule this world. In Daniel 2, Nebuchadnezzar is the head of **gold**. The Lake of Fire, according to Christ, is a PURIFIER and turns those **guilty** into **gold** which is not destroyed in a fire. This will be gone into and proved later.

THE GUILTY

The indictment is complete. The witnesses have testified. Everything has been revealed. The **sheep** are now to be separated from the **goats**.

Both are clean animals but God will not accept an immature goat as a sacrifice. These goats are in their mother's milk. Jesus, The Judge, and **the saints** make their final judgment before God's **angels**. Everyone sings a song of joy about God and His love and His **righteous judgment**. The sheep are accepted into God's **kingdom** as **guests** for The Wedding Feast. The **bride** was already changed to **spiritual** before **the millennium** at **The Second Return of Christ**.

THE GOATS

Those found guilty must now receive their sentence. The final trial of the goats is to take place. Their sentence is according to how much they knew which determines how long they will be in torment. How is the sentence determined? Since the indictment or their guilt is not how many sins they committed, as they have already confessed before Christ; but why they **denied God's Holy Spirit** which would have **healed** them. They could have grown to mature goats without blemish. For a sin offering a male goat must be offered. But if any one of a common Israelite, as distinguished from the chiefs who ruled over them, sin in ignorance of The Law, then a female goat must be offered.

Read Leviticus 4:22-31. Remember these goats cannot be nursing. What shadow or meaning does this offering convey? Foremost the kid goat must have grown sufficiently to **understand** why it is being sacrificed in the fire. That is the reason these **goats in the judgment**, had already **confessed** and **knew** they were sinners. Now, they have grown in enough knowledge to realize they are guilty. Civilized nations today decide if **ONE** understands The Law or "right" from "wrong."

All these **kid goats** know they are guilty and are without excuse. Children or babes will not be held responsible in **the judgment** if they did not know better. Those who are ignorant of the truth but are old enough to know "right" from "wrong" will be found guilty. They how-

ever, receive either a “lighter” or “heavier” punishment. The goats are now ready to receive their sentencing and punishment.

THE SENTENCING

God only considers the welfare of His creation. God never aborts anyone and will bring them to full birth or maturity (Isaiah 66). In The Lake of Fire you are going to see **biblically** how much God **loves** everyone.

Paul said “**For whom the Lord loves He chastens, and scourges every son whom he receives**” (Hebrews 12:6-7). How? If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with **sons**; for what **son** is he whom the father chastens not? How clear and simple.

The Lake of Fire is for those sons of God whom God chastens and loves so they can receive their salvation. These goats, which are clean animals, have confessed their sins and because they refused God’s Holy Spirit, which could have healed them, are instead to be thrown into The Lake of Fire.

The sentences are decreed, but first death and hell or the grave are destroyed in The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:14). Death is the last enemy Christ destroys (I Corinthians 15:26).

Remember, everyone repented and is forgiven for their sins. Following the end of **death** and the grave or “hell” (Hades) then those **goats** that are guilty are thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20:15).

WHAT DIES?

Each goat is now in The Lake of Fire. Of course, those like the rich man or those who were babies and didn’t know better will merely feel

the torment of the flames coming at them and be immediately changed to immortality, “in a twinkling of an eye” (I Corinthians 15:50-55). This punishment is very short lived; they do not really burn in the fire for a long time. Remember the saying when someone is scared out of their wits. They get the point. All the other goats who knew better will have to be in torment longer. Why? To be forgiven, God must accept your gifts and sacrifices (Hebrews 5:1). If not, you suffer longer. This is why Abel’s sacrifice was more acceptable than Cain’s. Cain had a wrong heart. Because of Abel’s faith in God by giving a more excellent sacrifice, he proved he had a right heart and, therefore, proved himself righteous.

God only accepts sacrifices when one is an adult or mature. They must really, within their heart and minds know what is “right” from what is “wrong.” This is complete repentance or absolute faith in God, The Father. These kid goats, which are clean, must mature by fire to become fine GOLD like Nebuchadnezzar. The Loadiceans have yet to learn this lesson. When the fire helps the kid goats to mature and understand then God will accept their sacrifice, because of a changed heart and mind. Once God accepts your sacrifice you now become His begotten Sons and inherit The Kingdom of God. *The Bible* clearly declares it. Paul explains what occurs when one burns in The Lake of Fire (I Corinthians 3:11-13). First Paul declares “*Christ In You,*” must be your foundation for salvation. Nothing else counts. Then, Paul states any false teaching by man preachers will be revealed by fire. The Lake of Fire is a revealer disclosing what God’s Holy Spirit gives if the **guilty** would have listened and heard with their ears. Paul states all teaching, doctrines or knowledge about God is either **gold, (truth), silver (less truth)** precious stones, (little truth), wood (combustible) hay, (very combustible) or stubble (super combustible) (I Corinthians 3).

Then Paul declares every man’s (natural man’s work, or his religious life) shall be revealed. Just as Jesus stated all of the things which were hidden will be made clear and known. The Lake of Fire reveals to each

guilty person what is really in their hearts and minds. It is what Job learned. It is God who can do everything (Job 42:2).

Jesus said it is impossible for humans such as the greedy rich man to be **saved**, but with God, all things are possible (Matthew. 19:26). This **proves** the whole **purpose** for The Lake of Fire. I Corinthians 3:14 states any man's ideas or beliefs which don't burn, they are like gold, they will receive a reward. Do you comprehend? In The Lake of Fire, the guilty, who were partly "right" will receive a reward or **blissing**. However, and this is the cardinal point, what is burned will suffer wrong and that person himself, shall be **saved** (I Corinthians 5).

How great and loving is God? How is a person **saved**? By FIRE! The fire destroys what is stubble, hay or wood. These are all combustible items. The precious stones, silver, and gold remain and now you have a fully **mature goat** who understands clearly. The **fire** produces absolute **faith** in God and is now **righteous**.

Their **living** sacrifice is now excellent and acceptable to God (Romans 12:1). **Those who come out of the fire will be last into God's kingdom**. They will receive the least reward and have to live longer in darkness. It is better to **obey** and **repent**, as soon as possible, when you hear and understand The Word of God.

WHO IS SAVED?

The bewildering question has always been: "who can be **saved**?" Is the person totally destroyed or does a person stay in the fire tormented **eternally**? Does *The Bible* tell you? It certainly does tell you. How about those who insist the soul remains forever and burns forever? First, *The Bible* clearly states by Christ, Himself, the soul and the body will be destroyed (Matthew 10:28). *The Bible* clearly explains when in The Lake of Fire – the soul and body are destroyed. Neither is left

but both are completely dead. That should be **biblically** sufficient to answer that question.

In Greek, the word “*pseuche*” or “soul” merely means “a living being.” Also, in Greek, “body” is a “soma” or “combustible.” Put *Bible truth* together and you find when the body is destroyed then the soul or living being no longer exists. But there is even more proof that **the Spirit** cannot and does not burn **forever**.

No matter what Christian group, there is no “**eternity**” meant when the word “**forever**” is used. In both Greek and Hebrew, the word for “forever” in *The Bible*, in *The Old* or *The New Testaments* by definition, merely means “ages upon ages.” Biblically, the word “**forever**,” since it does not mean “**unending**,” but merely “**different time periods when that age ends**” and “**the next dispensation takes place**.” *The Bible* further shows when The Lake of Fire will end.

Peter told you this earth and the heavenly universe, are reserved to be burned on **The Day of Judgment** (II Peter 3:7). An **analogy** might be just as the world was flooded in the days of Noah. The Lake of Fire will consist of the whole earth and the entire universe. This can happen because all the elements on the earth and in the universe consist of combustible elements.

The Prophet Isaiah said, God’s literal breath is like a stream of brimstone which kindles The Lake of Fire (Isaiah 30:33). Finally, when The Lake of Fire burns out, **a new age** will begin. The Genesis of the new earth and the new heavens can be read in Revelation 21. Overwhelmingly **biblical** proof states no one stays in The Lake of Fire to be **tormented eternally** (Revelation 21). The Lake of Fire burns out and a new earth and new heaven **emerges**.

Is the entire body completely destroyed in The Lake of Fire? What you have found is **the soul** or **the life** and **the body** is destroyed. Is any-

thing left? If nothing is left then those dead and destroyed are totally and literally GONE. Now you need to prove how do those guilty (**the goats**), in The Lake of Fire get **saved**. Does *The Bible* reveal **the truth**? As always, God let's His **servants** know the **mystery**. **Some truths** are so clearly stated it is a wonder anyone can not understand it or why they misunderstand it.

During the season of Unleavened Bread there was a fornicator in The Corinthian Church who blatantly was having sex with his father's wife. Unleavened Bread is sometimes called The Passover. Everyone knew about it and those in The Church of Corinth **did nothing about it**. Paul said **the church** must be **unleavened** or not knowingly commit sin against The Ten Commandments. This fornicator must be disfellowshipped. Why?

So, The Body of Christ can be **without sin** and stand as His **witness**. Why and how did Paul state this gross sinner should be dealt with? Paul commanded that the fornicator should be turned over to Satan or go back into the world for the destruction of the flesh (I Corinthians 5:5). Remember, the flesh and soul is destroyed in The Lake of Fire. Paul concludes saying "**the Spirit**" may be **saved** in The Day of The Lord. The soul and body are destroyed in The Lake of Fire but "**the Spirit in man**" is **saved**. When you die the body goes back to **dust** but "**the Spirit**" goes back to **God who initially gave it** (Ecclesiastes 12:7). It is "**the spirit**" or "*pnuema*," in Greek like "the wind" or "life energy" (John 3) which goes back to God at death.

WHAT IS THE FIRE?

When God blows His breath, it kindles or starts. "Tophet" is "Gehenna" – "**the refuse dump**" outside of Jerusalem. The Lake of Fire consumes the earth and the universe. Psalm 50 declares after God burns the present universe and the present earth, then He will come to

rebuild a new heaven and a new earth (Revelation 21 and 22). **“Our God shall come and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before Him and it shall be very tempestuous [fearful or torment] round about Him”** (Psalm 50:3). It is God Himself, who ignites the burning of the universe just as Peter said in II Peter 3. Remember God is a flaming fire (Hebrews 12:29). Also, this time period is when God JUDGES the heavens and the earth. This can’t be any clearer. God’s **“word”** truly manifests God’s **truth** when you seek **Him** and **His truth**. Read Psalm 51.

What will happen to those in The Lake of Fire? The **kid goats** will be thrown into “hell” to become **mature goats**. Only then will their sacrifice be accepted by God (Hebrews 11:4). What is it about a human that is **saved** when the body is burned up and ends up in ashes (Psalm 51:10-12)? The human body is destroyed, but what is **saved**? After the purging in **the fire**, the sinner who is now completely repented, pleads and asks God: **“make me to hear JOY and GLADNESS; that the bones [physical] which thou hast broken may rejoice”** (Psalm 51:8).

This is when the sinner pleads for mercy so he can be **saved**. It is just like the parable of Lazarus and the **rich man**. It is “the spirit in man” which God gives life to your brain so you have the ability to think. Your very **life energy** which gives you consciousness, and is **the real you** which **survives**. This **“Spirit in man”** can only come from God because **life** can only come from life. God gives it and takes it back at death but this **“Spirit in man”** constitutes **who you really are**. Those who have their body and soul (life) destroyed in The Lake of Fire have **“a new spirit”** of refined gold which is ready to enter into God’s **kingdom** and God will be ALL AND IN ALL (I Corinthians 15:28).

If you read *God’s Work*, it will help you to learn what happens to these mature **goats**, now accepted by God as a living sacrifice. All are finally **saved**.

There is a great deal of beauty in *The Gospels of God* through His Son, Jesus. By the power of God's Holy Spirit everyone will keep **spiritually growing** as they take from **the healing leaves** from **The Tree of Life**.

The White Throne Judgment completes **salvation** for all of Adam and Eve's children, **each in his and her own order and time frame** (I Corinthians 15:23). "**The Spirit in man**" refined as **gold** in the fire will then be acceptable to receive **a spiritual body**.

God finally accepts their sacrifice. **The fire** finally burns out and is replaced with a new heaven and a new earth. **The "spirit in man"** instantly receives a **spiritual body** and God is now **ALL AND IN ALL**. Then God states: "**I make all things new.**" **Amen and Amen.**

TIME OF TORMENT

The body (flesh) and the soul (physical life) are all burned in The Lake of Fire. They are burned up and destroyed. The pulls of the flesh are gone. Sin no longer exists. But, is the time of torment over?

What remains is "**the Spirit in man,**" which is a God given "**gift of life.**" The fire burns out and what is corruptible burns up. God creates a new heaven and earth. Those in the fire now become **Spirit "beings"** but is that the end of their torment? As surprising as it is, those who still must mature **spiritually** as adult goats, are still in torment even though the fire has burned out. These goats are now mature and **spiritually** must become sheep, just as the others.

Jesus cast out the demons from the person who had a legend of the **unclean spirits**. Then those "spirits" asked Christ if He came before the time to torment them. The demons knew they could be in torment long

before The Lake of Fire. Why? The time of torment or anguish is not necessarily because of The Lake of Fire. Fire only burns combustible items. God is a burning fire but He is spiritual and cannot be destroyed by fire. Neither can Satan or his demons, the fallen angels, for they are, also, **spirit** and cannot be destroyed by fire. They can be in torment or darkness and be in total anguish.

Jesus relates the parable stating who will enter The Wedding Feast (Matthew 22:12-14). Many will be called in **the church**, but only a **few** will be **chosen** to attend The Wedding Feast. Christ now tells you what happens to those not allowed to come to The Feast in *New Jerusalem*. Read the account in Revelation 22:14-15. What is their punishment, and what happened to these immature kid goats after the fire burns out?

The Judge, Christ, declares “**Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be WEEPING and GNASHING of teeth**” (Matthew 22:13). There is the continued **torment** of those paying the last farthing. The fire is over and the kid goats are in outer darkness until they become mature goats and then God accepts their sacrifice, when they totally trust God, as sheep.

OUTER DARKNESS

Where is this outer darkness? Revelation 21:8 reveals when God creates the new heaven and earth those not inheriting all things go into **the fire** and die the **second time**. Their physical lives are burned up. They now receive spiritual bodies to come to The Wedding but have on the wrong garment. They are not sheep (Matthew 22:12). Revelation 21:22-27 declares there is no temple in New Jerusalem. God’s **glory** and Christ are **the light** of the world. It is so bright there is “**no**” night there. Yearly, the saved nations must bring their **glory or spiritual growth**.

Those left out of the city stated in Revelation 22:14-15 are the farthest from New Jerusalem. They must spiritually grow from the leaves in The Tree of Life. There are those in **torment** weeping and **gnashing** their teeth to be healed or restored to God. Those in **outer darkness** are living in the **remotest** area of **the new earth**. They are not receiving God's **glory** but must get healed from the leaves of The Tree of Life. This is like The North Pole with six months of darkness and then six months of light. They are denied access to The Tree of Life in Jerusalem until they become sheep. What a just and perfect plan. How good is God who perfectly saves everyone so He can be ALL AND IN ALL.

THE FIRE

The determining of how long one remains in The Lake of Fire, includes the time of torment. Just as the demons knew Christ could have tormented them before The White Throne Judgment. How? Unclean spirits to be able to see and hear, they must possess a body : "Pneuma" or "spirits" without a body are in darkness. That is why Jesus allowed them to enter the pigs so they could see and hear. Christ was telling them their time of **torment**, as yet, had not come.

When humans die, each person's Spirit "in man" goes back to God and God puts each dead human's spirit to rest. With the unclean spirits, unless they occupy a body they are reserved in chains of darkness or torment. These "demon spirits" without a body cannot know, or understand. That is why demons enter bodies whenever they can. Those goats who are not sheep as yet, are in torment, or outer darkness, until they spiritually grow to be sheep and have total faith in God. The time it takes to become sheep varies until they have paid the last farthing. One can be in torment or stress, as in a fire, in their very minds. Until all false teaching, including personal agendas, are outgrown, these goats stay in outer darkness until they become sheep.

The Lake of Fire burns up rather quickly. The universe, including the old earth, is combustible and burns up. The fire in each goat with the wrong garment continues, in their “*pneuma*” or “mind.” It is very similar to what Christians experience when God tests them as He did Job. Job’s experience was **torment** for him. He was in such torment he wanted to die and wished he wasn’t born. They must stay in outer darkness until they become like sheep and then they will have access to God, The Father and His Son, Jesus. The last farthing or debt has been paid and everyone will be just like God and will see Him as He “**is**” (I John 3:2). God will be ALL AND IN ALL!

GOD'S SABBATH AND HOLY DAYS

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 2

**BY
ART MOKAROW**

Copyright Pending – *God’s Sabbath And Holy Days*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God’s Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ’s Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God’s Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God’s Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God’s Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul’s Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God’s Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God’s Old And New Covenant

What’s It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan’s Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God’s Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God’s Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God’s Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God’s School

God’s Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don’t Bury Your Talents

God’s Work Vs. Man’s Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon’s Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God’s Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God’s Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God’s House

Bible Study God’s Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner’s Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

GOD'S SABBATH AND HOLY DAYS

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
GOD'S SABBATH	1
HOLY DAYS ARE PROPHECY	9
BABYLON: TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS	17
LORD OF THE SABBATH	25
THE SERVANT AND THE HEIR	33
THE SPIRITUAL SABBATH: GOD'S REST	41
WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?	47
PURPOSE OF GOD'S DAYS	55
KNOWING IN PART.	61
THE LETTER TO SPIRITUAL	67
THE TWO PRIESTHOODS	75
OBSERVANCE OR KEEPING	81

GOD'S SABBATH AND HOLY DAYS

PREFACE

Which day of the week is God's Sabbath and His Holy Days? And, why are there so many religions: Christian, Jewish, Islam and a multitude of others? Within each are many splits or denominations. Each has their observance of days and years.

What does The Bible say are God's Days? The Bible speaks of The Sabbath and Holy Days. You will find one day, the Sabbath, was actually started by God and The Holy Days were given to Moses by God for Israel to keep, along with, The Sabbath. What is the reason? God declared these days are to be a sign for God's people.

You are about to find out there is a difference between observing and keeping those days. By observing those days according to God's "word" and therefore keeping The Sabbath and Holy Days is grossly different than keeping their meaning. One is a physical matter as opposed to a spiritual matter. One is called The Old Covenant and the other The New Covenant. As always, no monies are accepted for this book and your comments are appreciated.

Art Mokarow

Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: art@mokarow.com

Website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

Download all books free of charge

GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED

GOD'S WORK

REVELATION UNCOVERED

CHRIST IN YOU

THE GREAT APOSTASY

THE WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

DISCOVERING GOD

THE ORIGINAL BIBLE

FAITH WITH WORKS

GOD'S STORY

BIBLE STUDY MADE EASY

GOD'S WILL

GOD'S SABBATH AND HOLY DAYS

CHILDREN'S BOOKS

GOD'S TWO TREES

GOD'S MAGICAL TEN WORDS

GOD'S THREE HOUSES

CHAPTER 1

GOD'S SABBATH

Does it make any difference which day you observe The Sabbath? You are about to find out if you keep the wrong Sabbath it can cause you to be in confusion and you will not be able to understand the very purpose of God. Directly, God's Sabbath and Holy Days' prophecy shows God's purpose in creating the universe and mankind. You are about to find out God's Days tie in, specifically, with prophecy and how you can receive salvation.

The Seventh Day Sabbath

Israel's lack of faith or belief never allowed them to enter into God's rest (Hebrews 4:3-4). Paul informs you that this Rest of God was the completion of God's "work" and always remember this was not mankind's work. When did God finish His "work?" **"For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all His works."** The Greek word for "rest" is "katapausis" which means "to cease" or "stop from any type of work." This day of work is The Seventh Day. The Seventh Day is the same day Christ and The Jews kept. So you know The True Seventh Day is the same day The Jews kept which is Saturday and not Sunday as some Christians keep.

Those Christians who keep The First Day of the week instead of The Seventh Day do so because they say Christ was resurrected on The First Day of the week or some other event. But I ask you,

“so what?” There is no place in *The Bible* which states because Jesus was resurrected on the first day, Christians are to change the day of God's Sabbath or for any other human reason. This type of reasoning doesn't hold up **biblically**. This human imagination, “**should not be done**” (II Corinthians 10:5). Any other human excuse for changing God's Sabbath doesn't apply since this Seventh Day Sabbath has a special meaning to God and His **very purpose** and why He gave you **life** in the first place.

A Prophecy

In the beginning, The Seventh Day in The Garden of Eden, God **rested** from His **works**. When God's “work” was finished, man had a choice to enter or to refuse to enter God's “**rest**.” Adam and Eve chose to eat The Tree of Good and Evil and since then, mankind has had to do **the work** in order to survive (Genesis 3:17-19).

Until that time, God **sanctified** The Seventh Day or made it **a time of rest for man**. Why? God is The One who had done **the work**. In The Garden of Eden all man needed for survival was done for them, by God, Himself. This included offering **eternal life**. Adam and Eve had only to eat of The Tree of Life and they never would have had to struggle for any type of survival. They would have rested in God's Sabbath where God did all the work.

Adam and Eve would have been growing into **salvation** by eating of The Tree of Life just as Christians who have entered God's “**work**” are to be **saved** (Hebrews 4:10). Adam and Eve would have been in God's Sabbath **rest**, forever.

They were in God's **kingdom** as children, where their father, God, does the work. Instead, Adam and Eve chose bondage or the

struggle for survival based upon survival of the fittest, just like any animal.

In Genesis 2:1-3 God sanctified this Seventh Day **rest** and Adam and Eve lost God's **rest** in His **kingdom** for themselves and all future generations. From that point, Adam and Eve and all mankind had to do "**the work**" to survive.

Adam and Eve were taken out of The Garden and God put two cherubims by The Garden of Eden so no longer could any human have access to The Tree of Life. Paradise was lost and was not accessible until Christ came to restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11).

Now The Seventh Day Sabbath **rest** was lost to mankind and The Sabbath became "**prophecy**." What actually occurred was God's Seventh Day "**rest**" now projected into the future as **prophecy**. That is why Hebrews 4:9 declares, "**There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.**"

The Greek word for "**rest**" in this verse is "sabbatismose," literally meaning "a Sabbath's rest where God does **the work**." This **rest** is now future and ceased from existence until **The Promised Seed** came as God said in Genesis 3:15. **A seed** of Eve had to come to restore God's Seventh Day **rest**. The Sabbath from this point, in history, was to be **prophecy**! And now you know why only The Seventh Day Sabbath can reveal this **prophecy**.

Colossians 2:16-17

The Apostle Paul was trying to explain the difference between God's Seventh Day Sabbath (sabbatismose) and **the prophetic** Seventh Day Sabbath. In the Greek "The (**prophesied**) Seventh

Day Sabbath” is “Sabbaton” and not “sabbatisme” which is God’s **rest** and not man’s since God did all the work in The True Sabbath’s **rest**. The prophetic Sabbath given in Exodus 20:8-11 states it is man who ceases from his work. After The Garden of Eden, man had to struggle for survival. Humanity lost The True Sabbath **rest** in that Garden of Eden.

The Sabbath “**command**” in Exodus 20:8 begins with the word “**Remember!**” Remember what? “**Remember**” The True Sabbath’s **Rest** when God did the work and then **rested**. The Real Sabbath was lost and now is prophecy or a shadow or type of The True Sabbath. “**Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of The Sabbath days [Why not?] which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ**” (Colossians 2:16-17).

Plainly, Paul reveals The Sabbath Day given in The Ten Commandments at Mount Sinai is **a shadow** or **a prophecy** of what **the real** Sabbath represents. It is a sign to God’s people of The Sabbath’s **rest** that God’s people will enter into and finally be in God’s “**rest.**”

How simple it is when you have **the truth**. Moses’ Sabbath was a memorial of The True, Seventh Day “**rest.**” However, when man rests from his labor, this Sabbath does not give salvation. Man’s rest on The Sabbath is a shadow of God’s “**rest,**” The Original Sabbath.

Faithful Moses

God gave a prophetic Sabbath and the prophetic Holy Days for Israel **to keep**. You have clearly established that **the only day** God made Holy or Sanctified was The Seventh Day or Saturday. Now

you are ready to prove what Moses actually meant. Any excuse given by man to change The Seventh Day Sabbath is ridiculous because it changes God's future **purpose and plan**. Moses was faithful in his house. Also, Paul said Jesus Christ is The Apostle, The One sent to build His **house**. Every house is built by some man but God is The One who builds all things. God is **the creator**, not man. Moses built what man's work produces, like The Sabbath and Holy Days which are only a memorial of what was and what is to come (Hebrews 3:1-6). Now you will read what Moses' **purpose** was. "**And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony [witness] of those things which were to be spoken after**" (Hebrews 3:5). The entire *Letter of The Law* or *Old Covenant* which includes The Sabbath and Holy Days were a **prophecy** of what was real (Hebrews 10:1-2). Moses' **house** which he built was only to be a **witness**. It couldn't be "**what was true.**" Only God can be **the creator**. Only God will build His real house by His Son, Jesus. Read the answer, "**But Christ as a son over his own house, whose house are we, [salvation] if we hold fast [faith] the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.**"

Amazingly, The Sabbath and Holy Days cannot give you **salvation**. These days are memorials of what was real in the past (Seventh Day) and a prophecy in the future as a **shadow**. Paul states these prophecies are to be spoken in the future by Christ building His own house "IN YOU" (Christians).

Old And New Wine

Christ's first miracle is The Marriage Feast in Cana (John 2). During The Wedding Feast they ran out of the old wine which was served last because the taste of old wine was preferred over new wine.

Jesus was asked by His mother to help them out but Christ reminded her it was not the time, yet, for Him to perform any miracles (sacrifices). However, honoring His mother, He told those responsible to bring six water pots of stone. These pots were not common-use water pots, but used for purification.

Christ told the servants to fill the pots with water and serve the people. When they tasted it, they said the old wine was normally served first because it tasted better but this new wine tasted the very best.

This event was spiritually significant. It had to do with The True Sabbath **rest** as in The Garden of Eden. Remember, all that Moses did in building His **household** was only a type or a witness. Now Jesus, The Christ, was to build His household which is to be built by God (Hebrews 3). This specifically has to do with The Original Sabbath where God's **rest** was completed.

After Adam and Eve ate of the forbidden fruit they were expelled from The Garden of Eden before they could partake of The Tree of Life. **Salvation** was lost. God's **way of marriage** was lost.

In the beginning, God made a **marriage covenant** between Adam and Eve. They were "bone of bone" and "flesh of flesh" or "one flesh." What God had joined, no man was to put asunder (Mark 10). This was a marriage contract "**till death do them part.**"

They never were able to stay in God's "rest," on that Seventh Day "**rest,**" and could not consummate the marriage. They did not even realize they were naked. The marriage feast and consummation never took place.

This "**rest**" was to be in the future through a **promised seed**

(Genesis 3:15 and Hebrews 4:9). This future marriage was now **prophecy** when The Marriage of Christ would be consummated in God's **rest** or during The Sabbath in the future at Christ's **second coming** (Revelation 19:22).

Coming Of The Promised Seed

John 3:25-31 concerns this future marriage feast. John, The Baptist's Disciples argued with The Jews concerning purification just as Christ made new wine from the water in the purification jars. John explained a New Way of Purification **cleansed** by God and not by The Mosaic System done by humans (in the purification water pots). This was a Godly "**marriage**" made by God just like the marriage created by God between Adam and Eve. Adam was a type of Christ (Romans 5:14). This new Adam was about to emerge. Read what John, The Baptist had to say about Christ. "**He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend [best man] of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled**" (John 3:29). Remember you had previously read it is the voice which announces God's "**rest**."

Now, Christ brings **the new wine, the better wine**, to The Wedding Feast and there is more than enough for everyone. Jesus came to bring His "**rest**" for everyone. When? This Wedding Feast is prophetic and comes to fruition at the time of The New Heaven and New Earth (Revelation 19-22). Read the book *God's Story*.

Sabbath Summary

Biblically, any change to The Sabbath Day, regardless what the human tradition or excuse can be given, does grave injury to God's

very purpose and reason for human existence. Only The Seventh Day Sabbath has vital information concerning humanities' reason "**for being.**" The Seventh Day Sabbath in The Garden of Eden is when God gives His **rest** to the world by **the marriage** of His Son, Jesus to His Bride. God's "**kingdom**" is established at The Return of Christ to meet His Bride in the clouds.

Now you know how pertinent The Seventh Day Sabbath is. Next, you have to prove **the significance** of God's Holy Days as opposed to man's traditional holidays.

CHAPTER 2

HOLY DAYS ARE PROPHECY

Satan has deceived many Christians, worldwide, since The Garden of Eden. Eve was deceived when Satan stated she would not die when she ate of The Tree of Good and Evil. By following Satan, Eve and all future generations were all led to the same fate – death.

Remember, The Tree of Good and Evil is a mixture of what is **good** and what is **evil**. Notice what Paul said would happen when one followed their human ways. “**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness**” (Romans 1:18). Paganism is not without some truth, but is a mixture of belief in what is right, but also worship in many forms of falsehoods. **Biblically**, what is the amount of truth held by world Christianity? It is diluted by human imagination concerning **the worship of God**, which results in Babylon or confusion.

Satan Intervenes

By the end of The First Century, Christians had lost, in droves, **the true faith**. The Apostle Jude was so concerned about the loss of **the true faith** that he wrote an entire *Epistle* about it. “**Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints**” (Jude 3).

Do you understand the trouble Christianity was having because of this error? Jude told The World of Christianity they had lost the **true** way God wanted. Christianity's very **salvation** was at stake. Many Christians had lost their faith as delivered by The Apostles. They no longer understood that God wanted them to be saved. What happened?

By 325 A.D. Constantine, The Emperor of Rome, was creating Christians by making Christianity a state religion. Even though he still was a "Sun Worshipper," he claimed God led him to Christianity. Constantine decided, for the good of Rome, it was necessary to unite Pagans and Christians. To accomplish this he had to integrate **pagan holidays** as God's Holy Days. All that was needed was to **change pagan days** and give them **Christian names** and **Christian meanings**. This transition filtered into Christianity a long time before Constantine. Constantine's main aim was to formalize it.

When Constantine brought the world's Christian bishops together, they never discussed "**the faith once delivered.**" Instead, they debated the nature of Christ. They began to question if He was **divine** or human, like the rest of mankind. **Salvation** was never the issue.

To this day Christology, with The Theology Departments of many universities, focus on these nebulous questions. What happened to Christianity and **the true faith**?

World Christianity became a mixture of good and evil as Christ warned it would (Matthew 22:10). What caused this problem? Constantine and those following claimed The Roman Empire was now God's **kingdom** on earth. Paganism and Christianity became such a mixture that they were literally united.

The True Biblical Holy Days **were forgotten**. The Seventh Day Sabbath was changed to Sunday and the only reason it was changed, was because they reasoned Christ was resurrected the first day of the week. Now, Christianity worshipped the **true** God, but on **the day of the sun**. They worshipped **the sun** as a Christian day. It is exactly what Paul warned in Romans. “**They turned the truth into unrighteousness.**” The entire truth of The Sabbath and its true meaning was changed.

Instead of The Seventh Day when God finished all His work for His **kingdom rest**, now man started to cease working on the **day of the sun**. This grossly changed God’s Day to **man’s day** when man rested from his own human work. The same was done to God’s Holy Days.

Christmas, the day of **the birth of the sun** (December 25), The Winter Equinox, was changed to The Birth of Jesus Christ, God’s Son.

Easter, which in paganism was the worship of The Queen of Heaven, Ishtar was changed to Christ’s **resurrection**. On and on it goes. Valentine’s Day, Halloween, etc., meaningless days which are observed for nothing. The image of The Beast in Daniel 2 was now a reality and replaced The Truth of God’s Holy Days. The Truth was worshipped in unrighteousness (Romans 1)!

Christ’s Warning

When Jesus was preparing for His coming crucifixion, He issued a warning to the world and Christians of the coming curse and the future of **the church**. His first indictment told to His Disciples was, “**Take heed [Christians] that no man deceive you**” (Matthew 24:4). This is a warning for **the church** and not to

the world. Going on, "**For many** [not a few] **shall come in my name** [Christ's authority], **saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many**" (Matthew 24:5).

This is enlightening; Jesus is speaking to His Disciples and to The Church of God. In Christ's parable concerning God's **kingdom**, The Wedding Feast, Jesus describes who will be called to The Marriage Feast of Christ and His Bride. "**So those servants** [Christians] **went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests**" (Matthew 22:10). The Churches of God are a mixture of both bad and good. As Jesus said, there will be preachers who will deceive many, not just a few.

By the time The First Century came to an end, Jude, an Apostle and brother of Jesus had to write his *epistles* with this warning, "**Beloved: when I gave all diligence to write unto you** [Christians] **of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints**" (Jude 3).

Christianity, in less than seventy years, found itself in a state of "**doctrinal chaos.**" Christianity has increasingly fallen into great deception. Thousands of splits exist to this day and more splits seem to continue. Jude 4 reveals it was ordained for "this falling away" to take place. By the time *The Book of Revelation* was written, Christ called this state of the world "Babylon." He warned **the saints and the faithful** to come out of the false system of worship (Revelation 18:4). If not, then God's **wrath** will come to pass upon Christianity and the world, as well as all who have the **mark of the beast**.

Christianity from The First Century to this present-day is under

the deception that **the church** is God's **kingdom** ruled by The Fourth Beast of Daniel 2 – The ROMAN Empire. What has been enduring to this very day is a mixture of good and evil; God's truth and paganism. God declares Christians, who want to live by every "**word**" of God, must come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

Truth In Unrighteousness

God's **wrath**, at "**the end-days**," will be poured out upon all which hold "**the truth in unrighteousness**." What is the difference? To the degree a Christian group or denomination which understands and acknowledges **The True, (biblical) Sabbath and God's Holy Days** determines the amount of truth those church groups understand and accept as church doctrine (Colossians 2:16-17). Paul specifically declares The Sabbath is God's **plan of salvation**. These days do not, however, give **salvation** by their observance. Salvation is a gift which these days only picture, "**Which are a shadow [prophecy] of things to come; but the body is of Christ**" (Colossians 2:17). A correct rendering of this verse is, "**the body of Christ**." The word "**is**" was only inserted in later manuscripts. The older manuscripts do not have the word "**is**" in *the scripture*. Colossians 2:16-17 is declaring that no man should judge Christians concerning The Sabbath and Holy Days.

These days are only meant to foretell mankind's chance for "**salvation**." Those days only reveal prophecy. You, as a Christian, never can receive **salvation** by observing these days. Why not? Because **the body, the church, is of Christ**. The Sabbath and Holy Days' **prophecy** is about what Christ did, what He does and what He will be doing in the future. Jesus is The Passover Lamb, The Christ, The One who makes you "**unleavened**." Christ also gave God's Holy Spirit on Pentecost so He could atone Christians

to God. Over and over, The Holy Days reveal how Christ will save the world. It was for this very reason He was sent (I John 4:14). Now, you need to know why Israel was commanded to observe The Sabbath and Holy Days.

If you accept The True Seventh Day Sabbath, picturing God's resting when He finished His work on The Seventh Day in The Garden of Eden, then Christians will always know the truth of God's **kingdom** in paradise. It is a prophecy which is what Christ came to do (Matthew 18:11 and Hebrews 4:9). The "**rest**" in Hebrews 4:9 in Greek is "Sabbatismose" or "Sabbath's **rest**." Christ is The Sabbath. That is why Jesus said He was Lord or Master of The Sabbath. This is the reason all Christians are to **rest** in Christ. Christ is your Sabbath's "**rest**" through God's Holy Spirit (Hebrews 5:3).

Since Israel sinned when God gave them The Ten Commandments, having a wrong heart (desire) they were given The Ten Commandments in The Letter. Their nature was opposed to God and therefore as long as they remembered the observance of The Seventh Day, they remained "**a sign**" that they were God's people to the world. The Seventh Day Sabbath pictured what Christ would do (and not man).

When you **rest** "in Christ" then you are keeping The True Seventh Day "**rest**" as God wanted from the very beginning. That is why God said concerning Israel, "**O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children forever**" (Deuteronomy 5:29)!

Because Israel was stubborn in their hearts when Moses went up the mountain, God wrote The Ten Commandments in stone

because of their very **stony hearts** (II Corinthians 3:3). God gave Israel The Letter of The Law with all its legal works because they were “unrighteous” in their hearts (I Timothy 1:7-10). They needed the meanings of good and evil spelled out because they had an ungodly heart or nature. If they didn’t obey The Law, they received a curse. It was the **schoolmaster** using a ruler when they disobeyed.

In spite of their stubbornness as long as they observed The Seventh Day Sabbath, they knew **the truth** of God’s **kingdom** and waited for The Messiah.

Keeping God’s Days reveals one is in the knowledge of **the truth** and not living their lives in unrighteousness. Now, you are ready to prove this same **biblical** principle applies to the entire world even though they are carnal and have a wrong heart. The Seventh Day **rest** by man in The Fourth Commandment is only a memorial of The True Sabbath **rest** in The Garden of Eden, when God did **the work**. Man’s rest in The Fourth Commandment only foreshadowed The True Sabbath in The Garden and The Holy Days.

CHAPTER 3

BABYLON:

TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

Many wonder if, indeed, there is only The One True God who created all things, why are Christians plagued with so many religions and denominations.

From the days of Adam and Eve only The One True God revealed **the truth** to His **purpose** for His creation – mankind.

When God cut Cain off, he and his progeny departed to The Land of Nod, developing their own brand of **the truth**. Cain passed what he decided to observe to all his children and they took his truth mixed with **falsehoods** and, in time, created their own religious mayhem. After the flood, God divided the nations and each built their own brand of **the truth**. Inevitably each had their own ideas of **right** and **wrong**.

Mankind finds themselves in the combination of multiple personal ideas mixed with **the truth** passed on by confusion over the centuries. Only those at this time who have God's Holy Spirit are led to God's **truth** (John 14:16-17 and John 17:17).

In this Babylon, (including Christianity), only those growing in God's Holy Spirit can remain in God's truth. Those refusing to continue **growing spiritually** become void of truth and begin to hold the truth they have in "**unrighteousness.**" Human imagina-

tion begins to enter and a variety of truth turns to confusion. The amount of **truth** you have is “foundational.” All else is of “**human conception.**”

From The Garden of Eden until Moses wrote The Torah called The Law, God passed on **the truth** of His predestinated “**will**” and “**purpose**” through His Prophets (Hebrews 1:1-3 and Ephesians 1). The purpose was for humanity to become Holy, blameless and in God’s Love so they can be given **the gift of salvation.**

When mankind becomes just like God through His Son, Jesus, The Christ, then God will be “**all in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). The **gift of salvation** would be assured in an eternal paradise for all of God’s creation. That is God’s “**will**” and “**predetermined purpose.**”

The Bible wasn’t written until it became necessary for **a law** to become legal because Israel sinned. A legal law was necessary when people resisted **the truth** of God and each determined **right** from **wrong** on their own.

Since those **with a criminal or sinful nature** are subject to error, God only can mandate **right** from **wrong** with a legal law. It now becomes a court matter for those who are less than perfect or Holy, like God. God is in the process of reproducing Himself and making **kind after kind.**

Since “**unchanged human nature**” needs to be ruled by a **Law**, God has, within that Law, instituted **works** or **deeds** to constantly remind mankind of God’s ultimate purpose; and this is to become like Him and His Son. That is why The Law of Moses was strictly administrated by Moses so severely. No exceptions, it was “**an eye for an eye.**”

God's rehabilitation system was only available to those who truly desired to change, which is called repentance. Then God bestowed His Holy Spirit within a human to actually change their nature to eventually become exactly like God and His Son, Jesus. This is God's **plan** for humanity.

God has **two administrative systems** to produce a righteous society where no one harms God or His creation. One system is for those who know there is a God and **do fear Him**, but **do not** want to really change.

In this system people live righteously, like Job, but still have human nature, like an animal (survival of the **fittest**). Hence, they need and require a **legal law**.

In the other system, "**repentance**" required no Law, since God will write His Law into the very nature of their hearts and minds. They constantly seek change 24/7 so they willfully do no harm to God or His creation. This is God's "**special love**" which comprises God. God is **love** (I John 4:8). Mankind is to become like Him and His Son, Jesus who is in His exact image (Hebrews 1:1-2). Until this miracle occurs in mankind, a legal law is required for a civil society. According to I Corinthians 15, God's **plan** is to have every person experience these two administrative systems until God will be "**all in all**." There you have it!

God deems the proper time for each person when their heart comes to **repentance**. He also grants **the gift** of His Holy Spirit which leads you to a change of nature to become just like His Son, Jesus (Ephesians 4:12-13). This is done by The Law of Christ or as administered by Jesus by writing God's Law in your heart and mind. This is a Godly **rehabilitation system** to restore you to The Garden of Eden.

The Law of Moses is the administration of God's Law by punishing those who do not obey The Law. This system engenders a civil society but there is no change of human nature to be able to receive eternal life. The Law administered by Moses is to lead first to **repentance** and then to **salvation**. In both cases the same Godly Law is required, but The Law administered by Christ leads to **salvation** by changing human nature (Matthew 5, 6, 7).

Man Has Three Choices

Since God is going to bring every man to Christ, all of humanity is divided into three groups for **salvation** (I Corinthians 15).

In the **first group** there are **atheists** and **agnostics** and those who do not believe in God or aren't fearful of Him. God calls them **ignorant** and **foolish**. But as you continue to pray and study, you find God does not hold them responsible for their sin because they had no idea what sin was (John 9:41). The **second group** believes God and wants to obey Him but **do not** continue to grow spiritually. The **third group**, are the fruitful and keep growing like Christ and will be in **the first resurrection**. They are The Bride of Christ.

Any group who refuses God's Holy Spirit are resurrected at different times, so each get rewards. Salvation is a free gift for everyone, but each receives a reward in God's **kingdom** according to their **works**.

Unrighteousness

When humans decide for themselves what is **right** and **wrong**, you end up with **confusion** or **unrighteousness**. Obviously, atheists and agnostics are only left with their personal human imagi-

nation which can and does come to nothing. It is called human logic. It only forms a multitude of ideas which can never accomplish their goals of being **righteous**. Humanity cannot make society work because mankind, themselves, is the problem. Since you must strive for existence, your conclusions will be varied and unending.

Since only God created you, He would know how you should function and be happy, productive beings. Only God's **righteousness** is mankind's answer. That is why Jesus said, "**Man shall live by every word of God**" (Matthew 4:4). Human righteousness can become complicated and therefore cause as many ideas of good and evil as there are humans. That is why Christ calls it Babylon or confusion.

Once the human mind accepts God's **righteousness**, only then is spiritual growth possible. Denial of God and His **righteousness** can only lead humanity into chaos. That is why **repentance** is necessary. Humanity, with human interpretation, takes God's **righteousness** and leads mankind to a variety of ways to live. Look at world history. Humanities' efforts have led to differences all over the world, and, finally, to violence.

In this world, anytime humanity strays from God's truth they turn to unrighteousness. Why? It is because each human has his/her own idea of **right** and **wrong**. This leads you to two of three groups who decide right from wrong. The ones who believe in God and fear Him benefit from God's **word** and **truth**. However, if at any time, you believe you know everything necessary and refuse to continue growing, you then, fall into the same pit as the atheists and agnostics. Human reason fills the vacuum and then evil enters as human imagination permeates the psyche. The outcome is confusion.

Those who keep “**spiritually growing**” by God’s Holy Spirit continue becoming more like Christ until they measure to the stature of Jesus, who is Holy. At **the resurrection** they are Holy, unblemished and filled with God’s **love**. They do not henceforth, ever harm God or His creation. In such a being, God can become “**all in all.**”

Jesus clearly relates the difference between those of you who are holding to The Letter of The Law under The Administration of Moses and those of you in **faith** who have Christ administer The Law by changing your very nature through God’s Law written in your heart. In The Law of Moses, his administration grants a good, prosperous, healthy human existence (**only**). The Law of Christ and His **administration**, grants a good, prosperous healthy life but also gives **the gift of salvation with persecution**. The Law of Moses no longer has legal demands upon the repentant because Christ’s blood has removed the curse or penalty of The Law (Hebrews 7, 8 and 9).

The Letter And The Spirit

II Corinthians 3:1-8 describes the difference between the two administrations. The Letter of The Law under Moses demanded strict obedience and permitted no infringement in any part of The Law. Why? The **letter** could never change human nature and therefore had to be kept perfectly to be God’s people. Ultimately, Paul said **that administration** only led to death (James 2:10 and II Corinthians 3). It was the curse of The Mosaic Administration.

The Law of Christ, by His administration actually, over a process of time, changes human nature to be like Christ and therefore guarantees eternal life. What actually occurs is a change in how **one thinks**. As long as “**the repentant**” remains teachable, then

their nature changes and the desires of a person's heart thinks and is more and more like Christ (Ephesians 4:13 and Proverbs 18:1-4).

Christ clearly said, “[a Christian’s] **righteousness must exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees**” (Matthew 5:20). This righteousness, The Letter of The Law, cannot change human nature (Matthew 23:2-3). The Law is “**righteousness**” (Deuteronomy 6:25) and not the person. Then, it is The Law which is that person’s “**righteousness.**”

Then, Jesus gave some literal examples of the two types of righteousness. Christ said The Letter of The Law only demands one not commit adultery. Yet a person, in their heart, may have a desire and may be actually lusting after a particular person. In keeping The Letter of The Law one is innocent in this case, but according to The Spirit (in one's heart) of The Law that person is still **guilty of adultery**. Can't be any clearer. That is why Jesus warned keeping The Letter of The Law isn't good enough and keeping it will not allow you to be in God's **kingdom**.

That is why Christ said to the Samaritan woman “a day would come when neither in Samaria or in Jerusalem would God be worshipped physically.” Why? Plainly, Jesus said, at that time, physical worship would stop and only spiritual worship for God's people would take place. Once The Temple in 70 A.D. was destroyed, there no longer was a physical place where God's “glory” would be present. From that time **onward**, God only wants His people to worship Him **spiritually** because God is a **spirit**.

You are to become like Him and no longer is The Law your “**righteousness**” because The Law is **in your heart**. Jesus is The Torah and you are to be just like Him (John 4 and Ephesians 4:4).

The Law, under Moses, could not produce humans who were **righteous**. The Law was only meant to represent Christ. When an Israelite kept The Letter of The Law notice what Christ said in John 5:46, which reveals that if one believed Moses then he/she would have believed Jesus. Why? Because Moses wrote of Christ. Moses revealed The Messiah or Jesus. Now, you begin to understand what The Law of Moses was to do.

Hebrews 3:5 declares that the entire purpose of Moses was to **witness** or **testify** those things which were to be spoken **thereafter**. The Law with all its **works** and **deeds** was to be **a witness** of Christ.

Christ was pictured as The Passover Lamb in each Israelites' home when they painted blood on their door posts. The Law of Moses, administered by Moses, was a physical witness of what was to come.

The Sabbath and Holy Days are **shadows** or **prophecy** about what Jesus would do. Now, to have *The Bible* reveal what The Sabbath and The Holy Days are really about and how Christians are to keep those days and not merely **observing Days** which were only meant as shadows or prophecy.

CHAPTER 4

LORD OF THE SABBATH

On The Sabbath, Jesus was healing and allowing His Disciples to go through the fields harvesting some corn when they were hungry. When The Pharisees and Sadducees saw this they went mad. It is exactly what occurs when some Christians today disagree doctrinally with one another and refuse to have anything to do with each other (Matthew 12:1-8).

On one occasion, an impotent man who was afflicted 38 years, was asked by Christ specifically, **“Do you want to be healed”** (John 5:6)? Then Jesus told him to take up his bed and walk. This was a Sabbath infraction.

Exodus 16 forbids going out on The Sabbath to pick manna to eat. In addition, The Jews, with their own interpretations, added more human restrictions to The Sabbath. In fact, in The Talmud there are hundreds of do's and don'ts.

Jesus, on purpose, chose The Sabbath on which to do **“work.”** The Pharisees and Sadducees wanted to know why. He knew The Law of Moses forbade going out on The Sabbath and picking manna for personal consumption. Understand, telling the impotent man **“to pick up his bed”** was very hard work. He could have merely healed the man and that would have concluded this miracle. Instead, Jesus was teaching them a them a lesson about The Sabbath Day.

Salvation

Christianity has many differences concerning what is required to produce **salvation**. Faith is what saves you and it is a **gift** from God. But does that mean you can **sin** because you are under **grace**? A rich man came to Christ and asked Him what he had to do to receive eternal life. Jesus said, "**Keep the Commandments.**" He answered Christ and said, "**All these things I have done since my youth up.**" Christ, when He heard what he said, loved him (Matthew 19:16-26). The rich man added, "What do I lack?" The keeping of The Commandments doesn't give **salvation**. Why? Jesus explained if he would be **perfect**, he had to sell all he had and give it to the poor. Here was the rich man's "**sticking point.**" He couldn't. What was the result? Keeping The Commandments in The Letter doesn't give **salvation**, but **perfection** does (Matthew 5:48). Only becoming like God and Christ His Son can you receive the gift of **inheriting eternal life**. God only grants **eternity** when there is **no sin**. Sin must be **destroyed**.

The real **spiritual lesson** about the **rich man** and **salvation** is answered by Jesus in Matthew 19:25-26. After The Disciples heard Christ's answer to the **rich man**, they said in amazement, "**Who then can be saved?**" Jesus answers how the rich man and others receive eternal life! "**With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.**" Wow! Man can't do it; **only God must do it for you!** Keeping **The Letter of The Law** doesn't give **salvation**. Only God can **make you perfect** through Christ. That is why **eternal life** is a **gift and cannot be earned**. Jesus said "**with men it is impossible.**" That is why you **must rest "in Christ"** or let God do it. Christ is The Sabbath.

In Matthew 5, Jesus said He did not come to **destroy the law but to fulfill or complete it**. Remember, Jesus came to **magnify the**

law and make it **honorable** (Isaiah 42:21). You have to be **more righteous than the scribes and Pharises to be in God's kingdom** (Matthew 5:20). They thought it was necessary to keep The Letter of The Law. But Christ told the rich man it wasn't "**good enough**" for **salvation**.

Jesus clearly teaches in Matthew 5, 6 and 7 what is required to be in God's **kingdom**. One must have a Godly heart so human nature is changed to a Godly nature and only God, through Christ, can do it for you. That is why Jesus said in Matthew 5:48, "**Be ye therefore perfect even as Your Father which is in heaven is perfect.**" God is reproducing Himself **spiritually**, so He can fulfill His **purpose** to be **all in all** (I Corinthians 15:28). Only God can reproduce Himself by and through His Son.

In Matthew 11:28, Jesus invites everyone, "**Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.**" This is God's "**rest in Christ.**" This is the original Seventh Day Sabbath in **the garden** when **God rested from His work**, which depicts **salvation**. Eternal Life can only come from God doing the work. The Tree of Life is there with God pouring out His Holy Spirit. Christ and God are The Sabbath's **rest**.

Read what Jesus reveals about resting "**in Christ.**" In Matthew 11:29-30, "**Take my yoke [work] upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your soul [or life]. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.**" This is God's **rest** as described in Hebrews 3 and 4. This is what The Seventh Day Sabbath is all about, **God's rest**. Just as The Commandments produce a change of heart to a Godly nature, The Sabbath is made for man and not man for The Sabbath.

The Commandments given to Moses includes The Seventh Day

Sabbath, as **a remembrance of God's original Sabbath** when God did the **work** for man. This Sabbath was **made for man** which included **salvation** with The Tree of Life.

The Sabbath **command** given to Moses, "**Man was made for the Sabbath.**" Man did the work and therefore **man** could rest from his work. Man could **not do any work** on The Sabbath, such as picking corn, healing or making a fire, etc. The Sabbath command literally restricted **man from any work**. Now resting "**in Christ,**" God's Sabbath, **The Sabbath is made for man**. That is why Jesus said it was all right to pick corn or wheat on The Sabbath if you or your family were hungry. In fact, it applied to anyone who needed help.

Christ even magnified The Sabbath where God The Father and Christ do heavy work as long as it involved **good works** for **salvation**. In John 5:19-34 Jesus explains the work He and The Father do (**even**) on The Sabbath. Then after explaining His work, Christ concludes in John 5:34, "**But I receive not testimony [witness] from man; but these things I say, that ye might be saved.**" There it is clearly revealed that God and Christ work (**even**) on The Sabbath. It is a **good work**, which can give **salvation**. This is Christ's complete answer concerning **eternal life** in refernece to the **rich man's** question about **salvation**.

Remember, always keeping The Ten Commandments in The Letter never gives **salvation**. It is your **duty** to keep The Commandments (Ecclesiastes 12:13 and Luke 17:10. This is why Jesus **loved** him. Remember, the rich man had always done what was expected of him.

After the rich man asked what he lacked, Jesus revealed it was a

spiritual matter of one's **heart**. Only God has the ability to do that work through His Son, Jesus (Matthew 1`9:26). God through Christ must write The Commandments "**in your heart**" where your very nature can be changed. That is *The New Covenant* and not *The Old Covenant*. *The Old Covenant* Letter of The Law cannot change your nature. That is why Jesus said you cannot put **new wine** in **old wine skins**. If one forces human nature to change, it will burst or fall apart. Christ is The One who, through God's Holy Spirit, changes your human nature by changing **your heart**. That is why Christ came (Hebrews 10:9-20). Paul wrote this is a **new way of living and the commandments become a matter of heart**. Only God can accomplish that miracle of changing your heart.

Jesus now shows a **new way** for **Christians** to **keep The Sabbath**. Christ enlarges or magnifies The Law by making it **honorable**. How? BY making it **superior** to The Letter of The Law. **The Sabbath was made for man**, that is by **resting "in Christ"** you actually receive **salvation as a gift**. Now to address how Christians are to **keep The Sabbath** so it is **honorable**.

Christian Sabbath Keeping

Since Jesus came to enlarge The Law and make it superior to The Law of Moses, exactly what did Christ have to do? Hebrews partly gives you the answer. The *Book of Hebrews* relates to the superiority of Christ's Priesthood.

The Priesthood of Levi, under Moses, was only a shadow of what was to come (Hebrews 3:5). Jesus was to build the real **temple**, which is Christianity, where God would dwell. Just as John 4:24 states once **the temple** in Jerusalem was gone, Christians **must worship God spiritually** since **God is a spirit**.

Sabbath keeping for Christians is raised to a **higher standard** than merely a **memorial**. Under Jesus as a different **high priest**, “**Melchizedek**” **requires a change in The Law** (Hebrews 7:12)! A new Priesthood changed the very **purpose** of The Law from physical works by **man** to **spiritual “works”** which actually produces a change of **nature or literally a change of heart**. Only God can do this and that is why Jesus said **The Sabbath was made for man**. It actually offers **eternal life** through God’s Holy Spirit, **The Tree of Life**. Our High Priest, Jesus, The Christ reveals how a Christian is to keep The ommandments regarding The Sabbath.

Jesus declares who are heavy-laden to **enter Christ’s rest** (Matathew 11:28-30). Later, Jesus told how His Disciples plucked the corn and ate it on The Sabbath (Matthew 12:1-21). This broke The Letter of The Law in Exodus 16. After adding two examples where David broke The Letter of The Law, as well as The Levitical Priests did every Sabbath, bythe hard work they did in **the temple**; Jesus said “they were **guiltless**.”

Jesus, speaking of Himself in Maatthew 12:6 said, “**But I say unto you, that in this place is one greater than the temple** [where the priests were allowed to break The Law of The Sabbath].” Remember, Jesus is **The Master** or **Lord** of **The Sabbath**. He is **The Sabbath** as Mattahew 12:8 reveals. Now Jesus gives you **the conditions** where one is **guiltless** and can do work on The Sb-bath just like God and His Son do. “**But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless**” (Matthew 12:7).

All The Law is a spiritual matter for Christians having a right heart. **God is love** (I John 4:8). “**Love is the fulfilling of the law** completes The Law]” (Romans 13:10). The Law about The

Sabbath is all about mercy and goodness and helping. The **entire holy, righteous law of God is based upon love**. The Letter of The Law was to baring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). Then, The Letter of The Law, with all it's **legal** demands or **works** vanished because you now had Christ (Hebrews 8:13). You are now "**in Christ**" (Colossians 1:27). From that point The Law becomes a **spiritual matter of the heart** which solely is based on "**love**."

The Great Commandment "**Loving God**" and your neighbor, is complete when your whole being is "agape" just like Christ and God. Now Jesus changes how Christians keep The Commandments and especially The Sabbath. After the **corn incident**, Jesus was in **the synagogue** on The Sabbath and saw a man who had a **withered hand** and He asked this pertinent question regarding The Sabbath. "**Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days?**" Christ followed up and gave the example of sheep falling into a pit on The Sabbath and said they, naturally, would pull the sheep out but how much "**more**" is a **man** than **sheep** (Matthew 12:9-11)?

Then Jesus makes an astonishing command concerning The Sabbath. "**How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days**" (Matthew 12:12). Jesus expanded The Law from The Letter to **the spirit**. As **Lord** or **Master of The Sabbath** Jesus changed The Law of The Sabbath. Doing **good works** toward God and man is **lawful** on The Sabbath. The Sabbath in The **Garden** was truly **made for man**.

After Jesus gave this new understanding for Christians in keeping The Sabbath, He **healed the man** by having God's **love**. Just as God gave Adam and Eve **paradise** and the choice for **salvation**, now Jesus is allowing you to have a passport to **salvation**. Jesus, Himself, is perfecting The Sabbath and making it more honorable.

CHAPTER 5

THE SERVANT AND THE HEIR

Christians are now HEIRS and no longer SERVANTS or slaves. It is therefore expedient for Christians to know the difference in keeping The Sabbath SPIRITUALLY. What is the difference between The Letter of The Law, in bondage, and the SPIRIT of The Law, as an HEIR having LIBERTY?

Servants And Heirs

At times, a certain biblical subject may be difficult to comprehend. This may be so, especially when you try to understand the differences between *The Old* and *New Testaments*.

First, you must understand both are based upon The Torah or The Law, which included *The Old Covenant*.

The Old Covenant is where you must keep everything in The Letter or by “**physical commands**.” On the other hand, *The New Covenant* is a matter of keeping The Law by allowing God to write His commandments in a Christian’s heart and mind. *The Old Covenant* makes you a “**servant**” which *The New Covenant* make you an “heir.”

There is even a simpler and even easier way to know the difference between a **servant** and an **heir**. Both keep the same Law but both keep it in different ways. Let *The Bible* make the distinction.

Servants

Paul makes an astounding statement concerning The Law, “**now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord [master] of all**” (Galatians 4:1).

Even a prince who is to be “**an heir**” to a throne (as king), when still a child is like a **servant**. In this verse the word for “servant” in the Greek is “doulos.” This is a different Greek word for “servant” than “diakonos” or “a waiter who serves others.” “Doulos” applies to “a slave.” They are owned and in bondage to someone or something. They, in each case, must be taught and trained. Paul is telling you even if one is a prince but still a child in heart, the prince is regarded as a slave. That is why Paul continues in Galatians 4:2, “**But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father.**”

This royal child is treated just as a slave would be and must do all they are told by others in authority. Until the father decides this child receives his inheritance he is in bondage as a slave. This can't be any clearer. Paul then declares, “**Even so we, [Christians] were in bondage under the elements of the world**” (Galatians 4:3). Slaves or servants to elements of the world. What are the elements which make Christians –slaves?

Paul followed The Law of Moses as he was taught by Gamaliel. This was Paul's religious system by following **the works** of The Law of Moses. Pagans also followed their own **mystery system** as a religion. Both did the human works or elements of the world until they came to understand and were converted.

The Greek for “element” is “stoicheion” which means “something

orderly in arrangement.” It is **of this world** as done by humans which has a set physical system. If one is speaking of religion then it is a “religious and physical system of worship.” It is what humans follow **over and over again** but in “an orderly manner.” It is their form of religion and they are slaves or servants to it. Does *The Bible* relate to what Paul is referring to? Yes, it does! It is so descriptive you cannot deny its meaning if you are honest with yourself.

An Allegory

Paul, out of concern reveals the answer, “**My little children [slaves], of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you**” (Galatians 4:19). “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law?**” (Galatians 4:21). Paul, in this case defines “under The Law” not as a penalty but exactly what The Law literally says, “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law?**” (Galatians 4:21).

The Apostle said if you want to be under The Law then listen to what The Law reveals, “**For it is written [The Law] that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid [servant slave] the other by a free woman [heir]. But he who was of the bond-woman [servnat] was born after the flesh [carnal] but he of the free-woman [heir] was by promise [a gift]**” (Galatians 4:22-254).

The subject is the difference between being “**a servant**” as, **the bondwoman** or the **free woman** as “**an heir**” to a promise, (as in a “**will**”). God defines the difference between a servant, slave and an heir. Now for the answer! “**Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; [old and new] the one from The Mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage [slavery] which is Agar [Hagar]**” (Galatians 4:24).

Paul clearly separates *The Old Law of Moses* and *The New Covenant Law of Christ*. The old one creates a bondage or being in slavery.

In Greek the word “allegory” means “what to do” or “a constant harangue.” It signifies “one is a servant” or “in slavery and needs to be told everything” and “what to do, each and every time.” That is why James 2:10 states if one keeps *The Old Covenant*, (The Law of Moses) then they must keep every part of it. Why? Because to keep *The Old Covenant* you have put yourself in bondage as a servant or a slave. You must do everything without the slightest infraction, as a servant or slave.

Now read Galatians 4:25 which simply defines *The Old Covenant Law of Moses*, “**For this Agar [Hagar] is Mount Sinai in Arabia, [The Law of Moses] and answered to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage [slavery] with her children**” [Jews]. This refers to The Apostles’ time-period before the destruction of **The Temple**. This is why Jesus said, “**The Pharisees and Sadducees sit in Moses seat.**” This was **The Old Covenant**, The Law of Moses and Christ said, “**do what they tell you**” (Matthew 1:7-10). This was The City of Jerusalem in bondage to The Law of Moses. By rejecting Christ, Jerusalem was in slavery to Rome.

The Heir

Paul states Christians are not under the bondage or slavery of a doing everything The Law of Moses demands. Why? Because Christians are from The Spiritual Jerusalem in heaven. That is why Hebrews makes a profound statement concerning *The New Covenant* and its Priesthood (Galatians 4:26-31). With The Priesthood being changed there is “made of necessity” **a change also of The Law** (Hebrews 7:12).

To be in *The Old Covenant* or in The Letter (with Moses) is to be in complete **bondage**. You would be required to keep **all** The Law perfectly without a single exception. Every legal work is required. When you follow The Law of Moses, you are in slavery and bondage. This refers to physical Jerusalem on earth and *The Old Covenant* and to be truthful with you, no one can **ever** keep The Law.

In *The New Covenant*, you as a Christian, are now **an heir** and **no longer in slavery**. *The New Covenant* through Christ and His Administration changes your nature by writing God's Law in **your heart** and **mind** (Romans 2). However, this Priesthood does not come from Jerusalem on earth but Jerusalem "**in heaven**" where Jesus administers The Law **spiritually**. You are no longer servants or slaves to The Letter of The Law but you have liberty by Christ making you perfect through God's Holy Spirit. The change to Melchizedec "**in heaven**" makes the heavenly Jerusalem, **the mother** of all Christians. As heirs, you are free from the demands of The Letter in order for you to get **salvation**. Now The Law becomes a **spiritual matter** dependant on Christ by The Holy Spirit.

No longer are your sins passed over or covered for another year from one "**atonement**" to another. Now, Christ has atoned you and "**your sins are not only forgiven but forgotten.**"

Hebrews 7 in no way states that any ministers, being humans on **this earth**, are now Levites. Read Hebrews' answer concerning The Priesthood. Following Chapter 7, Hebrews 8:4-5 reveals, "**For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.**"

No minister can claim he is a Levite on this earth. Jesus is High

Priest, but only in heaven. If Jesus, Himself were on earth, He would **not be a priest**. On earth, only The True Levites can serve in **the earthly temple**. That is why the physical **temple** will be restored. Therefore, only a Levite serving in **the temple can take tithes**. A Levite has no inheritance whereas Christians and the ministry do have an inheritance (Ephesians 1).

Christians, as **heirs**, worship God “**in the heavenly temple**,” which is a spiritual matter and are no longer in bondage to The Letter of The Law. The Law is **spiritual** (Romans 7:14). Christian's sins are forgiven through Christ. You are in God's **kingdom** as His **sons** and, therefore, no longer **servants**.

Hebrews 8:13 ends the matter of *The Old and New Covenant* by saying “**The Old**” is aging and ready to vanish. Christians are now heirs and no longer **servants** in God's **kingdom**. This heavenly Jerusalem is free and not under bondage or slavery.

Then Galatians 4:30 declares you **cannot** be under **two covenants**. If you believe you are to keep The Law of Moses and have God's Law written in your heart and mind, it is impossible. You cannot put old wine and new wine together. Plainly, Paul said, “**Cast out the bondwoman [servant] and her son.**” *The Old Covenant* of The Law of Moses cannot make a person “**an heir.**” **The Old Covenant** can only make one a servant and, therefore, can never be an heir! How clear and simple. Then Paul solidifies this point in Galatians 4:31. “**So then, brethren we are not children of the bondwoman [slave], but of the free [New Covenant].**”

Paul issues a warning to those who want to be circumcised. Why? “**Behold, I Paul say unto you [Christians], that if ye be circumcised, Christ profits you nothing.**” Your sins are not forgiven and you cannot be an heir. This can not written any simpler. Now,

to put a final end of contention to *The Old Covenant* for Christians. **“For I testify [witness] again, to every man that is circumcised that he is a debtor to do the whole law.”** There it is, Christians are not required to be circumcised and do the whole Law because, then you, as a Christian cannot be Christ’s heir. It is The Holy Spirit which, only, can write God’s Law in your heart and mind.

The Old and New Covenants are **two separate and different contracts**. Both, combined cannot be done. The Old makes you a servant and not an heir. The Old tells you what to do, as **“a harangue,”** while the other gives you God’s **righteousness**. *The New Covenant* cleans your nature so you can be like Christ and God, The Father. As you Father makes you one of His sons, like Christ, you become an **heir** in God’s **kingdom**. Galatians 4:5 reveals if you are now under *The New Covenant*, you are adopted from flesh to be **“spirit”** as God’s very sons and **heirs**. The Law becomes a spiritual matter of the heart. What becomes a Sabbath and Holy Day requirement is from your heart and mind. You become, as Christians, exactly what those **Days mean** or **portray**.

As you **rest** “in Christ,” true Christians keep those **Days** by doing **good works** and not only on The Sabbath, but **everyday**. That is why Jesus said, **“it is lawful to do good on The Sabbath.”** You are now **heirs of God**.

CHAPTER 6

THE SPIRITUAL SABBATH: GOD'S REST

As master of God's Sabbath where The Sabbath is made for man and not man for The Sabbath, keeping The Sabbath now becomes spiritual. Christians, like God and Christ, do good works on The Sabbath, even when hard work is required. Scripturally you have proven it is lawful to do good on The Sabbath (Matthew 12:12). But does this change of The Law apply to all Sabbaths?

Even The Holy Days

When Christ healed the impotent man and told him to take up his bed, He was accused of telling the man to do hard work, as well as healing him. This was a Sabbath, but this was a special Sabbath, **a high day, during the feast.**

Christ said that He and His Father work even on The Sabbath (John 5:17). This Sabbath was **a high day during a feast day, "After this there was a feast of the Jews' and Jesus went up to Jerusalem"** (John 5:1). This healing took place during **The Feast, a Holy Day Sabbath.**

So Christ revealed doing **good works** not only on a weekly Sabbath, but also Christians are to keep The Holy Day Sabbaths, **spiritually**, as well. Every Sabbath, weekly or Holy Days, are to be kept by Christians doing **good works** and it is **lawful** (Matthew 12:12). This changes entirely The Sabbath Law involving The

Holy Day Sabbaths. Why? In Romans 7:14 Paul stated The LAW is spiritual. Remember, The Law of Moses had **worldly elements** to it. Paul called them the **works** or **commands** of The Law that were done as **human works**. These were all the **legal works** of The Law as administered by Moses. Paul referred to these as **dead works** in Hebrews 6:1. They never changed human nature.

Christ who ended the curse or penalty of The Law declares now The Law is a **spiritual matter** even in regard to the weekly Sabbath, as well as, The Holy Days. What is the reason? These Sabbath **rests** all pictured or were a shadow of God's **rest** where God does the **work**. The weekly Sabbath and The Holy Days were made for **man** and not **man** for The Sabbath, including The Holy Days. How were The Holy Days **made for man, as well?**

Seventh Day

The number seven has a very significant meaning to God. God reveals its meaning and why it is a **sign** to God and manifests His people. In The Garden of Eden, God rested on **The Seventh Day** from **all His work**, which was **very good** or **perfect**. If Adam and Eve had **eaten** of **The Tree of Life**, they would have grown into **perfection** while being in **God's rest, God's kingdom**. The number **seven** is a **sign** of **God's perfection**, His "**work**." **The Sabbath** was truly made **for man** and **not man for The Sabbath**.

The number seven manifests God's perfection, not merely the weekly Seventh Day, but also The High Seventh Day during God's Holy Days. Each Seventh Day declares God's perfection according to **His plan**.

- 1 PASSOVER: On Passover, the slaying of a lamb, a "work" of The Law, was spiritually replaced by the**

death of Jesus as the slain Lamb. This deed of The Law was replaced by the spiritual significance of the bread and wine. This spiritually replaces The Lamb with Christ's body and blood (Revelation 5).

- 2 UNLEAVENED BREAD: This was replaced by Christ's blood (I Corinthians 5:6-7). The First and Seventh Days of Unleavened Bread are Sabbaths. No work is to be done. Spiritually, Christ did "the work" by His death. It started with The First Day where you rest "in Christ" by His death. The Seventh Day of The Feast concludes with The Seventh Day where Christ makes you perfect in His Rest to be like Him (Ephesians 4).**
- 3 PENTECOST: The Fiftieth Day since your sins are forgiven, you are granted God's Holy Spirit, to be able to come to the truth. This Sabbath changed from the observance of a day to virtually receiving God's Spirit so you can have a spiritual change to know the truth.**
- 4 FEAST OF TRUMPETS: This ushers The Return of Jesus as King of Kings (Revelation 11:15 and Revelation 15). God's kingdom, "a spiritual kingdom," takes over the physical government of the physical world for one thousand years. Spiritually, The Bride meets Jesus in the clouds with the angels and have eternal life "spiritually." This is His Bride who invites the wedding guests to The Wedding Feast (Revelation 21 and 22). This Sabbath's rest is for the whole world during the millennium.**

- 5 **DAY OF ATONEMENT:** This observance of this Sabbath is for Christians who enter God's "rest" and who are recipients of God's spirit. They have entered God's spiritual rest (Hebrews 4 and 10). Christ has atoned Christians or brought them back to have fellowship with The Father by His Spirit.

- 6 **FEAST OF TABERNACLES:** This Feast of Eight Days has Sabbaths on The First Day and The Eighth Day. Tabernacle foreshadows one thousand years of world peace, while humanity is still human in temporary, physical bodies (II Peter 1:14). In The Letter of The Law, they dwell in temporary dwellings. The Bride of Christ who is now spiritual, like Jesus, rule with Him over this physical earth for the millennium. World peace starts with The Return of Jesus at The 7th Trump and the one-thousand-year reign begins five days after Christ atones the physical earth to this Millennial Reign. After The Seven Day Feast of Tabernacles, The Eighth Day Sabbath follows.

- 7 **EIGHTH DAY:** This Eighth Day is after The Millennium Reign and is a Sabbath's rest. Why? There is no eighth day in a calendar week. This Eighth Day Sabbath begins The New Heaven and New Earth, where everyone is now spirit and have continual access to The Tree of Life to dwell with God eternally (Revelation 21 and 22).

This completes God's **plan** as revealed in Ephesians 1 and God's Spiritual Kingdom rules with each man receiving his **reward** according to his works. When you conclude The Sabbath's **rest** of Genesis where God builds anew, you need to ask, what was

destroyed by Adam and Eve? God and His Son, Jesus, with God, The Father, continues the unfinished **spiritual works** that Christ came to restore (Matthew 18:11).

Each weekly Sabbath and all The Holy Feast Days ushered in a new type or shadow of God's **rest**. In each case, the number **seven** signifies a new Sabbath's rest by God to reveal His **perfect Law of Salvation**. Now the whole world is in **God's rest** or a **Sabbath's delight** (Isaiah 56:2 and Isaiah 58:13).

The Apostle Paul reveals The Sabbath and Holy Days are a **shadow** or **prophecy** of things to come. These shadows of things, yet to come, reveal what is a **reality** (though in this world they are only in type). The number seven in each case, "**prophetically**" denotes a perfect future period, just as in the original **seventh day** when God said, "**Everything God did was very good**" (Genesis 1:31).

CHAPTER 7

WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?

Paul clearly stated, “Now this I say brethren that FLESH and BLOOD [humans] cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption [sin] inherit incorruption” (I Corinthians 15:50).

Being human, being sinful, keeps humanity from **salvation**. You must become **spiritual** and **without sin** to receive the **gift of eternal life**. In fact, you are to **grow spiritually** until **you mature to the stature of Christ** (Ephesians 4:13).

Significantly you are in “**a process of spiritual growth**” since it requires **maturation** to be like Jesus. Maturation can be a very long process. Everyone does not achieve it all at the **same time**, but each **man in his own order** (I Corinthians 15:23).

Doctrinal Arguments

The folly of humanity is to argue about doctrine or teaching. If each person must grow spiritually in their own order, how can everyone be at the same understanding at the same time? It can't be done. It is impossible.

Paul spent the entire chapter of Romans 14 warning Christians are not to **argue** over any “**spiritual understanding**.” He charged each person is at a different level of **faith**. Faith is what one trusts and believes **implicitly**. That is why Paul said, “**For whatsoever is not of faith is sin**” (Romans 14:23).

What everyone or anyone explicitly **believes**, as Christians, you must highly respect each other and **not argue**. Why not? If you believe and then do not follow what you believe, than Paul declares you, yourself, are sinning. This can be so even if their belief is **untrue**.

For Christians to argue over their “**belief**” is **offensive to God**. Jesus warned not to **offend** any Christian (Matthew 18:6). Paul is a witness and Christ is a witness. Two witnesses tell Christians they **should not be arguing** about doctrinal differences of **faith**. **All Christians** should be **truth seekers**, even if they eventually, are proved to be **wrong**.

Since you are to respect other Christians’ **level of faith**, as well as not to **spend time offending others**, then you are in a position to help each other and both can grow spiritually. To grow **spiritually**, you need to know the difference between “**human understanding**” and “**spiritual growth**.”

Human And Spiritual Understanding

What is the difference between “**human growth**” and “**spiritual growth**?” Human growth is what a person does by their own effort and intelligence. Spiritual growth is what you allow God to “work in you” through His Holy Spirit. Notice what Jesus said, “**That which is born of the flesh [human] is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit**” (John 3:6). What growth you make on your own is **not spiritual growth**. Only what God does by His Holy Spirit is **spiritual growth**. That is why Jesus claimed the **flesh** profits nothing (John 6:63). It becomes evident, every increase in **spiritual growth** cannot be by what a human being can do, since only God can make you like **Him**. It is God’s “**work**.” This is what the **original Sabbath in the garden**

was all about. It was God who made everything **good** (Genesis 1:31). What is **goodness**?

Only God Is Good

The rich man asked Jesus, “Good Master, what good thing shall I do that **I may have eternal life?**” Quite clear! He did not ask if he should keep the doctrines of his denomination or church **group**. The rich man asked Christ what he should **do** to receive **salvation**. Christ’s answer should be all any **Christian** needs to **accept** as to what he/she **must do** in order to be **saved**.

Before telling the rich man what he, as a human, can personally **do** to receive **Salvation**, he had to **understand** something very important that Jesus wanted him to know. Jesus said, “**Don’t call me good, because only God is good.**” Even Jesus knew true **goodness** can only come **from God**. Jesus said, “**I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of The Father which hath sent me**” (John 5:30).

Before Christ told the rich man what he personally could do, He told the rich man not to call Him **good**, because only God, The Father, has **real goodness**. In Greek, “good” carries the meaning of “a **goodness** which can **benefit true goodness** to others.” God is **love** and **that is what goodness is** (John 4:8). Since God is Holy and **righteous**, He is The Only One who consists of “**goodness**” and, therefore, the only One who has it **to give**.

From the beginning, Christ warned the **rich man**, only God can **make Jesus good, and you, yourself, “good.”** Then, He continued to answer the **rich man** what he as a son of a man, a human being, could do. Jesus told the rich man what all humans could

do. **“But if thou will ENTER INTO LIFE, KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS.”** To be clear, He gave examples of The Ten Commandments (Matthew 19:18-19). The rich man had kept The Ten Commandments since childhood. Then *The Scriptures* reveal Jesus **loved** him. Why? Christ still loved him because it was **all a human** could do as their **duty** to obey God. Luke 17:10 states keeping The Ten Commandments is **a duty** God gave **mankind** to do, with nothing more. Keeping The Ten Commandments doesn't give **salvation**. Only God gives **salvation**, because only God has that **goodness** to give you.

Solomon, who lived **all** the human experiences to give you examples, said in Ecclesiastes 12:13, **“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man.”** The word “duty” is not in the early manuscripts. All a human being can do, to please God, is to keep The Commandments. Humans cannot be **good** like God. So Jesus completes the matter of **salvation** concerning the **rich man**. In Matthew 19:21 Christ tells **the rich man**, **“If thou [you] wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, [all you have] and give to the poor... and come and follow me.”**

The rich man couldn't do it and Jesus added, **“It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God [eternal life].”**

Keeping The Ten Commandments is a human's duty, but obviously it cannot give **salvation**. Only **“the total giving up of what one has”** such as: success, wealth, family, country, etc, for God and following Christ will give **eternal life**. You must become **like Jesus** (Ephesians 4), to become **perfect** and have **God's goodness** to receive **salvation** as a **gift**. You must have a right heart – a heart like God's.

This shocked The Disciples. Then they wanted to know if this be so, “**who can be saved?**” (Matthew 19:25). Christ’s answer, “**With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible**” (Matthew 19:26).

How clear! Being righteous by keeping The Ten Commandments doesn’t give **eternal life**. Only God can give **salvation**, by making you **perfect** in His **goodness**, through Christ. Only God can make you Holy like Him, by and through His Son, Jesus.

Spiritual growth therefore is **imperative**. God’s Holy Spirit leads you to **truth** (John 14:26). No religion can give **salvation**. Christianity **is a way of life** and not some **religious system** of human works. This even includes The Ten Commandments. Christ plainly states what is necessary to receive **salvation**. Only God, The Father, through Christ, by the power of God’s Holy Spirit, can make you perfect and have **God’s goodness**.

God’s Holy Spirit

Spiritual growth cannot come by mankind’s efforts. It is your duty to keep God’s Commandments, but even they do not bestow salvation. No human deeds of The Law or any human elements of the world can **give** eternal life.

Salvation can only come as a **gift from God**. God is The Only One from whom you can receive **salvation**. God does this by Christ through The Holy Spirit. What does God’s Holy Spirit do with your human nature? “**And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost [spirit] which is given unto us**” (Romans 5:5). You receive God’s “love” by His Holy Spirit and now what does that Holy Spirit do? “**But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, [Spirit], whom**

the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (John 14:26). God’s “**love**” is granted you by **His Holy Spirit** which shall reveal **all truth** to you. How clear and simple! Only God through The Holy Spirit gives you God’s “**love**” which gives you **all things**. This is your answer to grow **spiritually**.

Only God can grant you “**spiritual growth**” by His Holy Spirit which gives you **God’s “love.”** God’s **love** fulfills The Law “**in you.**” God writes His Law in your heart and mind by changing your **nature**. To have God’s **goodness**, then you receive the **gift of salvation**.

Only God, The Father, through His Son, Jesus, can accomplish this for you. **Spiritual growth** is a process which God does in each of you in a set order. Therefore, you must make every Christian effort not to offend anyone so you can all grow in the grace and knowledge of Christ (Ephesians 4:13).

Once you are spiritually **growing** like Jesus, you will **no longer** be tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine (Ephesians 4:14). How? Because then, like Christ, you speak the **truth in love, God’s love**. Then, and only then, can you know you are growing spiritually to be more like Jesus.

Spiritual Maturing Of Ministers And Christians

Paul clearly discloses the purpose of the ministry and Christianity in reference to **spiritual growth** in Ephesians 4:11-16. Paul asserts **The Preaching Ministry, Apostles, Evangelists, Prophets, Pastors and Elders** are to be a guide for **the church** to **spiritually** mature Christians to be like Christ. **Spiritual growth** is an

individual process (Ephesians 4:6-7) given by God. Each of you have a different level of spiritual understanding as a gift from His Holy Spirit (John 14:26). God, then, by His Holy Spirit, leads everyone, individually, into **all truth**.

Paul continues and states the ministry is in **the church** to help everyone become **perfect**. But how? The ministry is to be a shepherd who keeps you **growing spiritually**. This spiritual growth occurs by finally coming to a unity in **faith** and **knowledge** just like Jesus.

This very statement reveals everyone is at different levels of doctrinal understanding. Notice what Paul said, “**That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the slight [personal interpretation] of men...**” (Ephesians 4:14).

Since each of you vary as Christians in personal understanding of doctrine, **you must not argue** or **be angry** with those who understand “**spiritual truth**” differently. Ephesians 4:25 reveals each of you should be sure of the **truth** and never tell a **lie**. How? By seeking what is **the truth** and not merely trying to be **right (self-right)**. This does nothing but cause disputes and causes you to be tossed to and fro.

Then he warns, “**Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath**” (Ephesians 4:26). With everyone at different **levels** of spiritual growth, **do not allow** yourself to be **angry** with another Christian and, for certain, get over it by nightfall. Now Paul discloses **how** you are to behave with Christian brothers and sisters in reference to doctrinal differences. “**But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him [Christ] in all things, which is the head, even Christ**” (Ephesians 4:15).

Now the truth of **spiritual growth** is obvious. **Spiritual Growth** is dependant upon the love you have for others, helping to understand, by the truth of spiritual knowledge and not how you personally may believe.

By loving each other like Christ, you grow **spiritually**, united by God's **love**, till all come to the stature of Christ. That is **spiritual growth**. The Sabbath and The Holy Days are shadows of **good things to come**. They do not produce **salvation**, but reveal what God is doing to make you **like him** or God to be "**all in all**."

CHAPTER 8

PURPOSE OF GOD'S DAYS

Scripturally, it becomes apparent, without you having the knowledge of The True Seventh Day Sabbath and God's Holy Days, you cannot know God's Plan of Salvation.

Keeping man-made days can cause confusion. Christmas, as the birth of Christ, only discloses one thing, and that is, The Savior was born, but certainly not on that day. Easter, having Easter eggs and revealing the fertility of rabbits, certainly doesn't relate to God's **purpose**. Nor does Halloween or Valentine's Day or any human's ideas show you how to worship God.

Only the original Seventh Day Sabbath, in The Garden of Eden reveals God's purpose was for humanity to eat of The Tree of Life and that Christ came to pay for sin, not on Easter, but The Pass-over. Christ gave you The Holy Spirit on Pentecost and atoned you to God on The Day of Atonement.

By keeping "days" instituted by mere humans just causes religious confusion. That is why every religion poses so many questions and therefore is inundated by a plethora of denominations.

Do you go to **heaven**? Do you burn forever in **hell**? Is there eternal hell fire? What do you do forever in **heaven** or wherever God's **kingdom** is? On and on it goes. Unless you understand The Sabbath, The Seventh Day in The Garden, as well as knowing God's Holy Days in *scripture*, you will never get the **true** an-

swers. It isn't what man is doing to worship God, but **what God is doing** to give you **salvation**. This can only happen by knowing God's Days as you read in *The Bible*.

Knowledge Of God

Christan denominations and The Jewish Community only have partial truths. Christianity only knows **biblical truth** about **salvation** in reference to which Days of God they believe or worship. The Jews who know which day is The True Sabbath and Holy Days understand much about God's purpose, but since they rejected Jesus as The Messiah, they are still in flux, looking for Him to come.

Certain Christian denominations believe that Christ is The Pass-over Lamb who died for your sins and on Pentecost received God's Holy Spirit. They do not know the rest of The Holy Days and therefore do not understand the rest of **the truth** or plan God is putting in place.

Other Christian groups believe that Jesus will return at the time of The Seventh Trump or The Feast of Trumpets. Some even believe in The Day of Atonement because Christ has **returned** to God. That is about it.

Some Christian groups accept all of God's Holy Days and therefore, have a more accurate **biblical account** of how to worship God and understand some of God's **plan**.

There is a direct correlation between knowing God's **plan** of **salvation** by knowing **The Seventh Day Sabbath and His Holy Days**. By mixing human-made religious days, you are in confusion or God calls it "Babylon." It is a mixture of **good** and **evil**,

directly tied into your knowledge of **The True Biblical Seventh Day Sabbath and His Holy Days**.

Diversity Of Belief

If we would strictly revert to following **biblical truth only**, all Christians would be in far more **doctrinal agreement**. God's **True Seventh Day Sabbath and Holy Days** would unite Christians to a greater extent.

Those who understand God's Holy Days know you are **not going to heaven**, but that God is going to build A New Heaven and A New Earth. God is coming down from Heaven to a NEW EARTH to dwell with humanity. With The New Heaven and New Earth, God will make **all things new**. No more death, pain or sorrow.

Everyone will **be in paradise**. That is how important knowing the meaning of The Sabbath and Holy Days really are. Observing or keeping other days creates confusion or Babylon. That is why God states Christians should come out of Babylon which has caused nothing but confusion (Revelation 18:4).

Source Of Christian Confusion

The Apostle Paul was completely against denominational or split-types of Christianity. Why? Paul clearly explains the cause of denominational splits or a divided Christianity.

Writing to The Corinthians, Paul said, "**And I, brethren, could not speak unto you [Corinthians] as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in Christ**" (I Corinthians 3:1).

What was the cause of their carnality? "**For ye are yet carnal**

[beasts] **for whereas *there is among you envying, and strife and divisions, are ye not carnal [beasts] and walk as men***” (I Corinthians 3:3)? Read the rest of I Corinthians 3:4-11.

Paul berated them for favoring one **minister** over **another**. They picked the church of their choice by which minister they liked. This caused **divisions** and **strife**, rather than unity. What was Paul's answer? He said there is only one **doctrine** or **teaching for salvation**. What was that teaching? Paul relates that teaching in I Corinthians 3:11, **“For other foundation can no man lay than is laid, which is Jesus Christ.”** How clear and simple. Jesus is **all** doctrine and the **foundation** of it. Prove biblically what that means in **plain language**.

Christ Is The Foundation

The Sabbath and Holy Days are a **shadow** of good things to come which you have proved (Colossians 2:16-17). They are a prophecy of future events when God, through Christ, makes all things **perfect**. Jesus is the **foundation** upon which The Sabbath and Holy Day prophecies come to pass. What is this platform of **truth** which requires a **foundation**? Paul continues in I Corinthians 3:16, **“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?*”** Then, Paul warns, **“If any man defile [Greek, “destroy”] the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which *temple ye are*”** (I Corinthians 3:17).

The building Paul is discussing is God's Holy Temple. Jesus is the **foundation** of that **temple**, which is The Christian Church. It is a **spiritual temple** and that is why after the destruction of the physical temple in 70 A.D., God wanted you to only worship Him **spiritually** (John 4). Paul, in Galatians 4:19, states, **“My**

little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you." Christ as the foundation of the temple; or the chief foundation of the temple or the chief cornerstone must be formed in each Christian to duplicate Christ as the proper stones for God's Temple (I Peter 2:2-8).

Peter calls Jesus and growing Christians "**in Christ**" as "**living, precious stones.**" Christians **must become** the same quality of stone. If not, you will be rejected.

Malachi 3:17, The Prophet wrote, "**And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.**" To become perfect you must measure the stature of the fullness of Christ (Ephesians 4:12-13). The building stones of God's Temple, Christ and Christianity must all be exactly like Christ, who is the exactment of God, The Father (Hebrews 1:1-2).

In I Corinthians 3:9, Paul states Christians are laborers together and everyone is to be part of **God's building**. The Temple cannot have any precious stones which are defiled. That is why Paul states every man is going to receive **a reward** according to his works. There is a difference between being in **God's kingdom** and receiving **eternal** life.

To be in **God's kingdom** is **a gift of salvation** – to enter into **New Jerusalem** compared to those who are left out. Those who are left out receive their reward. Some in **God's kingdom** receive the reward of being The Bride of Christ (Matthew 25). Others receive the reward of **being the saved nations** and are allowed as **guests** to The Wedding in **New Jerusalem** (Revelation 21:24). Still others are not allowed in the city of New Jerusalem at all (Revelation 22:15).

There is all this diversity of doctrine and levels of faith, yet you read that each person receives their own **reward**. Some will be The **Bride of Christ**, some will be Guests to The Wedding and others will not be permitted to even attend **The Wedding Feast** (Matthew 22:11-14).

Being in God's Church does not guarantee you will be The Bride of Christ or even a Guest to The Wedding Feast. **The church** you may attend does not promise which resurrection you will be in – the first or the second. That is why salvation in **God's kingdom** is an individual matter (Philippians 2:12).

Since **salvation** in **God's kingdom** is a matter of personal involvement, it is imperative for each individual Christian to know God's **purpose**, His **will** and His **plan**. The True Sabbath, **The Seventh Day** and all The Sabbaths of The Holy Days only show you a **shadow** or **prophecy** of the wondrous things to come.

CHAPTER 9

KNOWING IN PART

What does the number seven as The Sabbath of God reveal as well as The Holy Days? You must allow *The Bible* to disclose their meanings and how Christians are to keep them. You have found The Day of God's True Sabbath depicts God's Rest. It also pictures His kingdom when everything is at peace and very good or perfect and God did the work. The number seven (7) reveals perfection whether in regard to the weekly Seventh Day or the annual Sabbath during The Holy Days. These are all prophecy of good things to come (Colossians 2:16-17).

Truth And Confusion

Amazingly, there is a direct awareness between **the truth** of God's **purpose** and **plan**; and any **Christian denomination** as to the amount of God's predestined purpose. This same reality pertains to The Jews.

Because The Jews rejected Christ as The Messiah, they only understood The Sabbath and Holy Days from the standpoint of Moses and their deliverance from slavery in Egypt.

Christians, as a whole, relate to specific Sabbath and Holy Day prophecy. If a Christian's denomination sees their religion as commemorating Christ's death as the slain Passover Lamb, their

religion emphasized The Lamb as Jesus. They regard The Passover and The Holy Spirit as God's **power**. Their religious system surrounds Christ's death and The Holy Spirit given to a Christian. If they keep Sunday because they feel Jesus was resurrected on the first day, they keep Sunday as a day of worship. Pretty much, they accepted The Passover and Pentecost. But they do not recognize the rest of God's Holy Days, they do not understand whether they are going to heaven or staying on earth.

Or, are they to burn in hell forever and be totally destroyed? Other Christian denominations feel when Christ **returns**, it will be on The Seventh Trump.

In God's Holy Day, this is The Seventh Trump or The Feast of Trumpets. Still others observe all The Holy Days (except the last, The Feast of Jubilee) which is when God releases everyone's debts or **sins** and returns them to Paradise. This Feast is **The Eighth Day** of The Feast of Tabernacles. It is kept as a Holy Sabbath, a day of perfection and a special event.

The problem is no one declares its great meaning to the world. Most who observe this day hardly understand themselves its **great meaning**. In John 7:37 it is referred to as a **great day**.

Christ, from John 7:37-40, reveals it is a day when **everyone can drink of God's Holy Spirit**. Nothing else concerning the prophecy of this **great day** is mentioned. Why not, and what does it mean?

So you see your understanding of **biblical prophecy** is tied directly to Christian's acceptance of God's Sabbath and His Holy Days, rather than human devised days such as Sundays, Easter, Halloween, etc.

In all reality, God's Holy Days (as opposed to human days) reveal God's very purpose and what God predestinated (Ephesians 1). God decrees everyone in heaven and earth to become Holy like Him by God's Holy Spirit (Ephesians 1).

Days And Years

In Galatians 4:10-11, Paul warned he was **afraid** of those Christians who observed **days** and **years**. What did he mean?

Biblically, you have read in *The Bible* only The Seventh Day, Saturday, can be God's Sabbath and only God's Holy Days reveal future prophecy about what God is **doing**.

Any other days tell you **nothing** of what God is **doing**. The other days, rather than God's Holy Days, tell you what **man does** on **those days**, but not what **God intends to do prophetically**.

Only God's Days reveal your future and what God's **kingdom** really is. You have the truth of *The Bible*, now what should Christians do about these truths?

Once you realize that a Christian's answer to **truth** is the prophetic meaning of **The Seventh Day Sabbath**, as well as God's Holy Days, instead of the world holidays, it should motivate **each Christian** to diligently **study** them and what they mean for everyone.

Colossians 2:16-17 reveals **The Sabbath** and **Holy Days** are a **shadow** or **type** of what is to come. They are **prophecy** about what God is doing by His Son, Jesus, The Christ (Colossians 2:17).

It becomes **imperative** for **all Christians** to **know** the future and

what God is doing. It has to do with **salvation**. No other **days** reveal this **truth**.

Sabbath And Holy Days

What does The Sabbath and The Holy Days foretell?

1. **SABBATH** was **God's day of rest** because **all the work He did** was **very good** or **perfect**. **The Seventh Day Sabbath** was **sanctified** as **Holy**. **The Seventh Day** of God's rest denotes **paradise**. This is what Christ meant when He said, "**The Sabbath was made for man**" (Mark 2:27). **Eternal life is available by eating of The Tree of Life**. Adam and Eve, as well as their progeny, lost God's Rest and The Tree of Good and Evil. Hebrews 3 and 4 prophetically states there is, therefore, **a keeping** of The Sabbath or **rest** for God's **people** (Hebrews 4:9). This rest is to take place in God's future **kingdom** in **The New Earth** and **New Heaven** (Revelation 21:1-6 and Revelation 22:2). The Tree of Life will once again be available in this **new paradise**. **The Seventh Day shadows** or **foretells** this future **paradise** of God's **kingdom rest**.
2. **PASSOVER** reveals Jesus as The Slain Lamb for **everyone's sins** (I Corinthians 5:7).
3. **UNLEAVENED BREAD** makes you **sinless** through Christ (I Corinthians 5:6-8).
4. **PENTECOST** is when God bestowed His Holy Spirit upon Christianity which makes them **Holy** through

Christ (Acts 2).

5. **FEAST OF TRUMPETS** declares the sounding of **The 7th Trump** when Christ **returns** to begin God's **kingdom** (I Thessalonians 4:16).
6. **DAY OF ATONEMENT** is Christ **atoning for everyone's sins** (Romans 5:11).
7. **FEAST OF TABERNACLES** is the **one-thousand-year rule when Christ and His Bride invite the world to The Wedding Feast** in The New Heaven and The New Earth (Revelation 19 to 22).
8. **THE EIGHTH DAY or LAST DAY** of The Feast is God's reign in The New Earth and New Heaven when everyone is invited to **The Wedding Feast** (John 7:37-39).

These Holy Days foretell **the purpose and the plan of God**. These are called **shadows** in Colossians 2:16-17, since they are **prophecy of better things to come**. Once these shadows occur, they are no longer **prophecy**, but **history**. Christians already are **in God's rest** "in Christ" and therefore observance of these days are no longer required for **salvation**.

You have seen that The Sabbath and The Holy Days are prophetic and reveal God's **plan** or **fulfillment** of His "**will**." However, you are about to **biblically** prove how Christians should keep The Sabbath and The Holy Days.

Hebrews 3:1-3 states that Moses was **faithful** in his **house** (Israel) to witness **Christ** by the **testimony** or **witnessing** of The Law. Hebrews 10:1-2 relates the Law of Moses could not **forgive**

sin, but was only a **shadow (prophecy) of good things to come** (Christ). That is why Paul said this *Old Covenant* which was The Law administered by Moses was only to bring them to Christ and then **cease** to be **in force** or **required for salvation**. Galatians 3:19 reveals this Law of Moses was only to last **until “the seed” should come**. This Old Covenant of The Law of Moses was only a **schoolmaster** to bring them to **repentance** (Galatians 3:24).

The observance of days and years, whether **pagan** or **Holy Days**, could not **give salvation**. The question about The **True Seventh Day Sabbath** and Holy Days, (since they are **prophecy**), should Christians keep them or not? To **biblically** understand the **truth** you must **prove** how **Christians** are to keep The Law now that Christ has come and paid for everyone's **sins**.

CHAPTER 10

THE LETTER TO SPIRITUAL

Romans 7:14 clearly states **The Law is spiritual. The Law of Moses was written as a carnal commandment (Hebrews 7:16), but now under The Melchizedek Priesthood, The Law was to be changed so salvation would be possible.**

The Old Covenant under Moses was to be disannuled because it was weak and therefore unprofitable (Hebrews 7:18). The Law made nothing perfect, which was **GOD'S** purpose (Hebrews 7:19 and Matthew 5:48). The Law of Moses with the change of Priesthood from Levitical to Melchizedek was now a spiritual matter.

Human effort to please God cannot happen through human works or deeds. Whether the observance of human-made days as Christmas, Easter, etc; or God's Sabbath and Holy Days which reveal God's plan **cannot change human nature** to be **holy** like God or Christ.

Now with the change in The Priesthood, The Law changes to a **spiritual matter** including God's Sabbath and Holy Days.

Now The Law and The Sabbaths become a matter of **salvation** to be in God's **kingdom**. With Christ writing The Law in your **heart** and **mind**, you can become **holy** and **perfect** like God and be like His Son, Jesus (Ephesians 4:13).

Becoming Prophecy

When Jesus was born by Mary, God's Word became flesh or a human being. Christ, as God's Word, was now The Son of Man or human. As a human, **the promised seed** of Adam and Eve, He was sent by God to restore what was **lost** (Matthew 18:11). What was **lost** was **eternity** or **The Tree of Life**. That is why Jesus was sent so he could **save the world** (I John 4:14). Paul said, "**For as in Adam ALL DIE** (no salvation), **even so IN CHRIST shall ALL BE MADE ALIVE**" (I Corinthians 15:22). This is God's will or purpose. How plain and **simple**. The question is how is everyone **restored to life eternal**?

As you have read **everyone must have Christ in them**. Ephesians 4:13 manifests you must become **just like Jesus, The Christ**. God's Sabbaths and Holy Days reveal how Jesus is **in you**. Christ had to pay for everyone's sins by His Passover death. He makes you **unleavened** by His blood through the power of The Holy Spirit. He will return on **The Seventh Trump** and Christ has **already atoned you to God** by His **sacrifice** and Christians will meet Him in the **clouds** as His Bride, and be with Him forevermore.

The Sabbaths and Holy Days reveal prophecy for The World's Christians. Those who have already experienced The Sabbaths and Holy Days are not required to observe them. For they, themselves, will be The Sabbath and Holy Days. For Christians, these days are not prophetic, but are history. The history extends throughout everyday of your **life** (Hebrews 3).

How Christians Keep The Sabbath And Holy Days

God wants you to worship Him **spiritually** and not in The Letter

(II Corinthians 3:1-6). Now as Jesus explained, it is **lawful** on The Sabbaths and Holy Days to **do “good”** and not only on The Sabbaths, but **everyday** (Matthew 12:12). Paul tried to reveal this **biblical truth** in I Corinthians 5:18.

Paul said, “**Let us keep The Feast,**” but how? The context is not about The Feast of Unleavened Bread, but about the **fornicator** who was having sex with his **stepmother**. Paul was **angry** because **the church tolerated** such behavior. In fact, they thought nothing of it.

He told them they **are not** to be **leavened**. He was using **leavened bread** to symbolize sin. This is the **meaning** of The Feast of **Unleavened Bread**. He reminded them they **are unleavened** (sinless) through Christ. He continued and related that they shouldn't be **leavened** as before. Then He clearly **stated** how Christians are to **keep The Feast Days**, “**Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven [being in sin] of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened [sinless] bread of sincerity and truth**” (I Corinthians 5:8).

Paul was referring to the **fornicator**, the context of how Christians should keep The **Sabbaths** and The **Holy Days**. **It isn't the observance of those days which gives salvation, but being The Sabbaths and Holy Days.**

Christian observance of those days makes it “**a prophecy**” yet to happen. For Christians, these days **are happening in their very lives daily by doing good works** (no sin). Paul clearly revealed this **truth** in Hebrews 3 and 4.

Paul in Hebrews 3:7-8 stated Christians should not be like Israel of old, who had a **wrong nature** and heart when they were in the

wilderness (being tested) because they wouldn't have **faith in God** and He would **not let them enter God's Sabbath Rest**.

Paul warned Christians to hear God's Holy Spirit **everyday** and do God's **will** by **doing good works everyday including God's Sabbaths** (Hebrews 3:13-15 and Matthew 12:12). There it is! How do Christians keep **The Sabbaths** even on **The Holy Days**? **By doing good works on The Sabbaths and Holy Days**.

Christ is The Sabbath and The Holy Days and with Christ "**in you**" (Colossians 1:27), so are Christians! It isn't the **observance** of these days which gives **salvation**, **but by being** what **they mean**. "**Christians must be Holy and sinless in Christ to be in God's kingdom**" (Matthew 5:20). That is why Paul said, "**There remaineth therefore a rest [God's kingdom] to the people of God!**" (Hebrews 4:9).

Observance Of Days Not Required

The observance of Days for Salvation are only a **shadow** or prophecy concerning God's **purpose** and **plan** through Christ. The **days** cannot make **one holy** or **perfect**, which is a requirement to be in God's **kingdom** (Ephesians 1 and Matthew 5:48).

Christians presently are not required to keep the works or legal requirements of The Law of Moses. Why not? Hebrews 7:11-19 clearly states, The Law and keeping it could **make nothing perfect**, but **the new hope**, *The Old Covenant* could not change human nature, but *The New Covenant* **could**. That is the difference! Since *The New Covenant* can change your heart and mind, Paul said in Hebrews 7:18, "**The Old Commandment was annulled.**" Clearly, *The Old Covenant* was replaced by *The New Covenant*. *The New Covenant* changes human nature through

Christ making you Holy to enter God's **kingdom**. This is what Paul was afraid of in Galatians 4:11.

Paul said, “**You [Christians] observe days and months and times and years**” (Galatians 4:10). Some say these Days and Years are **pagan days** not including God's Holy Days. Where in *The Bible* does it state **these days are pagan**? There is nowhere in *The Bible* that interprets **these days and years** are pagan. Not that pagan days do anything to change human nature either, just like God's Holy Days do not and are only a **prophecy** or a **shadow of the truth** (Colossians 2:16-17).

The problem with these days (being pagan), the context of Galatians 4 is actually referring to God's Holy Days. Galatians 4:24 reveals Hagar who had Ishmael, Abraham's firstborn son, and Isaac, Sarah's son by a miracle from God, are an **allegory** or a comparison between *The Old and New Covenants*. *The Old Covenant* represented by Hagar is in **bondage** or **slavery**. Isaac, *The New Covenant* by Sarah is **free** and not in slavery.

Then Galatians defines the days that Paul was afraid of by observing them. Paul reveals these days are those of *The Old Covenant* **from Mount Sinai** which genders to **slavery** and answers to Jerusalem. *The New Covenant* is Jerusalem which is in **heaven** with Christ as The **High Priest Melchizedek** (Galatians 4:24-26). In Galatians 4:28-31, Paul commands Christians are free from *The Old Covenant*. *The New Covenant* from Jerusalem is in **heaven**, The **Mother of us all**.

Since you are no longer of *The Old Covenant*, which is in slavery to do **every work and deed** of The Law, you should **cast out The Old Covenant**. Why? Because being in **slavery** you cannot be an **heir** of God's **kingdom**. How clear!

The observation of **the Days and Years** refer not only to **pagan** days, but God's Sabbath and Holy Days as well. What a dilemma, or is it? Christians now being **FREE** from observing any days under *The New Covenant* are **heirs** of God's **kingdom**. Does that mean The Sabbath and Holy Days are irrelevant and no longer matter to Christians?

Amazingly, you are about to **find out** these days become even **more** important under *The New Covenant* then under *The Old Covenant*.

Higher Standards

You now understand that the **observance** of the days do **not save Christians**. The **Law under Christ** demands, not the **observance** of **days, which** are **only prophecy** (a shadow), but what the days **actually mean**.

The Sabbath and Holy Days actually demand a **higher standard** of **keeping them** than merely observing the days as **things to come**. Biblically, these days all **picture Christ** and what He is doing to give you **salvation**. The **Law or Torah is spiritual**. Christians are to **worship God spiritually** because God is a **Spirit** (John 4).

In The New Covenant The Law being spiritual must therefore be kept spiritually and not in The Letter of The Old Covenant. Now as Christ is The Torah Law, you must become The Torah Law, which includes The Sabbath and The Holy Days.

The Law And The Prophets

In Matthew 5:17, Jesus said, "**Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or The prophets: I am NOT COME TO DE-**

STROY, BUT TO FULFILL.” Quite clear Christ did not come to do away with The **Law** or The **Prophets**. He came to fully fill or compete them. The Law always remains.

Then what is the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*? This is especially true when Galatians 4 proves you are to cast out *The Old Covenant* and only keep *The New Covenant* as Christians.

Two Schools

Generally, in many Christian denominations, you either believe they must keep *The Old Covenant* Letter of The Law or they annul it. *The Old Covenant*, therefore, requires you to be a **debtor**, in bondage to keep **every part of The Law**, with all it's legalistic works (Galatians 3:20).

Those who believe The **Law is done away**, no longer think The Law has any demand upon a Christian. Which is the **truth**? You are about to find out **neither**, so you must read the biblical answer.

CHAPTER 11

THE TWO PRIESTHOODS

*The Book of Hebrews clarifies the difference between **The Old Covenant** and **The New Covenant**. You will find both Covenants are based upon **The Law**. **The Law is never done away.***

Hebrews revolves around the subject that **The Priesthood of Melchizedek** is **superior** to the **angels** or any other **Priesthood**, including the **Levitical Priesthood**. Why is **The Melchizedek Priesthood superior** (Hebrews 7:19-22)?

Hebrews 7:19 states, “**For The Law made nothing perfect.**” That is the issue. One can keep **The Law** till death and not receive **SALVATION**. They may have a prosperous, healthy, safe life, but they cannot be saved. That is what Jesus tried to tell the **rich man** in Matthew 19.

He told the rich man what he lacked is being **perfect**. If the rich man wanted to have **salvation**, he had to **sell all he had**. Later Jesus told **The Disciples**, **man cannot do anything to save himself**. It is only **God who can save you**, which is **given as a gift**. How plain! Keeping **The Law**, **even The Commandments will not give salvation**. You are about to find out **The Priesthood is the answer**.

The Levitical Priesthood cannot make one perfect by doing works of **The Law** (Hebrews 7:11). Hebrews 7:12 reveals, “**For The Priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change**

also of The Law.” How simple. This change, from The Levitical Priesthood to The Melchizedek Priesthood transfers how The Law is administered.

The Law is not done away, but it was changed in it's administration. Hebrews 10:3-13 reveals this New Administration of The Law by Jesus, as Melchizedek, writes **God's Law** in your **heart** and **mind**.

Christ's **Administration** of The Law actually changes human nature to be **perfect**, like God (Matthew 5:48). The Law of Moses in his administration of The Law was only in The Letter, which brings **death** (II Corinthians 3:1-6). That is why *The Old Covenant* had to be kept **perfectly** without a flaw to be **righteous like God**. Israel, to remain God's witness to the world, had to be perfect and any capital **sin** demanded death or an eye for an eye. Now with Christ, as a new High Priest, Melchizedec, He could make you Holy and **perfect**. What a difference! This is why Abraham kept God's Commandments and Statutes under Melchizedec, by **faith** (Genesis 26:5). Abraham had FAITH and did what God's **voice** told him. Now The Law administered by Moses was **done away** or **disannulled** (Hebrews 7:18-19).

The Law of Christ administered under The Priesthood of Melchizedec changes human nature to keep God's Law in your heart and mind (Hebrews 10:8-13). *The Old Covenant*, because of its **weakness**, was now **old** and would **vanish away** when The Temple was **destroyed** in 70 A.D. So, without **The Temple**, The Law in The Letter no longer could be kept in its ENTIRETY. From 70 A.D. onward, The Law was now **in force** according to **faith** in Christ who makes you **perfect** and Holy like God, by The Holy Spirit. Now you need to examine how Christ makes you **holy like God**.

The Law Magnified And Honorable

In what way does *The New Covenant*, administered by Christ, as Melchizedec, **change The Law**? Each priesthood administers The Law differently. The Levitical Priesthood administers The Law in The Letter or by human works or worldly **elements**.

The New Covenant writes God's Law in your heart and mind by changing your human nature to God's **divine nature** (II Peter 1:4). How does Christ make this happen?

The Book of Isaiah is known by many as The Fifth Gospel. Why? The word "**Isaiah**" means "God **saves**." It is the prophetic book which reveals how God saves **the world** by Jesus, The Christ.

There are more prophecies about The Messiah, in *Isaiah*, than any other book in *The Bible*. *Isaiah* gives details how Jesus, Yeshua, turns **the world to righteousness**. *Isaiah* was written during a time of great prosperity in Israel and Judah. This prosperity lasted through forty years of Isaiah as God's Prophet. His prophecy covered the time period of four Jewish kings – Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz and Hezekiah.

During these days of **plenty**, The Israelites and Judah were great churchgoers. Read what *Isaiah* said, "**Your new moons and your appointed feast [Holy Days] my soul hateth: they are a trouble unto me; I am weary to bear them.**" This is God telling Israel and Judah He is **tired** of them going to their **churches** or going to **The Temple** and keeping **The Seventh Day Sabbath and Holy Days**. Wow!

In addition, He was **tired** of their giving animal **sacrifices, oblations** or offering. Read all of Isaiah 1.

The Apostle Paul was telling Christians the **same thing** in Galatians 4:10-11. Paul wasn't only referring to **pagans** as he mentioned their **past Gentile years**, but also, as you will see, he is writing about *The Old Covenant* regarding His Sabbath and Holy Days. Why?

In Isaiah 59:1-3, God tells Israel and Judah (being churchgoers) they were still running around **sinning!** They claimed to be God's people by going to **The Temple**, **but they were still sinning!**

The **Church of God** in Galatians and Corinth were doing the same as Israel and Judah. All of them were accepting **sin** while going to church and worshipping God.

In addition, The Church of God in Galatians was not keeping The Sabbath and Holy Days the way God wanted with The New Priesthood of Melchizedec by an **actual change in The Law**. Read all of Galatians 4 where Paul tries to explain the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*, after showing in **allegory** that **The Ten Commandments** and The Holy Days were under Melchisedec to be kept **differently**. Read how Isaiah said The Law was to be changed.

Change Of The Law

In Isaiah 42:1, The Prophet revealed God was going to send His **servant** (Christ), who would even bring The Gentiles to **judgment** (to the truth). Read how Jesus would go also to The Gentiles.

Isaiah 42:21, "**The Lord is well pleased [Christ] for his righteousness sake: he will magnify the law, and make it honorable.**" There it is. Jesus came as a human to the earth, to **proclaim** God's **Law** according to God's Righteousness of The Law and not **The**

Letter of The Law. You have already proved how **The Letter of God's Law** administered by Moses brings death (2 Corinthians 3:1-6). Why? Because it couldn't make Christians **holy** or **perfect**. Only The Administrations of **The Law** by Jesus, The Law of Christ, as opposed to The Law of Moses, could make Christians holy or perfect.

The Greek for “**changeth**” in Hebrews 7:12 is **to transfer** or **transport**. It means to transfer the administration of The Law to another. Another what? Another **Priesthood** which produces **perfection**. Once **perfection** is achieved by Christ, then one receives the **gift of salvation**. Wow!

Now to prove how **Jesus** changes the keeping of The Sabbath as well as keeping The Holy Days.

CHAPTER 12

OBSERVANCE OR KEEPING

Observing The Letter of The Law can never give you salvation. This includes the weekly and annual Holy Day Sabbaths, as well. The Law and Sabbaths must be kept spiritually because God is a spirit. If you want to receive salvation, you must become spiritual, because God is a spirit (John 4).

The Law, therefore and all its **shadows** or **prophecies** must, for Christians, become a **reality**. **The shadows** of The Law no longer apply for Christians. The weekly and annual Holy Day Sabbaths must become a **reality** or **truth**. The Law, for Christians, demands a higher or more superior requirement of Law keeping. Isaiah 42:21 reveals Jesus as God's Servant will **require** more of The Law than Moses, who was just a witness or type of Christ (Hebrews 3:5). Hebrews 3:6 states Christians no longer to a **Temple** to **worship** God, but now God dwells **in you as His House**. Christians now become God's **Temple** (I Corinthians 3:9, 16). With God **in you** as His **Temple**, you worship Him spiritually. God has placed His Law in your heart and mind. You are to receive God's **very divine nature**. This is **God's promise** (II Peter 1:4).

Doing Good Works

With God seeking **spiritual growth** from Christians, the keeping of The Sabbath and Holy Days changes from **observing** those days to **keeping them spiritually**, whereby you become **perfect**

and taking on God's **divine** nature as He has **promised you**. No longer are **the observances** of The Days and Years of *The Old Covenant* (or **pagan days**) to carry **significance** in reference to **salvation**.

Since the **observance** of days and years can never make you **perfect (like God and Christ)** you must **be** what God's weekly Sabbath and annual Sabbaths **foreshadow**.

The Sabbath and Holy Days are **shadows** or **prophecy** of **better** things to come. Christians must **be** what those days foretell. They **must keep** The **Sabbath** and Holy Days by **being** what they **prophecy**.

That is why Paul clearly stated how Christians are to keep The **Feast** in I Corinthians 5:8. You are to keep The Feast by being sincere (honest) and **truthful** and no longer as the **fornicator**, which is the subject of I Corinthians 5.

I Corinthians 5:7 states you are to **purge** out the **old leaven (sin)** and be **unleavened** as Christ. It isn't the observance of The Day which counts for **salvation**, but being what The Days prophesy. You must be sinless through Christ. Christians **keep The Feast spiritually** by being as Jesus, **doing good works** (Hebrews 13:15-16).

You have proven in Matthew 12 and Mark 2 that Jesus changed the weekly and annual Sabbath from The Sabbath being **made for man** and **not the man for The Sabbath**. How does Jesus say you can become **perfect**? By **doing good works**!

The Priesthood was changed to Melchizedec and The Law of The Sabbath Days and Holy Days changed to **doing good work**. God

from this change expects Christians to keep The Sabbath and Holy Days by doing **good works**.

Lake Of Fire

Paul warns in Hebrews 10:24-27 that Christians should hold fast to the truth or you will go into The Lake of **Fire**. What must Christians do to be **faithful**? “**And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to do good works.**”

Hebrews 10:25 reveals you should seek assembling together for **what reason**? Exhorting one another as you see **The Return of Christ** coming to **love** each other and doing **good works**.

Christians ask at times what **must they do to please God**? **Love** one another and do God’s **works**. If not and you keep **sinning** rather than **doing good**, you will **pay** the **penalty** in the final fiery **Judgment** (Hebrews 10:27).

To keep the weekly Sabbath and Holy Days by doing spiritual good works, God accepts your sacrifice. “**But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.**”

That is why Jesus changed The Law of the weekly and annual Sabbaths. God is not pleased with animal sacrifices, but wants the **sacrifices** of **good works** on The Sabbath and Holy Days. That is how The Original Sabbath in The Garden of Eden was **sanctified**. Everything on that **Sabbath** was **very good** (Genesis 1:31).

That is The **True Sabbath Rest** where God **rested** because He did the **work** and not **man**. This Sabbath was made for man and not **man** for The Sabbath. How simple! God wants you to be **holy**

and **perfect like Him**. These are acceptable sacrifices by God rather than **animal sacrifices** which changes **nothing** (Hebrews 13:15-16).

Paul finalizes this **truth** of *The New Covenant's "way"* to keep **The Sabbath and Holy Days**. It is in your **heart and mind**. You are to be The Sabbath and Holy Days, just as Christ "in you" is The Sabbath and Holy Days. Jesus is **Lord or Master of The Sabbath** and, therefore, changes how Christians are to keep it. You are to become **perfect**. Notice where Paul plainly makes this statement, "**Make you perfect in every good work to do [God's] His will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory forever and ever, Amen**" (Hebrews 13:21).

Can't be any simpler, but notice Christians internalize Sabbath and Holy Days by doing **good works** every day in the **week**. Hebrews 3 and 4 refer specifically to The Seventh Day Sabbath (Hebrews 4:7). God reveals when you **rest in Christ** you are in **God's Rest** or **The Original Seventh Day Rest** which **God sanctified** (Hebrews 4:10).

Hebrews 3:13 relates you are to **exhort** one another **daily** to be in God's Rest while God's Holy Spirit is available to you. Why? Because it declares **your faith** in God. Daily, Christians are to be doing **good works** just as Christ related **He and God** do, **good works** on the weekly and annual Sabbaths (John 5:17). God and Christ will do **good works** even when it takes **hard work**. That is why Jesus said in Matthew 12:12, "**It is lawful [on Sabbath Days] to do good on The Sabbath.**"

By **doing good** on The Sabbaths, you reveal **your faith** that God will **fulfill His promise** to make you **divine, just as He is divine**

(II Peter 1:4). Also, by having God's **nature** of doing **good works** daily by God's Spirit in you, you show the **fruits** of having **escaped** the **corruption** that is in the world, through lust.

Only The Seventh Day is a **prophecy** of God's Sabbath. Only The Holy Days prophesy the **process** which Christ completes "**in you**" (Colossians 2:16-17). When you, **spiritually**, become the weekly and annual Sabbaths by doing **good** works (as well as **daily**) you **manifest your faith** through Christ "**in you**" (Colossians 1:27). You **please God** and thereby can receive the **gift of eternal life!**

GOD'S WILL

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 3

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *God’s Will*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God’s Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ’s Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God’s Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God’s Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God’s Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul’s Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God’s Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God’s Old And New Covenant

What’s It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan’s Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God’s Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God’s Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God’s Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God’s School

God’s Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don’t Bury Your Talents

God’s Work Vs. Man’s Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon’s Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God’s Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God’s Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God’s House

Bible Study God’s Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner’s Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION	vii
SALVATION REQUIRES FREE CHOICE	1
GOD'S PREDESTINED PLAN	15
GOD'S GREAT HOUSE	21
BOOKS OF ISAIAH AND REVELATION	27
THE POTTER	33
WATER AND FIRE	39
LAW TO GRACE	47
GOD'S TORAH	55
EVERY MAN'S WORK	63
SPIRITUAL DOCTRINE AND DOGMA	69
SPIRITUAL RIGHTEOUSNESS	77
WORLDWIDE CHANGE	83
GOD'S KINGDOM RULES	89
THE BOOK OF LIFE	95
TWO REVELATIONS	101
CARNAL SIN AND UNRIGHTEOUSNESS	107
KINGDOM OF GOD	113
PROPHECY BECOMES HISTORY	119
WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?	127
WHAT IS MAN?	135
SPIRITUAL GIFTS	143
THE WAY TO GOD'S HOUSE	153
MERCY TO LOVE	161
APPOINTED, ONCE TO DIE	169
LIGHT AND DARKNESS	179
WHO GOD ACCEPTS	187
ISAIAH TO REVELATION - PART I	193
ISAIAH TO REVELATION - PART II	203
ISAIAH TO REVELATION - PART III	211
ISAIAH TO REVELATION - PART IV	221

PREFACE

Reading *God's Puzzle Solved*, *God's Story* and, now, *God's Will*, as one book, is like a Bible Correspondence Course. Each book presents *The Bible* to you, so you can understand why God had *The Bible* written. You will learn God's theme, purpose and **predestined "will"** (Ephesians 1).

God's Will

This book discloses God's **entire** pre-determined **plan** and **purpose**. It reveals who **The One God** is and what His Son, Jesus, The Christ was **sent to do** by God's **loving** power, The Holy Spirit. May God bless all your understanding with **wisdom** and **love** in **His great mercy**. Criticisms are welcomed, as well as any questions, to aid our knowledge in The One True God and Father of everyone. As usual, no monies are accepted but books **are free** upon request. God be with you **all**.

Art Mocarow
Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mocarow.com

Website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com
(contains all books which can be
downloaded free of charge.)

GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED

FAITH WITH WORKS

CHILDREN'S BOOKS

GOD'S WORK

GOD'S STORY

GOD'S TWO TREES

REVELATION UNCOVERED

GOD'S SABBATH AND HOLY DAYS

GOD'S MAGICAL TEN WORDS

CHRIST IN YOU

GOD'S WILL

GOD'S THREE HOUSES

THE GREAT APOSTASY

SATAN'S IMAGE

THE WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

GOD'S PLAN OF SALVATION

DISCOVERING GOD

HISTORY OF GOD'S LAW

THE ORIGINAL BIBLE

SPIRITUAL GROWTH

INTRODUCTION

I Thessalonians 5:21 tells you to, “**Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.**” Then, you read a warning from Paul in II Corinthians 10:5, “**Casting down imaginations** [human interpretation], **and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.**” Couldn’t be any clearer! What you read in *The Scriptures* should be accepted as **truth**. Your human thoughts, which may be different from what *The Bible* plainly reveals, must be sifted and thrown out. The human mind, with all its **logical explanations**, cannot not know **The Truth** of God. Only God knows what **His “will”** is and what He is planning for you. He intends to divulge everything when **you are ready and willing to understand**, as you continue to pray and study.

In The Beginning

During The Original Apostles’ time, The Christians knew **far more truth** than those that came after – including Christians today.

Near the end of The First Century of Christianity, **the churches** were in doctrinal confusion (Babylon). That is why Jesus had to say to **His servants**, “**And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people [Christians], that ye be not partakers [receive] of her sins [plagues]**” (Revelation 18:4). This is just before the destruction of Babylon, the **great whore**. Christ will come soon and **punish Babylon**.

Christ’s brother, Jude, had this to say, “**Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you...and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints**” (Jude 3). Quite simply, before Jude’s day, all **the saints** (Christians) knew “**the true faith.**” But, from that point on, “**Christianity**” went **downhill**.

Even The Apostle Peter needed to put Christians in **remembrance** concerning **The Return of Christ** and God's "**will**" (II Peter 3:1). Read all of II Peter 3. The Christian community had become so doctrinally **confused** they began to doubt even The Resurrection. "**Now if Christ be preached that He rose from the dead, how say some among you [Christians] that there is no resurrection of the dead**" (I Corinthians 15:12)? This was just like The Sadducees. Early Apostolic Christians were in doctrinal **chaos**, but in the beginning, they **knew** far more **truth** than the world does today. How did The Christian Churches get into such a **doctrinal mess** so quickly?

What Is Orthodoxy?

The Orthodox World conveys the meaning of what is **true** and what is **real**. Orthodox **teaching** is supposed to be **the truth**, but is it? As time went on, The Apostles died, along with those who were witnesses of "**the truth**," being **servants** of Christ. Luke said, "**It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus**" (Luke 1:3).

The early Christians truly knew more of God's **truth** and God's "**will**" than the world does today. How did this World Orthodoxy develop? After **the temple** of Christ's day was destroyed, He warned the next event to occur was, "**many shall come in my name [Christ's], saying, I am Christ [His authority] and shall deceive many**" (Matthew 24:4-5). Man-made "**Christian Orthodoxy**" **crept in**. Paul said the **anti-Christ** (those against Christ), were already present in His day (II Thessalonians 2). Read the book *The Original Bible*.

Orthodoxy Enters

If Christianity was in doctrinal unity, why did The Christian

Churches have to hold so many church councils to believe the same thing or **orthodoxy**? The conference in Acts 15 was not to discuss **church doctrine, but a new truth**. Up to this point, Christianity, as a whole, believed both Jews and Gentiles had to be circumcised and keep **The Letter of The Law**. In fact, it wasn't **the church** who instituted this **new church doctrine, but God, Himself**. In Acts 15:8-24, it was **The Gentiles** receiving The Holy Spirit, which made The Apostles and the entire Jerusalem Church accept The Gentiles into The Commonwealth of Israel without being circumcised or keeping **The Letter of The Law**.

The Apostles looked to God for His “**will**,” not deciding on their own, just as The Apostles had when Judas was replaced with Matthias, as The Twelfth Apostle, by casting or throwing lots (Act 1). How did Christianity end up divided into so many denominations or splits? History proves “orthodoxy” was not all spiritual, but was mixed with a great deal of pagan philosophy.

Augustine To Theology

In I Corinthians 3, Paul referred to denominational Christianity as **carnal** or being “**babes in Christ**.” Christians, in Paul’s day, chose the church of their choice just as many Christians do today. They are all “babes in Christ” rather than “**spiritually growing**” in the **unity** of God’s continuing “**love**” (Hebrews 10:24). Many Christians decide to pick the minister they like best or the one who lines up with what they believe. Paul said all **true** ministers were of God and each minister should feed His people. Paul said if any preacher did not teach Christ as the foundation of God’s “**house**” (**The Temple of God**), they would be **purged** by **fire**, but never forget, ultimately, would be **saved**. Paul related that “**the temple**” of the “**house**” of God is comprised of those who are The Christians “**in Christ**.” Christ resides in each Christian. Christians are not to **defile** God’s **temple** and must be sure they are **perfecting** themselves, building upon **Christ**, who is **love** and

peace, with no type of disunity.

This is how early Christianity started to fall away from **The Truth of Christ**. When The Apostles died, as Jude revealed, **the faith** was lost. This disunity and confusion continues to this very day. Augustine fostered Plato's teaching which, till the reformation, persisted within Christianity. With **the renaissance, science (so called)**, entered the universities' systems. Initially, most places of higher learning were founded by theology or religion, but now science prevailed and began a great influence on theology. Instead of studying "**the faith once delivered**" to the **saints**, the universities started calling the subject "**theology**" or "the knowledge of God" although it was and is, based on **scientific principles** only.

God's "**kingdom**" and "**will**" was to be studied like **any other subject**. Does *The Bible* actually contain God's "**word**?" Who wrote these books? Are all or most of the translations correct? How accurate is *The Bible*, historically speaking? Is *The Bible* real or full of fables? On and on it goes, questioning, followed by more questions. What happened to Christians having **faith**? How about **salvation**? Without consideration *The Bible* was in jeopardy as God's very "**word**." Thus, God's "**kingdom**" and "**will**" became just a side issue.

Christ's Warning

Jesus told His Disciples to keep praying and seeking their Father's help – to be **faithful and trust** God and to continue searching for His "**will**." Also, to look to God in each wicked generation that prevailed from Christ's day to this very day. Then, referring to His "**return**," Christ asked if He would find any **faith** or **trust** in God **at all**, when He finally returns to this earth (Luke 18:8)? Before Christ **returns**, everything that has anything to do with God's "**will**," will be a **rarity**. The **faith** once delivered by Jesus and His Apostles won't even be recognized. God's "**way**" or "**will**" may,

actually, be totally **lost**.

God's "will" preserves the account of His "**kingdom**" and His "**will**," in spite of so called "**science**." You are about to read *God's* "**word**" concerning God's "**kingdom**" and what it really is. You will learn of God's "**will**" and "**predestined plan**" which is a **story of God's great love for you**.

CHAPTER 1

SALVATION REQUIRES FREE CHOICE

Why does salvation require free choice? Adam and Eve had to choose between The Tree of Life (salvation), which is life eternal and The Tree of Good and Evil, which brings “death.” It was totally up to them to make the choice of which tree they would choose.

When John, The Baptist came preparing **the way** for Christ, he said, “**Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**” (Matthew 3:2). Just as with Adam and Eve, it was a matter of **free choice**. **Salvation** demands you have free choice! Believe it or not, God actually made Adam and Eve “**perfect**” from the very beginning. God made **man** in His own **image** or likeness. God’s “**will**” was to make everyone “**holy**” like Him by having each and everyone of you become **one** of His Sons. You are to be just like Jesus, a **Son of God** (Ephesians 4:13).

Since God is “**love**” (I John 4:8), you must become like God’s “**love**” by your own **free choice** or you will not be in **God’s exact image**. God, Himself, uses His own “**will**” or “**free choice**” whenever He chooses. Christ had to become **exactly** like His Father (Hebrews 1:3). Jesus had to die for the world, because God showed His “**love**” for you by giving His own Son, Jesus Christ, to die for you. You, also, must be in the **exact image** of God, like Jesus, for God to be “**all in all**,” **kind** after **kind** as God’s very Sons. Therefore, to achieve this goal, **salvation** (a **gift**) is predicated upon your **free choice**.

GOD'S WILL

It is God's "**will**" for you to be exactly like your Father in heaven, deciding for yourself to receive **salvation**. The formula you will need is "**to repent**." "**Repentance**" in Greek is "a change of **mind**," from a human mind to be like God. When you fully repent, then, you will have God's "**mind**." You will have God's "**love**" and be a duplicate of your Father, God, in heaven.

Jesus became "**the firstfruit**" (I Corinthians 15:20) and, therefore, He was the first to do God's "**will**" by His **free choice**, to obey every **Word** of God, and, then, to be the **sacrifice** which manifests God's **love**. This **love** of Christ **sanctifies** or seals you to be **holy**, through the offering of His **body for everyone** (Hebrews 10:10). That in essence, is **Universal Salvation**.

That is why Jesus came to the **world** ("kosmos" in Greek) to **save the world** (I John 4:14) not only individuals or specific parts of the world.

Faith And Free Choice

Galatians 3:1-4 reveals it is not by "**The Works of The Law**" but by **faith** you receive God's Holy Spirit. You are **saved by faith**. **Faith** is the "**substance**" and "**evidence**" that **gives you salvation** (Hebrews 11:1). **Faith** is having **belief** or **trust** in your Father in heaven, just as Christ showed His "**faith**" by following His **free choice** to do God's "**will**." **Faith** and **free choice** are the same.

You must, by **free choice**, decide to follow God's "**will**," as Christ did or you do not have **faith**. Since you are **saved by faith**, you must, therefore, have **free choice** which will manifest your **faith**. **Faith** and **free choice** determines **your faith** in Christ and God.

Free Choice And Salvation

Does “burning in hell” give you **free choice**? How about the present theological belief that those in The Lake of Fire will be **destroyed** and be **dead “forever?”** Does this belief give anyone **free choice**? Technically, those who believe this doctrine are known as **Conditionalists**. On the other hand, **Traditionalists** believe one is going to burn “**forever**” in The Lake Of Fire. Who is right? You need to answer that question “scripturally” from *The Bible*.

Because of these two **biblical fallacies**, these “hell-fire preachers,” constantly, are in a tirade, warning everyone that they are going to be in torment in “**the fire**,” forever.

They, also, teach Christians will be totally destroyed, never to **live again**. What **type** of “**free choice**” is that? There is none. When the option of free choice is removed, **salvation** is **impossible**. Is God’s “**will**” in agreement with these two options?

History Of The Lake Of Fire

Torment “**forever**” in The Lake of Fire got its official standing from Augustine, a pagan, who was converted to Christianity. In his book, *The City Of God*, he attempts to prove his belief of “eternal torment” in Gehenna, not from **scripture**, but from The Greek philosopher, **Plato**. His proof for this eternal torment uses Plato as his source of an immortal soul. Scripturally, he substantiates very little, but basically relies upon Plato for proof. This Platonic philosophy permeated The Christian Churches until “**the reformation**” which was in the 1500’s.

It was at this time, science entered the theological arena. Sci-

ence became the tool of measurement in universities, including The Departments of Theology. It was determined, by scholars, that rather than being tormented in hell, forever, sinners were destroyed, never to live again.

From the 1800's, to this present day, new, emerging scholars were proving **Universal Salvation** from *The Scriptures*. However, now the question is, are the wicked thrown into The Lake of Fire, to be destroyed and never to live again? Or does God teach "**a resurrection**" from The Lake of Fire, so, they will, eventually, be **saved**? Which of these really offers **free choice**, showing **faith** in God and fulfilling or completing **His "will"**?

God Answers

When Jesus was asked how to pray, "He replied a person should begin their prayer by asking God's '**kingdom**' to come and God's '**will**' to be done, as it is in **heaven**." Jesus had always fulfilled His Father's "**will**." How did Christ obey God's "**will**?" Christ's **sacrifice** sanctified **the entire** world (Hebrews 10:10).

Paul, writing about Israel, with his desire for some of his nation to be saved, stated that The Gentiles were grafted into the natural olive tree (Israel) so they, too, could benefit from the riches of the world (Romans 11:12). Then, Paul defines the inclusion of The Gentiles as "**a reconciling of the world**" (Romans 11:15). "**Reconcile**" in Greek is "to bring back" or "the restoration of the **world** to God." "Kosmos" in Greek includes "the entire **universe**." "Kosmos" in Greek defines, "as to organization or **order**." The Greeks studied how the universe (called cosmology) came to be.

Christ came to **save the world** and it is God's "**will**." He wants

everyone to come to repentance and to the knowledge of Christ. There are hundreds of *scriptures* which declare God's "**will**" to have everyone **saved**, but, always, in a specific order (I Corinthians 15:23). Now, you know God's answer. God wants you to pray that His "**will**" is done on earth, as God is working on His "**will**" in **heaven**. Jesus told you, there are **many mansions** in His Father's "**house**" and He was going there to make a place for you along with the other Christians (John 14:1-3).

God's "**will**" is to have **everyone** in the world "**saved**" in His "**kingdom**." The question is which belief, "torture in hell forever" or "to be destroyed in The Lake of Fire" or "**Universal Salvation**" is the correct answer? Which belief is **the truth**? Does God clearly give you the answer? Yes, He does! He will never keep you in **darkness**, when you pray for **light**.

Free Choice

Christ told you to pray to God, The Father, "**Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven**." God is working in **heaven** with His Son, Jesus, doing **good works** to make a place for you in **The Heavenly Jerusalem** (John 14:1-3). Everything in **heaven** is in accordance with **God's "will"**. By Christians praying that God's "**kingdom**" be done according to **His "will"**, it is needful for you to know what, exactly, is God's "**will**." Now, you know everything that must be done by **your free choice**, will manifest **your faith** or **trust** in your Father, who is making you one of **His Sons** in His "**kingdom**." There will be a **New Earth** and a **New Heaven** (Revelation 21 and 22).

God's Will Is Infinite

In Hebrews 10:7, Paul wrote Christ came to do God's "**will**." He

sacrificed Himself so all may be sanctified (sealed). This is an all **inclusive statement** for **Universal Salvation**. Then, in Hebrews 10:14 it reveals “**all**” who are **sanctified** are made **perfect**. Sanctification is the process of becoming **perfect** through Christ.

I John 4:14 declares, “**And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the savior of the world.**” That is **Universal Salvation**. The question is how does God carry out His “**will**” through Jesus and how can you be **sure it is by your own “free choice?”** After all, you are **saved by faith** and, therefore, **must trust God “implicitly” by showing it is done by your free will.**

“Repentance” in Greek means “**a change of mind**” by your **own free will**. Let *The Bible* **prove** how God carries out His “**will**” of **free choice** which can and will **prove your faith**. God’s “**will**” to prove **free choice** must be **infinite or forever**, covering **all ages** and **continues eternally**.

World In Deceit

Traditionalists, with the writings of Augustine, *The City of God*, originated the idea of the immortal soul. Burning in hellfire, forever, came from the Greek philosophy of Plato.

Even during Augustine’s time, men like Origen learned about Universal Salvation from Clement. In fact, men like Irenaeus and Eusebius believed in Universal Salvation. The early church preached it and Augustine admitted that **his fellow brother**, Origen, believed in everyone having an opportunity to be **saved** and did not dispute Origen about it. **Universal Salvation**, (theologically speaking) is not **new**. It was known and preached by early theologians.

Today, you will find a revival referring to “**everyone being saved.**” In fact, there are as many as five different views “**of the end-time**” by theologians, today. The truth is, as some believe, the issue has already been resolved by **The Conditionalists’** view that those in The Lake of Fire are destroyed and never to be resurrected again. This is far from reality. Many contemporary **scholars**, today, believe in **Universal Salvation** as the only **free choice – truth.**

Vengeance Is Mine

One biblical arena of proof for “**all to be saved**” is what *The Bible* teaches as to how God will punish “**the wicked.**” Romans 10:10 states, “**For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness [repentance]; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.**” Quite clear! It is in your heart that your mind changes so you can ask for “**repentance.**” So, if you confess with your **mouth**, then, you will be **saved** or made **alive.**

Philippians 2:10-11 prophesies, “**That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God, The Father.**” Everyone who confesses that Jesus is The Lord shall **be saved** (Romans 10:9). Read all of Romans 10. It can’t be any plainer! This includes **everyone in heaven** or **alive** on earth or **dead under the earth.** This is **Universal Salvation.** The question is how does this prophecy come to pass using your **free will?** Notice, when you confess, it glorifies God, The Father. It is God’s “**will.**” But you have to know how this can be God’s” **will.**”

In the last days, scoffers will ask, “When is Christ going to return” (II Peter 3:2-9)? Then, Peter relates how the first people in Noah’s time died “**in the flood**” and the next time a catastrophe

occurs is when the **earth** and **heaven** will be burned along with **all the wicked**. This, being **The Conditionalists'** view "is true," but notice, it is **not God's "will."** "**The Lord is not slack concerning His promise** [Christ's return], **as some men count slackness, but is longsuffering to us-ward** [Christians], **not willing that any should perish, but that all** [the world] **should come to repentance**" (II Peter 3:9). Christians have already repented so the "all" (to repent) refers to the rest of the world. Peter tells you it is not "a specific **date**" when Jesus **returns**, but after certain conditions take place, then, Christ will **return**. Whether one day or a thousand years, it doesn't matter – it is God's "**will**" that everyone should repent.

Paul said the same thing in I Timothy 2:1-6 where Christians are to **respect everyone in authority** whether they be **converted** or not. Why? "**For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God Our Savior. Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.**" God and Jesus want both "the wicked" and "The Christians" to be **saved**. It is God's "**will!**" It is God's "**will**" to bring everyone to **repentance**. God's "**will**" is to have every child He allowed to be born, to also, be **saved** (I John 4:14).

The **potential** or **opportunity** must **continue** throughout the **ages** or **forever** for God's "**will**" to come to **pass**. This is an opportunity for everyone to use his/her personal "**free choice.**" The opportunity for **all** to be saved **must be ongoing forever**, even during The New Heaven and The New Earth. **God's "will"** is to have everyone, eventually, **repent** but only when they decide it is right for them (with their **free choice**) to **spiritually grow**, in either a slow pace or a fast pace, to the **full measure of Christ** (Ephesians 4). There is **no deathbed repentance**, but everyone must **grow** to the stature of Jesus, The Christ.

By God not naming a **date** for anyone's **salvation**, one's salvation can be "**ongoing**" even during **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. This **open** "time-frame" **guarantees free choice**, since it is by your **faith** that you are **saved**.

It is true, **The Traditionalists** are correct, "**the wicked**" shall be burned in The Lake of Fire. **The Conditionalists** are, also, **right**. Everyone will be destroyed and burned-up, not leaving branch or root. This is **total destruction**. But, always keep in mind, neither is correct. That is to say, those burning in The Lake of Fire will burn in **torment eternally** – or be **destroyed** and never **resurrected**.

Why God Punishes

Why, then, does God destroy the human body in The Lake of Fire? You are about to read a statement in *The Bible* that seems to contradict having bodies destroyed in The Lake of Fire. Remember, "**It is appointed unto men [humanity] once to die, but after this the judgment**" (Hebrews 9:27).

Why does God only appoint or declare **one death** for **humanity**? After this **death** is a **judgment**. God's "**will**" has determined there is **only one death**. When you haven't given up "**everything**," it is not a complete death, so God demands you give up everything so a second "complete" death can take place. Why? Romans 6:23 reveals the **wages** or payment for **sin is death**. Pretty clear!

God only appoints one (complete) **death** because once one dies, they no longer have any **sin**. They paid the **last farthing** (Matthew 5:26). There it is – **no death**, from this point, is necessary. Why then, do they die in **The Lake of Fire**? Therefore, the death in The Lake of Fire is for another reason than to have God merely

punish His children. You need to understand how and why God **punishes** the wicked or **allows evil**.

The Book of Hebrews reveals that **vengeance belongs to God** (Hebrews 10:30). Under Moses' Law, two or three witnesses were needed to condemn you (Hebrews 10:28-29). Then, Hebrews tells you **God's punishment is sorer** than just being put to death and destroyed. Paul's final warning, "**It is a fearful thing [a torment] to fall into the hands of the living God**" (Hebrews 10:31). If The Lake of Fire puts people to death (which it does) what is "a more **fearful punishment**" than that? Jude answers the question when he writes the **false preachers** who are disrespectful and making a business out of God's church, will have this end to look forward to, "**These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you**" Then their end is, "**Twice dead plucked up by the roots**" (Jude 12). They are thrown into The Lake of Fire and are totally and completely **destroyed**. But notice this is **not their end**. They are **resurrected** or **changed** in a **twinkling of an eye**. That is why in I Corinthians 15:54 it states, "**Death is swallowed up in victory.**" Read all of I Corinthians 15:2-56. The context asks, "**is there a resurrection?**" Corinthians reveals, all died in Adam, so, in Christ, **all are made alive, but every man [human] in his order**. What is "**the order**" for the wicked?

After the false preachers in Jude are **twice dead** (Lake of Fire), (Jude 13), "**Raging waves of the sea [forever], foaming [repenting] out their own shame [wickedness]; wandering stars [like the heavens], to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever [ages and ages].**" The wicked, after being in the burning hell, are **resurrected** and changed **into spirit**. Notice, this is in **The New Heaven and The New Earth**. Christ said, "**That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.**"

But the children [some Israelites] **of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**” (Matthew 8:11-12). This is exactly what Jude said (Jude 13).

These “**wicked**” who wear a **wrong** wedding garment will be cast out of The Wedding Feast and will be in outer darkness wailing and gnashing their teeth (Matthew 8:12).

So, both **The Traditionalists** are **wrong** and **The Conditionalists** are **wrong**. The wicked are not allowed in The City of New Jerusalem where The Tree of Life is, until they are healed by drinking the healing waters from the river coming from God’s throne (Revelation 22:1-2).

The nations which **are saved** are allowed into New Jerusalem to **eat of The Tree of Life** (Revelation 21:24).

Those **unsaved** must drink the water with “**the floating leaves**” which represents God’s Holy Spirit and to grow **spiritually**, till they mature to be like Christ. This is the **process** of Universal Salvation continuing in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. That is why Revelation ends by **the spirit (Holy Spirit)** and **the bride** (Christ’s wife) saying, “**And the Spirit and the Bride [wife] say, Come. And let Him that heareth say, Come. And whosoever will [free choice], let him take the water of life freely [free choice]**” (Revelation 22:17).

What river? The river that flows from God’s throne. That is what God’s “**kingdom**” is all about – **salvation**.

You have been **appointed** to “**only die once**” and then the **judgment** or **resurrection** from **fire** to **outer darkness**, to **salvation**

by free choice. The Traditionalists and Conditionalists are in error. Salvation requires free choice and not death or burning forever. The fire throughout *The Bible* refers to a purging. That is the difference between “a baptism of water” and “a baptism of fire” which Christ determines. “Water” cleanses while “fire” purges.

Conclusion

How does God show vengeance? “For they [human fathers] verily for a few days chastened *us* after their own pleasure; but He [God] for *our profit*” (Hebrews 12:10). In Greek, the English word “profit” means “for our good, to bring us to God.”

Notice the result, “Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous [wailing]; nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised [punished] thereby” (Hebrews 12:11). God’s vengeance is for your profit. Quite conclusive! God only punishes for you to become righteous like Christ.

The ultimate proof of God’s “will” is for all to repent and come to Christ. The very word, “will,” proves salvation requires free choice. In Greek, “thelema” means “God’s desire which gives Him pleasure.” In English, “will” does not mean “a command” or “with any force.” God requires free choice for salvation. That is why *The Bible* does not give a time when everyone comes to “righteousness;” but it is an opportunity or potential for Universal Salvation continuing in The New Heaven and The New Earth “forever” or “ages and ages” in Greek.

Free choice, when you finally do decide to repent, proves your faith and trust in God’s “will.” It is by faith you are saved. De-

stroying the wicked in The Lake of Fire **does not give free choice**. Neither does torment in “**Gehenna**” give **free choice**. Only an ongoing opportunity, which continues for **ages and ages**, to **all of God’s creation** to eat of The Tree of Life, which will **nourish** them to be able **to repent** when they decide; the choice will be their’s alone. That is why Christ **redeems all** or **gives Universal Salvation**.

This book called *God’s Will* proves **salvation** requires **free choice**. God is very patient and is willing to wait so that you, of your free volition, will choose “**rightly**.”

CHAPTER 2

GOD'S PREDESTINED PLAN

God's "kingdom" is to come on earth according to God's "will" which is a "free-choice" proposition to be made by each person. That is why each individual in the world is to work out his/her own salvation. "Wherefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. "For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of *his* good pleasure" (Philippians 2:12-13).

Salvation is a **free-will** "matter" not having anything to do with any church group. Salvation is only **according to God's "will."** God's "will" is **for every man** or human to make his/her choice in their individual order. God's "will" is to **save everyone**, individually, when they repent by **free choice** (I Corinthians 15:23). God's "will" is not a **command** which He enforces but by your own volition, which, in turn, gives your Father great pleasure.

You must find out what God's pre-determined **pleasure** actually is, "**Having predestined us [Christians] unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of his will**" (Ephesians 1:5). Through Christ, you are adopted from human parents (in Adam) to be God's **very sons, like Jesus**. This is God's "will," which is God's "**desire**," because it gives **God pleasure** to give you this "**gift**." It is all a matter of **your free choice**, which pleases God, immensely.

Now, perhaps you can understand God's **pleasure** and **desire** is **to save everyone**, through Jesus, The Christ. You are to become God's very sons or "**kind after kind.**" Read what that means, "**According as he hath chosen** [each in order] **us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy** [pure] **and without blame** [perfect] **before Him in love** [agapé]" (Ephesians 1:4). God's "**will**" is pretty clearly revealed by The Apostle Paul. Just as Jesus is God's very **image** (character) (Hebrews 1:1-3), you, also, are to be exactly **like Christ**. Then, God will be "**all in all**" and God's "**will**" then, will have been completed (I Corinthians 15:28). Next, you need to understand how God plans His "**will**" to make everyone "holy," without blame and with His **love**.

Temple Of God

When Israel sinned by worshipping the golden calf, God would no longer dwell in their midst. God sent a messenger to lead them to The Promised Land (Exodus 23:20-23). From that point, God changed His dwelling place from being in the midst of Israel to a "**new house,**" an **earthly house,** called **The Tabernacle**. It had to be a movable house as The Israelites were traveling for forty years. During these 40 years, they were tested over and over as to whether they had the **faith** to **trust** God **for all their needs**. Over and over, **they failed** because they **lacked the faith** (Hebrews 3:8-11, 18). God's "**glory**" only appeared to Israel at various times to speak to Moses and Israel.

When Joshua led Israel into Canaan, God was still **outside the camp** and did not **dwell** in their midst. After David became **king** and because he had a good **heart**, he wanted to please God and wanted to build a house for Him. God was amused that David thought any human could build The House of God.

However, David was a man of “**war**” or “**blood**” so God felt David would not be the one to build His “house.” God said David’s son, Solomon, would build “**the house**” when Israel was at peace. Just like Moses, this “**house**” made of **stone**, would have to be a duplicate of “**the temple**” in heaven (Hebrews 9:8-11). Why did Moses and David have to duplicate **the heavenly temple**? It was to be a **figure** or exact duplicate of God’s **temple** in heaven which **God built** (not **man-made**) (Hebrews 9:9). Mankind **cannot build a house for God** because **only God knows how to build His own house**. Why?

God’s “house” is a “**temple**,” which **must be “holy” and “perfect.”** But, remember, only God is “**good**” (Matthew 19:17). A **temple** is a **place** God resides in because being **good**, He is to be **worshipped!** Humans would, eventually, sin and **pollute** any house they **built**. Humanity is a mixture of **good** and **evil** and, therefore, cannot build a **house for God**. That is why Christians are **only to pray to their Father, in heaven**, to have **God’s kingdom come to earth**. Only **God is good** and, therefore, **God’s house** can only be built according to **His “will” and “plans.”** This is the reason Jesus said He was going to heaven to be with His Father. He told you He would be planning a **place or mansions for Christians in God’s house** (John 14:1-2). Read about the difference between the **house** Moses built and the **house only God can build**.

Paul said that Moses was **faithful** in the house he built, “**For every house is built by some man; but he that built all things is God**” (Hebrews 3:4-7). God is the only **creator of all things**. Man can only **build earthly houses**. Only **God can make something “holy!”** Now, notice what **only God can do**, “**But Christ as a son over His own house; whose house are we [Christians], if we hold fast the confidence [faith] and the rejoicing of the**

hope firm unto the end" (Hebrews 3:6). "**You**," through God's Holy Spirit are His "**temple**" or "**house**" built by His **Son** who has been given **all power**. Jesus was **quite clear** about these **two houses**. One is built by a human being and the other **by God** through His **Son, Jesus**.

Two Houses

Which of these **two houses** were built by humans?

Adam and Eve ate of The Tree of Good and Evil. Eve desired to decide what was "**right**" or "**wrong**" from her own thoughts. Adam followed her, as well. God allowed them to do according to their own devises or choice and to decide how to live and build their own **house**. It was at this time Adam and Eve had the "**house**" God built for them.

All the generations after, followed their forefather's effort to make life on this **earth** by their personal choice. God was allowing them to have **free choice**.

Since Adam and Eve came from the **earth** or **sand**, they decided to build their house by their own effort and with their own limited knowledge. This was **man's effort** to build a **house** on **sand**. A thousand and more years transpired and the result was when a **flood** came; it **destroyed their house** and **everyone** in it. Everyone was destroyed except Noah and his **family**. **Noah had built his house by God's plans and direction in faith**.

Noah and his family survived on **the ark** because it was built by God's direction in **faith**. They followed **the rock** (with their faith). Noah's three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth, each grew into a world-wide population. Shem was the genealogy which

chose to follow Noah and his God. Finally, Abraham was born and obeyed everything God told him. Abraham was a **righteous** man (Genesis 26:5). God accepted Abraham as His **friend** because God knew He could trust **Abraham, especially when** he was willing to offer his son, Isaac, as a **sacrifice** to God (just as God offered Christ). Abraham's great faith insured him God could indeed spare his son. God counted Abraham "**righteous**" because of Abraham's **faith**. What **house** did Abraham **build**? "**For he [Abraham] looked for a city which had foundations, whose builder and maker is God**" (Hebrews 11:10).

Abraham had **God** and not man build his **house**. This **house** was **built by God** through **God's Son, Jesus, The Christ who is The Rock** (I Corinthians 10:4).

Jesus states that the **man** who **builds his house** (always with their free choice) upon Christ and His teachings (**the rock**) is a **wise man**. You are now ready to hear Jesus with His very **words** as to how God intends to **build His "house"** (Matthew 7:24).

CHAPTER 3

GOD'S GREAT HOUSE

God can and will build His own house. Mankind doesn't have the ability to build a House of God. Humans, being a mixture of good and evil, cannot build a perfect Holy House. Your thoughts are not God's thoughts neither are your ways God's ways (Isaiah 55:8-9). Since God is "good" with no evil, His "house" will be a Holy Temple.

A Great House

You can prove God's **house** can be built "**perfectly**" by God. There is no defilement or imperfection in God's building. God is not frivolous as many humans who build or buy a home. God is a **perfectionist**.

You have found it is the only way it can last **forever** or **ages** and **ages**. God's "**house**" is a **great house**, exceptionally large. New Jerusalem, alone, as a city will be 1,500 miles in each direction (Revelation 21:16). Now the question comes up as to how long it will take God to **build His house**.

The Greek word for "**great**" is "megistanes" which means "exceedingly large." But, also, the root conveys "the concept of taking many years." That is why Jesus is responsible to build God's house and is wholly constructed of Christians.

It will take thousands of years according to Peter (Read II Peter 3:8).

What Is God's Great House?

God has given **free choice** so humanity could receive **salvation**. To do so, each person has free choice to build his private house by his or her own **effort** or **works**. But, humanity is limited to build a house, by their own effort on sand. Why? Humanity does not know how to build a house on a rock which could withstand all efforts to destroy it. The house built of stone, can tolerate more attacks, providing the house God constructs will and can last forever.

Only God is the **master potter** because He is the one who builds **everything** (Hebrews 3:4). Since Jesus is **the chief cornerstone** of God's **house**, Christ, therefore, only follows God's blueprints, which is His "word" (John 5:19). It isn't enough to use stone in building God's **house**; you also must have God, as the architect. God must be "**all in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28). Unless God builds the house, through Christ, you, with all your human effort and imagination, will only end up with a weak house. How does God build His **house** through Christ while still allowing humanity to have **free choice**?

Paul instructed Timothy, an Evangelist, how God builds His house, "**But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth [sand]; and some to honour, and some to dishonour** (II Timothy 2:20). Paul states, "**If a man therefore purge himself [free choice] from these, he shall be a vessel [in God's house] unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work**" (II Timothy 2:21).

God's **house**, built by God, through Christ, only allows vessels or items of **honor** in His **house** which will last forever and ever. But,

each vessel in God's **house** has the **free choice** to refine or purge themselves so they are like **gold** or **silver with everlasting stones** in that **eternal house**. How simply this is explained to you!

Since the vessels in God's **house** vary from good to bad or honor and dishonor, this house, takes years to build (when you will be ready to be part of it). The result is everyone can be used to do good works for God who is The Master Builder. This **house** is the earth, God's "house," where you will live.

That is why Jesus gave the parable where one man built a house on sand (earth) as opposed to the other on a rock which will last **forever**.

Adam and Eve chose to use their own reasoning of right and wrong; without **faith**, while Abraham built his house on a rock, Jesus, The Christ. God's **kingdom** is to be done on earth as it is in heaven. This **great house** takes years to build since it is by your choice **when you choose "rightly."**

Earthly And Heavenly

If you try to build God's house by your own human effort, you end up "**dead**." If, like Abraham, you have **faith** to allow God's **word** to build His **house**, then, Christ, through God's **word**, will purge you (through God's Holy Spirit) (Galatians 3:14). In Greek, the word "ekkasthaird" means "**purge**" and signifies "**to cleanse thoroughly**." In English the word "catharsis" is "to completely cleanse" which has the same definition.

David in Psalm 51:7 asked God to purge him with hyssop and only then, would he be clean. The Hebrew word carries the same meaning ("chata"). In both cases it is "**to make reconciliation**."

God gives you **free choice** so you can be cleansed from sin (so you can be perfect). If you make the **right choice**, for God to do the purging, then, you will be sinless; ready to be used for honorable purposes by God, eternally, (on a New Earth from Heaven) in His **house** (Revelation 21 and 22).

God's Great House is His **story** from Genesis to Revelation and shows how He will build His "**house.**" That is why God gives **free choice** knowing you can have the **gift of eternal life. Free choice proves your faith.**

Christ went to **heaven** to be on the **right hand of God** to make a place for everyone (when they make the **right choice**), **in faith, to have God do the building without human interpretation** (John 14:1-3). Peter was quite clear with regard to "**human interpretation.**" "**Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private [human] interpretation**" (II Peter 1:20).

Adam and Eve lived in God's "**house**" during this physical creation when there was no sin. Once they sinned (eating of the wrong tree) "**salvation**" was **lost**. Later, Christ had to come to **restore salvation** (Matthew 18:11). After The Garden of Eden, God, through The Melchizedek Priesthood and then through Levi, built an "**earthly house.**"

Christ came to build a new house, a **spiritual temple**. This **spiritual house** is a time of **free choice** for every human to purge herself/himself through **faith**.

I Corinthian 3:9-11 reveal Christians are God's **building**. You should be laboring to be part of that building. Many preachers are helping build God's building. Paul warns, any preacher or human man ("anthropos," Greek) who doesn't build upon the right

foundation, (which is Christ) will be “**tried.**” I Corinthians 3:17 warns that any preacher teaching false information (not Christ) defiles God’s **temple** whose **house (temple)** you (Christians) are. Everyone, ultimately, by their **free choice**, **will be exactly like Christ and part of The House of God.**

Paul declares, “**For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying [building] of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**” (Ephesians 4:12-13).

You must, in faith, by your own **choosing** become the exact image of Jesus who is the exact image of God, your heavenly Father (Hebrews 1:1-3).

Christ, as **the rock**, who builds God’s **house** demands you must be exactly like Jesus and God, to be able to be used in God’s building in New Jerusalem.

This awesome, huge **Great House of God**, **will be 1,500 miles** in each direction. Who is to live or dwell in this house and who will not? Always remember God is The Potter (Isaiah 45:9 and Isaiah 64:8). You must humble yourself to keep your cotton-picking hands out of God’s **work** and let Jesus, The Christ do it once you have faith.

But, it is, also, necessary for you to find out who will be able to dwell in this great house and **who will be left out.**

CHAPTER 4

BOOKS OF ISAIAH AND REVELATION

Since The Old Testament and The New Testament are “one continuing story” which discloses God’s “will,” you find each testament (or scripture) interprets another testament or scripture. (Read *God’s Story*).

You are about to find out *The Book of Isaiah* covers world history from about 700 B.C. until God establishes The New Heaven and The New Earth. God chose to have Isaiah write this prophecy and, ultimately, it became history. The purpose of *The Book of Isaiah* is to reveal it is God, only, through His Son, The Messiah, who can save you. The name “Isaiah” in Hebrew means “God saves.” Even Augustine, one of the ancient church fathers called it, *The Fifth Gospel*.

Background

Isaiah was the son of Amoz, a prince in Judah. Isaiah was from a noble house in Judah and, therefore, as a Prophet, had easy access to **The Kings of Judah**. God, by His Holy Spirit, had Isaiah prophesy for forty years (**time of testing**) against Israel, a separate nation of The Ten Tribes and Judah, two and a half tribes, with The Jews being predominate. As yet, The Ten Tribes of Israel with their capitol in Samaria had not been taken captive by **the northern kingdom** of Assyria.

The Nation of Judah had Jerusalem as their capitol and many times Israel and Judah would fight each other. This was the state of events in the, then, known world. Isaiah prophesied during the time of the four last kings of Judah: Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz and Hezekiah (Isaiah 1:1). During this period, Assyria took Israel captive and they were dispersed in all the nations of the world. That is why they are known, to this day, as The Lost Tribes of Israel.

Judah, in 539 B.C., after the death of Hezekiah, his sons were taken captive by Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon. This is a critical prophetic crossroad for world history. Nebuchadnezzar begins the world rule of The Times of The Gentiles. Daniel 2 and Daniel 3 speaks of Four World Gentile Kingdoms (the great image or Nebuchadnezzar's image) which God will replace with His Kingdom's "**rulership**" from Israel and Judah to The Gentiles.

As stated in *The New and Old Testaments*, this Gentile rulership of God's "house" is to remain with The Gentiles until Christ's **return**. God uses The Gentile Nations to punish and purge Israel and Judah of sin. Remember, in God's Great House, there are vessels of **honor** but, also, vessels of **dishonor**. God only corrects you for your own good (Romans 12). When The Gentiles' "**purpose**" is fulfilled or completed, The Messiah **returns and crushes The Gentile "rule"** to establish God's "**kingdom.**" Then, Christ **gives the kingdom** back to God who will continue building His **house through** Israel, God's original chosen witness. When Rome fell, about 700 A.D., the "**image**" remains to this present day when Christ will destroy this "**image**" with His "**coming.**" Then, God's **house** is to be built by God through His, Son, Jesus. The one thousand year rule by Christ, known as The Millennium, begins **God's Kingdom Rulership**.

The Book of Isaiah covers all this prophecy from Isaiah's time

until **The New Heaven and The New Earth**. *The Book of Isaiah* is a major crossroad for the world to read and understand God's "**will**." Read about whom this *Book of Isaiah* is written to. It is **not only** written to Israel and Judah, but to everyone, "**Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the Lord hath spoken, I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me**" (Isaiah 1:2).

The Book of Isaiah was written to the entire world. Because God's chosen witnesses, Israel and Judah had disobeyed God, it was, then, necessary to have **the world's salvation** delayed. Wow! This book truly reveals how God intends to **save the world**. You are about to discover what will be God's pre-destined **Plan of Salvation for you**.

Isaiah's Day

During Isaiah's forty years of prophecy, Israel, The Ten Tribes and Judah, were experiencing great prosperity. Commerce from Assyria (Syria and Babylon), Tyre (north of Israel) down to Egypt had made many business and trade agreements. Israel and Judah were right in the middle. A commercial highway ran all the way from Babylon or Assyria down through Tyre and Egypt along the west coast of Israel and The Philistines. Assyria, in the East, had established a trade route to China. This highway was known as The Silk Road. China sold silk to Assyria and, later, to Babylon, Tyre and Egypt. Tyre, called Phoenicia, extended its ships and commerce worldwide. An entire nation settled in Northwest Africa, who were called Carthaginians or Phoenicians. World trade was booming. Israel and Judah were right in the middle of it. They were making agreements with everyone. Because of the prosperity of Israel and Judah, Edom, Philistines, Damascus and other surrounding nations became jealous. Competition was rife.

Each nation plotted to “outdo” the other. The two largest nations, Assyria and Babylon became major competitors with each other. Controlling “the road” between Israel and Judah became highly desirable for Assyria and Egypt. Later, when Babylon defeated Assyria it was Babylon’s time to enter the fray under Nebuchadnezzar. That is the picture of Israel and Judah during Isaiah’s prophetic years. All these nations were in league with one another for commercial reasons. When agreements could not be made, guess what – **war followed**. Egypt would beat Assyria and then, Assyria would beat Egypt. Israel and Judah would do the same.

Finally, Israel made a pact with Assyria to take over Judah. This was the state of affairs in Isaiah’s time. Do world events, today, remind you that there are always wars and rumors of war? Competition produced **greed** and **idolatry** in both Israel and, finally, in Judah.

This is why in Isaiah’s day God said, “**The ox knows his owner, and the ass his master’s crib: but Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider.**” Consider what? “**Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the Lord, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward**” (Isaiah 1:3-4).

Works Of The Law

With all their prosperity Judah and Israel would follow God in “**words only**” but not “**in their hearts.**” They thought doing “the works” of The Law was all God wanted or expected of them.

Israel and Judah were great churchgoers. They observed The Sabbaths and Holy Days, meticulously, but they missed what those

days were **foretelling** or **instructing them**. They gave oblations, sacrifices, tithes, etc. but their hearts were filled with **lust** and **greed**. They did not understand what those days, sacrifices and oblations were to do. They did not know all these physical works were picturing Christ (Galatians 3 and 4).

Money was, actually, taken from **the widows** and given to The Levites. The **rich** stole what they could get away with. Orphans were left without any money. Lying, cheating, bribery and every evil act were prevalent. All these religious works were **shadows of good things to come** (Colossians 2:16-17), as they were meant to point to Christ. Israel and Judah, however, were corrupt “**in their hearts**.” They totally by-passed “**the righteousness**” of *The Torah* Law.

God was furious. They missed the point! What God desired was for them to love not only Him but, also, their neighbor (Matthew 22:36-40). Isaiah, because of their sinful ways, followed **the works** of The Law but not **the righteousness** of The Law. Isaiah had to tell Israel and Judah in prophecy, exactly where they were heading. To fully understand all this, you need to read all of Isaiah 1 again.

CHAPTER 5

THE POTTER

With the wicked ways of Israel and Judah, God was ready to turn over His “house” to The Gentile Nations. The four world kingdoms being Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar; Media-Persia under Cyrus; The Macedonian, Greek Empire under Alexander; and Rome, a composite of the viciousness of the former three, in one violent Empire. Rome, being like a total of the previous three, was like a lion, a bear and a leopard. This is The Mark of The Beast, 666, (a lion, bear and leopard in totality). It is The Mark of The Beast continuing in world history until Christ returns.

In 325 A.D., The Roman Empire took over God’s “house” being The Christian Church which had melted in “paganism” as God’s **kingdom**. Constantine, The Roman Emperor, claimed Christianity as **his**, when he took over Rome. He saw a vision in the sky. He remained a sun-worshipper until his death when he was, finally, baptized. God’s **kingdom** was claimed to be The Roman Empire on earth. This truly was The Time of The Gentiles to rule over God’s **house** until “**their time is fulfilled,**” i.e., when Christ **returns**. At that time, He will put down all of God’s enemies to establish God’s **kingdom** on earth. Then, Israel and Judah, once again, become God’s **witness** to the world (Romans 11).

God was furious with Israel and Judah for their sins. Notice what God reveals to Israel and Judah, “**But your iniquities have sepa-**

rated between you and your God, and your sins have hid *his* face from you, that he will not hear” (Isaiah 59:2).

All God wanted was for them to repent of their actions and He, then, would hear their prayers and save them from their enemies. What was the problem? **“For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, [going to church], your tongue hath uttered perverseness”** (Isaiah 59:3). They continued to rely on making agreements with The Gentile Nations around them for protection because of business reasons. God would not, therefore, pay attention to their prayers. Now God’s vengeance is about to be unleashed upon Israel and Judah from their own lovers (those nations they looked to for deliverance). These Gentile nations end up taking Israel and Judah into captivity and making slaves out of them! Now, the riches of Israel and Judah no longer exist because these four beast powers take control **of the highway of commerce between The East and The West**. Israel and Judah would remain under Gentile control until they repent when Christ **returns** to establish God’s **house and kingdom**.

The Clay And The Rock

The Ten Nations of Israel are taken into captivity and Judah, with King Hezekiah’s sons, are also taken into captivity for seventy years by King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon. Listen to what God had to say to Israel and Judah, **“Drop down, ye heavens, from above [God’s kingdom], and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation [Christ], and let righteousness spring up together [God’s kingdom]; I the Lord have created it. Woe unto him that striveth with his Maker [God]! *Let* the potsherds *strive* with the potsherds [humans] of the earth. Shall the clay [sand] say to him**

[God] **that fashioned it, What makest thou? or thy work, He hath no hands**” (Isaiah 45:8-9)? Remember, Jesus said “**man can either build a house on sand or on a rock.**” Christ is The Rock (I Corinthians 10:4). Jesus is the only right foundation for any “**house.**”

Isaiah is warning Israel and Judah, who like Adam and Eve, want to build their own house by human effort by making **covenants** with Gentile nations. They refuse to look to God to make them **righteous** and make them Holy like God.

God is The Potter and Israel and Judah are only “potsherds” tools that God uses to make His Great House, which eventually includes the whole world. Notice how clearly God describes The Potter? “**I have made the earth, and created man [clay] upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens and all their host [stars] have I commanded. I have raised him [Christ] up in righteousness, and I will direct all his [Jesus] ways: he shall build my city [Jerusalem], and he shall let go my captives [Israel and Judah], not for price [money] nor reward [bribery], saith the Lord of hosts**” (Isaiah 45:12-13). God Almighty is The Potter. He molds the clay and His creation cannot be by human works but only by His Son, Christ, The Rock.

Paul writes that God is The One who decides how He will build His “**house.**” Only God knows the **heart** and, therefore, decides how He builds His “**house**” with all the **vessels** (pots and pans) in it. He is The Potter. Christians are the clay or the sand mixture. Jesus was human, made of flesh (John 1:14) and became the **foundation of God’s “house”** as a **rock** (I Corinthians 3:10-11 and I Corinthians 10:4).

Paul states since God, only, knows the right ingredients to build

the **vessels** in His House, He will, therefore, show **mercy** (forgiveness) and compassion to whom He chooses to mold (Roman 9:15). **“Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed [molded clay] say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter [God] power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour”** (Romans 9:20-21)? Since God made man in His image (likeness) only He knows how, you, as a Christian, should look. You have never seen nor heard God and have an obligation to study His **“word.”** On the other hand, God knows the real you and how to shape and form you.

In God's Great House, only He knows what **vessels** He needs for His **home**. God is a **perfectionist**. His **“house”** will contain only materials or **vessels of great value** like gold, silver and precious stones. The vessels used, God's Holy Ones, must become perfect for God's use.

The Kiln

The Potter, God, created His image of man to look just like God, Himself (Genesis 1:26). He beheld Adam and Eve which He made of clay and said it was very good (Genesis 1:31). God's image was perfect but, now, God had to place that image of Himself in the **fire**. To do so, God placed The Tree of Good and Evil in The Garden (and that's when death entered). Remember, God said everything in The Garden of Eden was **very good**, even **The Tree of Good and Evil**. Why? Now, Adam and Eve had to be **tried** or **tested** in the **fire of free choice**. If they ate from The Tree of Life, there would be no need for them to go back into the fire or the hard knocks of life filled with trials and, then, death. They would have been in God's exact likeness, like Jesus (Hebrews 1:1-3). The **Tree of Good and Evil** was their **fiery trial** just as Peter said

the church had to go through in this life (I Peter 4:17 and I Peter 4:12). At times, God must start all over again and reshape the clay and then, it goes into the fire. God is The Potter.

When a **potter** starts to mold an image he takes clay, water and tools to mold the shape of the image. Remember, God is making **humans** to look like Him (Genesis 1:26). As long as God is forming the image, He must keep the **image moist** or **wet** with the water. To do so, the sculptor keeps the image **wet** enough to be **pliable** or **changeable** (baptism). If, at different times, while God is working on “**the image**” He finds a flaw, He can remold the clay while it is still pliable. God cannot allow the image to dry out before completing the image. Remember, once clay is fired, the sculptor no longer can change the image.

Jesus warned, as God makes you **perfect** like Him (Matthew 5:48) and you allow, by your actions to sin or defile the image, Christ said, “it is better for you to pluck out your eye or cut off an arm if it causes you to sin.” Why? Read His answer, “**For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell**” (Matthew 5:29). A whole “**new you**” must be resurrected.

After much time molding and remolding, if the image in any way is not perfect like God, the only thing left to do is to remold it again. To keep the clay pliable a potter places a moist cloth over the image until the potter completes the image. No one, usually, sees the image until it is complete.

Once the image is **perfect**, like God, then it is time to make the image last. After the first firing, a potter calls the **image a bisque**. Afterwards, it is time to return to the fire for the glazing. One or more **glazes** can cover the image and color it. The image can,

now, be used by the potter for whatever honorable use the potter decides. Then, the image can be covered with gold, silver or precious stones of high value as decorative touches. It can be used in God's **house** as a **vessel** which is, then, considered **honorable**.

God, through Christ, is truly the potter, to make certain the image becomes exactly like Christ who is like The Father, "kind after kind" (Hebrews 1:1-3).

Remember God's Great House is built by God. But, in God's House are a variety of vessels, pots and pans for "The Master's Use." Read how valuable **water** and **fire** is in God's "**house**."

CHAPTER 6

WATER AND FIRE

The ancient Greeks believed that only two elements, “water” and “fire,” are the basis of “the creation of the universe.” Without water, the earth would have no life upon it. The continents with mountains, valleys and upon which our earthly plates exist were caused by fire. This process is ongoing today.

Is it any wonder that God uses these two elements, fire and water in building His “house?” God is the potter and molds His vessels as He sees fit.

Baptisms

The Apostle Paul speaks of Baptisms as The Third Foundational Doctrine as a teaching about Christ. Here is what *The Scripture* says, “**Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God. Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands...and of eternal judgment**” (Hebrews 6:1-2). Notice “baptisms” is **plural** and not **singular**. Biblically, there are many types of baptisms. God uses water to keep you pliable.

The Greek term “**baptizo**” means “**to overwhelm**.” In English, God uses many methods to overwhelm, such as land, nations, kingdoms and individuals. Remember, when God corrects any-

thing, it is to **produce good**. Since God is **love**, any act of His goodness is for our good. Read some accounts of God's **goodness which will be overwhelming** (Hebrews 12).

During Noah's day, God saw that all of mankind's thoughts were selfish acts, resulting in **violence**; He repented and realized it was best for humans to be destroyed (Genesis 6). So, God flooded the known world and only delivered Noah and his family in **the ark**. This was a **baptism** or **cleansing** which was **catastrophic** or **overwhelming**.

God delivered Israel from The Egyptian Pharaoh by going through The Red Sea (Acts 7:36). This was an overwhelming act of **faith** by Israel which was used as a **baptism**.

Biblically, God uses water and fire as baptisms for the wicked at various times. God uses nations, such as The Gentiles to destroy Israel and Judah, overwhelming them by fire when destroying their cities. In other cases, God used Israel to destroy a Gentile nation, The Amorites, when they came into The Promised Land. Then, when **The Time Of The Gentiles'** sins reached an apex, God destroyed them four hundred and thirty years later (Genesis 15:16). Water and fire are used by God as a **cleansing** and **purg-ing** (baptism) to overwhelm humans so they would turn to God.

Baptism Of Repentance

You can now see how baptism (cleansing) by God was used long before Christianity began. Israel used water for cleansing continually with washings and purifications just as Christ used **purification jars in turning water into wine**. Christ's "baptism of fire" was when He died for mankind. That is why John, The Baptist, as "**the spirit**" of Elijah came preaching **repentance** of sins **and**

baptized them in **water**. This signified “**the overwhelming**” of humanity being put to **death** or **destroying their flesh** (Romans 8:10). At this time, God could, now, remold them. Christians, when **baptized**, are entering into a contract with God to have their sins forgiven by giving their very human existence to God. When you stop to think about it, it is certainly **overwhelming**. That is why when a Christian decides to put off “the old man” and be forgiven for their sins, “**baptism by water**” is such an important decision. The baptized are **putting their very life to death** and are being forgiven for their sins by Christ’s blood. Then, God molds you into a new form. The wages of sin is death and you must die completely.

The Pharisees were coming to John and he said, “**O generation of vipers [snakes], who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come**” (Matthew 3:7). The Pharisees hadn’t truly repented to the point of, willingly, giving up their lives and, therefore, must have known The Lake of Fire was ahead for them. This was an extremely important statement by John in his understanding of **baptism**. He knew whether it be, voluntarily, by water, they would repent or else they will have to repent when they are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Whether by **water** or by **fire**, **both** are **baptisms**. In one or the other, the one repenting, willingly, agrees to give up their human life by water or fire. Baptism by water signifies the cleansing of the **flesh**, only, but cannot and doesn’t change **human nature**. Only a **baptism by fire purges the flesh** where one’s very nature is changed. Human flesh must totally die. All human existence must cease.

The very **soul** or **life** of the complete human must change in the act of **repentance**. This repentance requires more than a baptism of water. John said, “**I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I,**

whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with The Holy Ghost [Spirit] and *with fire*” (Matthew 3:11). There are three baptisms which are overwhelming to humans. The three baptisms are by water, by The Holy Spirit and by The Fire.

Your nature must change to become “**holy**” and “**perfect**” like God, The Father. To become “**perfect**” or “**holy**” requires a baptism by “**water**” and by God’s Holy Spirit which is a “**fire**” to purge you into perfection. What does that really mean when it comes to **salvation**?

Baptism Of The Holy Spirit

Once a Christian is baptized in “**water**” that person is “**sinless**” because he is under the **blood of Christ’s sacrifice**. In God’s eyes, a Christian is sinless as long as they stay “in Christ” (I John 1:7). In their minds and hearts they become pliable to be made like Christ – perfect.

The flesh itself (a person’s human nature), must be changed. You must become **perfect** which only God can make happen (Matthew 19: 21-26). How does God make this change in **your heart and spirit**? It is by the giving of God’s Holy Spirit and only, then, can you receive His very loving nature in your heart (Romans 5:5). How does God’s Holy Spirit bring about this wonderful change of **heart** from the **flesh** which is now **dead** “**in Christ**?” Christ promised that God, The Father will give a Christian His Holy Spirit which will, then, give you everything you need to learn. It is still a matter of **free choice** and always requires **faith** (John 14:26). Jesus said God’s Holy Spirit will give you all **truth** (John 16:13). That is a promise!

Since The Holy Spirit reveals all truth, then, how does **The Word**

of God work in your heart, “**For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul [life] and spirit [heart], and of the joints and marrow [flesh], and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart**” (Hebrews 4:12). Wow! Now read what The Holy Spirit is compared to by God.

Jesus prophesied that God’s Holy Spirit would be given to The Apostles. Note what appeared to them on Pentecost, “**And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost [Spirit], and began to speak with other tongues [languages], as the Spirit gave them utterance**” (Acts 2:4). God’s Spirit led them into truth. What was **The Holy Spirit**? “**And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them**” (Acts 2:3). God’s Holy Spirit is a **baptism of fire** which works in each Christian. The Holy Spirit reveals truth to each Christian to cause “**a change of heart.**” God’s Holy Spirit is “**a baptism of fire**” in each Christian, as well as others who receive God’s “**word.**” All must go through **the fire**. If you remain **faithful**, you will not be **burned** up. Look at the example of those who remain **faithful**.

Daniel And Friends

Daniel had three friends who, also, were considered wise men when they found themselves being held captive in Babylon. The king wanted every one to bow down to his image as revealed by Daniel in the third chapter.

His three friends, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego refused to bow down to any image. They were willing to die rather than worship any other “gods” but **The One True God**. The king was irate; he had a fire made of such intensity that it burned up those who fueled it. Then, he had Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego

thrown in. Amazingly, they were not burned because they were protected by an angel (Daniel 3). They remained faithful to God.

Likewise, Christians who remain faithful to the end are **protected** by God's angels no **matter what fiery trial they** must go through. So declares Peter (I Peter 4:12). Everyone must go through **the baptism of fire** by God's Holy Spirit. "**And it is appointed unto men [everyone] once to die, but after this the judgment**" (Hebrews 9:27).

Two Deaths

Jude 12 declares there are **two deaths**. Why? If one doesn't completely die in their **first death**, then, they must go into the **second death** to **purge** oneself to **completely die – body, spirit and soul** (life). "**And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell**" (Matthew 10:28). When The Potter sees imperfection in His image, it must be destroyed by **fire**.

Why Lake Of Fire?

Water is a baptism of only your **flesh**, not your **spirit**. The totality of what you are, **body**, ("soma") **spirit** ("pnuema") and your complete **life** ("soul") **must die**. A human with God's Spirit of Life "**in you**" now becomes a **living being** or **soul**. **All three must die to be saved and resurrected** as was God's Son, Jesus. You are **appointed** once to die and, then, **the judgment**. Why **judgment**? Jesus said, "you must be willing to give up your total life, body, spirit and your very life or soul" (Matthew 19:21-29). That is why Jesus said, "you should fear Him, who cannot merely kill your human body, but can cause you to lose your very Spirit which is your **life** or **soul**." A defiled **potter's image** must be de-

stroyed in the fire and, then, the spirit is resurrected. If *The Bible* or *The Scriptures* says “**you are appointed once to die**” why do some have to die again in The Lake of Fire (Jude 12)? God is not The God of death (or “Beelzebub,” “the god of flies”) which literally means “death.”

God does not destroy humans or put them in eternal torment in “**The Fire**” but, it is written, they will be resurrected. The Great White Throne Judgment is **a resurrection to life**. Those thrown into The Lake of Fire will, ultimately, be reserved to live in outer darkness, wailing and crying. Read Jude 13 which tells what happens to those in The Lake of Fire.

Fire is used by God as “**a purging**” rather than merely “destruction.” Jude tells those destroyed in Sodom and Gomorrha were an example of The Lake of Fire (Jude 7). But Sodom and Gomorrha are an example of God’s vengeance (Jude 7) and will be in the resurrection and have a better chance for **salvation** than The Pharisees and Sadducees of Christ’s day. So said Jesus! Christ told The Disciples when they preach in cities most people won’t hear His “**message**.”

Those in Sodom and Gomorrha will actually have a better chance for **salvation** in The Time of Judgment (Matthew 10:15). If Sodom and Gomorrha are a type of The Lake of Fire, the point is they will be resurrected. So, those in The Lake of Fire will be resurrected. Then, why is there a Lake of Fire at all, since it is only appointed for humans to die once? In *The Bible*, Jude calls for two deaths. Why? Simply because those in The Lake of Fire did not completely die the first time (only the body did). Jesus said for you to be perfect, you must die in “**body**” and “**spirit**” and your very lives or “**souls**” must die in order to be completely dead.

When Christ died, He gave up His complete life for you to pay for all your sins. That is why He cried out, “**My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**” His **body, soul** and **spirit** (His very soul) died. In **faith** He was completely **dead**, just like Christians must completely die to become **perfect** through God’s Holy Spirit writing God’s Law in your heart and mind and not just physically doing The Law.

You are about to discover what **Law** and **Grace really means** “**biblically.**”

CHAPTER 7

LAW TO GRACE

World Christianity has been debating “Law” and “Grace” for centuries. Do Christians have to keep The Law of Moses or not? Should it be Law and Grace; or Law or Grace; or Law to Grace? Remember, in order for Christians to receive salvation they must have free choice.

If Christianity has to have free choice how can God be The Potter to build those who will dwell with God in The New Earth? Always, God is The One, through Christ, who builds His Great House in The New Heaven and New Earth. If God is The Potter and you are the clay, what part do you as a Christian play?

Law And Grace

The Law according to Moses, called The Law of Moses, is known as The Letter or The Written Law. *The Book of Deuteronomy* in Hebrew means the “**rewriting of The Law**” which is **not** as *The Torah* was, originally. Moses wrote the entire *Torah*, in general, about 1500 B.C. *The Torah* was in **force** before “**this added Law of Moses**” was included in *The Torah*. How do you know?

Prophets To Moses

Before Moses, it was the responsibility of The **Prophets** who

spoke God's "**word**" which included *The Torah* (Hebrews 1:1-3). Even though Moses did not live from the beginning of *The Torah*, God did have him write the first writings of The Law called *The Torah* in Hebrew. "*The Torah*" in Hebrew means "**the teaching**" or "the way or plan which began before the universe was **created**." Why? Because Genesis 1:1-2 states, "**In the beginning God created the heaven [atmosphere] and the earth.**" "In the beginning" was when *The Torah* began.

When Adam and Eve were created and placed in The Garden of Eden, it was over 2,000 years later that Moses wrote the entire *Torah*. *The Torah* has 2,000 years of **history** before Moses "**added**" The Letter of The Law to *The Torah*. *The Book of Deuteronomy* certainly was a rewriting of The Law. This rewriting did not include the entire *Torah* which was to be the **way** or **path** to **life**. *The Book of Deuteronomy* does not include **eternal life**. If followed, it only promises a long, prosperous, healthy human existence while living on this earth. **No resurrection to eternal life** is given in The Law of Moses (which was added to *The Torah*). *The Torah* had to already **exist** if something "**was added**" to it. Galatians 3:15-17 declares "**the added**" Law of Moses did not take place until four hundred thirty years after the promise of **eternal life** was given to Abraham. Abraham is "a critical key" to **salvation** and he was part of *The Torah* or **way to life**. Without the promise to Abraham there would be no **eternal life**, only the formula for a long, prosperous, healthy human existence. Now to **prove** what *The Book of Deuteronomy* really was. Why did The Law have to be **rewritten** before Moses died?

The Old Covenant

The first 4 chapters of Deuteronomy cover The Exodus of Israel from Egypt as slaves to Mount Horeb. Chapter 5 reveals an amaz-

ing revelation, “**The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us [Israel] even us, who are all of us [Israel] here alive this day**” (Deuteronomy 5:3). Do you grasp the significance of Moses’ statement? *Deuteronomy* was a rewriting only of The Law of Moses because this rewriting only included “the added part” of *The Torah*. This is what Paul referred to when he said it “was added” to the already **existing Torah** preached by The Prophets. Prior to Moses and “**the added law,**” history of *The Torah* goes back to **the beginning of creation**.

Abraham lived about 2000 B.C. and 430 years later brings you to Moses’ day about 1500 B.C. Adam, Shem, Noah, Abraham, Isaiah and Jacob did not have this **covenant** with their forefathers. However, **all** of them were “**a part**” of the **existing Torah** before “**the added**” Law of Moses. Until Moses and The Levitical Priesthood, The **Fathers** were under The Melchizedek Priesthood. This was **A Priesthood of Faith and Righteousness** and not under The Law of Moses. The Law written by Moses only gave a **great** human existence but Melchizedek gave **salvation**. Why?

The Old Covenant Continued

I Timothy 1:9-10 declares, “**Knowing this that the law [Moses] is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers [Prophets] and murderers of mothers, for manslayers. For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine [teaching].**”

How clear! If one is **under “grace,”** one needs **no** written Law. Why? Those who have The Law in their hearts and minds need

“no written” Law (Hebrews 10:16-17). The ones who have a sound (logical and sensible) mind need no written Law. This *Old Covenant* written by Moses in Deuteronomy was needed because Israel had a **wrong heart** or conscience when they received *The Ten Commandments* which was written on stone (Deuteronomy 5:28-29). All **criminal** nations need “a written law” to have a civil society. Before Moses, *The Torah* was a matter of faith under Melchizedek (Hebrews 7:12). The Priesthood changed and, then, The Law changed. Through Christ, The Melchizedek Priesthood was restored, as in Abraham’s day, and The Law was changed back to **faith** or **trust in God**.

In Deuteronomy, the **contract** made with Israel was not made with their fathers because under Melchizedek they were **under “grace”** by **faith**. That is why Abraham is **Father of The Faithful** (grace) and **not by The Written Law of Moses**. Right after God spoke *The Ten Commandments* from Horeb, God added “nothing more.” Read what God said about Israel and *The Old Covenant* (Deuteronomy 5:29). “**O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children forever!**” How clear! Israelites were criminals and therefore, needed to remain **in slavery** until they had a **right heart**. As Paul said in II Timothy 1:7, they had to have **a written law** to behave with a sound (logical) mind. A heart of flesh and not stone (II Corinthians 3:3).

With their hard hearts, Moses went up the mountain to receive *The Ten Commandments*, Statutes and Judgments written in a book (*Deuteronomy*). The first thing they did when Moses came down from the mountain was to **sin** by building and worshipping The Golden Calf. As God said, “**they really had a wrong heart.**” They could **not think straight**.

Originally, at Mount Horeb, *The Ten Commandments* which were spoken by God were **changed** from those brought down from Mount Sinai. Read the difference between The Sabbath Commandment spoken **by God** in comparison to the written Sabbath Commandment on the two stones. “**Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it Holy. Six days shalt thou labour and do all thy work. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the Lord made heaven [atmosphere] and earth [God’s house], the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it**” (Exodus 20:8-11).

This commandment given by God at Mount Horeb was to be a **memorial** of God’s **Seventh-Day Rest** in “**the garden**” (where God did the work). In Horeb, The Sabbath Commandment was to memorialize God’s “**kingdom,**” His “**rest.**” When Moses brought down the two tablets written in stone, there was no mention of God’s original “**rest**” in The Garden where God did “the work.” Now, The Sabbath was to remind them, **not of God’s “rest,”** “but of God delivering them from **slavery.** **Israel was, now, in slavery** to God as opposed to God’s “**rest**” where God did **the work.** Why? They are told to keep The Sabbath when Israel was delivered from slavery in Egypt (Deuteronomy 5:12-15). Israel was, now, to be in bondage with The Law written by Moses and would not be allowed into God’s “**rest,**” The True Sabbath. God did all the work and Adam and Eve only had to eat of The Tree of Life, God’s Holy Spirit, so they could mature and become like God (Holy). Salvation was a matter of **free choice** based upon faith. Now, Israel had to do the work and, then, rest on The Seventh Day. They were in bondage.

Since The Law of Moses was made for people who had a **wrong heart, (being unrighteous)** they had to keep **every jot and tittle** of Moses Law so they could learn to become righteous. Every government who has criminals must have **Laws**. Criminals must have **laws** to know “**right from wrong.**” Capital punishment perhaps would reduce **murder**, but it is to keep the nations as safe as possible.

Grace

The Torah, before The Law of Moses was written, had no written Law because before Adam and Eve sinned, there was no need for a **legal written law**. In the beginning, Adam and Eve were innocent, like babes and didn't even know they were naked (Genesis 2:25).

After they sinned, a priesthood was established called Melchizedek, which was “A Priesthood of Faith,” because Adam and Eve's **sin** was a **lack of trust** in their Father. There was no **legalistic law** until Moses and when Israel **sinned** against God's *Ten Commandments*, it became a Law. It was all God gave them at that point and He “**added nothing more**” until Moses went up The Mount where he had to write The Entire Law of Moses and they could not break any part.

The legal court of The Law of Moses was to **keep them** as God's “**righteous people.**” It was known as “**the righteousness of the law**” (Deuteronomy 6:24-25). This was because The Israelites had a wrong heart.

A Free Gift

Salvation or eternal life is a **free gift** based upon **faith** or **trust** in

God. Adam and Eve did not **sin** because there was no **legal law** to **transgress**. Their transgression was their **lack of faith**. That is why The Melchizedek Priesthood is “**an order of priests**” who are appointed directly by God, by an **oath** and not any genealogy with a father and mother. God only allows this “**order of priesthood**” based upon **righteousness** and **faith**. That is why Abraham kept God’s **commandments** and **statutes** based upon **faith** (Genesis 26:5). That priesthood was, therefore, The Melchizedek Order of Priests based upon **faith**. The Priesthood of Levi was predicated upon **sin** (Hebrews 1 and 5).

The Torah is **spiritual** and The Law leads you to “**life eternal**” (Romans 7:14). This Law of *Torah* is a spiritual matter which demands a **change of heart and nature**. According to Christ, you are to be **perfect** and **holy** (Matthew 5:48). This holiness comes from God’s “**agapé love**” given to a Christian by God’s Holy Spirit (Romans 5:5).

Since God’s love is a free gift given to Christians who repent, (free choice) it becomes, totally, a **matter of grace**. When eternal life is by “**grace**,” no work, whatsoever, can be done by humans to receive it! The Law, by Moses, added to *The Torah* became a **legalistic requirement** with **judgments** of **blessings** and **cursings**, The Law administered by Moses became a choice of **life** or **death**. Now, The Written Law of Moses became **death** (II Corinthians 3:3 and II Corinthians 3:6). The weakness of The Law demanded **death**. Human nature was too weak and could not keep The Letter of The Law.

Man’s **righteousness** by The Law only caused **death**. To change human nature completely, to have faith in God, demanded man do “**no works**” or “**deeds**” even of The Law. “**Eternal life**” is totally A Gift of **Grace**! It is The Law **to** Grace. It cannot be Law and

Grace, nor can it be Law or Grace. Eternal life must be a gift, totally, given by God by “**grace**” through “**faith.**”

When God builds His “**house**” which will be **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**, you will read God’s “**will**” is to potentially **save** everyone right into God’s “**kingdom.**” There will be no set date but on-going “**salvation**” right into God’s “**kingdom**” by “**grace.**” Not by a Court of Law, but a change of nature by God and Christ.

CHAPTER 8

GOD'S TORAH

Paul refers to The Law (which is *The Torah Law*) as being “spiritual” (Romans 7:14). The Law of Moses was not spiritual, but written and known as The Letter of The Law, which could only produce death (II Corinthians 3:6). *The Torah* is a spiritual matter which leads to “eternal life,” while The Law of Moses leads to only a righteous, successful human life. Why is *The Torah* “spiritual” and The Law of Moses considered only “righteousness?”

Spirit And Letter

Many Christians may be surprised to know *The Torah* and The Law of Moses are **not** the same Law. Genesis and Exodus, up till Moses, was *The Torah*, but the specific Law of Moses only began at Mount Horeb. *The Torah* existed since the beginning of the universe. God created **the heaven** and **the earth** and *The Torah* began then, although it was not written down (Genesis 1:1-2). *The Torah* is **spiritual**.

Most of *The Torah* does not include The Law of Moses. *The Torah* was already over 2,000 years old. The Law of Moses only lasted from about 1500 B.C., until the destruction of The Temple in 70 A.D.

Always remember, The Law of Moses cannot be kept perfectly without having **The Temple**. In order to keep The Law of Moses, it must be kept perfectly (James 2:10). For The Law of Moses

to be kept, you will have to wait till Christ's "**return.**" Why did God cause *The Old Covenant* "**law**" to **cease** and **vanish** (Hebrews 8:13)? The Law (*Torah*) wasn't destroyed but changed to a new administration.

Original Torah

God originated *The Torah* when He created the universe. God's "**house**" was the earth with His **protected** "**roof**" or "**canopy**" over it. This canopy was the **earth's atmosphere** under which God's children could **live** and **exist** (Genesis 1).

Old Covenant

The rest of the universe was in **darkness** with solar systems in competition with each other. Only the **earth** had God's protection for human life. There is no place like the **earth** in the universe as science, also, testifies. This is God's "**house**" for mankind and only The Creator could be the architect and creator of this "**house.**"

God's *Torah* Law, from its inception, had no legalistic demands until The Law of Moses was enjoined upon Israel. *The Torah*, then, became a **court requirement** with legalistic demands with **judgments** or **curses**. This "**added**" Law of Moses, as Moses reveals in Deuteronomy 5:3, is not the same covenant, *Torah*, made with Abraham. These are two different agreements God made (Galatians 3:17).

The Torah under Moses is known as *The Old Covenant* which was to last till Shiloh or until Christ came (Genesis 49:10). When Jesus Christ came to His own (Judah) they **rejected Him** and so He turned to another people, **The Gentiles** (Acts 18:6). Christ

came to restore The Law of Moses to Israel and when they rejected John, The Baptist as Elijah, a **curse** was placed upon the world (Malachi 4:6). For more insight on this, read *God's Story*. Before Moses, the original *Torah* was preached by The **Prophets** to mankind (Hebrews 1:1). The original *Torah* was not written, because it was not by a **legal** demand, but to be followed because of their **faith**.

This is the reason Abraham kept God's **commandments** and **statutes** and there were **no judgments** (Genesis 26:5)! Abraham was under The Melchizedek Priesthood, "**a priesthood of faith**" **based upon free choice**. **Salvation**, therefore, must be chosen **freely** because eternal life is a **gift** and has no human demands, so it only requires **faith**. It was the element of **faith** that was needed from the time of Adam and Eve until Moses.

Moses introduced *The Old Covenant* to Israel because they **feared** God would **kill** them (Exodus 20). They told Moses he should tell them what God wanted and, then, they would do it. God said they were correct in understanding they had a **wrong heart** and wouldn't keep **His commandments** anyway (Deuteronomy 5:29). *The Old Covenant* was "**added**" to *The Original Torah*, four hundred and thirty years **after** Abraham, "**And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law [Moses Law], which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect**" (Galatians 3:17). Wow! Do you understand what Paul just said?

Before The Law administered by Moses, The Old Contract, *The Torah*, the original **promise** or **contract** with Abraham, was based upon **faith** and not by **command**. Israel needed an order or a command which was no longer based upon **faith** as with Abraham.

From Adam and Eve until Moses, the original *Torah Law* was **foundationally** built upon “**faith**” without a legalistic court command. All nations, who have citizens with a criminal nature with no heart or **conscience**, must have “**a written law**” outlining “**right**” from “**wrong**” (I Timothy 1:7-10). This Law had to have judgments, penalties and when demanded, they had to be followed or the result was a curse.

When Jesus came and **proved His agapé love** for humanity, He was **the body** God required to pay for mankind's sins. He became Melchizedek as Christianities' High Priest (Hebrews 5:10). The Law of Moses was only instituted to be a shadow or type of a witness and to eventually bring them to Christ. Paul revealed in Galatians 3:24, “**Wherefore the law [of Moses] was our school-master to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.**”

Now the **original Torah Law** has come full circle. From Adam to Moses, **The Spiritual Torah** was based upon **faith**. From Moses to Jesus, with the addition of The Law of Moses, Deuteronomy became a **command** with **curses** and **blessings** (Deuteronomy 29-31), which when Christ came, was to be disannulled. Read Hebrews 7:1-19.

The Torah Law is **spiritual** and remains **forever** or for “**ages and ages.**” The Law of Moses which was “**added**” to *The Torah*, was only “**temporary,**” because of **sin** and a **wrong heart** and was only to **last** until Christ came (Hebrews 3:10 and Galatians 3:19). Once again, *The Old Covenant*, will be instituted during The Millennium to bring the rest of **Israel** along with all the other nations for their opportunity to come to Christ (Romans 11:25-26). The Millennium is necessary to have **the whole world invited to The Wedding Feast**, both the **bad** and the **good** (Matthew 22:10).

Christ was turning to other nations (to The Gentiles and The Lost Tribes) because His own nation, The Jews, rejected **Him**. At this time God was reinstating the original *Torah Law* based upon **faith** through The High Priest, Melchizedek which administered *The Torah* by **faith** or **spiritual worship**. When a change of Priesthood occurred, it then required a change in The Law. *The Torah* was now administered by Melchizedek through **faith** (Hebrews 7:12)!

Spiritual Worship

“**For the Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ**” (John 1:17). Christians are under **grace** and do not have to follow all The Law of Moses with its curses. Moses’ Law was written to be **done** by human **works**, which are called **dead works** in Hebrews 6:1. They were **dead works** because they only promised a successful, healthy human existence, but no “**eternal life**.” God’s “**house**” needs to be built by God and not by any human effort, such as “**the do’s and don’ts**” of The Law.

That is why Jesus warned when a **house** is built on a **foundation** of sand, it was like Adam and Eve, when they ate the fruit of good and evil, their human work would be destroyed. The next effort by mankind just before **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth** will be destroyed by **fire**!

Three Houses

Biblically, you read Christ described two types of “**houses**.” Matthew 7:24-27 refers to a house which is built on a rock (Christ – I Corinthians 10:4) or on sand (human works). Read about these two houses, but ultimately you will see there is a **third house**, as well.

Hebrews 3:1 directs that Christ is your Apostle and High Priest. Moses was **faithful** over His “**house**” (Law of Moses) which required human effort to build. To be “**righteous**” requires human effort or deeds. Hebrews 3:3 states, “**For this *man* [Jesus] was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house hath more honor than the house.**” Here are **two houses**, one by Moses which was built by each Israelite with their own human effort. This “**house**” **failed** because it was built upon **sand** or **human deeds** or **works**.

The **second house** is **built by Christ**, your High Priest. You’ve noticed this **house** has more **honor**. It is built upon a rock or Jesus. Moses’ house was not intended to last but merely to be a **witness of Christ’s “house”** (Hebrews 3:5).

Now for a surprise! A **third house** is mentioned to be built by God. “**For every house is builded by some *man* [Moses or Christ]; but he that built all things is God**” (Hebrews 3:4). This is a **third house** by God who builds everything! This is “the house” that God is building in II Timothy 2:20. God builds **all things**. Biblically, you will discover that God who created the universe is presently creating **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**.

Jesus said He was going to His Father to build a **mansion** for you (John 14). Read about God’s **new house** or **tabernacle**. God’s “**house**” will **not** be in heaven but will be brought to this **earth**. Revelation 21:1 prophesies that God is creating a New Heaven and a New Earth because the **first** heaven and earth will pass away by **fire** (II Peter 3:7).

Then, coming out of heaven, New Jerusalem will descend as a **bride** glistening with precious jewels. “**And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle [house] of**

God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them *and be their God*” (Revelation 21:3),

God, who creates all things, will make a new universe with a new earth which will be God’s new “**house**” where all mankind will eventually dwell. **The New Jerusalem** which will be on **The New Earth** will be **God’s New House**.

At that time, God will be able to dwell with mankind because sin will not exist. Isaiah 59:1-2 states **God will not dwell where sin exists**. He will not **even listen** to those who sin. When a people sin, God just leaves them alone **in the wilderness** as He did with Israel until Christ came. Christ was sinless so God delivered Him from Satan and the wilderness.

Until a people repent of their sins and have a change of mind or heart, God does not hold people responsible for their sins (John 9:41). This New House of God is a **spiritual (eternal) tabernacle**. God’s “**house**” only allows a specific number of individuals to live or enter His “**house**.” “**God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth**” (John 4:24).

God’s *Torah* in God’s “**house**” must be part or **within** a person’s **heart** and **mind** to be able to enter God’s new earthly “**house**.”

CHAPTER 9

EVERY MAN'S WORK

Who is going to be in The New Heaven and The New Earth? You are saved by “grace,” God’s work or effort, but each person will receive a reward by his/her own work (Revelations 22:12) and in their own order (I Corinthians 15:23).

What God Does And What Humans Do

God does not expect **mankind** to do what cannot be done. You cannot be **perfect** or **holy** because of the **weakness of your flesh** (your very human body). You, also, cannot live forever because everyone has to die (Hebrews 9:27). But what **humans “can do”** is to have **faith** in God and Christ.

I Corinthians 15 is known as The Resurrection Chapter. Erroneously, some believe the subject deals with **the resurrection** to God’s “**kingdom.**” That is not the subject. You read that it is about **the resurrection to life** of all of God’s children born from Adam and Eve’s lineage. The proof text, “**For since by man [Adam] came death, by man [Christ] came also the resurrection of the dead**” (I Corinthians 15:21). This can’t be any clearer! As all died in Adam so “in Christ” all humanity who did die and those, who will die, will be made alive. That is the context or subject of I Corinthians 15.

This is **Universal Salvation**. You will find it is the potential or opportunity for everyone to be **saved**. God required **free choice**

for everyone to be in God's **kingdom**. Being thrown into a Lake of Fire and tormented forever, or to be destroyed in The Lake of Fire will not and does not give **free choice**. The only free choice is for everyone to be made alive and then, have the **free choice** to decide when to repent, in order for them to be in God's "**kingdom**." The opportunity for free choice must continue in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. I Corinthians 15 covers the context how everyone is made alive; but not necessarily "**ready**" to be in God's **kingdom**. That is why in I Corinthians 15:22 it states, "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.**"

Since the word "**all**" in the Greek is "**in the heirst**" or a subjunctive mood which means every person made alive "not only has an order," but "has specific conditions" which must be met for all to be saved. However, all will be made alive or become spirit, but I Corinthians 15:23 reveals that every man has a specific order (time) as Christ being the firstborn. The rest of mankind all have their own individual order to be resurrected and made alive. "**Then cometh the end, when he [Christ] shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power**" (I Corinthians 15:24).

Paul summarizes what enemies Christ must conquer when He returns before He can give the "**kingdom**" to God. Notice what God's **last enemy** is, "**The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death**" (I Corinthians 15:26). Do you get the point?

The context of I Corinthians 15 asks "is there a **resurrection**?" Whose resurrection? Christ is "the firstfruit" and then "the first resurrection of the saints" followed by the **last resurrection** where **death can no longer exit**. Who is no longer dead? Some believe, from this point on, no one will be dying. Not so, according to

the context. Those who are born of Adam's progeny will "**all be saved alive.**" The context speaks of **Universal Salvation**. This honor is not referring to God's "**kingdom,**" but just who will be made alive and no longer dies.

Remember, Jesus cannot turn **the kingdom** back to God until all of Adam's children are made **alive**. Jesus must **end death** as God's **last enemy**. God hates death. He is "**The God of The Living**" (Mark 12:27). How will Jesus **end death**? Revelation 20:14 declares death "**ends**" by being cast into The Lake of Fire. Not only will death "**end,**" but there will no longer be any **graves**. No graves and no one is dead. This is called **the second death** which reveals no one can die or be dead because there can no longer be any graves.

The word "**all**" in the Greek's subjunctive mood presupposes "there is an order which must occur for **everyone** to be made **alive** in their individual order." That is the context.

How does Christ destroy death? I Corinthians 15:56 reveals, "**the sting of death**" is "**Sin**" and the strength of sin is "**The Law.**" It is "**The Law**" which condemns the sinner to "**death.**" "**For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord**" (Romans 6:23). Can't be any clearer!

Jesus abrogates death by having the wicked thrown into The Lake of Fire and completely destroyed! The second death. Once sin is destroyed by this **second death**, there is no longer any sin. The wages will have been paid and all sins purged. Sin is only purged when the entire being is destroyed.

Now, God gives these sinners a gift which is **eternal life** by grace. Those given "**grace**" now through Christ's blood are made alive.

I Corinthians 15:55 reveals, **“O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?”** Christ eliminated death and the grave by both being destroyed in The Lake of Fire. Now, Christ's death paid for the sins of the whole world. Now, no longer can anyone die or be dead. **“So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory”** (I Corinthians 15:54). Read the prophecy in *Isaiah*. *Isaiah* now comes into play which can be known as *The Fifth Gospel*. The Prophet declares that God will do wonderful things and cause the terrible nations to fear God (The Mark of The Beast) (Isaiah 25:1-3).

Paul further explains, **“the process to salvation”** in Romans 10:8-10. If a person shall confess with the mouth, that The Lord Jesus was raised from the dead, you shall be **“saved.”** Why? **“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness [of faith]; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation”** (Romans 10:10). There it is! By **faith** you will be made **righteous, but by confession with your mouth you are saved.**

Does this happen to all of Adam and Eve's children? Yes, it does! When? This happens in the **last resurrection**. **“That in the dispensation of the fulness [completion] of time he might gather together in one all things in Christ”** (Ephesians 1:10). Christ will gather all things both in heaven and on earth (last resurrection). That means everyone. But, what will they do? Christ was a servant by humbling Himself to die on the cross so that God has **“given Him a name which is above every name”** (“above” includes all God's enemies, including death). **“That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth”** (Philippians 2:9-10). This includes the angels, all heavenly beings, all humans on earth and

all under the earth (those who are dead), but to do what? “**And that every tongue [Adam’s children] should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord [master], to The Glory of God The Father**” (Philippians 2:11). That completes the **salvation of everyone** just as Paul described in I Corinthians 15. What ultimately happens to The Glory of God? “**And, when all things [dispensation is complete] shall be subdued unto him [death], then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him [God] that put all things under him, that God may be all in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). That is God’s ultimate purpose, to be “**all and in all.**” Then, and only then, can God receive His **kingdom** from Jesus, The Christ.

To be in God’s “**kingdom,**” which is a **gift, is only given when He** knows you and everyone else will have **faith** in Christ and can always be **trusted** and be in subjection to Him (by their free choice). The **opportunity** for **salvation** must exist forever or ages and ages. Read the conclusion in Isaiah 25:6-8. After Babylon, those with worldly goods and “worldly fat things,” such as The Mark of The Beast, are destroyed. Afterwards, a Feast of Fat Things (God’s “**glory**”) for all people in the whole world shall take place. This is The Wedding Feast, God’s Sabbath Rest (Hebrews 4:9). Notice what happens to the dead.

In Isaiah 25:7, God announces “**the understanding of The Gospel**” and no one is blind any longer. Then what happens? Isaiah 25:8, “**He will swallow up death [last enemy] in victory.**” Right out of I Corinthians 15. “**And the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces [universal]; and the rebuke of his people [Israel and Church] shall He take away from off all the earth: for The Lord has spoken it**” (Isaiah 25:8).

What is this time frame for the event? Obviously, this is **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. Read about this future prophecy.

Revelation 21:1-5 begins with **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth** as the old heaven and earth are gone. God has now created His “**New Great House**” and lives with all mankind, after The Lake of Fire and states, “**And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death [future], neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away**” (Revelation 21:4).

Then God declares He is going to continue “**creating**” by making everything new and it will be of a higher value and quality. You are now ready to study how God brings about His New Heavenly Kingdom, His “**house**” and who will be in it and what they will be doing. You will find that in accordance with I Corinthians 15:23 **every man** (person), **in his own** (special) **order**, will receive a personal reward based upon his own personal works. **God's** “**kingdom**,” however, will be a **gift** because of your **faith**.

CHAPTER 10

SPIRITUAL DOCTRINE AND DOGMA

Many world religions insist “God wants you to do a list of specific things to receive salvation.” Grace is given as an unmerited gift. There is nothing you can do to earn or receive eternal life. You will find there is a great difference between dogma and spiritual doctrine.

Doctrinal Dogma

The word “**doctrine**” in Greek or Hebrew merely means “**a teaching**.” When “**doctrine**” or “**a teaching**” becomes a **command** for **salvation**, obviously, no longer can it be a **gift of grace**. In a church denomination or congregation it becomes a **doctrinal dogma**. If one doesn’t accept the dogma **biblically**, one cannot be part of that **religious group**. All must believe “**a doctrinal dogma**” as a matter of command in order to belong.

One common denominator, whether Jewish, Christian or Islam or even pagans (without God), believes **everyone** must subscribe to a human requirement of what they must do or believe. Some even agree **salvation** cannot be earned, but they still **require human works**. What is the difference between **grace** and **works** or **deeds** by those in a specific religious group?

Denominations

Most are aware when figuring a math problem that a denominator

is to divide a **numerator** or a whole number. Paul has a great deal to say about **denominations** in religion. “**For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there* is among you envying, and strife, and divisions [denomination], are ye not yet carnal, and walk as men [humans]**” (I Corinthians 3:3)? This is the best definition of “**denominational Christianity**” which started about 50 A.D.

The word “carnal” in Greek signifies “being like an animal” which means “survival of the fittest.” It is no surprise Christian Churches continue to split and divide to this very day. Why? Because humans attach themselves to the preacher or minister or believe a certain church doctrine of their choice. It is exactly like Israel in the days of The Judges. “**Every man did that *which* was right in his own eyes**” (Judges 21:25). Every person would pick the church of their own personal choice. Just as is done today. All world religions have as their purpose to lead you to God, Almighty through and by His Son, Jesus. God and Christ are building an enormous “**house**” for all humanity to live in, eternally, on a New Earth.

Works

“**Grace**” is truly an unmerited gift. You cannot do anything to earn or have a right to **salvation** by any human **deeds**. This understanding is of **great significance** to receive **eternal life**. To be in God’s “**kingdom**” and to be invited to The Wedding Feast is only by invitation and has no cost except the **belief** and **desire** to be there. This is known as **faith** or complete trust in God, The Father and His Son, Jesus who is The Groom to be married to His Bride, His wife. God and Jesus are building a place for you in God’s “**house**,” in The New Earth (John 14:1-3).

In God’s “**house**” there are **vessels, pots, pans, etc.**, made for

honorable use and some for **dishonorable use** (II Timothy 2:20). This is in God's "**kingdom**" in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. There are those who are honorable and those who are the dishonorable. Both "**the honorable and the dishonorable**" are there. "**Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven**" (Matthew 5:19).

There it is. The honorable and dishonorable are both in God's "**kingdom**" or "**house.**" **The dishonorable** are called "**the least**" and **the honorable** are called "**the greatest.**" It can't be any clearer. Both the good and bad are in God's "**kingdom,**" but "the good" are "**great**" and "the bad" will be considered "**the least.**" This seems to be a contradiction. Both have received the **gift** of "**eternal life.**" How can this be? Is this a contradiction in *The Bible*? No!

Clearly, both are in God's "**kingdom**" by "**grace**" but both have personally accomplished different works. Those who lack "**the works**" of keeping **the commandments** are called "**the least.**" **How plain!** **The Kingdom of God** is given to both, good and bad, but their personal works determine what reward they will receive in God's "**kingdom.**" "**Works**" decide what you will be **doing** in God's **kingdom,** but the **gift of grace,** "**eternal life,**" is given unquestionably as an **unmerited gift.** There is no contradiction in *The Bible* but, more study, will give you a greater meaning "**scripturally.**"

That is why keeping *The Ten Commandments* in "**the letter**" by human effort isn't good enough to be "**the greatest.**" One must be more righteous than The Pharisees and Sadducees. Remember,

The Pharisees and The Sadducees only had to keep **The Commandments** in The Letter by their physical effort. To be “**the greatest**” or “**honorable**” in God’s **house**, *The Ten Commandments* in your consciousness must become part of your “**very being**.” Therefore, **be perfect as your Father in heaven**. How simple and easy to understand (Matthew 5:48).

Their very being, “**faith**” and “**works**” go hand-in-hand. Getting into God’s “**kingdom**” is a matter of **faith** and **grace**. What one does in God’s “**kingdom**” is a matter of **works** or **human effort**. Christ said the very same thing.

Christ And The Rich Man

Many misunderstand what Jesus was telling the rich man. Christ said, “**It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God**” (Matthew 19:24). The error again, is trying to explain **scripture** by a **verse** rather than have **the context** interpreting the verse.

Read the context of the story about Christ and the rich man (Matthew 19:15-30). The story really discusses two different questions and not “**just**” the **kingdom**.

Two Questions

What are the two questions that Christ answered which the rich man and His Disciples had asked

- 1 “**And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life**” (Matthew 19:16)?

- 2 Jesus said unto him, **“If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me”** (Matthew 19:21).

The question by the rich man concerning **eternal life** was simply answered by Christ when He said, **“keep the commandments”** (Matthew 19:17). Then, the rich man answered that since he was a child he kept the commandments (Matthew 19:20). Notice, Jesus presented even another question besides the first two stated in Matthew 19:17. Specifically, Christ said to the rich man, **“but if thou [you] wilt enter into life [live forever], keep the commandments”** [and then Jesus defines the commandments]. **If you are going to enter eternal life, it is best to enter eternal life by keeping God’s *Ten Commandments* so you can be called “great.”**

Addressing the second question, but if you be **perfect**, sell everything and give it to the poor and follow Him. Because Jesus said, **“the rich will hardly be in God’s kingdom”** most believe Christ is only referring to rich people. Wait, what was Christ’s complete suggestion? **“Follow me.”** So, **“following me”** is Jesus’ complete answer.

Jesus was saying to **give up** what is the **hardest** or **most difficult** for you. That is why He added to the rich man, **“...go and sell that you have, and give to the poor...and come and follow me”** (Matthew 19:21-24). His Disciples said to him, **“who then can be saved”** (Matthew 19:25)? Now, you have **“another question”** asked by His Disciples.

Christ answered, **“With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible”** (Matthew 19:26). This last statement by Christ relates as to how God can save everyone. To be able

to live **forever** is a **matter of grace**. You can do nothing to be saved. Only God can change you (so you can be **saved**). This was Christ's answer as to how to be made **alive** or **saved**.

To answer "**the other question**" such as being in God's "**kingdom**" you must understand only God gives this gift. "**Rewards**" are different than "**being saved by grace**."

The "**works**" humans must do are different than what only God can do, which is to be in God's "**kingdom**." To enter God's "**kingdom**," known as New Jerusalem, on The New Earth, demands **perfection** (to be "**holy**") **like God and Christ** (Ephesians 1). Only God can arrange for you to choose "**correctly**" and be able to do so through Christ by God's gift of The Holy Spirit. To be invited to The Wedding Feast you must receive permission to attend The Son's Marriage, by being in *The Marriage Registry*, which is *The Book of Life* (Revelation 22:19 and Revelation 21:27).

The questions posed by the rich man and Christ's Disciples cover many aspects of God's "**house**" in The New Earth. There is a difference between being in God's "**kingdom**" or to **live forever**, which is **salvation**.

Different Rewards

To be in God's "**kingdom**" mandates a change of nature to become **perfect** and **holy** like God and Jesus with them as your "**tutors**" or "**counselors**." Only Christ and God have the power to do this. Read what Jesus said when The Pharisees asked, "**When the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for behold, the kingdom of God is within you**" (Luke 17:20-21). The Kingdom of God is

not a place. God's "**kingdom**" resides on The New Earth, God's "**house**." But God's "**kingdom**" is a **condition** which requires everyone, in it, to be of "like mind" or eventually to be "**perfect**" and become "**holy**" (Ephesians 1). God's "**kingdom**" is a **gift** only given to those who by their **free choice** have **faith** to believe God can change them to be "**holy as He is**." You must become His very Son, as Jesus (Ephesians 4:13). This is a **gift** which only God makes **possible**. God gives this **gift** as an opportunity to live in His "**kingdom**" forever "**universally**."

Now, mankind's "**works**" determine the different rewards in God's government. These **rewards** continue **universally** for **everyone** with their free choice.

Under God's "**kingdom**," His Sons (by being **made perfect** by God's rule), His "**house**" is composed of **honorable** vessels and **dishonorable** vessels. The honorable vessels are The Sons of God, like Jesus, a ruling Royal (Godly) Family so God can become **all and in all** (I Corinthians 15:28).

Those who live in God's "**kingdom**," known as The New Jerusalem, includes God, The Father, Jesus and His **wife**. Those nations who are **saved** can come to The Wedding as "**guests**" only and can eat of The Tree of Life (feast). Those who are not allowed into The City of New Jerusalem are those who are sinners who went into **The Lake of Fire**. They are reserved in outer darkness, the wilderness, without God, until they, of their own **free choice**, drink the healing waters of the **fountain of life** coming from God's "**throne**." They, potentially, have the chance to grow, but in the beginning they are not allowed into New Jerusalem.

In God's "**kingdom**" there are differing **rewards**. Everyone, by God's **grace** is **saved**, but only the nations which are already saved

can enter **the city** to eat of The Tree of Life. Then, those unsaved who have eternal life (spirits) must be **healed** first (Greek, “therapeia”) by the leaves, as they choose to drink the **living waters**. Now, to cover God’s “**word**” necessitates to complete His “**will**” concerning The **Kingdom** of God.

“**Doctrinal dogma**” hinders “**spiritual doctrine.**” Spiritual doctrine is a teaching which is “**eternal**” like *The Torah* Law which existed before The Law of Moses (which was, later, added to *The Torah Law*). Doctrinal teaching, which is “**dogmatic**” or “**commanded as a requirement**” for **salvation**, contradicts God’s spiritual doctrine which is progressive, over a period of time, until all become perfect.

That is why **once** The Temple was destroyed in 70 A.D., by Titus, it ended the ability to follow The Law of Moses (which was added) to *The Torah Law* which was to lead to Christ (Galatians 3:19). That is why Christ told the Samaritan woman from that point on, God only wanted to be **worshipped “spiritually” because He is spirit and you must become as He is**. Prophecy evolves from The Law of Moses under Israel to Christianity “**spiritually growing**” to be like Jesus or have “Christ in you.”

CHAPTER 11

SPIRITUAL RIGHTEOUSNESS

Paul said the purpose of the preaching ministry was for the perfecting of “the saints” (Ephesians 4:11-12). You are to continue growing, spiritually, until you mature, eventually, reaching to the stature of Christ (Ephesians 4:13).

You have just read “perfection” is “a process of growth.” It is like a babe maturing to adulthood, but in this case, growing “spiritually.”

Doctrinal Dogma

“**Spiritual righteousness**” excludes doctrinal commands or human works which cannot and will not change **human nature** (Hebrews 10:19). Spiritual growth cannot and does not occur by what **humans do religiously**. Does it make it wrong for Christians to follow The Law in The Letter? Of course not! Keeping The Letter of The Law can only give you a successful human existence.

Salvation, however, requires you to become **perfect** and **holy** like God and Jesus (Matthew 5:48, Ephesians 1 and Ephesians 4:13). You are chosen by His “**grace**.” What is required except faith? You can do nothing to achieve it. As humans you have nothing to do with your growth from childhood to adulthood. Only God gives you “**human growth**,” as well as, “**spiritual growth**.” To become “**righteous**” can only be done by God, through Christ, with God’s Holy Spirit. That is why Paul admonishes Christianity

to stop “**arguing**” or “**being tossed to and fro**” (Ephesians 4:14). Spiritual righteousness is not some doctrinal dogma, but **a way of life**.

Paul clearly **defines** that **way of life**. “**But speaking** [preaching] **the truth** [Christ] **in love** [a servant], **may grow up into him in all things** [like Jesus], **which is the head, even Christ**” (Ephesians 4:15). Spiritual growth and spiritual righteousness is actually “a simple doctrine” or “teaching” **to understand**. It has nothing to do with human effort or some religious system to observe days or other rituals. It is all in the hands of God, The Father. God is The One who does the **saving**, (Isaiah 59:1) through Christ. There are no doctrinal dogmas mandated by God or Christ.

A Ministerial Conference

Many reading *The Book of Acts* believe the gathering of The Apostles in Jerusalem was to decide whether or not **the uncircumcised** Gentiles must be circumcised and to keep The Law of Moses to be part of The Commonwealth of Israel (Acts 15:5). The Pharisees who posed this question had a very good point. Gentiles could not enter The Temple to worship God without being **circumcised** and had to keep The Law, perfectly (James 2:10). In fact, a Jew could not have **table fellowship** unless they were circumcised and were keeping The Law of Moses.

The **misunderstanding**, however, wasn't “**table fellowship**” or “**worshipping in The Temple**.” The conference really was not about doctrinal dogma concerning The Law. The question was actually about **salvation**, “**And certain men which came down from Judaea taught the brethren, and said, Except, you be circumcised after the manner of Moses, you cannot be saved**” (Acts 15:1).

It wasn't The Apostles who presented the problem, but **the church members** from Jerusalem. Amazingly, no one kicked anyone out of the church, when any member might differ with The Apostles. It wasn't a matter of "**Law**" or "**Grace**" but **Salvation**. Their problem wasn't "**doctrinal dogma**." The two can never be the same. One has to do with "**righteousness**" of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25). The other is a question how "God makes you righteous." The Conference was about His "**righteousness**" **spiritually changing** your very nature to be like Jesus through God's Holy Spirit! The conference wasn't a doctrinal discussion, but how God **saves** you by **His Holy Spirit**. It was not a "**doctrinal change**" but a "**spiritual change**."

It wasn't The Apostles or **the church** making the decision. It was God who revealed this change by giving The Gentiles His Holy Spirit **without** the necessity of them being circumcised or keeping The Law. This was the point of this conference. They were **seeking** God's "**will**" and not coming together to determine some new doctrinal dogma to be mandated upon **the church**.

That is why James declared that Peter and Paul revealed it was God who gave The Gentiles His Holy Spirit **without circumcision** or the necessity to keep The Law of Moses. God made the decision; **not any man**.

In fact, even The Apostles had nothing to do with the giving of His Holy Spirit. Only God can give **salvation** as a **gift**, which has nothing to do with circumcision or The Law or any effort of works by man.

Only God can change human nature. "**Spiritual righteousness**" is not a doctrinal change but a change of your mind and how you **think**. That is why in Matthew 19, Jesus told His Disciples it is

only possible for God to change each individual to become **perfect** and it is **impossible for man** to change himself. Why do humans keep coming up with **new doctrinal dogmas** in their attempt to find, yet, another avenue to please God?

How God Gives His Righteousness

Since **salvation** is not a doctrinal issue, what is it that Christians can do? Paul said in Hebrews 10:24, “**And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works.**” There it is!

What Christians can humanly do, is desire everyone to love each other and, only, do good things. That's it. No doctrines, no other works.

When God sees a change in your **heart** to love each other and only do what is **good** for creation, then, God in **the resurrection**, will give you a new spiritual body without any pulls of the **flesh**. You will be, totally, **spirit** and **holy** like God and Christ. That is **spiritual righteousness**.

You need to stop trying to do God's “**work**” especially trying to develop “**human doctrine**” that cannot change anyone because everyone's **flesh is weak** (Mark 14:38 and Hebrews 7:19). The Law cannot make anyone **perfect**.

Humanity And Christianity

God only expects of you what you, as a human, are only able to do. Salvation is a matter of **faith** or having **trust** in him. Why? Only God can make you righteous in your heart and in your nature. Solomon, as King, and as The Preacher, was able to have and do whatever his heart desired (according to *The Book of Ecclesiastes*-

tes). Here is his conclusion of what a human can do in their life time, **“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter [human life] Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man”** (Ecclesiastes 12:13). The word “duty” is not used in older manuscripts. Christ, however, did say you should keep **the commandments**. Solomon is referring to **mankind** and what is right for a successful human existence. That is all humanity can do by their own human effort. Job kept **the commandments**. So did John, The Baptist’s parents, Paul and many others, but it did not change their human nature. **Spiritual righteousness** is not a religious system. Being **perfect** and **holy** is a **way of living** through **God’s Holy Spirit guiding Christians by faith**.

“Spiritual righteousness” is not a written doctrine but God placing Himself (His Holy Spirit) “in Christians” through Christ. That is **“Christ in you”** (Colossians 1:27).

When reading God’s literal plans, from beginning to end in *The Book of Isaiah* you will find God’s **“will”** and what God is doing to perform His **“will”** through Christ.

CHAPTER 12

WORLDWIDE CHANGE

You can now understand how significant *The Book of Isaiah* is in “biblical prophecy.” It carried a theme which discloses Israel’s and Judah’s sins to the point God had His two chosen nations go into captivity. The Ten Tribes of Israel are enslaved by Assyria and, finally, dispersed among the nations of the world. They become known as The Lost Ten Tribes of Israel to this very day.

Judah is taken captive by Babylon 134 years later. They remained in captivity for seventy years. Then, some return to Judah to rebuild The Temple.

Isaiah prophesied these events which were, yet, to occur. But what is the significance, especially to you and the rest of the world?

Rule Over God’s Kingdom

From the day Adam and Eve were in **The Garden**, it was God’s “**will**” to make mankind in His image by having them eat of The Tree of Life and becoming mature Sons of God. They were in God’s **kingdom**.

When they ate of The Tree of Good and Evil, it was, then, God’s “**will**” or “**plan**” to restore His “**kingdom**” on earth through “**a**

promised seed.” This was through Adam and Eve’s progeny (Genesis 3:15). This has been God’s purpose to the time of Isaiah.

Through Abraham, from whence **the promised seed** should come, Isaac was born “**miraculously.**” It was from Abraham, Isaac and Jacob to The Twelve Tribes of Israel, “**the restoration**” of God’s **rest** and **kingdom** were to take place. Israel rejected God and His Law by becoming like the other nations around them. They ended in **idolatry** and became liars, bigots and criminals following the ways of the other nations they were involved with. God, therefore, because of their sins, had to reject them and decided to let them go into **captivity**. Since they desired to be like their neighboring nations, they had to learn their lesson in how to only follow The True God and, in **faith**, to **trust God**.

Time Of The Gentiles

In Daniel, there were to be four ruling World Empires which came out of The Great Sea, The Mediterranean. Daniel 2 concludes with **a fourth beast**, which is a composite of the former three, which bears a resemblance to a lion, a bear and a leopard.

In world history, they were Nebuchadnezzar, “**the lion**” of Babylon; Cyrus, King of Media Persia, “**the bear**” and Alexander, The Greco-Macedonian, “**the leopard.**” The fourth, being a composite of the former three: **lion, bear, and leopard**, was **the most violent** – The Roman Empire (Daniel 7:4-7). And, once again this fourth beast’s image is to reemerge in a world ruled by Ten Kings or rulers in all The Ten Nations known as **The Image of The Beast**.

And, yet, “**end-time prophecy**” reveals it will be a time of great world prosperity. Anyone not following this world government, will not be able to be in business or likely to stay in business. This

union is partly of iron and clay (Daniel 2). Together, these nations are militarily powerful but held together by clay and stay together for their own greedy benefit, only. It will be based upon, only, world competition with each nation looking out for its own survival. This is The Mark of The Beast in Revelation 13:18. These are known as The Times of The Gentiles.

When World War III breaks out between The Kings of **the north** and **south**, they meet at The Battle of Armageddon where Christ stops “**world suicide**” by destroying those nations and introducing God’s “**kingdom**” with its reign (Daniel 2 and Daniel 7). The Time of The Gentiles is over and peace comes to the world for 1,000 years. Israel and Judah come together, as one nation, under King David with Christ as King of Kings and **the saints**, who are The Bride of Christ. After a short battle over Jerusalem, Jesus as King of Kings defeats Gog and Magog and God causes the old world and heaven to pass away establishing The New Heaven and The New Earth where God makes **all things new** (Revelation 21:5).

Pivotal Point

The Book of Isaiah lets you in on a **great biblical prophetic event**. The event is worldwide change of God’s **house (the earth)**. Instead of God’s chosen people, Israel (The Twelve Tribes), He passes the responsibility to The Gentile Nations to bring Israel to their senses. After Israel pays all their penalties, they will, then, worship **The One True God and His Son, Jesus**. God’s “**house**,” the earth, is turned over to The Gentiles until The Times of The Gentiles are fulfilled. Israel wanted to follow The Gentiles, so God gave them their wish to become like **The Gentiles, themselves**. In this critical time in world history this monumental change had occurred.

It is very much as Isaiah said that His children, (The Tribe of Israel), dishonored their Father, God so He turns Israel over to their lovers, The Gentiles (Isaiah 1:2-4). This pivotal point affects the entire world and it is why *The Book of Isaiah* is so significant “**prophetically.**”

The Book of Isaiah covers **all** of world prophecy from the captivity of both Israel and Judah until Christ **returns** to establish God's “**kingdom**” right into The New Heaven and The New Earth. This is the importance of *The Book of Isaiah* in relationship to the entire world. When you read *The Book of Isaiah* it behooves you to rely on it for prophecy from the captivity of Israel and Judah to The New Heaven and The New Earth. To benefit prophetically, Isaiah relates all prophecy which, eventually, must become **history**. There is the theme or methodology to *The Book of Isaiah* to interrelate with the rest of *The Scriptures* of both *Old Testament* and *New Testament* to help you understand **world prophecy**.

Isaiah's Theme

Some accuse God of forsaking His chosen people in *The Old Testament* when Israel and Judah went into captivity. Nothing could be further from the truth.

Since the time of Moses until Isaiah, God continually pleaded with Israel. In the beginning, Israel consistently disobeyed and dishonored God, their Father. God constantly sent His Prophets to warn Israel to stop disobeying His Laws. By the time of Isaiah, God realized telling Israel how to be a righteous witness to the world, wasn't going to happen. The time for verbal teaching was **over**. **Disciplinary measures** had to be taken. The direction of Israel left to their own devices wasn't getting the job done. Stern measures had to be employed.

At the same time, God wanted Israel to know He wasn't forsaking them by turning them over "**to their lovers.**" He really wanted them to learn their lesson and have **faith** and follow their Father, God.

Isaiah's prophecy follows a cycle of forty years. During Isaiah's time of prophecy, God continually warns Israel and Judah about depending on or following the local nations around them (Syria, Tyre, Babylon and Egypt). He tells them to return to His Law – to be honest, dependable, just, fair and stop negotiating with bribery for peace with all their neighbors. Then, a prophetic pattern evolves each and every time God declares what He will bring to pass. He first warns Israel, The Ten Tribes and Judah that captivity and slavery will befall them. Because of this captivity and mistreatment of His chosen people, God will, finally, destroy the nations who mistreated His people. During this period, a **remnant** of Israel and Judah are saved and come under God's protection. God calls this **remnant**, His **jewels** (Malachi 3:16-17).

During these prophecies God declares how He will, ultimately, **save all Israel** through His **servant, The Messiah**. Then, God returns Israel to The Promised Land, God's **rest**, ruled by Christ and King David (Romans 11:25-26).

Isaiah's prophecy continues through "**the millennial rule**" when the world will be invited to The Wedding Feast, which occurs during The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth. "**And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw The Holy City New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband**" (Revelation 21:1-2). Clearly, The Wedding Feast occurs at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth with

Christ as The Bride's Groom. This is the complete "**theme of the prophecy of Isaiah.**" Remember, the name of "Isaiah" in Hebrew means "God saves." Isaiah is The Prophet who declares "the entire prophecy of God's plan from **the captivity** of Israel through The Time of Gentile rule, to Christ's **return**; then through The Very Kingdom of God." It is time to initiate God's "**will**" and His "**plan.**"

CHAPTER 13

GOD'S KINGDOM RULES

Satan is “the god” of this World (II Corinthians 4:4). Since Satan, the adversary, is looked to as a god in this world, does that mean Satan rules this world? Satan, as a god in this world, is not the ruler of this world. “In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them” (II Corinthians 4:4).

There it is, Satan does not rule this world, God does. As long as those who do not believe The Gospel of Christ exists, Satan is allowed to blind them and is their “god” or “ruler” which, knowingly or unknowingly, they follow.

God Is The King

Isaiah prophesies world events from the time of Israel's and Judah's captivity. Since God is **The Supreme Ruler** or **King of The Earth**, then, **only, God can predict the events** to come from Isaiah's day until The New Heaven and The New Earth. It is God's Plan of **Salvation** and no one else's.

If Satan was in charge, then, God's “**plan**” or “**will**” would **fail!** For example, Satan knew he had to receive permission from God concerning Job. Job was perfect, upright and one who feared

(honored) God (Job 1:1). A time came when The Sons of God came before God, including Satan. God declared what a **good** man Job was. Here was Satan's reply, "**Then Satan answered the Lord and said, doth Job fear God for nought**" (Job 1:9)? Satan stated Job does what you tell him because of **all the blessings you have given him** (Job 1:10). Satan added if you take away everything you have **given him** – "**Job will curse you to your face**" (Job 1:11). God gave Satan the authority to take everything Job had, but not to harm him. Later, God allows Satan to take away his health, also, but he could not kill him (Job 2:4-6). Satan was never and is not, the **king** or ruler over this world. Only God is! Why then, does Satan fight against God and His "**will**" or "**ways**?"

"King," in Hebrew and Greek is "the one who builds" or "creates." He supplies, takes care of and keeps those under his rule **safe**. He is "**the archon**" (Greek) who is "**the top**" or "**head**," "**the first above everyone**." God is **The Almighty King of the entire creation**. Even Satan knows that (James 2:19). God is **The Only Supreme One** and in charge of His **entire creation as Supreme King Almighty**. God is the only one in charge and controls the **entire universe or creation**. God's "**will to be done**" means what it states. Why did Satan become an **adversary** to God?

History Of Satan

The name "Satan" is not a being's name but can explain what "**the being**" does. In Isaiah 14:12, "**How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!**" Here The King of Tyre is likened to Lucifer, "the son of the morning." Why? You will, **scripturally**, prove anyone who sets himself/herself above God Almighty as the **supreme king** is compared to Lucifer. Who

is Lucifer?

First, the name “Lucifer” is not from the Hebrew but the Latin and was translated by a Catholic priest hundreds of years later. In Hebrew, the word is “heylel.” “Heylel” is defined as “**brightness, the morning star.**” In Latin, it is “**the light bringer.**” This is Christ’s title in Revelation 22:16. Before Satan, literally became Satan, he could have been “the morning star, the sun or light bringer.” Notice this is exactly what Christ is called in Malachi 4:2.

In Latin, “Lucifer” means “light,” something like Lucite. The title “Satan” is not a name but “a **definition.**” That is why The King of Tyre carries the same meaning in Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28. He is like “**the light bringer.**” But, notice, God reveals the source of that title in Isaiah 14. How did this “**light bringer**” in Hebrew become “Satan, the adversary?” Isaiah predicting God’s theme of delivering His people, Israel and “**The World,**” through Christ, prophesies the downfall of Tyre and Satan (who should have been a **light bringer**). Isaiah 14:12 says, “**How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, [light bringer] [Heylel] son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!**”

What caused Satan’s fall? Why does God remove him? “**For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the height of the clouds; I will be like the most High**” (Isaiah 14:13-14).

There is **the biblical answer.** Satan became so pompous and egotistical that he believed he could be higher than Christ, **The Real**

Morning Star or **Light Bringer** (Revelation 22:16). In fact, he thought he was so **smart** that he could be **equal to God**! That is what he told Eve in **The Garden**. She could have chosen to be like God, Himself. It was Eve's decisions as to what was "wrong" and "right" for her to follow. Satan became the **adversary** to God's "**will**" and "**ways**." He was smart enough to know he couldn't replace God, who is **supreme**, but was content to be "**an equal**" **to God**. That is what The Pharisees accused Christ of doing by calling Himself, The Son of God.

There were two differences between Satan and God's Son, Jesus, The Christ. Jesus only spoke God's "**words**" and only did God's "**will**." Wow! What a difference! That is why, when Jesus was in the flesh, Satan was known as **the devil** or **the destroyer**.

Satan, as **the adversary**, is, also, **the devil** or **destroyer** of God's "**will**" or "**purpose**." Satan is trying to prove his way is better. Jesus, The True Light Bringer, on the other hand, always does God's "**will**" **according** to His "**word**." Only God is The One Supreme Being and The King, Almighty. God rules the earth, always including The Gentile Kings.

Gentile Rule

When Israel was in captivity, God turned over the rule of the world to **The Four Gentile Kingdoms**. God did this to teach all Israel to repent of being in the Gentile "**wilderness**" run by Satan. These kingdoms all originated around the area of the great sea, The Mediterranean. These four kingdoms are known as Babylon, Media-Persia, Greco-Macedonia and The Roman Empire. After 400 A.D., the decline of The Roman Empire was eminent and by 700 to 800 A.D. had pretty much vanished. One more world kingdom, "the eighth," was of The Seven Roman Kings, is to be an exact copy

or image of The Fourth Beast – Rome. This image or likeness of The Fourth Beast in Daniel 7 is to be crushed by Christ. This last image, The Mark of The Beast, consists of a “lion,” “bear” and “leopard” is completely violent and **economically** and **militarily** very competitive. It is led by The Ten World Leaders who will be crushed by Christ at His Second Coming (Daniel 2).

God, however, is the one in charge of the world and only allows these kingdoms to rule within and by His authority. What did God do to King Nebuchadnezzar who was “The First Gentile Beast” ruling **The World from Babylon**?

When King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon was at the height of his success he started to take credit for his kingdom's power. God allowed Nebuchadnezzar to have a dream where “**a great tree**” housed the entire world and God “**cut the tree down.**” Nebuchadnezzar asked Daniel, God's Prophet, to interpret his dream. Daniel answered, “**It is thou, O King, that are grown and become strong: for your greatness is grown, and reacheth unto heaven, and your dominion to the end of the earth**” (Daniel 4:22).

God likened Nebuchadnezzar to the great tree and gave him this warning, “**That they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet thee with the dew of heaven, and seven times [7 years] shall pass over thee, till thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will**” (Daniel 4:25). This is exactly what occurred to King Nebuchadnezzar. He was driven into the wilderness for seven years, as a beast, until his senses came back and he acknowledged God was The Real Ruler of The World.

God's "**kingdom**" in heaven always rules the earth and directs His "**will**" to be **fulfilled** or **completed**, even, when He turned over "**the rulership**" to The Gentiles.

God predestinated **a plan** as written in Ephesians 1. God is allowing Satan and humanity to rule themselves as to what is **right** and **wrong**, but God directs **events so everyone** will ultimately **fulfill** God's "**will**" and "**purpose**" (Isaiah 46:10).

God allows **free choice** to choose "**salvation.**" To do so, **salvation** must be potentially available through **all dispensations** by God. God is always **The Almighty God** and in control of **the world**. God can and will change His direction, if necessary, to achieve His "**will**, but God never would abort His ultimate purpose for Him to be "**all and in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28). You need to fully understand prophecy to know how God achieves His "**will**" or "**desires**" by an individual's "**free choice.**"

CHAPTER 14

THE BOOK OF LIFE

The Book of Life includes all the individuals who will enter God's "kingdom." The rest will be thrown into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 20). The question you need to ask concerning God's "will" is what, exactly, does *The Book of Life* contain?

God Is The King

As long as God gives humanity the "spirit in man" they are "living human beings." Once, God takes back "the spirit in man" that person is a **dead soul** or **no longer alive**. When a person dies, "the spirit" returns to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7). Only God has "life" in Him to give according to His "will" (John 5:21). Now, God has given that "life" to save the world to His Son, Jesus (I John 4:14). That is God's "will."

The Book of Life, therefore, is a scroll, whereby one's name is listed as having **access to receive "life eternal."** It is *The Book of The Living* because they are in God's "kingdom" What do those in New Jerusalem receive, which takes place during God's "kingdom" on **The New Earth**? "**Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city**" (Revelation 22:14). Do you **perceive** what continues in God's "kingdom," which is **The New Jerusalem**? The **potential** for **salvation** continues in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. The Tree of Life (salvation) is there!

God's "**house**" – The New Jerusalem continues with **spiritual growth** in The Kingdom of God. The access to The Tree of Life will exist in The New Earth (Revelation 21 and 22). Then, in Revelation 21:24, in addition to those who dwell with God in New Jerusalem, are other **nations** who are **saved**. "**And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.**"

The last group, those who are liars, abominable and defiled will not and cannot **enter New Jerusalem** (Revelation 21:27). These are those who are left outside or without The City of New Jerusalem (Revelation 22:15).

Jesus states, emphatically, His purpose when He will **return**, "**And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his works shall be**" (Revelation 22:12). You know "**eternal life**" is a **gift**, completely unearned, but as you have proved, your **rewards** can be earned. Period! This is the great **reality**, every man receives His personal reward in God's "**kingdom.**" This is the continued **potential**, in God's "**kingdom**" for the **whole world to be saved**. "**Every man**" means "it excludes **no one,**" **which, in turn, means "it includes, absolutely, everyone."**

In The New Heaven and The New Earth, besides "**the gift of eternal life,**" all humanity receives a **reward** based upon individual **works**. Those in *The Book of Life*, either, directly live in New Jerusalem as Christ's wife or are **the saved nations** who are allowed to visit God's "**kingdom,**" New Jerusalem. The third group, are those left outside the city who must continue their **spiritual growth** by drinking the rivers of waters with the healing leaves to **spiritually grow to "the stature" of Christ** (Ephesians 4:13). **In God's "kingdom" salvation continues as repented individuals**

who mature will become Sons of God (Revelation 21:7). But those who are written in *The Book of Life* receive a **special reward**. But who are they?

Marriage Registry

The Book of Life is a special book, reserved for a special group of people, so everyone will know the reward each individual will receive. *The Bible* tells you who that group is, “**And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.**” This cannot be written any clearer (Revelation 19:9).

All those written in *The Book of Life* are invited to **The Marriage Supper**. *The Book of Life* is a **Marriage Registry**. Amazingly, *The Book of Life*, only, includes those who are allowed to attend **The Marriage Feast** of The Groom and The Bride. Besides God, The Father, only, those “**invited guests**” are allowed to attend. That is why Jesus said in Matthew 22:14, “**For many are called, but few are chosen.**”

Because of Christ’s statement, some believe only a few of the world’s population will be saved. Again, Jesus said, “**Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there at: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it**” (Matthew 7:13-14). *The Bible*, obviously, does not speak of many who will be in *The Book of Life*. The errors assumed by many are, besides those who are saved, that **the potential for salvation** does not continue in God’s “**kingdom**” at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth. The Tree of Life proves salvation which contin-

ues in God's "**kingdom**," but one must grow, **spiritually**, to be allowed to enter New Jerusalem. One must take the first step to spiritual growth, i.e., keep *The Ten Commandments* in order to enter God's "**kingdom**" (Revelation 21:6 and Revelation 22:14).

The Marriage Feast

The marriage of Christ to His Bride is dependent on who qualifies to be His wife. At one time, The Bride was Israel, but they rejected Jesus when He came, so Christ turned to The Gentiles who were more receptive and, thereby, more worthy (Matthew 21:43). Matthew 22:1-14 reveals God sends the invitation to The Wedding Feast at three different times. Once, from **the time** of The Garden of Eden to the flood. Secondly, at the time of Christ's coming in the flesh, and until His death and resurrection. From that point, God sends The Wedding Feast "**invitation**" to everyone in **all the world**, both to the **good** and to the **bad**, until Christ **returns**.

Notice Matthew 22:9-14, "**Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage.**" This announcement covers the entire world, including The Gentiles and all heathens. This invitation includes **all people, good and bad** (Matthew 22:10).

At the time of The Wedding some will try to enter The Marriage Feast without the "**proper garments.**" In Revelation 19:8 requires the garment worn to "**the feast**" to be **righteous** or **holy**. If not, here is what happens to those not accepted, "**Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; but there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**" (Matthew 22:13). Matthew 22:14 declares, "**For many are called, but few are chosen.**" Contrary to some, who believe only a few are **saved**, this is after The Lake

of Fire and those not allowed into The Wedding Feast which is on The New Earth. Those, who went through Gehenna are **still alive** but not allowed into The Wedding Feast, in New Jerusalem (Revelation 21 and 22). Always remember, **salvation** continues in God's "**kingdom**" in The New Earth.

Those attending The Wedding will include God, The Father; Christ, His Son; The Bride of Christ and The Guests or other nations who are **saved**. The rest are left outside the city (Revelation 22).

The Book of Life is a *Marriage Registry* only, and does not include everyone who will, eventually, be saved. The "**spiritual growth**" process continues in God's "**kingdom rule**" in The New Earth. To have "**free choice**" to be able to enter New Jerusalem is ongoing for "**ages and ages.**" Only those properly dressed in God's **righteousness**, can enter the gate.

Greek Grammar

Revelation 20:15 prophesies, "**And whosoever was not found written in *The Book of Life* was cast into The Lake of Fire.**" All who are not allowed to attend The Wedding Feast in New Jerusalem are thrown in Gehenna, The Lake of Fire. Those not allowed into The Marriage Feast, after being thrown into The Lake of Fire, are resurrected and reserved to live in outer darkness.

In Greek, the grammar for the word "**written**" referring to "*The Book of Life*" is in the perfect passive participle. The perfect tense represents an action that was completed. The English would be, "**it has been written or completed.**" The passive voice represents the subject as receiving the action as, "to burn" or "burn – as being inflamed." The participle is a verbal adjective that is a modified action of the verb. An example would be, "receiving

the gift.” Putting the Greek together signifies “an action which is completed by meeting the requirement of its purpose.”

As long as you grow into **spiritual righteousness**, then, your name will be in *The Book of Life*. It is a process which is potentially ongoing, forever, or ages upon ages. It is the very “**purpose**” or “**work**” of God’s “**kingdom**” in The New Jerusalem.

The Book of Life is a *Marriage Registry* which is potentially ongoing in God’s “**kingdom**” forever. What a loving merciful God, when He shows Himself so patient to wait for everyone to finally decide to repent and become like Christ.

CHAPTER 15

TWO REVELATIONS

Did you know there are two revelations in *The Book of Revelation*? Revelation 5 reveals Jesus is worthy to open *The Book of Revelation*. That is the first revelation. The second revelation is Christ's Bride becomes worthy to be His Wife. The end of *The New Testament* comes from the Greek word, "apokastasis." The meaning is "to restore to a former condition." This restoration requires an uncovering or unvailing to get to the original state. That is why Jesus said in Revelation 1:8, "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, The Almighty."

This book is an unvailing of two different beings. Can you understand who they are?

True Love

In *The Book of Revelation*, Chapters 2 and 3, explains how Christ warns His Bride, **the seven churches**. All of them have something spiritually missing. Even The Philadelphian Church has only "a little strength" (Revelation 3:8). These Philadelphians know **The True Christ**, but only have a **brotherly love** for Jesus as opposed to having an **agapé** love. What is the difference?

When Christ was resurrected, He directed The Disciples to come

and dine with Him. While they were eating, Jesus asked Peter three times, “Do you **love** me?” Twice, he used the word **agapè**, that is, asking him if he (Peter) loved Him **so much he would die** for Him (Christ)? Peter answered and said, “You know, I **philia** you,” or have a deep friendship for you. Then, the third time, Christ merely stated, “Peter, do you **philia** me?” Again, Peter answered, “You know I **philia** you.”

Christ was testing Peter to see if he learned his lesson when Peter said before Jesus was **martyred**, he would go to the **death** for Christ. Then, he **denied** Jesus, three times, before the cock crew. Peter knew Christ was The Son of God just like The Philadelphians in Revelation 3, but as Peter, they hadn't loved Jesus enough to die for Him. Christ knew The Philadelphian Church needed to grow **spiritually** from “brotherly love” to “**agapé love**,” just as Peter should have done. Therefore, The Philadelphians are spared from going into tribulation but warned to **hold fast** to what they have, so the rest of the world could learn they, too, must grow from “brotherly love” to “**agapé love**” (Revelation 3:10).

The lesson needed by **all seven** churches of God was to learn to have **agapé love**, that is, to love Christ, so you are willing to die for Him. Why?

The Bride

The Book of Revelation is an unvailing. What kind of unvailing is it? Revelation 1:7 reveals, “**Behold, he [Jesus] cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth [all humanity].**” The unvailing has to do with **The Return of Christ**.

What does Christ's **return** have to do with this revelation or un-

vailing? One unvailing has already taken place. The second unvailing is prophetic and still to come. Read about the first unvailing which concerns *The Old and New Covenant* known as **Law and Grace**.

In II Corinthians 3:1-3, Paul describes the difference between The Law of Moses, which was in *The Book of Deuteronomy* and The Law, which is now, being written in your heart and mind by God, through Christ.

The veil over Moses' face was there every time Moses came before The Lord (II Corinthians 3:13-17). When Moses approached the people, this veil was over his face and the people feared to come before God's "**glory**," known as "The Shekinah." This veil remained in *The Old Testament* until Christ came and removed the veil from **the temple**. "**But even unto this day** [Paul's time], **when Moses is read** [The Law], **the veil is upon their heart**." Nevertheless, The Lord, shall take away the veil (II Corinthians 3:15).

Now, The Lord is that "**spirit**" and where "**the spirit**" (Holy Spirit) of The Lord is, there is **liberty** or **freedom**. No longer are the legal demands of The Law required as administered by Moses. Remember, a change of The Priesthood changes **The Administration of The Law**. Christ removed the veil of The Law of Moses and manifests *The New Covenant, Torah*, as it was in Abraham's day, as administered by Melchizedek. You are now ready to learn about this unvailing and place, in context, the second **revelation** (or unvailing).

The Slain Lamb

Revelation 5:1-10 covers **the first unvailing**. II Corinthians 3:13-

18 states Moses' face had a veil over it because The Israelites were afraid to look on "The Glory of God." This veil hid The Glory or Shekinah of God which covered Moses' face. God's "**glory**" is all of God's goodness (Exodus 33:19). This same veil blinded The People of Israel into Paul's day. What did Israel not see? II Corinthians 3:18 reveals it was The Shekinah, or God's "**glory**," which now is changed to **Christ's "glory."** II Corinthians 4:4 declares it is Satan who blinds The Israelites' mind to not be able to see Christ as The New Glory (II Corinthians 3:11). Now Jesus, The New Shekinah Glory, who is the **image** of God, will shine on them. Christ was in God's "**glory**" (John 17:5).

What made Christ **more glorious** than The Shekinah Glory under The Administration of Moses and The Law? A new song was sung, "**Thou art worthy to take the book [Revelation], and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred [everyone] and tongue and people and nation**" (Revelation 5:9). That is "**the potential**" for Universal Salvation. Christ's **blood** paid for everyone's sins. All that is necessary is "**repentance**" or "**free choice**" on your part. This is The First Revelation or "unveiling." Christ's **return** for The Bride is guaranteed. That is why the veil was rent in The Temple. Access to God's **mercy seat** was, now, available (Hebrews 9 and 10). Jesus, The Christ removed **the veil** and the marriage can, then, take place. God, The Father has given His approval. The veil was rent and, now, you have **direct access** to The **Holy Place, God's house**. Christ is **ready**, at any moment, "to return" for His **Bride**.

The Second Unveiling

Everyone asks when The Christ, The Messiah is going to come. Some say it must all be a myth since thousands of years have

lapsed and The Messiah hasn't returned. Even some Christians are beginning to doubt His **return** (II Peter 3). Why doesn't Jesus return?

At the end of Revelation, Christ said, "**I come quickly**" (Revelation 22:12). What is holding up **The Return of Christ**? When Revelation was written, Jesus was "**ready to return.**" In other words, Christ was ready to come, but only when the people are ready to repent and finally acquire **agapé** love.

Jesus, The Messiah is **worthy** and ready "**to return.**" Christ had given His **Life** for His **Bride** (with all mankind to come), to The **Wedding Feast**, both **good** and **bad** (Matthew 22:10). The first revelation is that Christ had to be The **Son of God**, so He could be The **Groom**. God, The Father is well pleased with Jesus and approves His Son's "**Marriage.**" What is the delay?

When Jesus came, originally, for His Bride, what did Judah do? "**He came unto His own and His own received Him not**" (John 1:11). John, The Baptist said, "**He that hath The Bride is The Bridegroom: but the friend of The Bridegroom, which standeth and heareth Him, rejoiceth greatly because of The Bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled**" (John 3:29). Christ, The Groom came for His **Bride, Judah**, to announce The **Wedding Feast**. What did Judah do? Judah rejected Christ and here is His answer, "**Therefore say I unto you [Pharisees and Scribes, etc.] The Kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof**" (Matthew 21:43).

Christ's Bride has to be worthy to become **The Wife of The Messiah**. How? "**For John came unto you in the way of righteousness and you believed him not: but the publicans and the**

harlots believed him: and you, when you had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that you might believe him” (Matthew 21:32).

There is God's answer. Your Father in heaven would never allow His Son, Jesus to **marry a woman not worthy** (or righteous), **who has not** proved Herself **worthy** by giving Her life for The Groom. Christians must prove themselves worthy (as The Bride) by giving their life for Christ, The Groom.

Some denominations, erroneously, try to determine the **date** of Christ's “**return.**” There is **no set date** “**biblically.**” Only God determines when Christ can **marry His Bride** (Acts 1:7).

Why did God **not allow His Son's Wedding Feast** until certain **conditions take place**? What must **biblically “transpire”** before Christ can return? “**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him [Christ]: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready**” (Revelation 19:7). There is your answer. Jesus will not return until His **Bride is ready to be His Wife.**

How does The Bride become ready? Just as John, The Baptist announced, “**The Bride must become clothed in “righteousness”** (Revelation 19:8). When it is revealed that The **Bride** is dressed “**in the proper wedding garment,**” Jesus will come and **marry His Wife.** Now, The Bride is ready to be **revealed** or **unveiled,** just as The **Groom** had to prove He was ready to marry, by **giving His Life for His Bride.** These are the **two revelations.**

Now, you are ready to understand what “**righteousness**” is and, then, discover the **process of your “spiritual growth.”**

CHAPTER 16

CARNAL SIN AND UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

Did you know you can find two separate definitions of “sin” in *The Bible*? One definition has to do with the carnal man and is known as “carnal commandments.” The other has to do with “spiritual growth.” One deals with The Letter of The Law and the other with The Spirit of The Law. But, remember, The Law is never done away.

Changes Of Priesthood

You are about to discover exactly how The Law is kept; it will always depend upon The Priesthood. There is a remarkable aspect of how The Law is to be kept. **“For the Priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change of The Law”** (Hebrews 7:12). Quite a statement! The question is, “How is The Law changed by a new Priesthood?” Jesus answers the above question in regard to Himself and His Disciples breaking The Sabbath by harvesting and eating ears of corn.

In Matthew 12:6-8, Christ revealed that He was **greater than the temple** where **sacrifice** was made for **sin**. Christ’s sacrifice for sin is greater than animal sacrifice for sin in the temple.

Then, Jesus makes a **profound statement** in regards to The Sabbath, **“But if you had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, you would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the Sabbath day”**

(Matthew 12:7-8). Jesus, as **Master of The Sabbath**, said rather than have a sacrifice for sinning on The Sabbath, now, He would rather see **mercy** or **forgiveness** for **sin**. Christ is The One who brings you to God's **Sabbath Rest**. Christ came to remove the curse of The Law (Galatians 3:13).

Christ moved from The Letter of The Law with its "**curses**" or "**penalties**" for Sabbath-breaking to a higher standard of "**Law keeping**" in **the spirit**. That is why Paul said The Law or *Torah* is "**spiritual**," while a human is **carnal** and sold under **sin** (Romans 7:14)

The Letter of The Law and its curses for sin demand sacrifices or death. With the change of The Priesthood, The Law no longer has "**the curses written in the letter**" as stated in Deuteronomy 28. Christ did away with "**the curse**" of The Law by His **death** or **sacrifice** (Hebrews 10).

Remember Jesus came to **magnify** The Law and make it more honorable (Isaiah 42:21). Christ, besides **magnifying The Law** will **reveal God's righteousness**. Christ truly states, "**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment [justice], mercy, and faith: these ought you to have done, and not to leave the other undone**" (Matthew 23:23). The **weight** of Christ's statement is astronomical. Jesus said being **just**, **merciful**, and **faithful** is of "**greater significance**" in The Law than breaking "**a lesser part**" of The Law. Doing **works** of The Law, as tithing, putting out leavening, fasting on Atonement were **far less important to Christ and God**. The **works** of The Law couldn't give **salvation** or stop sin.

Magnifying what The Law is about is much more honorable than

breaking some smaller requirement of The Law. God considers “**mercy**” **far greater** in His Law than picking corn and eating it on The Sabbath. **Observing** The Sabbath as “**a memorial**” or “**shadow**,” is not as important as doing “**good**” for human life on The Sabbath. It isn’t “**the observance**” of the day that counts under a new Priesthood as much as “**saving life**” or doing good for another Christian. That is why Jesus said **justice, mercy and faith** are of more importance in *The Torah* than picking and eating corn. **Salvation is the point!** One is God’s spiritual intent of “**Law keeping**” as opposed to “**the futile demands**” of The Letter of The Law.

“Barus,” in Greek signifies “**weight**” or “**burdensome**” the exact word “**weightier**” was used by Christ in Matthew 23:23. When God’s Law in The Letter creates “**a burden**” upon humans, then they are considered sinning against a higher requirement. This is and should be observed, because The Real Sabbath signifies God’s “rest” where there are no human burdens. All is **very good** (Genesis 1:31). That is how “**The Keeping of The Sabbath**” really is what God is and His **plan** for you. It is a “**spiritual keeping**” of The Sabbath. By spiritually keeping God’s Law, it truly gives more honor to God and who **He is!** Spiritually keeping The Sabbath means you do good works to save life, always. Your burdens are all lifted in God’s “**rest**” (Matthew 12:12), The Truth of God’s Sabbath Keeping.

Now, the difference between sinning in The Letter of The Law or breaking “**the spirit**” or “**intent**” of The Law is being “**unrighteous.**”

Committing Sin In The Letter

“Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin

is the transgression of the law.” I John 3:4 is famous for defining **sin**. However, this explains sin for “**carnal people**” only. Hebrews 7:15-16 reveals The Priesthood of Melchizedek is not made after a carnal commandment or for carnal individuals (I Timothy 1:7-10). The Priesthood of Melchizedek isn't weak like The Letter of The Law because, even if they keep it as perfectly as they possibility could, it still brought only **death** (II Corinthians 3:2-6). The Letter or doing works of do's and don'ts is “**a curse**” and can bring only death while “**the spirit**” brings **life**. That is the **weightier part** of The Law. Spiritually, *The Torah* is all about salvation. That is why Paul said The Law is made for unrighteous men, which judgment requires sacrifice or death (I Timothy 1:7-10).

All Unrighteousness Is Sin

Many are unaware there are **two major definitions** “**for sin.**” One, in I John 3:4 which is for those who have a wrong **heart** and need **right** and **wrong** spelled out in detail, because they do not have God's **heart** or **mind**.

Now, “**the definition of sin**” for those who magnify The Law to a higher standard, which gives more honor to God's *Torah* Law. “**All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death**” (I John 5:17). This definition includes an act of sin by rejecting The Holy Spirit (Matthew 12:13-32). This sin can be forgiven by repenting, **becoming perfect** and receiving God's **holy spirit** on your road to becoming like God (Matthew 5:48). Jesus defines “**unrighteousness**” in Matthew 19 in the account of the rich man who asked Christ what must he do to inherit **eternal life**. Christ tells the rich man to keep the commandments which the rich man declares he had kept since he was a child, and because he did keep the commandments, Jesus loved him. But keeping those com-

mandments, as perfectly as is humanly possible, still cannot earn a person **salvation**. So, the rich man asked Christ what he was lacking. Quite plain! Keeping **the commandments** does not give you **eternal life**. Why not?

Luke 17:10 reveals, “**So likewise you, when you [rich man] shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.**” Keeping The Law of Moses never promised **salvation**, but gave a good human existence. To be given “the gift” of **eternal life** you have to **allow God, by His Holy Spirit**, to make you **perfect** and **holy** like **Him**. It must be a **gift**. How does God decide to give a Christian that gift? Jesus answers how you get to be made “**perfect.**” “**And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name’s sake, shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life**” (Matthew 19:29). That is Christ’s answer for your own personal **salvation**. You must be willing to die for Christ and your neighbor. You must fulfill **The Great Commandment** in Deuteronomy 6:4-6.

It is a matter of **complete faith** “in Christ,” just like Abraham’s faith, when he was willing to sacrifice Isaac. Then, God by His Holy Spirit makes you **perfect**. Only God can make you “**holy,**” like Him. That is exactly what Jesus told the rich man when he wouldn’t give his riches to the poor and follow Christ to the death. It is by **faith** you are saved. Christ’s answer to all the doubting Thomases “**With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible**” (Matthew 19:26). Physically keeping The Letter of *The Ten Commandments* cannot make you perfect.

Christians can do nothing on their own to be saved, whether keeping The Law of Moses or any human effort cannot make you like

God or Christ. Only God can do this for you by His Holy Spirit. Only then, Christ will be “**in you**” and you can be made **perfect by faith**. Wow! What a loving Father. You need Christ’s **righteousness** which is God’s **righteousness** and, then, you will keep God’s Law on a spiritual level through His Holy Spirit which is “**love**.” “**Love**” fulfills or completes The Law on a higher level or standard and, thereby, magnifies The Law and makes it more honorable (Isaiah 42:21). “**Honorable**” in Hebrew conveys “the meaning of **superior** to The Letter of The Law” (Romans 13:10).

“**Carnal sin**” requires “**A Written Law**” because one’s nature is carnal to the extent of being beast-like. That is why the **transgression** of The Written Law is **sin**. God, by *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant* defines the difference between these **two agreements** by God always remembering both. Neither is ever done away. Both are always in force showing the different levels or stages of the converted or unconverted. Always remember both agreements are **holy, just and good**. *The Old Covenant* in its time had its place until Christ came and died and then *The New Covenant* was in force.

The Old Covenant must be kept perfectly, without a mistake. Since it cannot change human nature, one must not transgress any part (James 2:10). That is why God destroyed **the temple** in 70 A.D. Until **a new temple** is built The Law of Moses cannot be kept perfectly. Therefore, not The Law, but *The Old Covenant* is abrogated until **the millennium**, when “**a new temple**” is built. Under *The New Covenant*, replacing *The Old Covenant*, which never could be kept perfectly; God writes The Law in your heart by changing your very nature by The Holy Spirit through **love and faith** (Romans 13:10). From God’s love “**in you**,” you can grow to a higher standard of The Law (perfection) and stop all “**unrighteousness**” [sin] (I John 5:17).

CHAPTER 17

KINGDOM OF GOD

Some believe God's "kingdom" is like any physical government on earth. Others believe it is a Spiritual Kingdom. Who is right? Amazingly, you are about to find out *The Bible* confirms both.

A Physical Kingdom

Before Jesus ascended, The Disciples asked him, "**Wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel**" (Acts 1:1-7)? This obviously is a **physical government** with a King, Queen, Prince, Courtiers, etc.

This is clearly the restoration of a Royal Government. Notice Christ's answer, "**It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power**" (Acts 1:7).

God's "**kingdom**" is a real **kingdom** with royals and servants to serve Him. What is a Royal? In Hebrew and Greek the word "**king**" has far deeper significance than our fairy tale ideas. Most believe a "**king**" is "**one who is served by others.**"

All a "**king**" does is tell others what to do. Here is Christ's answer so one can be the **greatest in God's "kingdom."** "**Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven**" (Matthew 18:4). The greatest is "**the top**" or "**archon**" in Greek. "**Archon**" in English is "**The King.**"

God is the **greatest servant**. He created **everything**. He provides for all mankind. He keeps you safe and prospers you. There is no **greater servant** and in Hebrew it is “**el elyon**,” “the most high God.” He is **king of all** and, therefore, **gives the most**. That is **God's goodness!** That is the biblical definition of “**a king**.”

Since ancient times a **king** was considered **divine** depending upon how **great a servant** he proved to be. Some pharaohs were considered **divine** or **godly kings** just as some Caesars in Rome. If not, they were not looked to as **gods**.

The prince, as a son of the king, went out and performed what the Father's “**will**” was. That is why Jesus, only, did The Father's “**will**” on earth and only spoke God's “**word**.” Christ, was doing exactly as The King wanted Him to do. The queen, who marries the son or prince, must prove worthy, first as the **bride**, before she can be the **wife**.

In The New Heaven and The New Earth “**the prince**” marries “**the bride**” and she becomes The Wife of Christ at The Marriage Feast. Now married, the wife and husband consummate the marriage by producing Children of God to be The Very Sons of God. The Kingdom of God, ruling The New Heaven and The New Earth from New Jerusalem is The **Mother of all** (Galatians 4:26). This is the potential for Universal Salvation.

The Kingdom of God is a **physical kingdom**, as promised to Abraham which will be ruled from Jerusalem.

However, to be in God's “**kingdom**” you have to be **holy** and **perfect** like God (Ephesians 1). **Kind** after **kind** as God intended from the **beginning** (Genesis 1:26). That is why God is “The Alpha and Omega” which means the “beginning and the end.”

Jesus, as God's Son is, also, the beginning and the end since He only does God's "**will.**"

Without Observation

In Luke 17:20 they asked Christ when **the kingdom** would come. All The Pharisees wanted was for God to remove them from **The Roman "captivity"** and restore the **physical** Davidic kingdom. Here is what Jesus said, "**The kingdom of God cometh not with observation.**" He explained this statement concerning God's "**kingdom within you.**" "**Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you**" (Luke 17:21).

First and foremost, God's "**kingdom**" is a real government based upon The Abrahamic Covenant. Secondly, this **kingdom** only accepts citizenship of a particular or a peculiar type of beings. How are they different?

Paul said all Christians must be built on The Foundation of Christ (I Corinthians 3:11). To be in God's "**kingdom,**" you must be in "**the image of Christ.**" In later chapters you will cover each stone which will represent Christ, as the chief corner stone, and every other stone in God's **temple** must be exactly like Christ. Notice, The Apostle Paul's statement in I Corinthians 3 after he declares The Foundation of Christ is how **the temple** of God should be. "**If any man [teacher] defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple you are**" (I Corinthians 3:17). The stones in God's "**temple**" must all come from the same quarry! How clear! To be in God's "**kingdom,**" one must be exactly like Christ who is exactly like God (Hebrews 1:1-3). Now you can begin to know what God's "**kingdom**" will be like. It is **a real government with laws and a specific place,**

The New Earth, in The New Jerusalem. These Laws are **spiritual** because they are in the very nature of its citizens just like Jesus and God. They do not need to be written. However, you can not be in God's physical kingdom unless you take the steps to become like Christ. The New Earth and The New Heaven are **spiritual** as well as a true government ruling over nations on The New Earth.

Christ The Foundation

A **temple** is God's **house** where God is worshipped with His family. Notice this **temple is a spiritual** one and not physical. Revelations 21:22 tells you about God's **third house** which is "**spiritual.**" "**And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb [Christ] are the temple of it.**" There is your answer. This is a temple where access and worship of God is direct – face to face (I Corinthians 13:12). Those who live in **New Jerusalem** are all in God's "**spiritual temple.**"

I Corinthians 3:1-3 reveals denominational Christianity (according to The Apostle Paul) is **carnal**; they are only "babes in Christ." Why? Denominational Christianity is based upon competition or survival of the fittest. It is Christianity which is divided rather than united in Christ's **love**. Spiritual Christians, who are growing spiritually, learn to love one another regardless whether each one is at the same level of **spiritual understanding** (growth) **or not**. Read all of Romans 14.

Ephesians 4:12-14 warns Christians if you are spiritually growing toward perfection, becoming exactly like Christ, then you, as all Christians, should no longer be thrown to and fro, over differences of doctrine.

Unless you learn to love each other enough to give your life for

each other, like Jesus, you are only **carnal** or **beast-like** and always in competition with each other. Christianity is not complicated but simple “**in Christ**,” and you are to mature or **spiritually grow to His stature** (Ephesians 4:12-13). What has this to do with “**the temple**” and God’s “**kingdom**?” “**Now if any man build [preach] upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble: Every man’s work [preaching] shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man’s work of what sort it is**” (I Corinthians 3:12-13).

All denominations, by their “spiritual growth” shall decide whether or not they are growing spiritually. How can they tell? I Corinthians 3:11 says, “**For other foundation can no man lay [preach] than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.**” God’s “**house**” or “**temple**” must be built, by God. Each stone which is laid in this building (temple) must be just like God’s Son, Jesus, The Christ (the corner stone). God will not accept any other stone for His **spiritual temple** (I Corinthians 3:22). Can’t be any clearer!

Paul warns that, “**If any man [preaching] defile [not like Christ] the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which *temple* you are**” (I Corinthians 3:17). Christians are to be exactly like Jesus, loving each other, in spite of differing doctrinal understanding and willing to give your life for each other in **the unity of Christ**. Christ is the **foundation of God’s “temple”** which means **all Christians are to be an exact stone or image of Christ**.

A Spiritual Government

Besides God’s “**kingdom**” being a real government, ruled by **royalty** (God’s) and in the **same family**, each person in God’s “**king-**

dom” must be in the **same image** and **character**. Unless you are **holy** and **perfect** God cannot give **eternal life** as a **gift** to the world. Only by being in God’s **exact likeness**, can a **peaceful, successful, abundantly happy, prosperous, existence** last forever. This is God’s “**will**” which gives Him pleasure and is a pre-destinated **plan** by Him (Ephesians 1).

God’s “**kingdom**” is a royal ruling family in which **everyone** is **named** (Ephesians 3:15) after God, The Father. All the **world** must become like God and His Son, Jesus, The Christ. This is God’s **kingdom** when completed, “**In whom all the building fitly framed together growth unto an holy temple in the Lord**” (Ephesians 2:21). Then, will The Son, Jesus, turn **the kingdom over** to God so God can be “**all in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28).

It is vital you, **biblically**, understand what God’s “**will**” is, in reference to building His “**house**” and where His “**temple**” will be. This process is God’s original and perfect plan which fulfills His “**will**.”

CHAPTER 18

PROPHECY BECOMES HISTORY

It has been God's predestined "plan" and "will" to make mankind in His "image" (Genesis 1:26). God's Good News, The Gospel, is for you to become exactly like Christ who is exactly in the image of God (Hebrews 1:3). God is to be "all in all" so every man and woman can be in God's "kingdom." That was God's purpose from the very beginning of creation. That is God's "will." God revealed His "plan" or "will" as prophecy, which as it occurs, eventually, becomes history.

God's Will

Notice, God's "will" in Ephesians 1:5, "**Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will.**" Paul reveals it is God's "will" because it **gives God pleasure to adopt you** from human parents, to become God's **very sons** to be **exactly like Christ**. This is God's "will" which is not a **command** but a **desire**. God's **desire** is to have everyone "saved" by Christ (I Timothy 2:4).

Since it is God's "will" or desire to have everyone **saved**, does God **bring His desire to pass**? **Does He fulfill His pleasure**? Remember, God leaves it up to you to have a **free choice to decide**. Is God able to **complete His desire** by allowing humanity to make their own decision to **live or die**? Are God's "**thoughts**" so much more **intelligent** and **greater than human's** thoughts

that God can save the world (I John 4:14)? (Read God's answer in Isaiah 46:10). "**Declaring the end [omega] from the beginning [alpha], and from ancient times *the things that are not yet done* [prophecy], saying, My counsel [Ephesians 1] shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure [history]."** How much clearer can it get?

Whatever gives God **pleasure** from ancient times, the beginning to the end (history) will occur. God's "**will**" is to **make it happen!** You have just read God's purpose for you to be like Him by **His Son, Jesus**. God will bring His "**will**" to come to **pass** because God receives **pleasure** in doing it! That, my friend, is **Universal Salvation**. All of God's pleasure must, **also**, come to pass by bringing everyone to **repentance**. You are, now, ready to cover God's "**will**" in **saving the world** through **His Son, Jesus, The Christ**.

Adam To Christ

In The Garden of Eden, God gave Adam and Eve the opportunity or the **potential** to receive **salvation**, if they had made the **right choice, freely**. Adam, "**being the first Christ**" could have saved His wife and future family. But, Adam and Eve made the **wrong choice**, and so, a need for the **second Adam – Jesus, The Christ**, became necessary (Genesis 3:15 and Romans 5:17). How does God bring this prophecy to pass? Christ, the second Adam, must, also, save his family "**universally!**"

God's Word

Before Jesus became flesh or a human being, He was God's "**word**." John 1:4 states this **Word of God**, (who was God), made **all things** (John 1:3). God's "**word**" or **The Holy Spirit**, in the

beginning, created **all things**. Genesis 1:1 states, “**In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.**” How? It was God’s “**spirit**” which moved over the waters of the created earth and God said, “**Let there be light.**” It was God’s very “**word**” by God’s Holy Spirit which **created all things**. God’s “**word**,” was God’s “**very words**” that created everything. God’s “**words**” manifested the very power of God’s “**spirit.**” God’s Holy Spirit is God’s very power by His love (II Timothy 1:7).

Then, John 1:4 reveals that, “**In him [God’s “word”] was life; and the life was the light of men.**” This includes everyone created. God’s “**word**” has the **power of life, itself**. That **Word** of God gave **light** or **truth**. John 1:17 states, “**For the Law was given by Moses, but grace [mercy] and truth came by Jesus Christ.**” Why? Keeping The Letter of The Law does not give “**truth**” for spiritual growth or “**life.**” The Law merely reveals **sin** but does not offer or give **salvation**, which only **Christ can do**. That is what John 1:16 states!

The answer as to why Christ gives **mercy** and **truth** is revealed in John 1:14, “**And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace [mercy] and truth.**” Jesus was made flesh or human by God’s “**very word**,” The Holy Spirit – or **God’s very “glory”** or “**goodness**” (Ephesians 3:14-21). God, as Christ’s Father, by His “**word**,” had begotten and hath declared Him (Christ) His Son, which is in the **very bosom** of The Father (John 1:18).

Just as Isaac was a “**miraculous birth**” just as Christ was born by a miracle and was fulfilled with God’s **Holy Spirit** (John 3:34); Jesus, from His human birth, was filled with God’s Holy Spirit which is why He only speaks God’s “**words.**” Christ, in the hu-

man flesh, speaks God's "**words**" because **He is The Word of God**. Christ came from The Father as God's "**very word**" to **save the world** (I John 4:14). How does Christ bring God's "**will**" to pass?

Law To Grace And Truth

How will Christ **save the world** (I John 4:14)? Referring to God's "**word**" which became **flesh**, Christ as a human being, is a prophet fulfilling His mission in John 1:16-17, "**And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.**" Universally, Jesus became human to give "**grace to grace.**" Christ came to **perfectly be the embodiment of mercy or "grace" for everyone in the world**. Christ came "**to give mercy**" because it is by "**grace**" you are **saved** (Ephesians 2:5). "**Grace to grace**" (mercy) for all. Notice the next statement made in John 1:17, "**For the law was given by Moses [Law of Moses], but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.**" Wow! The Law of Moses **cannot give "mercy"** and "**truth.**" "**Grace**" as a **gift** and God's "**truth**" can come only from Christ. He exemplified the **very image of it**, as Christ was **The Very Image of God**. Breaking The Law of Moses (sinning) only gives death. Only Christ gives "**mercy**" or "**grace**" for sin.

Both, The Son and The Father are identical in **every way** and are able to give "**grace**" and "**truth.**" You, therefore, can only receive **salvation** and **truth** through Jesus from God, The Father. **Spiritual growth** cannot come from The Law of Moses, but only from Christ. Christ reveals "**the truth.**" This is God's **predestined** purpose. That is why there is **no other name** under heaven by which you **can be saved**.

Humans cannot save themselves by works or by keeping The Letter of The Law of Moses. **Grace** and **truth** can come only from

Jesus, The Christ; that is why He was born to **save** you! Plainly, Jesus tells you when you keep The Commandments of God, even though it is your **duty** as a human being to do so, you should regard yourself as **unprofitable** or a **useless servant** (Luke 17:10). In Greek, “**achreios**” means “to be **set aside** as no longer **useful**.” Christians know the keeping of The Letter of The Commandments is humanities’ duty, but is useless to get into God’s “**kingdom**.”

Spiritual growth must go far beyond the keeping of The Commandments. Keeping *The Ten Commandments* in The Letter, (what’s written) is only for **carnal** or **unconverted people** (II Timothy 1:7-10). That is why it is **your responsibility** to keep them for a **successful human existence**. That is why Christ said you are to be **more righteous** than the **scribes** and **Pharisees** who just kept The Letter of The Law. Notice, that is **exactly** what Matthew 5:20 tells you, “**For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed the *righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.**” Keeping The Letter of The Law or The Commandments does not give **salvation**.

Then, Christ, in the rest of Matthew 5, 6 and 7, describes what it is to be **more righteous**. You must become **perfect** in your spiritual nature like God, The Father (Matthew 5:48). This can only happen through Christ, who gives you “**grace**” and “**truth**” (John 1:17). Christ is exactly like God and you are to become exactly like Jesus (Ephesians 4). That is what Christianity is all about!

Knowing God

To understand how prophecy, (God’s “**predestined purpose**”) becomes history, you must first and foremost come to know who **The True God is!** The Law written by Moses never brought Is-

rael to the place to know and understand God. They saw God only as “The One” to **fear** but never understood **The Love of God**. They saw Him as an unforgiving, unmerciful and a destroyer of **life**. “**Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, they do always err in *their* heart; and they have not known my ways**” (Hebrews 3:10). There it is! Israel did not know who God was. All they understood was to **fear** him.

Many do not know who **The Real God is** or His “**plan**.” Some only see Him to **fear** and **obey Him**. Remember, biblically, **The Fear of God** is “only the **beginning of knowledge**.” You can only come to know **The True God** by and through His Son, Jesus. That is exactly what Christ said, “**That they all may be one; as you, Father, *art* in me, and I in you, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me**” (John 17:21).

When you grow “**spiritually**” means you are coming to the place you know who God **really** is. How He “**thinks**,” what is His inner most feelings and heart, as well as, knowing His “**will**” and **pleasure**. You become God’s “**friend!**” Unless you are growing **spiritually**, that is you must become **like Christ** (Ephesians 4:13), you can never know The Real True God and what His “**will**” really is.

Does God destroy life? Is God **merciful by discrimination**? Does God approve of suffering? Is He harsh? Some believe this is what God is like. Does God **punish** to watch humans in **pain** and **suffering**? Do you really know The True God?

Is God “**all-forgiving**” no matter how much sin you commit? Does God **love everyone**? Even those who are evil whom He must punish? Does God only **allow human suffering for hu-**

manities' good or profit? Does He **ultimately want everyone saved?** Does God's "**thoughts**" only think of how He can make your life and all Christian's better? On and on it goes.

Many times you misunderstand your own parents and believe they are not on your side. How can you **understand a being's real intention** and "**purpose**" is for a person's good?

When you are first born and as you grow you understand God (or know God) by your environment, education and personal experience. Your judgment can be quite in **error** unless you really know the **truth of someone's heart**. This applies to knowing **God Almighty** and **His Son, Jesus**. Christ came to reveal **The Father** (who and what God really is). Until you grow "**spiritually**," changing your **nature**, you cannot know **God**.

This is your first baby **step** to learn **the truth**. Only by Christ can you know what your **heavenly Father is like**. You will begin to know God's "**will**" and "**purpose**" once Jesus reveals The Father to you.

What begins as a **prophecy**, which become (future events), can only be **understood** as you grow in **The Grace** (mercy) and **The Truth** of Jesus, The Christ. Isaiah said to see future history, you must know The Real God, your Father through and by His Son, Jesus, The Christ (Isaiah 46:10).

CHAPTER 19

WHAT IS SPIRITUAL GROWTH?

In John 4, Jesus told the Samaritan woman, at Jacob's well, that the day would come when worshipping God would no longer be in Jerusalem or Samaria. In 70 A.D. "the temple" was destroyed and no longer was any "temple worship" possible.

Jesus related that God is a spirit and from that time on, God wanted Christians to worship Him "spiritually," in spirit and in truth.

Spiritual Worship

How can Christians worship God **spiritually**? Since God is a **spirit**, you must become just **like God**, who is **just like Christ** (Hebrews 1:1-3). There is the "**biblical**" answer. Since God is "**holy**" and "**perfect**" by nature, His divine **spiritual nature** must take place "in you." Christ "in you" is God "in you" having His **very divine nature by His Holy Spirit**. II Peter 1:3 reveals that because Christ is divine, through Him you can partake of God's very nature, "**Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these [promises] you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust**" (II Peter 1:4). How clear!

Through Christ "in you" you become just like **The Father** which is as **His "divine nature."** What a difference from world Christi-

anity, today, which makes you spend your **precious time arguing “doctrinal” differences.**

You are about to “**biblically**” discover, most of you Christians, have been **wasting your time with differing doctrines** which Paul called “**dead works**” in Hebrews 6:1. Notice Paul states how you, as Christians, should be spending your **spiritual time and that is to worship God.** “**Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrines of Christ, let us go on unto perfection**” (Hebrews 6:1). These are Doctrines of Christ and “**as babes in Christ,**” you need to **learn** them, but **strong meat, spiritual meat** is for Christians to **gain perfection.** You are either **growing spiritually** or **not.** If not, you are only “**babes in Christ**” and Paul says those who are “**babes in Christ,**” are, literally, **carnal** (beast-like) (I Corinthians 3:1-2). How clear! Knowing “**doctrine**” doesn’t put Christians in The **Kingdom of God.** You need to become **spiritual,** having God and Christ’s **divine** nature to be “**in the kingdom.**”

What Is Carnality?

The Greek word for “**carnal**” is “**sarkikos**” or “**fleshly.**” Animals and humans are of the same **flesh** and both return to **dust** when they die. Since philosophers and scientists believe both animals and humans are the same, as both must **survive** or **die,** survival of the fittest (or strongest) is the **issue.** “Carnal” is “one who is **beast-like** and devours others in order to **survive.**” That is what Paul meant when he said, **new Christians** are “**babes in Christ,**” because initially you come to God because you **fear death.** Spiritual growth, which occurs over time, as each person takes on the **maturity** to the point of being willing to **die** like **Christ.** You must become perfect and willing to die for Him. Remember, “**The Fear of The Lord is the beginning of knowledge**” (Proverbs 1:7). “**Grace and truth came by Jesus Christ**” (John 1:17).

To become “**spiritual**” is **ultimately** to become like Jesus, who, in turn, is **exactly like God** (Hebrews 1:1-2).

You must take on **God’s divine nature**. That is why keeping The Letter of The Law is being considered **sinless**, but does **not** change your **heart or nature**. You must become like God within your **very character**. That is what God said in a very significant statement when He gave *The Ten Commandments* to Israel, “**O that there were such a heart [nature] in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children forever**” (Deuteronomy 5:29). Can’t be any simpler! That is why God gave this “**added**” **Law of Moses** to *The Torah* because of their **wrong hearts** (I Timothy 1:7-10).

It is Christ’s purpose to change your very nature to be like God by His Holy Spirit. Christians must **worship** God “**spiritually**” because God is a **spirit** and you must **ultimately** be like **Him** in **the resurrection**.

The Good Tree

Christ said you are to know Christians by the **fruit** they produce. If you are of **The Tree of Life**, having God’s Holy Spirit, you will find you can **only** produce **fruit** that is **good** known as “**good works**.” If you are of The Tree of Good and Evil your **fruit** will be a combination of confusion or without “**goodness**.” Christ said only God is **good**, so you must become like Him (Matthew 19:17). It is quite **simple**. Notice the **personality** of a person producing **The Fruits of God’s Spirit**, “**But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law**” (Galatians 5:22-23).

Did you notice the first **spiritual fruit** is **agapé love** or willing to give up everything like Jesus for God or neighbors? But, even more, “**against such is no law.**” Even God’s Law doesn’t apply as far as being required for **salvation** in God’s “**kingdom.**” Wow!

That is why Jesus came to **magnify The Law** and make it more “**honorable**” or “**superior**” to **The Letter of The Law**. **The Letter of The Law produces death** but **The Spirit gives “life”** (Isaiah 42:21 and II Corinthians 3:6). **The Letter only reveals**, but **spiritual growth** changes your **nature** or **very heart** to receive **life**. Christ **magnifies The Law** to a more **honorable** or **superior level**.

Justice, Mercy and Faith

Judgment (justice), mercy and faith carry more **weight** or significance in God’s Law than tithing or other Works of The Law (Matthew 23:23). Why? Because it cannot change your nature by God’s Holy Spirit unless you seek **justice, mercy and faith**. These are **spiritual characteristics** that completely change how you are as **Christians**.

Doing **good works** on **any day** is “**lawful**” even on The **Sabbath** or on any **Holy Days**. The issue here is that God could have **provided food** for David and his men so they wouldn’t have had to break The **Law**. That isn’t the **point**. **Mercy** is what Christ was revealing which carries **greater weight** in **The Law**. Christ **magnified The Law**. Now, “**Sabbath keeping**” is to be done by **doing good works**. This is exactly what Isaiah **prophesied**.

To Perfection

The Law is composed of many **conditions** and many **variables**.

In *God's Story* you have read that *The Torah* was written as part of God's "**will**" with Christ as **The Executor** (Ephesians 1). God, upon the fulfillment of His "**will**," then, distributes the **benefits of God's "household."** In the **fullness or completion** of the times God rewards each person according to **his/her specific works** earned when they were human as to their **usefulness** in God's "**house.**" Those who are **unprofitable** are not **allowed** into **God's "house"** but **end up in outer darkness** (Matthew 22:13).

You have proven that keeping *The Ten Commandments* in **The Letter**, is a duty for **every human**, but it only benefits a person's human existence. It does not give you God's "**kingdom**" (Matthew 5:20). Luke 17:10 declares keeping *The Ten Commandments* **still makes you useless or unprofitable** to be in **God's "kingdom."** What makes the difference? Jesus in Matthew 19:20-21 said, "**If you will be perfect, go and sell all you have.**" Perfection is required as Christ continued in Matthew 5:21-48. It **all** has to do with a **change of heart**. Finally, through "Christ in you" at the **resurrection**, you are **made into the exact image** of Christ and The Father (I Corinthians 13:12). How does God's Holy Spirit, Christ "in you," make you like God?

Jacob's Ladder

Dr. Gileadi in his book, *Isaiah Decoded*, reveals that there is a **ladder or stairway** to God's "**house**" in **heaven**. After Jacob left his father's house in Palestine, he journeyed to Haran to take a wife from his father, Isaac's family. On the way, as night approached, he decided to spend the night in Luz. He took a **stone** as a pillow and fell asleep. "**And he dreamed, and behold a ladder [or staircase] set up on earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it**" (Genesis 28:12).

God reveals it is **through Jacob and his progeny**, He will **dwell** with them in **His household** (Genesis 28:13-15). In fact, God promises, **all the families of the earth will be gifted with Universal Salvation**. When Jacob awakes he is frightened, “**And he was afraid, and said, How dreadful is this place! This is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven**” (Genesis 28:17). Can't be any clearer. It is through Jacob's children, Israel, that God permits the **world** to be part of His “**house**” – The Kingdom of God.

The prophecy in Revelation 21:12 reveals The Twelve Tribes of Israel are responsible for allowing anyone into New Jerusalem on The New Earth. Notice what Jesus said was **necessary** for any one to enter into this “**gate in heaven**” which “**comes down**” to **The New Earth**. Matthew 7:13 Christ declared, “**Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there at.**” My how **simply said**. You must become **perfect like Christ!**

The “**path**” to God's “**house**” is narrow, as is “**the gate.**” However, that **ladder** begins with Jacob's **ladder** all the way to The Gate of God's “**house.**” When Jacob awoke, he knew what God told him and he changed the name of “Luz” to “Bethel” which in Hebrew signifies, God's “**house.**”

God's very angels are helping Israel get to God's “**house.**” Hebrews 1 reveals that is the purpose of the **angelic host**. They are to help mankind enter God's “**house.**” Now, what happens? Israel and Judah reject Christ, the **promised seed**, and Jesus goes to a nation more **worthy** and Israel, now, becomes **last** and The Gentiles are, now, to be **first** (Romans 11). Now, The Gentiles are to have **first choice**.

A New Ladder

In John 1:11 Christ is rejected by The Jews and Jesus, then, called a nation more **worthy** (Matthew 21:43). Jacob's children lose their right to be first and are now replaced by The Gentiles, where The Ten Lost Tribes are scattered. The **ladder** moves from The Israelites to the **rest of the world**, which includes The Ten Lost Tribes.

Israel rejected The Original **Marriage Feast Offer** and, now, Christ reveals the invitation to **attend the marriage feast** goes out to **everyone** in the **world**. **Both the good and the bad** (Matthew 22:9-10). Now, everyone is invited to The Wedding Feast even those who are bad and evil. This is **universal free choice**.

With the switch from Jacob's **ladder**, *The Old Covenant* is replaced with *The New Covenant* with **new requirements beyond The Letter of The Law**. What is the difference?

Christ makes an astounding prophecy, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man**" (John 1:51). Now, Christ is the **stairway or ladder to heaven**. It is now, through Christ and **not Israel**, that Christians enter God's "**house**" which is presently in heaven. The angels, now, help Christians to become **like Christ** (Ephesians 4:13). In Christ, it becomes a **spiritual process** whereby you are to **become perfect**.

CHAPTER 20

WHAT IS MAN?

The Apostle Paul quoted Psalm 8:4, “What is man that you are mindful of him?” God, who is a Supreme Being, why does He have any concern for mankind? God has made all humans slightly lower than the angels. Angels do not die as humans do. Yet, God gives mankind special care. In fact, He loves mankind to the point God would die for you through His Son, Jesus (Hebrews 2).

The Inheritance

God wants you to inherit everything He has and everything He will have – all **He created and He will create** in the future. You are to be **rulers over all the earth**. But what is the training process God uses to give you such an inheritance?

God made you **lower** than angels by you being **temporary** in your body and, then, you die. Death is caused by sin. Sin is the transgression of The Law. Sin is your **enemy**. It must be **destroyed**. Why did God give you a **body** that could die?

By conquering death (through Christ) you **learn to completely trust** or have **faith** in God. **Absolute faith** guarantees an **eternity** of **joy** and **peace** in God’s “**kingdom**” **forever**, therefore, you must become like Christ. Death, which God bequeathed upon humanity, is overcome through Jesus, as **victor**. Victory over death comes only when God teaches you to have **His “love,”** which is **to**

die for each other and, then, God grants **The Free Gift of Salvation**. But how does God teach you the lesson of **no fear**, to the point **you are willing to give up your life**?

Spirit And Flesh

Christ answers the question of **life** and **death** by making you know, through God's Holy Spirit, about what being human is really all about, "**It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth [profits] nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life**" (John 6:63).

"To quicken" in Greek is "**zoopoieo**" or "make alive." Quite clear. Your human body is useless, but it is the **spirit** "in you" which **gives life!** Being a human is a **great contradiction**. You always strive for existence. But, human **flesh** is the problem. Human bodies do nothing in regard to helping them get "**salvation;**" from the day they are born, **struggling at all costs to live**.

Jesus reveals that to have **life** is all a matter of **your spirit** and not the life you live each day. Yet, you do everything to survive, at any cost. But, it goes without saying, "It certainly is a **dichotomy**."

Christ tells you what you must do to resolve the issue between the **flesh** and the **spirit**. "**And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life**" (Matthew 19:29).

"**Survival of the fittest**" is the prime thought to human nature, yet in Matthew 19, Jesus tells the rich man to give up all his riches and give it to the poor if he wants to be **perfect**. The rich man couldn't do it. What is the answer? Christ clarifies the prob-

lem, “**With men [humanity] this is impossible; but with God all things are possible**” (Matthew 19:26).

Only God has “**the way**” by your own **free choice** (willingly) to give up your human body and its existence for a **spiritual and eternal one**. Jesus reveals the difference to Nicodemus, who was a master scholar of the day. Nicodemus comes to Jesus and Christ tells him, “**Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God**” (John 3:3). God has to change you from **human to spirit**. How does God do it? Jesus said, “**That which is born of the flesh [human] is flesh [human]; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit**” (John 3:6). You cannot be both. You must be one or the other. One must **die** to be **reborn “a spirit,”** but what is the **process**? How does God do it? Jesus tells Nicodemus, “**Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God**” (John 3:5). The way God resolves the issue of dying in the **flesh** (body) and growing in the **spirit** is by **baptism** (water) and receiving God’s Holy Spirit (willing to **give up the flesh**). As long as you remain desirous of being human first and not willing to bury yourself, you cannot receive God’s Holy Spirit. Without God’s Holy Spirit you cannot know the truth to choose **life over death**.

That is why Jesus asked John, The Baptist to baptize Him. Notice what Jesus said, “**Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becomes us to fulfill [complete] all righteousness**” (Matthew 3:15). Christ knew this was the **first step** to changing you from a human to **spirit**. Right after that, what happened? God had His Holy Spirit descend like a dove upon Christ. Now, Jesus was sealed by God to reveal His Father’s **agapé love** when He gave His life for the world.

By His death, Christ was a **living example** of **growing** from the

flesh, being human and becoming **perfect** by His death, He was then, **The Firstfruits of God** (I Corinthians 15:20).

As God's **first begotten** Son, He now becomes **The Author of Your Salvation** (Hebrews 12:2). It is the **death of your flesh and your free choice "willingness to die," like Christ**, that **guarantees you eternal life in the spirit**. That is why it is **appointed** unto all men (mankind) to die once. Either of your **own free choice** you give up life (die) or you will have to face the judgment (die) in The Lake of Fire. Everyone must willingly die of their own **free choice** or they must, willingly, **die in The Lake of Fire!**

Reason For The Lake Of Fire

Once you die, why would God require two deaths? If mankind is destined or **appointed** to die once, then what is the **reason** for a **second death**? A loving God always considers everything for His **creation**. God's **vengeance** is to win or fulfill His "**will**" and "**purpose**." God's "**will**" is to **save the world** (I John 4:14). God gets **vengeance** on the **wicked**, "**For they [fathers] verily for a few days chasteneth us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit [good], that we might be partakers of his holiness**" (Hebrews 12:10). Can't be any clearer! Since to be **perfect**, like Christ and God, you must willingly **die**, put to death your body as Jesus did. Once you show that **faith** in God, like Christ, God, then, gives you a **holy body** which is **forever**. Wow!

There is a certain process for God to give The **Gift of Salvation**. You must show your **faith** in God, completely, (like Jesus) by being **baptized** in water and, then, receive The Holy Spirit to guide you to more truth so you can have a **sound mind** (II Timothy 1:7). The Greek for a "**sound mind**" is defined as one who is **disciplined**; which humans call "common sense" or "wisdom."

The evolution from human to **spirit** is first with a baptism by **water**, which denotes a **death of self** (Romans 6:4 and Colossians 2:12). With God's Holy Spirit your mind becomes **disciplined** or develops **wisdom** and you will, then, come to the **truth**. **The truth** is the willingness to die completely, knowing in **faith**, as Jesus, God will **resurrect** you to **spirit** and give you **eternal life** so that God will be **all in all** (I Corinthians 15:28).

If by **free choice** one does not **grow spiritually** to be like Jesus (Ephesians 4), then that person must **die a second time to give up his or her life** as a free choice "**sacrifice**" to God. This is the "**purpose**" for The Lake of Fire. It is the **end of death**. That is why before anyone is thrown into The Lake of Fire, death and the grave (hell) must first be burned up.

Next, the wicked are burned in The Lake of Fire. That is a **sacrifice** God accepts for **sin**; the **goats**, which are thrown in the fire. The goats, which are a sacrifice that is acceptable to God, are thrown into **the fire**. Then, they are changed in a "twinkling of an eye" to **spirit**. Then, they receive **salvation** but cannot, as yet, be in the "**kingdom**." It is the **goats**, (clean animals) used for sacrifice, which God accepts as a sacrifice for sin. Those who enter God's "**kingdom**" are not the goats, but the **lambs** (Matthew 25:31-34). Why are the goats, which are clean animals, thrown into The Lake of Fire acceptable to God to **forgive sin**?

Sin can be forgiven, **spiritually**, only when the **entire person** dies; the **body, spirit** and the **life** or soul is dead (Matthew 10:28). Lambs follow the shepherd even to their **death**, willingly. The **goats do not follow the shepherd**. They **buck** and **kick**. These are those who refused God's Holy Spirit or resisted it (Luke 12:42-48). But, **everyone** confesses that Jesus is The Lord or Master Judge. Before The Lake of Fire "**all**" **will confess**. However, they

are the **goats** who **bucked** and **kicked** and **blasphemed God's Holy Spirit**, which is the **sin** that is **not forgiven**.

“All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death” (I John 5:17). Jesus made a profound statement, **“Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the Holy Ghost [spirit], shall not be forgiven unto men”** (Matthew 12:31). Can't be put any simpler!

All sin is forgiven. The White Throne Judgment is not about sin. Everyone's **sins** are **forgiven** long before The **Lake of Fire**. That is why **everyone**, **will universally confess Jesus is Lord** and therefore, **be forgiven their sins**. You must believe what **Jesus said** (Matthew 12:31-34).

When you **refuse to accept** or **hear God's Holy Spirit**, it is a **sin unto death** (complete **ruin** or **destruction**). All will **die once** (completely) or you face the **judgment** because you have refused to completely **die** like Christ. You, then, **commit the unpardonable sin**. **“And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him [universally]: but whosoever speaketh against [refuses] the Holy Ghost [spirit], it shall not be forgiven him [unpardonable], neither in this world, neither in the *world* [God's “kingdom”] to come”** (Matthew 12:32). This is Christ's definition of the **“unpardonable sin,”** the **sin to death**.

Complete **death** (**body, spirit** and **one's very life** or **soul**) must **die**. Then, you will be **judged** in The White Throne Judgment. By confessing Jesus is Lord, you acknowledge Christ is The Master and you repent that you **bucked** and **kicked** not wanting to **hear** or **accept** God's Holy Spirit. You now are a clean animal for **sacrifice and willing to die for Christ** and are therefore, **“saved”**

(Romans 10:13). There it is, so how do you come to **accept death willingly like Christ** and become a **Lamb** who follows **your shepherd**?

CHAPTER 21

SPIRITUAL GIFTS

Paul said, “Being confident of this very thing, that He [God] which hath begun a good work in you will perform *it* until The Day of Jesus Christ” (Philippians 1:6). The question is how does God make you holy, perfect and divine like Him?

It’s All About Gifts

If Adam and Eve would have eaten of The Tree of Life, they would have received all its nutritional benefits or gifts. Adam and Eve would have matured **spiritually**. Spiritual growth has nothing to do with The Letter of The Law but how God writes The Law in your heart and mind (Hebrews 10).

God gave The Letter of The Law to Israel because they **did not** have a **right heart**. God would not **write** The Law in their hearts and minds because they **refused it** just like Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve both chose to decide to struggle for survival by themselves because they ate of The Tree of Good and Evil.

Also, Israel, made the same decision but for a different reason, i.e., because they feared God. They were willing to do what God told them because they were afraid of Him. Israel did not want to **die**, just as you do not want to **die**. Paul said, “**To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect**” (Hebrews 12:22-24).

God judges your **spirit** or mind and heart (conscience) to decide who, with their free choice, are ready to be made **perfect**. It is God who can make you **holy**, but you must make the initial choice to allow God to do so, even if it means you lose your very life. That is what **repentance** and **baptism** is all about. That is why Jesus said when He was baptized by John, The Baptist, **baptism** is the **first step** to fulfill **all righteousness** (Matthew 3:15). Then, a voice from heaven said, "**This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased**" (Matthew 3:17). It is God's acknowledgement that His Son was willing to die for mankind. This definitely completes all righteousness which is **agapé love** (John 15:13). Now, you understand the beginning and ending of "**spiritual gifts**" from God.

You first must **repent** and be willing to die for Christ and God and, ultimately, be willing to die for **everyone**. "**Repentance**" is the first **step** to **perfection** and **love** is the **fulfillment** of God's "**perfect predestined plan**." It is all about **spiritual gifts**. Gifts which only God **can give** you! You do not receive it from a minister, priest, bishop or preacher.

God's Glory

In Exodus 33:13-23, God told Moses He would allow Moses to see all of **God's presence** (spirit), but not God's "**spiritual body**" (for to do so, Moses would have died). Then, God **revealed** that His "**glory**" or "the **shekinah**" in Hebrew is "**all of God's goodness**." Christ said, "**only God is good**" and now Moses saw that **Goodness of God**. It was God's very "**glory**" (Exodus 33:19). God made a **powerful** statement to Moses in Exodus 33:19, "**And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before you, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before you; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy.**" Do you get the point?

Becoming **perfect** and **holy** is in God's **hands so it is beyond your human fear**. You must first **repent**. God brings you to the willingness to change your mind and heart to **the point you are willing to die**. Then, and only then, does **God** become **gracious** and **give mercy**. "**Salvation**" is a step-by-step **process** which begins with **repentance**, the willingness to **change your mind and heart** and, finally, to the **point of your death**. Then, God gives "**mercy**." Why?

In psychology, most agree one is not willing to change for **good** until he or she **bottoms out**. God has known your nature from the beginning, which means mankind wants to **survive** at all cost – even to commit murder. That is why Jesus had to tell you, "**For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it**" (Matthew 16:25).

This is the reason God allows **such human suffering**. You **must bottom out**. You must come to the place, you no longer worry of saving yourself which causes you so much **fear**. Instead, you are willing to obey and **trust** God at all costs. That is what **real faith is!**

Some believe God is "**unfeeling**" about your suffering. Why does God allow human suffering? Peter gives the answer, "**And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation**" (II Peter 3:15). God realizes that unless He allows you to choose for yourself "**right**" from "**wrong**," even at the cost of horrible suffering, **you cannot be saved**.

God **suffers** with each and **every one of you** because His "**love**" is so much **greater than yours** that He commiserates with all your suffering. Why? The **Gift of Salvation** is too great to give to anyone not willing to die for it. It is **The Pearl of Great Price**.

God is **total goodness** and only total goodness can come from God. He always decides for your **profit** or **good** so you can become **perfect**. “**For they [our fathers] verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit [good], that we might be partakers of his holiness. Now no chastening [suffering] for the present seemeth to be joyous [happy], but grievous [horrible]: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit [product] of righteousness unto them which are exercised [experienced] thereby**” (Hebrews 12:10-11). This is God’s answer to you who suffer. God suffers “**with you**” while you suffer as a Father who, out of love, punishes his child to make the child remember an evil **act**. Thinking one can change a child by **words**, just doesn’t always **work**! How do you know? God gives you **His “word”** in *The Bible*, but **too many do not believe Him**. It is the only **righteous act a loving Father can do for you**.

If God bestows the **gift of eternal life** upon you, you **must be ready to do what is right and good for everyone**. If anyone thinks of **self first**, it breaks *The Ten Commandments* and, then, produces gross **unhappiness for everyone**. **God, above all, cannot allow this in His “kingdom.”** God, being **selfless** or full of **agapé love**, tolerates the **suffering** with those **suffering for their good**. Now, you know the overall purpose as to why God made you human or subject to **death**. You can conquer death through Christ by God’s Holy Spirit. By so doing, God is bestowing His **goodness** or **spiritual gifts** upon you, so you can be **victorious over death**. **Death is your Father’s enemy** and, also, your enemy, “**The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death**” (I Corinthians 15:26).

God's Gift

Paul said, “**Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Je-**

us Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ” (Ephesians 1:3). It isn't a Law which stops or destroys **sin**. The **Law** can, only, reveal **sin**. The **Law** cannot **change human nature as only God can by giving you His “spiritual gifts.”** These are God's blessings because you do **not deserve any of these** gifts because you are **carnal** and it takes time to throw off “the old man.”

God gives these **gifts**, when you, by your free choice, give up **your way of thinking** and your **desires**. Read the difference between God's thoughts, desires or **pleasure** and man's **desire** and **pleasure**. “**Through desire a man, having separated himself [from God], seeketh and intermeddleth with all wisdom”** (Proverbs 18:1). When humans decide **right** from **wrong** and do not have **wisdom**, your human nature is subject to self survival. When you are concerned about self-survival, you may not make **wise decisions**, especially when your very **life** is **at stake**. Self-survival comes first.

When you are so concerned, God calls that concern “**carnal**” or “**beast-like**” since as a Christian you must rely on Him and His Son. Why? Because beasts, whenever threatened, will protect themselves, even commit murder if they feel an enemy keeps them from their **desires** or **pleasures**. God's pleasure is to **save** you. Mankind's only desire is to **save self!** God and a carnal person's nature are complete opposite solutions. The fiercest beasts like a **lion, bear** or **leopard** are the most **violent**. God calls humans in this state, **the mark of the beast** or one who is most destructive of the land, the animals and all humans. (Revelation 13:17-18). Godly nature is like – **sheep**, willing to **give up their** life for the shepherd. God gives you this “**willing nature,**” undeserved **gifts** or **spiritual blessings** because repentant people can be and are **truly changeable**. The following are the steps you need to climb

to reach Godly Love. It reveals a visual ladder which gets you to truly change **spiritually**:

- | | |
|---------------|----------------------------------|
| Step 1 | Repentance by Fear of God |
| Step 2 | Mercy |
| Step 3 | Wisdom |
| Step 4 | Understanding |
| Step 5 | Faith and Hope |
| Step 6 | Justice (judgment) |
| Step 7 | Godly Love |

Fear

Jacob's ladder has these "**steps**," which can be followed to reach God or "**perfection**" (Genesis 28). Angels go up and down this stairway helping those, who in **faith**, are striving for **righteousness** (Acts 10:34-35). The Apostle Peter discloses the process God uses to start someone up "**the stairway**" to God. "**But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him**" (Acts 10:35). This is the formula you will follow so you can enter God's "**kingdom**."

Peter said most come to God through **fear**. You and most others do not want to **die**. God planned for you to have limited life by having God's **spirit** "**in you**," when you were **born**. **Inherently**, you **desire life**. Life hates death. Fear of death stimulates your heart and mind to strive for **life** or survival of the fittest. It is **fear**

which motivates humanity to **live**. God is The God of **The Living** and not of **the dead**. God hates death. When God makes you a **living being** (soul) at birth, you have God “in you.” **Fear is the first step** towards receiving **the gift of eternity**.

Depending on your **environment** at **birth**, you come to **understand** how you can have **life**. Your experience **growing up**, of course, may not have had an environment that could allow you to understand this wisdom.

If you are born into the nations according to the blessings of Abraham, you will learn to seek **righteousness** from **God**. You, because of death turn to God. Because of God’s **spirit** “in man” you are driven to love. In this way you become “**God-fearers**.”

Adam and Eve knew God because they knew they were born of Him. Cain was exiled from God and his lineage grew into pagans. Pagans are those who originate their own ideas of worshipping a “**god**.” Paul declared that, “**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men [human origin], who hold the truth in unrighteousness**” (Romans 1:18). Pagans do not have God’s blessings because through Cain, they know, only, that there was a God, but did not know The Truth of God. Pagans, because of their environment worship God in unrighteousness. Today, many believe in no God at all.

After the flood, the same thing happened to Shem, Ham and Japheth, Noah’s sons. Noah was the eighth preacher of righteousness which included his three sons (II Peter 2:5). Noah chose Shem to follow The True God. Ham and Japheth went on their own like Cain. There you have the beginning of “world history” to this present day. Depending upon environmental influences,

you become what you know and understand. Remember, God created you to have free choice. Paul reveals the outcome by saying those who did not know **the truth** start to worship God's creation rather than God. Many nations in South America and Native Indians in The United States honor the trees, mountains, stars, etc. (Romans 1:19-25).

Having free choice, you have your "polyglot of creation ideas" and little "gods" such as the sun, moon, nature and animals. Some however, who fervently sought God Almighty, "**el elyon**" and God's "righteousness," received God's blessings through Abraham. Then, there are the atheists, agnostics, pagans along with God's people. Who are His people?

From the **time** of Jacob (because of God's **promise** to Abraham), Jacob and his family are **chosen** to be God's people. Jacob's stairway to God only applied to His chosen nation, Israel. In John 1:10-11, Christ was rejected by **His own** (Judah). Then, God turned to **all other nations** as **His people** as Peter said in Acts 10:35. Now, anyone who **fears** God and wants to be **righteous** can be **accepted** of God. Jacob's stairway to God now **changes** to **Christ "spiritually."** "**For the law was given by Moses, but grace [mercy] and truth came by Jesus Christ**" (John 1:17). Can't be any plainer! Now, Jesus is the way to God's **truth** or **the literal stairway to God!** Christ said, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending [Jacob's ladder] upon The Son of man**" (John 1:51). How clear!

From the **time** of Jesus' crucifixion, the entire world could have their **sins forgiven** when **they repented**. Now, because of Judah's rejection of Christ, The Promise of Abraham comes through Jesus and not The Law of Moses. *The Torah* is now a **spiritual matter**

and **not through** or **by The Letter**. *The Torah Law* must now be written into your very nature.

When you are “in Christ,” “**There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus**” (Galatians 3:28). God does not discriminate between woman and man, nor any culture. You are **all** “**One in Christ**.” That is why “**all**” must become Sons of God, like Jesus.

The Bible states you are **all to be Sons of God**. You are to be Sons, not because of culture or gender, but because you are **all like Christ, God’s Son**. You must **all** become like **Jesus** and as God was well pleased with Jesus, He will be well-pleased with you (Ephesians 4:13).

You are **ready** to perhaps take another step up the **stairway** as “**the promised one**” with Christ to enter God’s “**kingdom**” according to **God’s “will!”**

CHAPTER 22

THE WAY TO GOD'S HOUSE

Jesus is “the way” to God’s “house.” “God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets. Hath in these last days [Roman Empire] spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds” (Hebrews 1:1-2).

From this time forward until God’s “kingdom” comes to The New Earth, Christ is the stairway to God’s “kingdom” for everyone. “For we know the law [*Torah Law*] is spiritual and He [Jesus] will magnify the law” (Romans 7:14 and Isaiah 42:21).

Called By Fear

Now, you understand the steps to **salvation** by Christ (step-by-step plan) as God’s Holy Spirit **leads** all those of every nation, who fear God, first, and seek His “**righteousness.**” The **righteousness** of **The Letter of The Law** doesn’t get you **God’s “righteousness.”** Now, through the **righteousness** of Christ, you achieve the “**spiritual righteousness**” of *The Torah* Law. God’s **rest and He, doing “the work,”** is the key. **Not by man’s work!** Israel was **right.** When Moses brought Israel out of Egypt to God’s “**mountain,**” He made a “**covenant,**” only with Israel **and not with their Fathers** (Deuteronomy 5:3). This “**covenant**”

was a Holy, **righteous agreement** with God and Israel. God is **always just**. At Mount Horeb, God gave Israel *The Ten Commandments* and **added nothing more** (Deuteronomy 5:22). God described the **spiritual state** of The Children of Israel. “**O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children [posterity] forever**” (Deuteronomy 5:29)! God knew they were **carnal** and, therefore, gave them **The Letter of The Law** (by Moses) which was **added** to *The Torah*. That is why Paul said this **Letter of The Law** is made for the “**unrighteous**” and not for the “**righteous.**” The **righteous** must **continue** on Christ’s stairway to The Kingdom by having **faith** with a **righteous heart** (I Timothy 1:7-10).

Notice, keeping *The Ten Commandments* is required for **all humanity** for a successful **human life**, even if they have a **wrong heart** (Luke 17:10). Solomon said the same thing for all **human existence** (Ecclesiastes 12:13). God knew Israel was **carnal** having a **wrong heart**. Israel was taking the **first step** on **Jacob’s ladder** to “**the kingdom.**” What was the **first step** – **fear!** “**And Moses said unto the people, Fear not: for God is come to prove you, and that his fear may be before your faces, that you sin not**” (Exodus 20:20).

This was God’s “**purpose**” for Israel. God knew Israel had a **wrong heart**. Therefore, He gave them **The Letter of The Law** so they could be God’s people as long as each time they **sinned**, they had a **penalty by giving a sacrifice**. With each sacrifice they became much more aware of their sin. (Hoping with each sacrifice they would change). However, murder or breaking *The Ten Commandments* generally requires **capital punishment** or **death**. Why? Since, as God’s “**witnesses**” to the **world**, they were to be **holy** or **clean** without sin.

The benefit of **capital** punishment for a nation is not that it **stops any heinous crime or murder**, but it keeps a **society civil** and livable for the ones who are not criminals. Capital punishment is **only necessary when** a nation or **carnal people** have a **beast-like nature**. People who have a **right conscience or heart, need “no written law.”** It is their **nature** that keeps them from breaking *The Ten Commandments*. They have a **right heart**. They love to keep *The Commandments*.

God knew they were only taking the **first step** up “**the ladder**” to God’s “**kingdom**.” **The promised seed**, Christ, would come and lead them to the second and third step (John 1:17) to receive “**mercy**” and “**truth**.” Those who took the first step based on **The Letter of The Law** alone, which was to fear God, did not have the faith to take the second and third steps; “**mercy**” and “**truth**.” Later, you will see some Christians do have “**fear**,” but their fear is they are afraid to take the second or third **step**. This is the parable of The Ten Talents. Those fearful only take one talent and bury it, refusing to grow.

Fear Is Righteousness

When God was ready to destroy Israel and build a new **holy nation** of The Tribes of Levi, Moses pleaded that God keep Israel as His people. Moses was right and now for God’s answer, “**And the Lord heard the voice of your words [Israel], when you spake unto me; and the Lord said unto me [Moses], I have heard the voice of the words of this people, which they have spoken unto you [Moses]: they have well said all they have spoken**” (Deuteronomy 5:28). Israel was right. God knew they had only taken the first **step** (fear) **spiritually** in their attempt to get to **God’s righteousness**. That is why God said Israel, His people were well-spoken. They took the **first step to perfection, then stopped**.

God, therefore, **added** *The Book of Deuteronomy*, the rewriting of **The Law**, to *The Torah*. Why? Without faith they could not take the **next step** in their attempt to become like **God**. This “added” **Law** was a set of do’s and don’ts so they could, eventually, be led **to Christ, The Messiah**. Originally, they rejected Christ, and therefore, could not **receive** the **second step** or **talent** from God (**mercy**). Remember, only Christ could bring “**mercy**” with **His sacrifice** (Hebrews 10).

No Mercy

Many do not understand (**spiritually**) God cannot **extend mercy** until **humanity** becomes **pliable** and **teachable**. That is what Isaiah said in Isaiah 28:9-12. You must become innocent, like a child and remain **teachable**. If not, God willfully **blinds you**. Why? So you are not held responsible **for your sins** (John 9:41). God is a very **just Father!** Read what God did to Israel to prove or test them because of their **unbelief**. Because Israel **feared God**, He kept Israel as **His people**. Now, God had to **test** them in the **wilderness**. Why? “**Beware of him [God’s messenger], and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions: for my name [authority] is in him**” (Exodus 23:21).

No longer would God lead Israel, but God’s messenger, probably an **angel**, would **now** be responsible just as with **Jacob’s ladder** with **angels** ascending and descending upon it. Angels are God’s messengers to help God’s people (Hebrews 1). What is important is they would **receive no mercy** or **grace** until they come **to Christ**. Some believe *The Old Testament* God is **harsh** and **cruel**. This applies to **Christians** who refuse to remain teachable with faith, as little babies on **milk** (I Corinthians 3:1-3). You are only held responsible for **what you understand** (John 9:41). Suffering comes only for your own benefit, i.e., when you **refuse** to **have**

faith or trust in God, completely. Through suffering, you **bottom out** and by your **free choice come to the conclusion only God's "way" leads to an existence which is successful.** Then, God can **give you the ultimate gift** to live in His **"house" – The Kingdom of God.** You will, then, be in **God's "rest"** where God does all the **work.** You must learn that you do not know how to create a **civil society.** That is why God allows suffering so you might wake up to **reality.** **Without God** there can be no **eternal life.**

Fear Leads To knowledge

God acknowledged Israel had said the truth when they agreed to obey God only because they **feared him.** They had a long way to go up the **stairway to God's "house"** before God would, once again, dwell in their midst.

Israel couldn't even be given **mercy** lest they would **sin** again because of their fleshly natures. Just as a little **babe,** God had to watch Israel as the angel led them through the **wilderness.** They had **no idea** where they were going. Israel was in the wilderness. They had a choice to decide for themselves where they were going or **completely trust God "in faith"** that God knew what He was doing for them. This is the reason for the **tabernacle,** God's temporary **earthly house,** where God appeared only in His **"glory"** to guide Israel (Hebrews 3, Exodus 13:21 and Exodus 40:34-38). Just imagine leaving a new born baby to himself/herself for long periods of time. Or, not being there when they are learning to walk. That babe, at birth, is in outer darkness knowing nothing.

Your first lesson is to learn when you are able to **walk,** does not mean you know what you are doing. This is a tendency with human nature, you begin to learn and, then, believe you know it

all. Teenagers start to learn how to drive and believe they are good drivers. All their senses work perfectly but they do not **have experience**.

Israel, as babes in God, started their training program for **successful living**. That is why God gave them **The Letter of The Law** with **all its curses**. They were grounded like kids. The curses were built-in reminders of sin! God began with the **basis** of all successful human existence – *The Ten Commandments in The Letter*. This was the first step on **Jacob's** or **Israel's ladder**. It was **their duty to keep** *The Ten Commandments* as Solomon and Christ said.

The People of Israel could not make **one mistake** in The Law because they were **only babes**. No **mercy** could be **given** as any training to **win a race must be almost perfect** to become a **champion**. Israel, as a nation, was to be a champion to the world. They were to be God's **mentor to the world**. They had a **long way** to go to get to the top of **the ladder**. **Fear** is only a beginning. "Fear" is the first step on "the ladder!" Fear just begins wisdom.

Beginning with *The Ten Commandments* this is what Solomon had to say in Proverbs 2:1-2. "**My son, if you wilt receive my words, and hide my commandments with you.**" This was beyond **The Letter of The Law**. David said to make *The Ten Commandments* part of your nature. How does that happen? "**So that you incline your ear unto wisdom and apply your heart to understanding.**" In Hebrew it means, "**perk up the ears.**" Make it your heart's desire to listen to *The Ten Commandments* because you will **learn to know wisdom and get understanding**. Wow! Now you know why **The Fear of God** is a good idea to start with by keeping *The Ten Commandments*. By doing so, it leads you to **wisdom and understanding**.

“**Wisdom**” is a personal **attribute** of God which comes from **personal experience**. To be wise is one who, over time, can see an **existence in reality** known as **the truth**. That is why **wisdom** leads to **understanding**. Humans, being a **mixture of good** and evil, without **life’s experience** of the **right type**, always **leads to Babylon or confusion**. God calls it being **in the wilderness** or in **darkness**. You really **do not** know where or what you are doing.

That is why God wants you to honor your **parents** and **elders**. Those who “**live life**” by *The Ten Commandments* are experiencing a growth in **wisdom** and **understanding**! “Understanding” in Hebrew means “to have **insight into reality**” or “**what is the truth!**”

Those who follow life the human way, good and evil becomes more and more **confusing**. That is why societies who do not have *The Ten Commandments* as its **basis of Law** continually **create** more and more laws which in The United States become **The Library of Congress**. As Paul said, “[For] **ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth**” (II Timothy 3:7). As The Gospels declare, there **is no end** to the writing of many books.

“**Fear**,” by keeping **The Letter** of *The Ten Commandments*, leads you to wisdom and understanding. Notice what Solomon said in the beginning of Proverbs about the **words of wisdom**, “**The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge**” (Proverbs 1:7). Truth starts with **fear** – fear of death. This is why God created you **subject to death**. You need to suffer **death** so you can have a **knowledge of truth**. Experience leads to **wisdom** and, then, you will begin to **understand** what life is **all about!** Fear, however, is **just the beginning in getting knowledge**. Israel and the rest of the **world** have a long way to go to get to **God’s “house” via the ladder**.

CHAPTER 23

MERCY TO LOVE

In the parable of the talents, God shows He gives various spiritual talents to each and every human being. The first talent is “fear.” After fear comes mercy, then wisdom, understanding, faith, justice and, finally, love.

The person who never grows past “fear” has the one talent taken away and given to the one who increases those talents by ten. Notice, the one who has FEAR and doesn’t grow, is not destroyed in The Lake of Fire but ends up in outer darkness and is wailing and gnashing their teeth for their obstinacy (Matthew 25:14-30).

Fear

“Fear” is naturally inbred within you when you were **born** because you find, through **pain** or **suffering**, that as a human, ultimately, you still **die**. You, therefore, avoid pain, suffering and death. That is known as **survival of the fittest**. The talent of “the survival of the fittest” can bring you to **ignorance**, **foolishness** or finally, through pain, to ask God for His protection.

The parable of the **sower** and the **seed** is explained in Matthew 13:18-23. Some are too busy with the human existence and choose to be involved with this human life and choose not to think of **death**, **preferring to remain ignorant** of The World Tomorrow.

Those who become aware of their purpose on earth, but are persecuted by others when discussing **life** or “life eternally,” are distracted and do not pursue further “truth.” In doing so, they avoid further hassles or trouble **by buying** into such theories as **evolution** or **life just being an accident**. God calls them **foolish** – since they begin to think there **is no God**.

Finally, those who refuse to be **ignorant** or **foolish** seek **the truth** in fertile **good earth** and begin to **grow spiritually**. They find they **must grow** beyond **fear** of death and **only fear God**, which is the **beginning of knowledge**.

Mercy

Because Israel only **feared God** and, therefore, agreed to **obey Him** out of **fear** of **death**, couldn't do it because of the **passion of their flesh**. Over **ten times** they refused to have **faith** in God (in the **wilderness**) and, then, blamed **God for the penalties for their rebellion**. So, they, therefore, **could not** receive **mercy** but had to **strictly keep every aspect** of The Law of Moses (James 2:10). **No mercy**. A change of **mind** must **first occur**.

In Galatians 3:24, **The Law of Moses** was only supposed to bring Israel to Christ (as their **schoolmaster**). John, The Baptist, has an answer for “**the way**” to **mercy**. John **warned** The Pharisees and Sadducees, who were obeying God out of **fear**. Because of fear, they came to be baptized, trying to avoid **God's wrath to come** (Matthew 3:7). They knew the prophecy about **the-day-of-judgment** but only because of their **fear**. Then, John said, “**Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance**” (Matthew 3:8). There is the answer to receiving “**mercy**.” Peter said God only **accepts those who fear Him and seek His righteousness**. They feared God but did not work **righteousness**. Repentance

requires **fruit** which Paul stated in Galatians 5:22. They only believed in the **righteousness** of **The Law**, but not **God's "righteousness,"** which **requires "spiritual growth"** (Matthew 3:8). They refused to advance on the stairway (ladder) to God's "**kingdom**" to receive **mercy**. They **only feared God** and **The Letter of The Law**. They sought their "**righteousness**" by **their own personal ability** and did not want **God** to change **them**. **Repentance is necessary** before **God can offer mercy**. Why? Because **repentance** makes you like **babes**, totally depending **upon God** in **faith**. That can be a **total change of mind from "human fear" to "faith" in God**. Then, God can bestow "**mercy**" because you are willingly **growing!** That is why Jesus said **faith** is a **weightier (a greater) matter of The Law** (Matthew 23:23). Christ came to **magnify The Law**.

From Fear To Faith

Now, to go through the seven steps to finally achieve **spiritual growth**. In the parable of the **talents**, God gave gifts of one, two and five talents. The one with 5 talents gained 5 more for a total of ten. The one with 2 **talents** ended with 5 talents. Now, the one with one didn't gain any because he **was afraid** (Matthew 25:25). Why didn't the one-talented person **fear God** and go on to **mercy**? It is by **faith** you are **saved** and **not by fear**. The person who is afraid is really telling God, he or she **lacks faith** in Him. To have **faith** is to be at the **level** of such **faith** or **trust** in God and Christ that Christians are willing to **die** for **Jesus**. To become **like Christ**, you must be willing to die. How do you **spiritually grow** to have no **fear**?

The **biblical answer** is revealed in I John 4:18, "**There is no fear in love; but perfect [mature] love casteth out fear: because fear has torment. He that feareth is not made perfect [mature] in**

love.” Of course, the word for “**love**” in this case in Greek is “ag-apé.” Its meaning is “loving someone so that you trust them implicitly.” You are willing to **die** for them. That is a **saving faith**. God tries to teach Christians to be in the **first resurrection**, to be in *The Book of Life*. The Greek word for “**fear**” is “**phobus**.” In psychology it is known as “**a phobia**.” It means a **false fear**, one that isn’t real or based upon fact. Once you **yield to God’s Holy Spirit** which reveals **His truth**, you **grow in faith towards Him** because you see and believe **God’s agapé love!** Now, one fears God by honoring Him and His love.

The word “torment,” on the other hand, in Greek is “kolasis.” The English word “**colossal**” from this Greek word means “**overwhelming**.” Without **faith in God’s love**, **fear** overwhelms you and because you are **so afraid** God knows you cannot change and, therefore, cannot **give you mercy**. Are you starting to **understand the reason for The Lake of Fire?**

Forgiveness of **sin** can only occur when your **human fear of self-preservation**, even the **fear of losing salvation**, cannot keep you from growing **spiritually**. Once your **sins** are forgiven and forgotten, God reads your **heart** to see if you are **truly repentant** and at **baptism** are willing to die for Christ. Repentance is a process. That is why John, The Baptist, wouldn’t baptize The Pharisees. How simple and clear!

Once you see God’s “**love**” you no longer **fear Him** for your **own safety**, but you **fear God** for what He wants to do out of His “**love**” for you. Through God’s love, your fear or reverence for Him and what He can **do** is to be desired, rather than **fearing God for the good of your personal life**. God’s “**mercy**,” after “**fear**” (for **self** is gone) is a **gift from God**. No one **deserves it**, but God gives **mercy** because now God’s **gift** will change you in your heart.

Mercy

You need to come to your **spiritual senses**. II Timothy 1:7 reveals that after **fear** is gone, you are **given a sound mind**. “A **sound mind**” in Greek relates to “a **disciplined mind**.” That is why colleges and universities call their degrees “a **discipline**.” It is an **intense study to find truth**. Since Christ came to **give you truth**, then **your mind and heart must desire wisdom**.

The Apostle John relates that the anointing of God’s Holy Spirit is what leads you to truth. There are physical disciplines such as earning college degrees, but **spiritual** discipline is what only God can give through Christ.

Physical discipline does give you valuable **truths about *The Bible*** whereas God’s Holy Spirit reveals **spiritual facts about **The Mystery of God**** only from God’s “**word**,” *The Bible*. Both can be extremely valuable. You need to know how *The Bible* was written, as well as, what humanity has done to God’s “**word**” with their human translations.

It is only from having God’s Holy Spirit whereby you can discern wisdom to understand God’s **truth** about The Mystery of God through Christ (Colossians 1). Here is what John said, “**But the anointing which you have received of him abideth in you, and you need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, you shall abide in him**” (I John 2:27).

No matter what any preacher or author tells you, you must “**judge**” **on your own the truth God reveals** to you with His “**word**” (I Corinthians 14:29). That is why, when Paul preached to The

Bereans, he called them “**more noble**” because they checked up on Paul and his ministers to determine if they preached from *The True Scriptures*. Having God’s Holy Spirit leading you to **truth** and **according** to your **spiritual growth** you will find God seeing what, next, you are **ready to understand**. First, you must have an **open mind**, **no darkness** or personal **agenda** (self-desires) and, then, with **wisdom** and **understanding (God’s gifts)**, you can come to have **more faith** to be able to have “**just judgment**” (ultimately **based upon God’s love**).

The Greek word for “**anointing**” is “**charisma**” or “a special **talent** or **gift** from God.” **Your faith** or **absolute trust** in God’s “**will**” determines (by God’s judgment) where you should be on God’s spiritual stairway to God’s “**house**.”

The very top step you must climb to God’s “**house**” is to have “**agapé love**.” That is why Paul said in Romans 13:10; that **agapé love** fulfills or completes **The Law**. Once you have spiritually **grown** from “**fear**” to “**repentance**” then “**wisdom**” to “**understanding**” and then “**faith**” to “**just judgment**,” you finally come to “**agapé love**.” Notice what Jesus said this final **step** to God’s love will do for you, “**You shalt love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul [life], and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, you shalt love your neighbor as yourself**” (Matthew 22:37-40). That **love is agapé love** because it demands you give up your life.

Dr. Gileadi, in his book *Decoding Isaiah*, said when you grow spiritually to this step and enter God’s “**house**,” (God’s “**temple**”) he or she achieves the **seraph level**. The **seraphim** are the **six-winged** angels who guard The Ark of The Covenant, God’s **very mercy seat**. Notice, Isaiah did not believe he was **worthy** to be

in God's presence, God's **glorious goodness**. In vision, Isaiah found himself before God's **holy presence** (Isaiah 6:1-7). "**And one [seraph/angel] cried unto another [seraph/angel], and said, 'Holy, holy, holy, is The Lord of hosts: the whole earth is full of His glory'**" (Isaiah 6:3). This depicts a future time when the **entire earth is full of His glory, His goodness**" (Exodus 33:19). "**Woe is me! for I am undone [I'll die]; because I *am* a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord [master] of hosts [the world]**" (Isaiah 6:5).

Isaiah completely knew he was an **earthly man, in the flesh** and therefore, still subject to the **flesh**. You are about to learn why some must go into The Lake of Fire! "**Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand *which* he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: And he laid it upon my mouth and said, Lo, this hath touched your lips and thine iniquity is taken away and your sin purged**" (Isaiah 6:6).
Wow!

God **purges sin from your mouth by fire**. God does not have you thrown into **The Lake of Fire** to kill you, but to **purge sin from your very mouth and entire being**. In Lazarus and the rich man, when the rich man was in The Lake of Fire, he cried out for a **drop of water** for his mouth because of the **torment** in the flames. This is why Jesus said, "**it isn't what one eats that defiles oneself**" (Matthew 15:11). Isaiah knew he was in the **flesh** and, therefore, **still carnal**. Since Isaiah was at the **seraph level** of God's "**temple,**" the angel had to **purge sin** from his **fleshy mouth** so Isaiah could prophesy **accurately only words given to him by God!** You are now ready to **biblically understand the complete reason a loving God has "some" go into The Lake of Fire!**

CHAPTER 24

APPOINTED, ONCE TO DIE

“It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this The Judgment” (Hebrews 9:27). Since you only have to die once for sin just as Christ did for everyone’s sins, then, why does The Lake of Fire follow The Judgment? Why do some have to die twice?

Wages Of Sin

Paul answers the question as to why Jesus does not have to die over and over again for each human or for your sins which you commit after **baptism** (Hebrews 9). **“For the wages of sin is death.”** Once you die, you no longer have any **sins**. You have **paid the full penalty**. You are **completely dead or destroyed**. You no longer **exist**. However, notice the rest, **“but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord”** (Romans 6:23).

When you die, you’ve **paid the last farthing** (Matthew 5:25:26). The question becomes, once you are **destroyed**, who **resurrects you**? In the account of the resurrection of Martha’s brother, Lazarus, Jesus answers her. Your brother shall **live again**. She replies and knowingly states, **“At the last day.”** Martha knew **everyone is resurrected the last day, The Day of Judgment**. Christ amazingly makes this statement, **“I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead [destroyed], yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall**

never die.” That is **eternal life for salvation** (John 11:25-26). Once you die and you “believe in me,” you shall never die or remain dead. When **all confess Jesus is Lord** (belief), they will be resurrected. Christ in this verse **acknowledges Universal Salvation**, “**Though he were dead, yet shall he live.**” Death holds **no one**. **Death will end and everyone will live.** This is **Universal Salvation out of Christ’s mouth!** Can you understand the magnitude of Christ’s declaration? Jesus proves, later, that He is referring to **Universal Salvation**.

When Jesus cried out just before He **died** (completely destroyed), “**My Father, My Father, why hast thou forsaken me?**” He knew exactly what he was saying. Read John 5:21, “**For as the Father raiseth up [resurrection] the dead, and quickeneth [makes them alive] them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.**” Christ knew when He died or was destroyed **The Father** had to **resurrect Him**. The Father had to leave The Son, because of everyone’s sins Christ had to carry to be totally dead. Once Christ died and paid the **penalty for everyone’s sins**, that is **all The Law demanded**, and, now, **The Father had to resurrect Him** as your **High Priest!** This is **exactly** why, only, The High Priest could go into The Holy of Holies and offer a sacrifice for **Himself** and **all the people** on **The Day of Atonement**.

Jesus died as a sacrifice (High Priest) for your **sins** but, also, to have **power to resurrect those He chooses to resurrect**. That is what The Apostle Paul was referring to in I Corinthians 15. Is there a **resurrection?** Once you are resurrected you will **bibli-cally** prove why, ultimately, “**all must be saved.**”

Two Resurrections

You are about to discover there is **no need** for **three resurrec-**

tions as some believe. Jesus said that only **Two Resurrections** are to come. Remember, a **resurrection** is only necessary if you are completely **dead** and no longer existing. Only if the **penalty** for **sin** has not been, totally, **paid** will you still have to **die** and, then, followed by a **resurrection**. You are only **appointed to die once!** Christ said you should “**Fear Him [God] which [who] is able to destroy both soul [life] and body [soma] in hell [Gehenna]**” (Matthew 10:28). The second is a total destruction of a person’s life itself. It is the **spirit** “in man” which, **also, must die**. That is what **salvation** is all about – a **new spirit**.

David’s Repentance

King David committed two dastardly sins of adultery and murder. How rotten can a person get? But through it all, David had a right heart. What does that mean? In spite of David’s sinful nature he still looked to God in **faith** after repenting and was **climbing Jacob’s ladder**. David completely looked to God! Especially, when he cried out, “**Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy loving kindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions**” (Psalm 51:1).

David knew **The Law** demanded **death** just as in the case of your sins. However, David repented, just as Christians do today. David was at the second step of Jacob’s spiritual **ladder**. “**Repentance!**” David knew **The Letter of The Law** offered **no mercy** for **carnal (unrepentant)** people. When David killed Goliath, he also, exercised **faith** in God. This was David’s “personal Goliath” and he knew **The True God** and believed in His **mercy** by having great **faith**.

David, in Psalms outlines what real repentance is about (Psalm 51:3-6). First, he admitted he sinned, but more than that, he said

his **sinful** acts of adultery and murder would never allow him to forget how **evil they** were and how evil he was in committing them.

He explained from the day he was **born** he had a **sinful nature**. David was a scoundrel. He even knew what had to be changed in his **being**. In Verse 6 David declared God wants an honest person by **being truthful with oneself in the secret parts of their mind and heart**. Then, he concludes by admitting only God, Himself can give **wisdom** to understand the **truth** of your true self. David was growing **spiritually**. David knew only God could change his nature by **purging his sin** and, then, he shall **be clean** (Psalm 51:7-12). Realizing how sinful he was, he had real repentance.

Finally, David gives the key to **salvation**. “**Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me**” (Psalm 51:10). It is the **spirit “in man”** (self-survival) that **must die** and God, then, **gives you an honest spirit** by His Holy Spirit. David, “**in faith**” prayed God would not leave him or take away His Holy Spirit from him. David had God’s Holy Spirit and he implored God not to take it away from him. David knew, with his repentance, God would kill the **wrong spirit** in David and make it a right **spirit** once again.

The Hebrew word for “**create**” is “**bara**.” The same as in Genesis 1. It signifies “a creation” which only God can do. It virtually means, “bringing into existence.” Only God has this type of **creative power**. It is like making “something from nothing.” Only God knows how to do this kind of **creating**.

David was asking God to take the human **spirit** He gave him at **birth** which desires to survive and make a **new kind of spirit** in him with His **Holy Spirit**. David said, “**kill or destroy my spirit**

and the **nature** I was **born with** and create in me “**Your Spirit.**” This is exactly what Jesus tried to tell Nicodemus when He told him, he had to be **born again** (John 3). That is what **faith** is **all about** – **to have the right heart** or **truth** that David understood, only too well, about **himself**. That is why God readily forgave him and why David received **mercy**. This is the **key** or **essence** in understanding there are only **two resurrections**.

First And Second Resurrection

Remember, “**resurrection**” demands “**death**” before you can be **resurrected**. Obviously, “**resurrection**” means to “**quicken**” or “**make alive.**” To do so, you must **really be dead**. If a part is **alive** no one can be **totally dead**. David knew his spirit had to die in addition to his body which, also, had to **die**. Once the **body** (flesh) and **spirit** (human desire) dies, then, the **total soul** or **life** in that person is completely **dead**. God will make a miracle or a new creation (bara) – a new resurrection. As Dr. Giliadi states, “from **ruin** to **restoration.**” This is what Jesus tried to explain to Nicodemus – to be born again.

It is obviously clear, now, what Jesus said had to take place in Matthew 10:28 for **salvation** to be given as “**a gift.**” Both body, spirit and soul must die before you can be **born again** as a new creation by God. That is the reason for the first and second resurrections. Total death must occur before a new birth can be given. Otherwise, a second resurrection is needed for those who need to completely die. The wages of sin demands it according to The Law (I John 3:4 and Romans 6:23).

Since you are only **appointed** to **die** once, then a **second resurrection** must transpire for you to **die twice** or **totally be dead**. The **first resurrection** is a **special resurrection**. It is known

as the **resurrection of the firstborn** (I Corinthians 15:23). It is known as **the resurrection of the firstfruits** [firstborn] because those in the first resurrection are **born again** after Christ. Jesus was the original **Firstborn Son** because He, as a **human in the flesh grew spiritually** to the **top of Jacob's ladder** of “**agapé love**.” He, first, gave His Life for you. In this way, He became **The Author** (or **beginner**) of **Your Salvation**.

Those in the **first resurrection**, also, must **grow “spiritually”** to become **like Christ** by completing the steps of **Jacob's ladder**. Jesus was The First Begotten Son (mono-genes) and The **Bride** must, now, become **worthy** to be Christ's **wife** (Revelation 19:7). These, are those who will be in the **first resurrection** and be **born again** into **spirit beings** like **Jesus**. Those **special Christians are to become** Christ's wife because **The Bride** has made **herself ready**.

The Second Resurrection, being **The Last Resurrection**, as Martha well-understood (and there is no need for a **Third Resurrection**). She told Christ if He were there, her brother would not have had to die. Then, Jesus said “**I am the resurrection**” (John 11:25). Christ was The **One to give “salvation.”** A **resurrection** is **proof** Jesus paid for your sins.

That is why Paul referred to those Christians as only **asleep, not being dead** (I Corinthians 15). Jesus said those who believed in Christ and followed Him, **death** had **no power over them** (John 5:24 and Revelation 20:6).

Therefore, those in the **second resurrection**, are both, the **faithful** and the **unfaithful**. The **faithful** “in Christ” are not worthy to be Christ's wife, but they were **growing spiritually** up **Jacob's ladder**. They were Christ's sheep and needed more spiritual growth,

but they will enter **the kingdom**. They had not blasphemed or rejected God's **spirit** (Matthew 12:31-32).

The others, in the second resurrection, are the **goats** (Matthew 25) and refused to die and are still kicking and bucking. They will go into **Damnation**. Jesus said, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice [shepherd] of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live [resurrection]. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And hath given him authority [power] to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all [last resurrection] that are in the graves [sheol] shall hear his voice. And shall come forth (resurrection); they that have done good [faithful], unto the resurrection of life [eternal life]; and they that hath done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation**" (John 5:25-29).

That completes **two resurrections**, The **Firstborn** Christians as **Christ's wife**, and the last or **second resurrection** when everyone else, who is dead is **made alive**. Those who have done good, **the faithful ones**, enter **God's "kingdom."** Those who refused God's Holy Spirit, not knowing **right** from **wrong** and did a great deal of **evil** are **damned**.

The word "damned" in Greek is "**krisis**" which really means "**judgment**" or a "time of **crisis**." The "crisis" being they must go into The Lake of Fire.

So, there are only "two resurrections" but "**three different groups of people**." Those in the **first resurrection** are composed of The Bride of Christ who become **worthy** to be **His "wife"** (Revelations 19:7). They, are of The **Firstborn**, to be "**born again**."

Therefore, those in the **second resurrection** consists of two groups of people, the **faithful** to God by accepting God's Holy Spirit and the second group, who had **rejected** God's Holy Spirit and do **evil**, not knowing "**right**" from "**wrong**." They have not completely **died** in their first death but their human nature is still kicking like **goats**. You are coming to a very **spiritual understanding** about **sheep** entering God's "**kingdom**" and **goats** going into **The Lake of Fire**, (hell).

It is important for you to realize the difference between **the sheep** and **the goats**. Remember, in God's eyes, **both** are **acceptable for sacrifice**. Both **animals** are **clean animals** and **do not have the mark of the beast** (a lion, a bear or a leopard).

Read Christ's comments concerning these two animals, the sheep and the goats and their **outcome!** "**And before him shall be gathered all nations** [last or second resurrection]: **and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth His sheep from the goats**" (Matthew 25:32). Sheep follow the shepherd, while goats do not. "**Then shall the King** [Christ] **say unto them on his right hand** [sheep], **Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world**" (Matthew 25:34).

The sheep enter God's "**kingdom**" and later in Revelation 21 and 22 you find they are the **nations which are saved** and can **enter** God's "**kingdom**," **New Jerusalem** with their "**glory**." Now, what happens to **the goats**?

This is what Christ said through *The Scriptures*, "**I was a stranger, and you took me not in: naked, and you clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and you visited me not**" (Matthew 25:43). "**Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least**

of these, you did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal” (Matthew 25:45-46). Everlasting **punishment** is not **destruction**. This punishment is **everlasting** so they are **not destroyed**.

What a difference. The Christians, who had helped the needy, will go into **life eternal**; these are the sheep that **enter God’s “kingdom.”** The **goats** end up into **“everlasting punishment.”** Amazingly, the **goats** go into **The Lake of Fire** and **“everlasting punishment.”** What is this? If they go into **everlasting punishment** they **cannot be destroyed in The Lake of Fire**. What then happens to them? This sounds like a contradiction. You need to have these questions **“biblically”** answered.

CHAPTER 25

LIGHT AND DARKNESS

The word, “**holy**” in Greek signifies “**purity.**” The Holiest place of all in The Temple is The Holy of Holies where God’s “**glory**” was (Hebrews 9:3). God is the ultimate purity. There is no blemish or impurity in God. “In him [Christ] was life; and the life [Jesus] was the light of men” (John 1:4). Referring to salvation or life, life and light are defined as meaning the same thing. And the “**light**” shineth in “**darkness**” and the darkness comprehended it not.

Not A Place

God is **Holy** or completely **pure** and manifests that Holiness by **light** through Christ, who is “**the light of the world.**” Since light and life are the same, **the darkness** will, therefore result in death of the whole human being, body, spirit and soul (life). Clearly, those in “**darkness**” cannot understand “**light.**” Light makes it possible to see **reality** or **truth**. It is complete **purity**, no **blemish** to **darken** one’s vision.

It becomes scripturally simple that “**darkness**” is **not a place** since it has to do with how one **thinks**. It has to do with how one chooses to see things. It is how God and humanity **comprehend** what is God’s view of “**good**” and “**evil.**” That is why Jesus said, “**there is none good but one, that is, God**” (Matthew 19:17). Humans are a **mixture** of “**good**” and “**evil**” and each must choose.

The choice is either **light** or **darkness**. Humans are all **partly** in the **dark**. All humans have a **blemish** or **impurity** in their **heart** and **sight**.

God And Darkness

John is delivering a **message** to Christians. “**God is light and in him is no darkness at all**” (I John 1:5). Since God is the “**holiest**” or “**purist**,” He is completely in the “**light**.” He does not have a **speck** of **darkness**. God knows, understands and sees everything as they are in reality or truth. Since **light** and **darkness** have to do with how you comprehend or understand things, while God never has a doubt. Why? Because God consists of **agapé love** and only thinks about what is good for His creation. His thoughts are **always light** or **truth** without a drop of **darkness** in **Him**.

John declared how Christians are to be, “**But if we walk [live] in the light, as he [God] is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin**” (I John 1:7). Then, Christ will resurrect you.

Yet, The Apostle warns in I John 1:6, “**If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness [confusion], we lie, and do not the truth.**” Wow! God is quite clear. God is only motivated in **His heart** for “**good**” and “**reasons**” only with truth and nothing but **the truth**. God only has a **sound mind** and never decides anything having any doubt. That is why God gives you His **Holy Spirit** because only God’s **spirit** can give you a **sound mind** (II Timothy 1:7).

Self-preservation causes **confusion** or **Babylon** as opposed to having God’s “**love**” for others. Humanity, without God, cannot have a **sound** or **logical mind**. That is why Jesus only did The

Father's "**will**" and only **spoke God's "word"** (John 5:30, John 3:34 and John 7:16).

What Is Darkness?

Darkness is not a **place**, **but consists of a mind and heart** which are **totally confused**. People who have a **demonic mind** are so because they are completely **confused**.

Remember, when Satan and his angels rebelled against God they were put into **chains of darkness** (jail). Read *The Book of Jude*. One way you keep **evil** from "**sane humans**" is to blind them or put them into a dungeon.

One of the good works Christ would do is cast demons out of people. "**To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house**" (Isaiah 42:7).

How plain! "**Darkness**" is God's **jail or prison**. In Hebrew the word for "**prison**" means "**to separate**." God's **bars** are a **state of mind**! That is your biblical definition for "**darkness**." When one is demon-possessed it does **not mean** Satan or one of his fallen angels has **jumped** inside of the demonic person. There wouldn't be enough Satans or demons to possess all demonic individuals.

Jesus gave the example of a person who had demons and was clean but put nothing into his/her mind and heart that was **real** or **true**, he or she could end up with a **legend of demons**. Now, their **mind** is in **complete darkness** or **outer darkness** near **no light** or **truth**. What does such a person do? "**The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single [full of light], thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole**

body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!" (Matthew 6:22-23). That is outer darkness or complete confusion or Babylon.

Christ, Himself, just clearly defined **light** and **darkness**. It is how you decide to **choose** to **see things**. If you see things **God's "way"** your eyes only see **truth** or **reality** because you have God's **mind** and **heart** with **God's Holy Spirit"** (II Timothy 1:7).

If you **refuse** to see things or **life** through **God's eyes**, (which is **light**), you, then, can become in **complete darkness** which is "**outer darkness.**" Wow! Look at the **outcome** (Matthew 8:28-34). Two demonic people were so possessed in **darkness** no one could pass by the two possessed individuals because they were so **violent**. Jesus warns about a person, who no longer is demon possessed, but doesn't grow spiritually. This individual ends up with seven demons worse off than he was when he started (Matthew 12:43-45). These verses are right after Christ describes The White Throne Judgment. Notice what the demons are worried about when Jesus comes by them. "**And, behold, they cried out saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time**" (Matthew 8:29)?

To be in "**torment**" in Greek is the word "**kolasis**" which means "**overwhelming.**" The word "**colossal**" carries the same meaning. It is "**more than one can bare.**" But "bare" what?

Human Desire

What is the cause of "depression?" Perfect **love** casts out **fear**. The word "**fear**" in Greek "**phobus.**" A "**phobia**" is "the **fear** of something **not real.**" Fear of heights, small closed room or walk-

ing down a dark place etc., are examples of what **can be false fears**. Standing near the edge of a high cliff can, also, be frightening. Those who have a **phobia** of high places, even though they are standing on a **cliff**, are **safe** from falling over. This is a **false fear** which can **cause torment** (I John 4:18). If one **loves God** and **others**, they can have the **absolute faith** God will do nothing to them which is not for **their good** (Hebrews 12:10). That is why there is **no fear in perfect** (complete) **love**.

How do you open yourself to **false fear** and **depression**? King Solomon answers the question in Proverbs 18:1-4, “**Through desire a man, having separated himself, seeketh *and* intermeddeth with all wisdom.**” So, **your desires** can cause you to **lose wisdom** which is one of the steps **on Jacob’s ladder**.

God gave Solomon “**wisdom**” to rule Israel. Solomon definitely understood **true wisdom** but never grew any further. A good desire chooses **wise choices** instead of intermeddling **desires** where **wisdom is lost**. “**When the wicked cometh, *then* cometh also contempt [resentment], and with ignominy reproach.**” In Hebrew the meaning of “**reproach**” is “**shame.**” “**The words of a man’s mouth *are* as deep waters, *and* the well-spring of wisdom as a flowing brook**” (Proverbs 18:3-4).

So, false desires cause **shame** because of not having any **wisdom**. A person who desires what is “**not true,**” not having **wisdom** or steeped in **deep dark waters**, **lose their sight**. The deeper they go, **they find themselves in darkness**.

A person who has **truthful** desires has **more wisdom**, since it is like a **sprouting spring** which keeps running **down stream**, **being able to see the bottom** with **their eyes all the way**. How clear and simple! They finally understand. A running brook without

pollution (blemish) is **clean** and one can **safely drink it and be refreshed**.

If you have **false** or **wrong desires**, it becomes your personal private **idol**. Paul said **idolatry** is **caused** by **covetousness** (Colossians 3:5). The same verse declares you should “**Mortify** [avoid] **therefore your members** [flesh] **which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness which is idolatry.**” God reveals truth by His Holy Spirit.

Any time a person's **desire** is leaning towards **evil**, to the point where he/she cannot **live without it**, they have **no wisdom**. They cannot think **right** and, finally, are in **complete darkness (outer darkness)**. No longer can that person discern or **think logically** with a **sound mind**. They need God's **Holy Spirit** to **lead** them into **truth**. They are **truly in outer darkness**. That is the cause of **depression** and **phobias which lead to torment**.

It isn't The Lake of Fire which causes **eternal torment**. The Lake of Fire makes certain you are **completely dead** as **all are appointed** once to die! Any desire which keeps your human nature determined to **survive above all else**, must **totally die**. **The Law** dictates **death for idolaters**.

Those in the **light** continue growing in **wisdom** until they achieve **God's love** which **fulfills The Law** (Romans 13:10). With God's **understanding** and **faith** to **The Love of God**, as **sheep** following their **shepherd** to the **death**, **need to enter God's "kingdom house."**

What finally occurs to those **goats** who are still kicking and bucking who do not want to **die**? Jesus describes the **faith** of a Roman

Centurion. Jesus said to The Jews after He healed The Centurion's servant. "**But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**" (Matthew 8:12). Those in **outer darkness** are **repenting** by weeping and gnashing their teeth.

God does not end a person's life who goes into The Lake of Fire. (Details come later). Here you find in the **time** of The Kingdom of God, those who were in the fire still exist. Where? They are cast into **outer darkness, God's prison for rehabilitation**. As long as they remain in **outer darkness they are in everlasting punishment!** They are **the goats**.

The sheep, who have **faith in God**, are in God's "**kingdom**" while the goats are in **outer darkness** (in a form of **God's prison**).

CHAPTER 26

WHO GOD ACCEPTS

The main difference between “the goats” and “the sheep” are: goats resist death and need to completely die as appointed by God for salvation.

When do sheep become like Christ, willing to die for everyone? Both the sheep and the goats are clean animals that God accepts as a sacrifice. So Christ, as your High Priest, after The Order of Melchizedek is a Priesthood of “faith.” Hebrews 5:1-2 reveals men are those who are ordained by God for sacrifice. Now, for a surprise! God, also, accepts sacrifices for those who are ignorant but, also, all others. That is Universal Salvation (Hebrews 5:2). God has different sacrifices for each type of individual, such as a lamb or a goat. That is why both are clean animals and can be sacrifices for sin! However, since both animals are accepted by God for sacrifice, just how or on what basis does God accept individuals for eternal life?

Two Priesthoods

The Priesthood under Melchizedek covered a longer timespan in *The Torah*. The Priesthood of Aaron of The Tribe of Levi was instituted because of sin. *The Book of Deuteronomy* is The Law of

Moses written only to Israel as *The Old Covenant* (Deuteronomy 5:3). This *Old Covenant* as Deuteronomy 5:3 states was not in force prior to Moses. Before Moses, individuals, such as Abraham, were under Melchizedek who was a Priesthood of **Faith**. This Priesthood offered **salvation** as The Tree of Life in The Garden of Eden to Adam and Eve. This Priesthood of Melchizedek had “**mercy**” versus “**no mercy**.” That is why Cain was not put to death and was even protected by God. Lamech, a great-great-grandson, knew this and when he killed two men, said “he should be forgiven 70 X 7.” That is why Christ told His Disciples the **same thing about 70 X 7**. Christ was of The Melchizedek Order and **not Levi**, who had no mercy.

The Commandments and Statutes kept by Abraham had **no judgments**. That is why, when Jesus died for your **sins**, He removed The **Curse of The Law** which were The Judgments. Abraham kept The Commandments and Statutes because he chose by his **faith to do so** (Genesis 26:5). He, therefore, received **mercy** just like Christians under **Melchizedek's Priesthood** of Christ.

What is the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*? In both cases **The Law** is in force. I John 3:4 states what **sin** is, “**sin is the transgression of the law**” but under **Levi**, the **curses** and blessings in Deuteronomy Chapters 27 and 28, are still in force. Under Melchizedek without any **curses** there is **no longer** any penalty for breaking **The Law** as long as you have **repented**. The Apostle John states, “as long as you remain **in Christ**,” under His **blood you cannot sin!** That is a part of the difference between being under *The Old Covenant* as opposed to *The New Covenant*. What else is different?

Jeremiah told you in Jeremiah 31:31-34 that The Law is now changed by The Law being written in your “**heart**” and “**mind**.”

The Law is now, by God, written into your very **heart** and **mind**. The Law becomes a **spiritual requirement** by **faith** which requires Christians to ascend Jacob's ladder and, finally, be helped by Christ. You, now, know the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*. With the change back to Melchizedek, it **necessitated** a change in **The Law** (Hebrews 7:12). How did **The Law** change? Isaiah 42:21 prophesies that God **is pleased** with His "**righteousness**" and, therefore, had Jesus come to **magnify** or **make larger** or **greater His Father's Laws**. The **enlarged Law** can bring **more honor to it**. This is wonderful!

The Restoration

What did Christ come to do? "**For the Son of man** [in the flesh] **is come to save that which was lost**" (Matthew 18:11). Christ did not come to bring a new **Law**, but to bring back what was originally **lost** in *The Torah*. Jesus came to **restore** the **entire Law** with The Added Letter of The Law to Israel. When Israel or Judah rejected Christ, He went to another **nation** who showed themselves more **noble**, **The Gentiles**.

In Acts 15 The **Gentiles** were now **accepted** by God, without The Added **Letter** of **The Law**, by allowing The Gentiles to receive **The Holy Spirit**" without the requirement of circumcision. Always remember The Letter of The Law only ended up producing **death** and could never give **life**. Paul said from now on it is "**the spirit** [of The Law] **which gives life**" (II Corinthians 3:6). The Letter could only give death because it was for carnal or unrighteous people who kept sinning. They needed to repent so they could learn "right" from "wrong" in their hearts (I Timothy 1:7-10).

Christ was now **restoring** The Tree of Life, God's Holy Spirit,

to *The Torah*. Those, now being called, had **repented** and therefore, were **no longer under curses or judgments**. With **repentance** they had **no sin** to be covered by Christ. They **now had access to God's Holy Spirit**, which was writing The Law into every Christian's **nature**. How? By **enlarging or magnifying The Law** to include Jacob's **ladder** through Christ as The **Restorer** to Melchizedek, which could give **mercy**. What did Jesus say to The **Scribes and Pharisees**? "**But I say unto you, that, in this place is *one* greater than the temple**" (Matthew 12:6-7). Do you get it? "**But if you had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, you would not have condemned the guiltless.**" They did not know Jesus was **restoring** The Melchizedek Priesthood of **Faith** not based upon judgments in **The Letter of The Law**, but Christ **magnifying The Law** to a **spiritual status** (Romans 7:14). The sacrifices for sin served a different purpose in The Letter of The Law.

Christ was **greater** than "**the temple**" because **sacrifices for sin** could **never take away sin** (Hebrews 10:4). Hebrews 10:1 reveals earthly "**temple worship**" with The Letter of The Law and the **sacrifices** in force could **never make anyone perfect**. Only Christ's sacrifice could **take away sin** and change your **very nature** to have **God's Law** written within your heart and mind. Read **all of Hebrews 10**.

The Law and The Prophets are never done away with, but must be **fulfilled** where **The Law** or *Torah* is **magnified**, making them **more honorable**. Christ came to **restore perfection**, then **magnified The Torah Law** so Christians could keep **growing** upon **Jacob's ladder** receiving God's **love**, (the **seraph level**) to be able to **enter God's "house" and "kingdom."**

Another question to answer is if God left His own and turned to

The **Gentiles**, who exactly, does God **accept**? Is there only one **faith** or perhaps One True Church? Who does God actually **accept** as **His**? **Believe *The Scriptures*** and allow *The Bible* to reveal who **God accepts**. “**Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him**” (Acts 10:34-35). Can’t be any clearer! It is not some **true church** or **level of faith** in any doctrine. It is an **individual matter**. That is why Paul called those Christians, who were always fighting **over doctrines** or what **preacher they preferred**, were **carnal** or “**babes in Christ**” (I Corinthians 3:1-3).

God will accept any individual who fears Him and works “righteousness” by doing good works. That is why He said even on The Sabbath, if you do good works, it is lawful or OK. Get it? Read all of it. Even if you think it is a sin to drink, don’t correct another person because he or she (Christian) is at a different level in their Christian growth. Paul said, “**whatsoever is not of faith is sin.**” If you believe one doctrine is important for salvation, you are not to make an issue out of it (Romans 14:23). Paul declares, “**That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind [teaching] of doctrine**” (Ephesians 4:14-15). Doctrines are not to be dogmatic, but merely “a teaching” to lead you to perfection. The purpose of the preaching ministry is to lead all Christians to perfection (Ephesians 4:10-13). Perfection is the requirement for salvation (Matthew 5:48 and Matthew 19).

Paul said to **move on to perfection** leaving the baby doctrines (Hebrews 6:1-2). You need to leave principles of Christ and go on to **perfection**. **Spiritual growth** is not **static** working at one level only, with **one talent**. Growth necessitates change. More and more spiritual understanding creates spiritual growth. When you

were a baby you did not look or act the way you do **today**. You must **grow** to the **stature** or **maturity of Christ**, which means real **truth** comes by **loving each other** and not at what **level** of **doctrinal growth** you have **achieved** (Ephesians 4:11-13).

Peter simply revealed who God **accepts** as **His**. **Fear** God and “**work righteousness**.” That’s it – **biblically**.

CHAPTER 27

ISAIAH TO REVELATION

Part I

Many scholars believe there are two *Books of Isaiah*. The one *Book of Isaiah* is from Chapter 1 to 33. The second *Book of Isaiah* is from Chapter 34 to 66. Because of this, theologians say Isaiah 34 to 66 is not written by Isaiah. Some of them say it is written later, perhaps by Jeremiah. What nonsense. *The Book of Isaiah* is about history and prophecy. History is recorded in Isaiah's day to King Hezekiah. From then on, God's chosen people, Israel and Judah, go into captivity and The Time of The Gentiles begins, till Christ returns and then He ends The Gentile Kingdoms in Daniel 12.

Let's divide Isaiah into two parts. Part I covers history from Isaiah's day to Christ's first coming. Part II covers the second coming of Jesus right into The New Heaven and The New Earth in God's "house" and "kingdom."

Prosperity To Destruction

Isaiah said in Isaiah 1, that both The Ten Tribes of Israel and Judah, God's children, had rebelled against Him. They were "temple worshippers" who sacrificed, were Sabbath-keepers and kept The

Holy Days; but they were a gainsaying and unjust people. Bribery, cheating and lying were their way of life. They became very prosperous and greedy and the poor were ignored and forgotten.

They were following the way of the idolatrous Gentile countries around them. Assyria, Egypt, Edom, Syria and Babylon were their lovers in business. God decided to allow the countries around them to harass and take them into captivity.

Isaiah prophesied by warning them to return to God with a right heart. They refused, except Hezekiah who trusted God. God added fifteen years to Hezekiah's life, but Isaiah told Hezekiah that after his death, Judah would be taken captive to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar. Over a hundred years earlier The Ten Tribes of Israel were taken captive by Assyria and dispersed into The Gentile Nations. At this point, history changed in the known world.

Israel and Judah no longer were God's witnesses nor were any other nations (Acts 10:35). The **Time of The Gentiles began** until **Messiah** would come and restore Israel and Judah as His People.

Seventy Years

Through The Prophet Daniel's constant prayers for Israel and **faith** in God, he was loved by God and told "**the prophecy**" about Israel and The World until **the end of days**. God revealed that in 70 years, which was the lifetime of a king, Judah would go back to Jerusalem and restore **the temple**. This began in King Cyrus's day, ruler of The Persian Empire.

Daniel was told there would be **troublesome times** for Judah. They surely were from Persia's rule to Alexander, The Great, cul-

minating in **The Fourth Beast**, The Roman Empire – Rome, controlling Judah, now restored in Palestine. Judah was waiting for The Messiah to come during Rome’s rule. **The temple** would be completely restored over forty years by King Herod, an Edomite.

The reason Judah expected The Messiah in Herod’s time was the prophecy given Nebuchadnezzar by Daniel in Daniel 2, when Rome, The Fourth Beast was ruling. Here is how The Time of The Gentiles were to end, **“And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever”** (Daniel 2:44). This was to be the completion of The Times of The Gentiles with Christ’s coming. They were **the last days** (Hebrews 1:1-2). The Apostles knew they lived in the last days. **“God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets. Hath in these last days spoken [Apostles] unto us by His Son.”**

The Apostles knew when Christ was born in the flesh, He came to deliver His people, Judah, from **The Fourth Beast, Rome**.

Isaiah 40:1-2 states, **“Comfort ye, comfort ye my people [Israel], saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the Lord’s hand double for all her sins.”** War for Israel was to be over when Christ was born. Mary was told by the angel, about Jesus, **“He [Jesus] shall [would] reign over the house of Jacob [Israel] for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end”** (Luke 1:33). The shepherds were told when Christ was born, **“Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men”** (Luke 2:14). Jesus, The Messiah could have had to come only **once** (Isaiah 40).

If Judah, His people, would have accepted The Christ, and listened to John, The Baptist, to return the hearts of the children to the father, like Abraham, there would not have been a **curse** upon the **world** (which has lasted to the present day). “**And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse**” (Malachi 4:6).

This Elijah, who was to come, was to prepare **The Way of The Lord!** The coming of Elijah as John, The Baptist (Isaiah 40:2-5) and Mark 1 states the exact words of Isaiah 40:2-5 explicitly referencing John, The Baptist. Christ reveals John, The Baptist, is “the Elijah to come” (Matthew 11 and 14).

If Judah would have received Christ, as King, when He rode on the mule, then Judah would have hailed Jesus as **their Messiah**. Rome would still have taken Christ and crucified him and, in three days, He would have been resurrected and as Christ said, God would have sent a host of angels and they could have done nothing. The Millennium would have started.

Because Jesus was rejected by His people, **The Bride of Christ**, a **curse** came upon the earth and now Jesus had to come a **second time** for His Bride. Instead of **peace on earth**, now the **curse** written in Matthew 24 has to come to pass for a **good reason** before Jesus, The **Groom** returns.

The Wedding Feast

There are three different periods of time when God calls mankind to a wedding feast of His Son (Matthew 22:1-14). This feast takes place in God’s “**house**,” New Jerusalem, at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth (Revelations 21 and 22).

The first time was pre-flood or in Enoch, The Prophet's time. **“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord [Messiah] cometh with ten thousands of his saints”** (Jude 14). That is exactly what Christ told Pilate He could have done (John 18:36).

With the **curse** upon the **earth**, God's prophecy had to be delayed until the curse is completed. Jesus doesn't bring **peace** upon the **earth**, but instead a **sword** (Matthew 10:34).

Change of Bride

Judah rejecting The Messiah as **The Groom**, Jesus states, **“For many are called, but few are chosen”** (Matthew 22:14). In Romans 11, Israel is no longer the first to be The Bride of Christ, but only a remnant of Israel, “The 144,000” of Revelation 7. Later, you will see, relatively few become Christ's **bride**.

Notice, those of Judah, who were invited to The Wedding Feast, did so at the **wrong time**. Matthew 22:4 declares, **“Again, he sent forth other servants, [John, The Baptist and Christ], saying, tell them which are bidden, behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.”** Jesus, The Christ, **The Groom** was only to come **once**. This invitation was given when it was the **time for the marriage**. That is why Jesus said, **“Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God And saying, The time is fulfilled [completed], and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel”** (Mark 1:14-15).

Obviously, Christ was to come only once. Clearly, Jesus declared everything was completed as Isaiah 40:1 predicted. The Kingdom

of God was to come at Jesus' first coming. War was to be finished for Israel and **the kingdom** was ready and **The Marriage Feast** was on **the table**. The oxen were prepared. This was more than an invitation to a wedding, as the wedding was prepared to take place. The Bride stood up and turned Him down! Christ was rejected, the **curse began**. These were **truly the last days** and now God's "**kingdom**" and Wedding Feast were delayed. Why?

It all had to do with when Christ returns for His **Bride!** But, there is **no Bride**. What does God do? "**Then saith he [Jesus] to his servants, the wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore [he sent his servants] into the highways, and as many as ye shall find [gather together], bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests**" (Matthew 22:8-10).

It matters not whether one is **denominational, orthodox, independent or whatever**. Even the **bad** with the **good** are now **invited to attend The Wedding**. Later, you will read how The White Throne Judgment takes place **at The Wedding Feast**. Those **bidden** to the wedding were **found not worthy** to be The Bride (Israel) so God turned to The **Gentiles**, all of them, both "the bad" and "the good!" Now, **The Bride** has to prove **herself worthy** to be **His wife**. What does that mean? Peter has already answered the question in Acts 10:34-35, "**Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth him and worketh righteousness, is accepted with [by] him.**" Can't be any clearer! It has nothing to do with any religious **groups**, but whether you **fear God** and **worketh "righteousness!"** God, then, **accepts that person** and **they are called "worthy."** That is your Bible answer!

Check again the modifying words of those God accepts to come to **The Wedding Feast**. What does “**worthy**” mean? (See page 226 “worthy” already explained). The **first** word is “to **fear** God.” It is “**phobea**,” meaning “being **infatuated** with God,” but not like those who have **torment** because their stress is **not real** as **they are overwhelmed**. God is One, **The Only One God Almighty**, The Creator of **all things**. That is **true fear**. To fear God is to honor Him as Father.

The second word “**worketh**” is “**ergazomai**” which means “**very hard work to the death**.” This is why Jesus said in John 6 that He and God do **very hard work**, “**ergazomai**,” to **save life**, even on **The Sabbaths**. He died for you.

The next word is “**righteousness**.” “**Dikaiousune**” in Greek stands “for **righteous justice as dictated by God**.” To be **holy** and **perfect** a **person** must have the **faith** to **follow God to the death**, like **Christ**. The final word is “**accepted**.” “**Dektos**,” a Greek verb meaning “to be judged as **right**,” especially as to being **sacrificed** or willing to **die**. Once you achieve this **spiritual level**, a willingness to die for what is **right**, then God accepts that **sacrifice** as **worthy**. There you have it. The wedding invitations are given to **all nations**, both **bad** and **good**, but he or she must **become worthy to be The Bride**. There will not be any **Bride** showing up for **The Wedding who is not worthy**.

The Last Days

Christians in **The First Century** knew they were in the **last days**. In fact, many thought they **missed the first resurrection** and others began to think there was **no resurrection**. After The Day of Pentecost when God gave The Holy Spirit, which started the **church**, not only were they **persecuted** but, also, **deceived**. That

is the first thing Jesus warned His Disciples – there would be many deceivers.

Once the question of circumcision and The Letter of The Law were resolved for The Gentiles (Acts 15), the persecution by The Jews was replaced by a plethora of Gentile philosophies like The Gnostics. The Gnostics' "influence" steadily increased over the next two hundred years in Christianity. Some "**claimed**" to be Jewish. But, they weren't even Jewish. By the end of The First Century, Jude and John were concerned "**the original faith**" was being **lost**. Read all of Jude and I, II and III John.

By The Second and Third Centuries, the **truth** of Christianity was in doubt. Jude warned of false teachers preaching God's "**word**" like Balaam. Others, had no respect for authority especially for The Twelve Apostles. III John discloses Diotrephes, whose name means "friend of Zeus," wouldn't accept real Christians into church fellowship. It was a mess!

Why is it so important for Christians of today to know that much? Much of what is accepted as Christian in contemporary times, is a carry-over from Greek and Roman myth. Even orthodox theology has refused to condemn unbiblical teachings. All are deceived by Babylon or confusion.

The question becomes with The Wedding "invitations" sent to **all nations** is **The Bride, (The Church) a worthy Bride?** Remember, both **bad** and **good** are invited to attend.

It seems "**the church**," by the end of The First Century, was **no more** worthy than Israel. Remember, Matthew 22:14 is a warning, "**for many are called, but few are chosen**" to take part in The Wedding Feast.

These were the **last days**, but Christ could **not** return for His **Bride**.

The First Century

Before Jesus went to The Father, The Disciples asked Him when the “**kingdom**” will be **restored** to Israel. They were asking Him when The Times of The Gentiles would be fulfilled. In Acts 1:7 Christ said, only, The Father has that **power** to let The Son know when He can come for His Bride and establish God’s “**kingdom**.”

Many, erroneously, try to do what Jesus couldn’t do. i.e., name the date of His **return**. Why not? Because **there is no date!** God decides when His Son can be engaged and start His Father’s rule on earth. II Peter 3 clearly states it can be **one** day or a **1000** years. Why? Because God is **longsuffering** for everyone to repent.

The **Return** of Jesus is not decided by a date, but a **specific** condition must take place. What is that **condition**? *The Book of Revelation* answers that question. Christ can come **any time** after something occurs (Revelation 19:7-20). “**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him [God] for the marriage of the lamb is come, and his wife has made herself ready**” (Revelation 19:7). There it is, it isn’t a date which decides when Christ **returns**, but when **The Bride** becomes **worthy** to be **called** Christ’s **wife**. Now, The Bride is **worthy** and ready to be **His wife!** All attempts to set a **date are nonsense**.

Revelation

Many have wondered why *The Book of Revelation* was written. It almost wasn’t part of *The Bible*. Yet, of all books in *The Bible*,

it answers all **The Mysteries of God and His “will.”** *The Book of Revelation* was so important it was **personally dictated by Jesus, Himself** to an **angel** to give to the **only Apostle alive of The Original Twelve.** To complete **God’s “will”** as **prophesied** by **Isaiah** and **disclosed** by **Jesus, Himself** to **His seven churches** and **The 144,000 Israelites,** the entire book is **written** to **His two witnesses,** **God’s two prophets.**

CHAPTER 28

ISAIAH TO REVELATION

Part II

Many people see *The Book of Revelation* as a very mysterious and symbolic book. Those interested in understanding it want to know, especially, about the seven seals, the seven trumpets and the seven last plagues. Read the book, *Revelation Uncovered* to understand.

Did you know this book is all about revealing God's Mystery which is God's "will?" Simply, the book is about God, The Father, His Son Jesus and The Son's Bride and wife to be. That is why Revelation is, The Apocalypse, or "The Unveiling." The question is "The Unveiling" of what?

Why The Book?

The Book of Revelation was almost not accepted into the **biblical canon**. Without it you could not fully understand God's **Mystery** or "will."

James, Peter, John and Jude were all **eyewitnesses** of **The Resurrection of Christ** and they discuss the same subject. These "**four books**," together, should be read as one book. The latter three books reveal The State of Christianity, at the end of The First Century, long before Christ's **return** and the need for Christians

to return to the **true faith** originally delivered. *The Book of Revelation*, with the details in Isaiah, answers how **The Will of God is completed**.

Revelation or **The Unveiling**, ushers in **God's "kingdom" with all its mysteries**. *The Book of Revelation* is given to the **last true** Apostle of The Twelve on The Isle of Patmos in **vision** by an angel, personally by Christ.

Behold, He Cometh

"Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they *also* which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen" (Revelation 1:7). This opening statement of Christ's **"return"** covers all of *The Book of Revelation* right to **The New Heaven and The New Earth**. *Revelation 2 and 3* discusses **the seven churches** in Asia Minor and their problems. These seven **churches** are symbolized as **Seven Golden Candlesticks**, The **Menorah** in The Holy Place in **"the temple."** Each church has a **star** or angel watching over it.

The Seven Churches

These **seven churches**: Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea were on a circular mail route in southern Turkey. These **seven churches** represent the **condition** of Christianity at the end of **The First Century** as discussed in *The Books of James, Peter, John and Jude*. They were in a **mess "doctrinally"** but were all Christ's **churches**. They represented **"the condition"** of Christianity at the end of The First Century. This book, personally revealed by Christ, **The Groom** was issuing a **warning** as to what He required of **His Bride**.

The seven churches lacked **love** for Christ and were interested in other **lovers**, like Jezebel and not interested to bother with The Wedding, but to just barely prepare for The Wedding and lastly, thought **too much** of themselves. How could any of them become The Bride of Christ? These “**seven churches**,” as a type of Christianity, last throughout history right up to The White Throne Judgment. They are not “**eras of the church**” but they are “**the condition of Christianity**” till “**the judgment**.” That is why this book opens the entire Mystery of God which reveals God’s “**will!**” Jesus is warning **His Bride** to prepare herself to be **His wife**. This is **similar** to “**the parable of the ten virgins**” in Matthew 25. Only half of the **virgins** are **worthy**. The parable of the “**one talent to ten talents**” follows The Ten Virgins. Again, some become **worthy** and **some do not**. In this case **the reward** is God’s “**kingdom**” as rulers over cities with Jerusalem as The Mother.

Revelation 4 and 5 show Jesus as **The Slain Lamb** proving His **love** for **His Bride**, is accounted **worthy** to **open The Seven Seals** in Revelation, which represent the **curse** written in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. Since He can open these **seals**, **His return** can be lengthened or hastened as II Peter 3 reveals. **The Time of The Groom’s Return** for **His Bride** depends on when **The Bride** is **worthy** to be **His wife** in Revelation 19. The Bride must **love Jesus in order** to be **His wife just as He loves her**. God, The Father, would never **allow His Son** to **marry a woman** who did **not love Him like He loves her**. The Father, therefore, only allows His Son to return for **The Bride** when she is **worthy**. That is **The Mystery of God** explained in Ephesians 5:22-32.

Becoming Worthy

The opening of **the seven seals** is what Christ must do to prepare His Bride. These curses try the **women** in Revelation 12 and some

of “**the church**” must go into **great tribulation** to **make it**, even though they keep *The Ten Commandments* of **God**. Remember, Luke 17:10 clearly reveals it is **the duty** of **every human** to keep **The Commandments** for a successful human existence, but one is still **unprofitable** to be in God’s “**kingdom.**” You must go up Jacob’s ladder “**spiritually**” to be **Christ’s wife**.

Some Christians, who are **commandment-keepers**, must go into **The Great Tribulation** to **give their lives** to have **God’s love**, which, therefore, **completes The Law** to be **The Wife** of Jesus. Also, **The 144,000 Israelites**, twelve thousand from each tribe (but not The Tribe of Dan) are the **remnant** of **Israel**, who will be in the **first resurrection**. Israel is resurrected physically to become Christ’s wife during **The Millennium** (Ezekiel 37). The **two witnesses** of God, Christ’s church and **The 144,000** go into **The Tribulation** to be **martyred** (Revelation 11).

The Seven Trumpets

The seven **trumpets**, or warnings, usher in God’s direct intervention into **world affairs**. The Seventh Trump concludes at Armageddon with Christ’s **glorious** Return for His Bride, who has **made herself ready to be His wife** (Revelation 19:7).

The Book Of Life

Every Christian wants to be in *The Book of Life*. However, what is *The Book of Life*? Read the answer, “**And he saith unto me, write, blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, these are the true sayings of God**” (Revelation 19:9).

The *Book of Life* is a **Marriage Registry** which only allows **The**

Father, The Groom, The Wife and The Guests, and those not in The Book of Life or Marriage Registry **are not allowed** into New Jerusalem where The Marriage takes place. How many will be there?

Jesus reveals how one tries to enter the marriage who was not properly dressed (Matthew 22:11-14). He is not allowed to attend. But what happens to him? **“Then said the King to his servants, bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth”** (Matthew 22:13). This is in God’s **“kingdom”** and The Lake of Fire is over.

After The Lake of Fire, those thrown into **outer darkness**, are in **God’s prison**. How many are written in *The Book of Life* so they can attend The Wedding Feast? **“For many are called, but few are chosen”** (Matthew 22:14). Only **a few** can attend The **Marriage**. Most of humanity is not in *The Book of Life*. What happens to them? Do most get destroyed in The Lake of Fire, never to be resurrected? Do they stay in **torment** in The Lake of Fire, forever? You need to find out what *The Bible* reveals. It seems God’s **“will”** sending Christ to **save the world had failed** (I John 4:14)! But, perhaps not, you must continue **prophecy** from Isaiah to Revelation to get **the truth and the full answer**.

Return Of Christ

As Christ descends during **The Seventh Trumpet**, John finds this witness of Christ is **“the spirit of prophecy”** (Revelation 19:10). The events to come are **sure to happen** in God’s **“due time.”** Jesus, as King of Kings comes with **Ten Thousands of His Angels** as Enoch prophesied in Jude. Next, Christ meets His Bride and they are **“the resurrected saints”** in **“the first resurrection.”** At

the same time, all of physical Israel is resurrected to be “**the last**” to become Christ’s **wife** during The Millennium. This is the **engagement** period for The Bride to call the **whole world** to The **Wedding Feast**.

During the 1,000 years, God allows “the world to be called but there is no absolute it will take 1,000 years. Remember, Peter said God is **long-suffering** regarding one day or a 1,000 years can be considered the same. The first chapter in this book, proves God saves, only, people to be in His “**kingdom**,” when they decide to follow Him by their “**free choice**.” That is why God allowed humans to live 1,000 years during the **flood**, but living up to 1,000 years was still not enough time for them to repent.

So, Revelation 19 and 20 continues where Satan and his devils are put into **prison**, “**tartaroo**,” during that **period**. This prison is in a dungeon, in total darkness. God allows no deception during **the engagement time**, but **only truth is revealed**. Isaiah 2:1-4 details the events of this time. Many people will want to go to Jerusalem at this time, to walk in God’s “**way**” and learn *The Torah* Law. Remember, most of the world is **carnal** and must start on the bottom of **Jacob’s ladder** with **The Law of Moses (the first talent)**. Peace will **prevail** and nations will not **learn war** anymore.

Before this period of engagement, Babylon, The Mother of All Whores is thrown into A Lake of Fire with the **false prophet** (Revelation 18). During The Millennial Period not everyone goes to Jerusalem. Gog and Magog end up as God’s **final warfare** (Ezekiel, Chapters 30 through 39). God defeats Gog and Magog, with his nations, by sending **lightening** from **heaven** (Revelation 20). What happens to the dead in The Lake of Fire and what occurs to death itself? Most of all you need to know who is in God’s **kingdom** and what the rest will be doing. You are about to see the

great “**unveiling of revelation**” and what it is! Now, to approach a wonderful, glorious time in world prophecy which begins with The White Throne Judgment.

CHAPTER 29

ISAIAH TO REVELATION

Part III

The engagement period is over. Everyone has had their opportunity to be invited to The Wedding Feast. What must be decided? Who can attend and be part of the unvailing? Those not accepted to attend are cast out into outer darkness, which is God's prison. What is the process?

Christ gathers **all** nations together, (there is no third resurrection to come) (Matthew 25:32-46). This is the **last resurrection** as written in Revelation 20:11-15.

Notice, The Old Heaven and The Old Earth have **fled away**, they are **gone**. All the **dead** stand before **God's throne**. This is The White Throne Judgment. What is **the judgment** to accomplish? Jesus gave the answer in Matthew 25.

When Jesus sits on His throne as Judge this is what He does. **“And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats”** (Matthew 25:32). But, He is The Shepherd of both. Is there any Bible text that tells you what happens to **the goats**? Yes. He sets the **sheep** on his right hand, but the **goats** on the left. Then, The King has **the sheep** enter **God's “kingdom.”** The **goats** end up in a **state of everlasting punishment**. Amazingly, they are not destroyed in The Lake of Fire, but endure **“everlast-**

ing punishment.” How does this occur? The **sacrifice** solves this problem.

Two Goats

The Day of Atonement, where God accepts sacrifice **for sins**, an unusual ritual takes place.

On The Day of Atonement, God told Moses that He would appear in a cloud **upon the mercy seat**. God is able to extend **mercy** on The Day of Atonement where according to The Law “**no mercy**” should be **given** (Exodus 23 and 33). “**Atonement**” is where **God gives mercy**. You will see this **mercy goes to the goats**, as well.

Aaron only accepts three types of clean sacrifices, an ox, a ram and **two goats**. No sheep are sacrificed. Why? They don't need to, since they died completely in the first death and were in **the first resurrection**. On this **atonement** no sacrifice is required as they **enter The Kingdom of God**.

What about the sacrifice of the ox and the ram? Ephesians 1:9-10 gives the answers. According to God's “**pleasure**” and “**will**” He reveals His Mystery. God's “**will**” (desire), “**Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: That in the dispensation of the fulness [completeness] of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ**” during The White Throne Judgment. This is Jesus gathering all nations at the time of **the last resurrection**.

Who does this **include**? All “**both which are in heaven and which are on earth**” (Ephesians 1:10). This includes the angels in heaven and the devils and humans on earth. They all stand be-

fore Christ's **judgment seat**. What happens? **“That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth; and *that* every tongue [universal] should confess [repent] that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, [Master], to The Glory of God, The Father”** (Philippians 2:11-12). This is very **plain**.

Everyone on earth who is still **alive**, those under the **earth** (dead) and in heaven, even the **angels confess their sins**. What follows? Paul declares **salvation** comes by **faith** in Jesus and that is what he preached (Romans 10:1-8). What word did The Apostles **teach**? **“The word is near you, *even* in your mouth, and in your heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; that if you shalt confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in your heart that God hath raised him from the dead, you shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth [faith] unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation”** (Romans 10:8-10). How simple!

Everyone in The White Throne Judgment **confesses** with **their mouth**. Once someone confesses **“Christ is The Lord,”** they will receive **salvation**. How clear do you want it? Is God's **“word” good enough for you?** Once confession is made you must be **saved**. Naturally, in **the judgment**, **every one sees Christ, The Master** and **all confess**; they now must be **saved**. But when? There is **no date given in *The Bible*, but it must ultimately occur** (Isaiah 46:10). **Now Jesus, out of His** mouth states when a person confesses **He must save them**. **“And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one [universal] which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day”** (John 6:39-40)

Do you understand? Christ states, The White Throne Judgment is a **time of salvation**. Once confession is made you become the **obligation of Christ to save you**. **Jesus cannot lose anyone**, that is why He came into the world” (I John 4:14).

There is only one question left. Once you confess Jesus is Lord you must be saved, by Christ (Romans 10:9). So states *The Scriptures!* Jesus is now obligated to save them. The only question is – **when!** It happens according to Christ when you **believe** or have **faith** “in Christ” in your heart (John 6:40).

Once your heart is **right** you will be resurrected **that last day on Judgment Day**. *The Scriptures* declare the **last resurrection** has **no one dead** once they are resurrected in **the last day**. Is this **true?**

At this point of “**the judgment**,” the sheep are in “**the kingdom**” and only the **goats are unsaved**. Since they **confessed**, Jesus must **save** them as in the parable of **the ninety-nine sheep** which are safe but Jesus must save the **one lost sheep**. Since only the **goats** are left to be sacrificed that means the ox and rams have become either sheep or goats. Remember, only the goats go into **the fire**. They are, now, **clean** animals for **sacrifice** because they have **confessed** Christ but their carnal hearts **must be sacrificed** so they truly have **completely died, body, spirit (heart) and soul (life)** (Matthew 10:28). The Lake of Fire makes them “**white**” without **blemish, purged of all sin, they must believe in their hearts so Jesus can save them**. What happens to the **goats?** Sin is purged in The Lake of Fire by totally destroying everyone. What destroys **sin** is the complete **death** of body, spirit and soul (life) (Matthew 10:28).

In Leviticus 16:15-28 there are two goats. One goat goes into **the**

fire and is **totally consumed**. There is nothing left. The other **goat** is known as **the scapegoat** or Azazel, which means, one sent away. It reveals **the scapegoat** with all **the sins** of the people (which was laid on the scapegoat) and it goes **into the wilderness**. Two things happen to the **goats**. One is **sacrificed** and the other is sent into the wilderness. Sins of **all people** are put on the **goat's head** (universal).

Scripturally, it is **exactly** what happens to the goats Christ has thrown into **The Lake of Fire**. They end up in **outer darkness** for **everlasting punishment** as Jesus said. “Everlasting” means “as long as **necessary**” or “ages and ages.” Remember, God is long-suffering. Whatever it takes! The one goat, in The Lake of Fire is destroyed (sin). The second goat keeps living in the **wilderness** or **outer darkness**.

Twice Dead

Jude, The Apostle, is discussing **unrepentant false preachers**. Notice, they are not in their own denomination, but actually with Christians attending Christian “**love feasts**.” This is what will happen to them, “**These are spots in your feasts of charity [love], when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds *they are* without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots [destroyed]; raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever**” (Jude 12-13). Can't be any simpler! Those who **die twice, roots plucked up** (destroyed) end up in **outer darkness**.

It is amazing, “**twice dead**” means “dead to Christ and sin.” This is complete death of the body, spirit and life. That is why it states

“**plucked up by the roots.**” There is **nothing left**. Then, to be **dead**, “**twice**” relates to the **second death** or **The Lake of Fire**. Now, *The Bible* declares they **will be alive** after **the fire**. Jude states what is finally reserved for those **twice dead**, they will **end up in blackness of darkness** like the **stars in space**. They are in **outer darkness** after being in **The Lake of Fire**. Wow!

When Death Ends

One great question, is “**death for everyone**” **going to happen**? Paul states, “**The last enemy [of God] that [Christ] shall be destroyed is death** (I Corinthians 15:26). Does that mean “**no death**” from this point on or that “**no one**” is **dead**? There is no place in *The Bible* declaring that Paul was saying **no death** from now on. Biblically, Paul was alluding that **death is totally eradicated**. There virtually will be **no death**, everyone will **be alive**.

There will be a time of a **feast for all people** and God will remove the **vail** of blindness and everyone will know the **truth** (Isaiah 25:6-9). When does this happen? “**He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people [Israel] shall he take away from off all the earth: for the Lord hath spoken it**” (Isaiah 25:8). Read it again. Death is swallowed up and tears are wiped away from all the faces. That is universal!

Read about this **time-frame**, “**And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away**” (Revelation 21:4). What things are **passed away** and **no longer exist**? First, no more **death** even from the past, no sorrow, no crying and **no pain**. Nothing of the **past** is **left**. Nothing at all. Death, sorrow, crying, pain; all these

things are passed away. All former things as any death from the past is gone.

This time-period is during **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. God states **he makes all things new. Nothing is left from the past earth and heaven**. Even “**death**” from the past doesn’t exist.

The Time Period in Isaiah 25 and Revelation 21 is exactly the same. The same incidents occur together time-wise. The feast for **all** nations is The Wedding Feast. Blindness of “**the truth**” is removed and there is no more death, crying, sorrow nor pain. All that is left to prove about **death**, is how Christ defeats death (God’s last enemy). How could Jesus defeat **death** if some are **still dead**? Read what and who Jesus does condemn to The Lake of Fire, “**And death and hell [Hades] were cast into the lake of fire.**” How plain. “**This is the second death**” (Revelation 20:14). That is what Jude said would happen to false preachers – they would literally, die twice (Jude 12). Now, you have the **biblical** definition of The Second Death. Then, those **false** preachers are destined to be in **darkness** or **alive** like wandering **stars** in space.

The word for “death” in Greek means “regular human death which can be temporary.” “Hades” is “**the grave**” for both Christians and non-believers. This is the key as to how Christ destroys **death**. Since **death** and **the grave** are **both** thrown into **The Lake of Fire**, **both** being burned up or **destroyed**. Death can, therefore, **only result into no death. No graves exist so no death exists**. The Second Death is the **end of all death**. Death is an enemy of God and if **any death** exists, then, God still has **death** as an enemy. As long as death of any type exists Christ cannot turn **The Kingdom of God back to Him**. All **death** or the **grave must, be destroyed** (I Corinthians 15:24-26).

The White Throne Judgment is to make everyone “**white**” with “**no blemish**.” That is what The Bride wears when she is **worthy** to be **the wife** (Revelation 19:8). All **death** and the **grave** must no longer **exist**. The **second death** is the **end of all death** – that is why God makes **all things new**. “**New**” in Greek means “qualitatively **superior**, no **enemies left**, even **death!**”

One point before the **unveiling** is how God separates **the sheep** from **the goats**. Many think when *The Books* are opened, all your sins are made known. No, don't worry. Everyone has **confessed** that Jesus is Lord or **Judge**. All humanity throws itself upon **the mercy of the court**. That is why **Christians are witnesses**. In Malachi 3:16, it states a *Book of Remembrance* opens all the **good works** of those who **fear God** and **call upon His Name**. These books are a **witness** of God's people called by God – His “**jewels**.” Now what is **the judgment** about? Christ gives the answer in Matthew 12:31, “**Wherefore I say unto you, all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men [universally]: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men.**”

Sin isn't even **the point**. Everyone's **sins** are **forgiven** (universally). One sin isn't any worse than another. The **wages of sin** puts you to death (Romans 6:23). “**And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost [Spirit], it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come**” (Matthew 12:32). There it is!

The **unpardonable sin** is not regarding **your sins**, but refusing God's Holy Spirit and **blaspheming “the word”** or **truth** from The Holy Spirit. It is **the unpardonable sin**, refusing to **listen** to God's Holy Spirit. This is God's “**love**” you may be reject-

ing. The White Throne Judgment is about the acceptance or rejection of God’s Holy Spirit which leads you to **truth** and God’s **love**. That is what “**judgment**” is **all about**. The **goats** go into The Lake of Fire because they rejected God’s loving Holy Spirit. They are still bucking and kicking. God wants the **sacrifice** of their **total death, body, spirit and life** (soul) (Matthew 10:28).

How Sin Ends

Sin is the enemy of God because it can lead only to **death**, God’s **last enemy**. Notice, how God destroys **sin**, “**We shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last [seventh] trump**” (I Corinthians 15:51-52). This, of course, refers to Christians in **the first resurrection**. How does **death end**? “**So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written**” (Isaiah 25). “**Death is swallowed up in victory**” (I Corinthians 15:54). This is a **resurrection to life** from **The Lake of Fire**.

Death ends in The Lake of Fire so those in The Lake of Fire completely die and **are changed to be incorruptible**. There it is! Paul tells you how **sin** is destroyed, which is **the end of death**. I Corinthians 15:55-57 declares death no longer exists. Why? Because all sin is purged in the fires. The **goat’s** nature is changed.

Paul states it is **The Law** that puts you to death. Now, the wages of death have been paid to the **last farthing** (Matthew 5:26). Sin no longer exists and **death no longer exists**. Now, for the wonderful, beautiful unvailing of **God’s “house”** and **His “kingdom.”** A New Heaven and a New Earth emerges from **ruin** to a **rebirth**. All things are **born again** as Christ said (John 3). The first ruin of God’s “**house**” was by **water, The Noachian Flood**. The second

ruin of God's "house" is by fire as II Peter 3 prophesies. Who starts the **fire**? God does! God is a **consuming fire** and causes the "**end of this age of man.**" God's destructive fire is **brimstone** from **His breath** (Isaiah 30:33). God **spans** by **fire** because that is what **God is** (a consuming fire) (Hebrews 12:29). "**And all the host [stars] of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, as a falling *fig* from [the end of] the fig tree [death]. For my sword shall be bathed in heaven: behold, it shall come down upon Idumea and upon the people of my curse, to judgment**" (Isaiah 34:1, 4-5). This ends the **curse** of Malachi. **Judgment** is rendered, "**sin is destroyed,**" **death** no longer exists and, **now, God makes all things** (the universe) **new**. The **unveiling** is ready to take place!

CHAPTER 30

ISAIAH TO REVELATION

Part IV

The end of Revelation ushers in “a new beginning.” Christ is The Alpha and Omega (Revelation 22:13). Jesus does God’s “work,” first, as The Word and secondly, as The Son of Man in the flesh. Now, as Melchizedek, God’s “word” He makes all things new, for a time of rebirth.

A Family

The only **One God**, The Father of **all** is now to be “**all in all**” (I Corinthians 15:28). Kind after **kind**. His first born Son, Jesus is, now, ready for **marriage**. His Bride is now **worthy** to be His **Wife** (Revelation 19:7). In conclusion, because of the **unveiling** of **His Bride**, Jesus makes this declaration, “**And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be**” (Revelation 22:12).

All have been **saved** from **death** by “**grace**” and now, each person receives his or her **own reward** by how much they have **grown spiritually**. God has this to say, “**He that overcometh shall inherit all things [God’s “kingdom”]; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son**” (Revelation 21:7). **Kind after kind!** Everyone according to his/her **works** must become like Christ who is **exactly like God** (Hebrews 1:1-2). That is why both men and women are called “**sons**.” All **must** become like Jesus.

Unveiling

It is time for the **unveiling** of **Revelation**. You are about to **see**, The Bride of Christ and how she appears at The **Wedding Feast**. “**And there came unto me [John] one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew you the bride, the Lamb’s wife.**” (Revelation 21:9). The Bride, who has made herself **ready**, is about to **become The Wife of Christ**. God, The Wife’s **Father removes the veil!** What does she look like? (Revelation 21:2).

City Walls

Revelation 21:9-20 describes The **Bride** as New Jerusalem’s “**city walls.**” The angel reveals New Jerusalem descends from **heaven** where God and Christ have been making a **mansion** for The Bride (John 14:1-3). All these human years, Jesus has been working on this **new dwelling place for His Bride**. Here is how it looks. The walls are 212 feet high and surrounding the city foursquare, is 1,500 miles in each direction. The first thing everyone who is **resurrected** sees, are the **walls** and The Bride descending. She is making her entrance up Jacob’s “**ladder**” in God’s **new house** on **The New Earth**. Here is how **she looks**. “**Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal**” (Revelation 21:11). In David Stern’s *Hebrew Translation* this **stone** is a **diamond glowing in every direction** magnifying God’s “**glory**” in all **directions**. A **diamond** is a **girl’s best friend**. However, this is **Christ’s diamond!** This is how Jesus’ Bride will be dressed for her **Wedding Feast**.

Now, Israel who is **last** to be included as The Bride, is responsible

for the **pearly gates**, not in **heaven**, but on **The New Earth**. Peter is **not a gatekeeper**. Israel, as The Wife of Christ, has a **great** and awesome **responsibility** in God's "**kingdom**" (Revelation 21:12). "**On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates**" (Revelation 21:13). Now, one more part, which needs to be completed, is how The Bride is dressed for her **marriage**.

Each gate is a **pearly gate** which is Israel and the **walls** are **the church**, but who is "**the foundation?**" Of course, The Twelve Apostles are the foundation upon which is built **the church** or walls. **Each foundation** or each Apostle has a different colored diamond: yellow, pink, blue, emerald, etc. Peter is one of The Twelve Foundations (Revelation 21:14-21). Isaiah 26:1-3 defines the responsibilities of **the gatekeepers** and **walls** of New Jerusalem. Notice, the context. After **death** is defeated and The Wedding Feast is underway, in Isaiah 26, you find a song is sung which may well be a Wedding Song. "**In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah; we have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks [foundation]. Open you the gates [Israel], that the righteous nation which keepeth the truth [God's Holy Spirit] may enter in. You wilt keep him in perfect peace [no torment], whose mind is stayed on you: because he trusteth [faith] in you**" (Isaiah 26:1-3).

The **Gatekeepers**, Israel, have the commission in God's "**kingdom**" to decide who qualifies to come into God's "**kingdom**" and **eat of The Tree Of Life**. **Spiritual growth** allows more creating and allows the making of **all things new**. No illegal aliens, everyone **must qualify** to become a **citizen in God's "kingdom."** But, never forget, God makes a way for **illegal aliens!** The responsibility of the **wall is salvation**. In God's "**kingdom**" – "**salvation**" is the **number one job** of **The Church**.

Amazingly, God's **two witnesses** in The White Throne Judgment, in God's "**kingdom**," continue bringing those in **outer darkness**, now "**babes in Christ**," to **perfection** but **still carnal** (I Corinthians 3). Jude 20-23 relates **the church's** responsibility is to **save some** who are in the **fire** while others still have **spotted garments**; **The Wife of Christ** is designated to make the distinction. Why? Salvation is a **matter of free choice** which is an **individual problem**. **The potential to enter God's "kingdom"** will always **be there**, for ages and ages as they grow "**spiritually**."

Israel and The Church of God (The Gentiles) are God's **two witnesses** and with Jesus, who was the **first faithful witness**, will **bring the nations who are saved** and those in **outer darkness** (in God's **prison**) to rehabilitation. This is what God's "**kingdom**" is **all about**. The process of **salvation** or **creation** continues forever (or until everyone is like Christ) **in God's "kingdom."** How does God do it?

Mother Of All

During Paul's day, God regarded Jerusalem like Sodom and Gomorrah, producing **no children** of God. That is why "**sodomy**" is "**sin**." To Christians, **Jerusalem** is **in heaven** where Christ is preparing "**a place for you**" (The Gates and The Walls). The **responsibility** of **The Heavenly Jerusalem** is **now that of The New Jerusalem on The New Earth**. "**But Jerusalem which is above is free** [free choice], **which is the mother of us all** [Universal Salvation]" (Galatians 4:26). What does "**The Mother of Everyone**" have to do? "**For it is written, rejoice, thou barren that bearest not: break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate** [Jerusalem earth] **hath many more children than she** [Christ's wife] **which hath an husband** [Jesus]" (Galatians 4:27). My, oh my, the **time** has come for The Wife who has her

true Husband to break **forth** and have more children than ever **before**.

Do you realize what you have just read? New Jerusalem in **The New Earth** has the **job** of becoming **everyone else's "mother"** (who are in darkness), when each make their own **choice** (when they repent). That is "**potential**" **Salvation for Everyone**. That is **The Salvation of The World**, which is why Jesus came in the first place (I John 4:14).

A **deathbed repentance** doesn't do it. You still must go into **outer darkness** or **God's prison**, forever, or **until a person is willing to pay the last farthing for his/her sins**. During this **time**, they are **in torment** which is a **fear** that is **phobic** and **not real**. All they must do is to continue **drinking of the flowing river** with **the healing leaves** to become like Christ (Revelation 21:1-2).

In time, they will become **His children and His wife**, being The **"mother of everyone"** (Universally). It is proper for you to see who dwells in The New Earth. God is the **potter** who **molds you**. Only God knows how to make you a **useful vessel of honor in God's "house,"** **The New Earth** with His **canopy** or **"chuppah"** over this **New Earth**.

The **old earth**, where you are now living, is very tenuous. It is filled with catastrophes and **death**. **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth** is **God's true Sabbath's delight**, **God's "rest"** with **no pain, suffering, crying or torment**. **Stress-free, giving complete liberty or freedom** as all become like Christ, **sinless**. This is what **"all"** in God's **"kingdom"** will be doing **forever, with God, The Creator** by **eating of The Tree of Life** – continuously, producing **the good fruit** of God's **love**. How wonderful, how great and **loving is God**, The Father and Jesus Christ!

Who God Rules

So far, God, The Father lives with **men** in New Jerusalem with His Son, Jesus, as The **Husband and His real wife – Israel and The Church of God**. Now, Jesus and His Wife, New Jerusalem, **becomes everyone's mother**. Christ and His Wife bare **children** for The Kingdom of God – **forever** – until all repent.

There are **nations** who are **saved** and did not go into **the fire**, but were sheep and attended The Wedding Feast **as guests**. This **feast** never **ends**, so they keep **coming and coming, yearly**, to **show their glory** or **riches**, just as “**the wisemen**” during The Birth of Christ. “**And the nations of them which are saved [guests] shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory [riches] and honor [goodness] into it**” (Revelation 21:24). “**And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there**” (Revelation 21:25). There is just one **more group** in The New Earth, “**And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth [wrong wedding garment], neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in *The Lamb's Book of Life***” (Revelation 21:27).

There are some on **The New Earth** who are **still carnal** and cannot come to The Wedding Feast. Only those in *The Marriage Registry, The Book of Life* can attend. The others are **aliens** to **God's “kingdom”** and cannot **enter The Gates**. **They are left out**. “**Blessed are they that do his commandments [in heart], that they may have right to the tree of life [spiritual truth], and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without [left out] are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie**” (Revelation 22:14-15). These are those who are still **carnal**, though they

confessed and purged their sins by the destruction of their entire body, spirit and life in **the fire** and, now, no longer have the **pulls** of the **flesh**. That is why there is **no Tree of Good and Evil** on The New Earth. Now, **their torments and fears** are **real** as they drink from **The River of Life's Giving Waters**. That is why they are **wailing and crying** because they **blew it** in their human life by rejecting God's Holy Spirit.

They had a **wrong garment** when they tried **entering The Gates** to The **Wedding Feast** (Matthew 22:12-13). After the **fire** they are in **outer darkness** or **prison** paying **the last farthing**. Now, you know who dwells in **The New Earth** and **New Jerusalem**, i.e., God, The Father of all, His **first begotten Son**, Jesus as Husband and Christ's Wife, Israel and The Church of God. They all live in **New Jerusalem** which is **God's "kingdom," God's "house" built by God and Jesus Christ**.

The nations, which are outside New Jerusalem, are **the guests** to The **Wedding** and bring their honor (spiritual growth) to Jerusalem, annually, to **eat of The Tree of Life** for **greater growth**. "**The last group**," those in **outer darkness**, which is a **state of mind and heart**, are in **God's prison**. It is the job of Christ's **wife** with **God's Spirit** to pull those in **outer darkness** out of **the fire** by bringing them **to Christ**. What is outer darkness?

Outer Darkness

Darkness is a state of **mind and heart**. It has to do with **one's personal desires** (Proverbs 18). You decide or choose to be ignorant in this life because you want to **enjoy human existence more** than **The Kingdom of God**. To **understand life** and why you are here, but **believe in "no God" or, maybe, decide what type of God you fathom in your mind** is very foolish, indeed.

Thirdly, if you believe in God as a **deist** but do not **seek God's Holy Spirit** or do not **desire** to (because of your **fears** and doubts) and do **not** go up **Jacob's Ladder (spiritual growth)**, you deny Christ, your future husband and God's Holy Spirit to be **worthy**. Now, the question is, "what is **outer darkness**?" "Darkness" is a state of your heart and mind, but what does "**outer**" mean?

God's Temple

Everyone is living on The New Earth, but how about God and His Son, Jesus? Revelation 21:22-23 declares there **is no physical temple** in New Jerusalem. Why? **God and Christ are the temple** because of **God's "glory"** (doxa), "The **Shekinah**." Remember, God gave Jesus, **His "glory"** when He was **resurrected** (John 17:4). This **Glory, God's "goodness," The Shekinah, The Holy Spirit** radiates from God and Christ in New Jerusalem. They are **God's "house"** with **Christ as The Light of The World**. Jesus is the **light or life of all men** (universal). (John 1:4)

Christ is The Temple, a Holy Place and God in The Holy of Holies **sits on the mercy seat**. Jesus, as **light or life-giver** and God who grants **mercy**; they are God's "**temple**" or dwelling place. Jesus, is the chief corner stone of "**the temple**." God built His "**house**" around Jesus, **His Son**.

In Isaiah 28, God acknowledges Israel had made a contract **with death** and with the **grave or hell** (sheol). Because of this God is going to **lay** a chief (great) **foundation stone, precious** (diamond), **tried or tested as faithful and Jesus will disannul death and the grave**. No more **graves**. No **more death** of any kind. Read it in Isaiah 28:15-18.

God is **life**, as well as, **Jesus is life, not death**. Only Satan is "**the**

god of death” (II Corinthians 4:3-6). God has **commanded the light** (Christ) to **shine out of darkness**. This is God’s **“promise”** which is a **command**. **Light must conquer darkness**. **God has so decreed!**

“Outer Darkness” is as far away as one **can get from the light in New Jerusalem** which **is a brilliant diamond glistening and shining in all directions**. **“Outer darkness”** is the farthest edge or limit on The New Earth, but God’s **“light”** will reach them by having them drink **“the living waters.”** Let’s garner the **few hints** God leaves you by Christ’s closing **words!**

Those in **“Outer Darkness”** must drink **the living waters** which come from The Bride and The Holy Spirit, **“And the Spirit [living waters] and the bride [Christ’s wife-mother] say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever [universal] will [desire], let him take the water of life freely”** (Revelation 22:17). The matter of **life eternal will always be of their free choice!**

What is the **time setting** of this verse? It is **during The New Heaven and The New Earth** as **The Waters of Life** flow from God’s and Christ’s **throne** (Revelation 22:1-3). The job of **“Salvation”** will be your task **in God’s “kingdom” forever and forever**. The **“potential for salvation” never stops**.

This potential, into the **future**, without a set date, may very well continue beyond **humanity** on this **new earth**. **Read, the conclusion about “Salvation” as God ultimately Saves The Entire Universe!** The question you should ask is, **“when does God finally fulfill His “will” (desire) and pleasure?”** God’s answer is, **“Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times *the things* that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure”** (Isaiah 46:10). Do you

realize the **impact** of this **prophecy**? God is **declaring** that His **“counsel”** and **“pleasure”** **“will make it happen”** (Ephesians 1)! God’s **“will”** is His **desire**, as well as His **“counsel”** and **“pleasure”** to **save everyone** (Ephesians 1). God **will** **“Save Everyone.”** Isaiah 46:10 is **absolute**. However, Isaiah doesn’t **give you dates** or **exactly when** but **promises**, not only **salvation for humanity**, but **the entire universe**.

Since **“biblical proof”** is **lacking** you can **only speculate** **“beyond”** **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. **“For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time *are not worthy to be compared with the glory* [God’s goodness and riches] *which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectations of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity [lies], not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected *the same* in hope. Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage [slavery] of corruption [death] into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation [universe] groaneth [pain] and travaileth [suffers] in pain together until now”*** (Romans 8:18-22). This means **everyone** and **everything**. This is **Universal Salvation**. Every creature waits for God’s Sons. Why? Because these creatures, everyone created is saved from corruption or death! Everyone becomes Sons of God, but we do not know the date.

How **powerful!** This is a **New Mystery** beyond *The Holy Bible*. **“Salvation of All The World”** is **guaranteed**. Isaiah 46:10 makes it **absolute**. No one can put a date as to **“when.”** These verses by Paul go beyond when God **intends to give the entire universe “salvation”** or **“liberty.”** How? When all humanity become **Sons of God, like Jesus and God**. You can **gather the few hints** God leaves you to think **“universally”** by Christ’s closing **words!**

Christ's **closing words** in Revelation and, then, John concludes *The Book of Revelation* with, “**Behold, I come quickly** [when The Bride is “**worthy**”]: **blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book. And I, John, saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he [God’s angel] unto me, see you do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. And he [God’s angel] saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.**” It all depends upon the warning to The Seven Churches and Israel. “**He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still**” (Revelations 22:7-12).

Christ, through the angel, is telling John to allow **time** to go on, in reference to everyone, as to how each individual makes the change. “**I come quickly and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be**” (Revelation 22:12). **Salvation is a gift**, but **rewards** are determined by **your individual works**. The point is, Jesus could **return** before you know it. God could hurry prophecy just as He can **cut it short**, as Christ states He “**might.**”

Then, Jesus through His angel, restates how to get into New Jerusalem. Jesus warns that this book is for **The Seven Churches** and then declares, “**I am the root and off spring of David, and the bright and morning star**” (Revelation 22:16).

King David’s throne is forever because God promised it to David. Jesus, as King is forever, but he is, **also, The Bright and Morning Star** or “**the sun**” which will give life to the world.

This little **earth** is **unique**. Science cannot **find** any other **like it**. Jude relates that those in **outer darkness** are as **wandering stars** who are in **total darkness**, where **no life is to be found** (Jude 13). The **sun** is exactly the proper distance for **life to be on earth**. However, it can easily change by the shifting of the axis (which will occur). **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth** will be for **life to exist**. It will not be “**temporary**” or never needing to be adjusted.

Paul states **the entire universe groans** and **waits for God's Sons** in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. Does Christ in Revelation reveal **A New Mystery** to come **after** everyone is in **God's “kingdom”** and, then, **The Sons of God**, as “**The Wife**” and God's Holy Spirit, **give life** to the **entire universe**? If that **be so**, there is truly “**a great salvation**.” Not merely for **humanity**, but **real Universal Salvation** when **the entire universe** will have liberty and be “**saved!**” God's “**kingdom**” **never ends**. **The entire universe** will **rejoice in God's “house”** according to His “**will**,” **desire and pleasure**. All the **universe** waits for a rebirth!

You must **pray daily**, “**Our Father, which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory [goodness and riches] forever. Amen**” (Matthew 6:9-13)!

SATAN'S IMAGE

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 4

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *Satan’s Image*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God’s Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ’s Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God’s Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God’s Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God’s Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul’s Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God’s Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God’s Old And New Covenant

What’s It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan’s Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God’s Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God’s Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God’s Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God’s School

God’s Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don’t Bury Your Talents

God’s Work Vs. Man’s Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon’s Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God’s Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God’s Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God’s House

Bible Study God’s Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner’s Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION	vii
LIFE AND DEATH	1
WIDE AND STRAIT GATE	7
KNOWING THE TRUE GOD	13
SATAN'S DECEPTION	17
PROPHECY TAKES TIME	23
WHO IS SATAN?	29
SATAN'S CHANGING TITLES	35
IS HISTORY AN ACCIDENT?	43
SATAN, THE SNAKE	47
TRUTH INTO UNRIGHTEOUSNESS	53
THE PREHISTORIC WORLD	57
SUMERIANS AND GENESIS	63
THE SONS OF GOD	69
THE GOSPEL PREACHED	75
SUMERIAN'S TEMPLE	79
THE MIGHTY ONES	83
MYSTERY BABYLON	87
BIBLICAL AND HISTORICAL CLUES	91
THE DEADLY WOUND	95
THE DEADLY WOUND HEALED	103
BABYLON REBORN	109
HAMMURABI'S CODE	113
THE PRIESTHOOD AND LAW	119
GOD AND SATAN'S MYSTERIES	127
BABYLONIAN MYSTERIES	133
SHEM, GOD'S HIGH PRIEST	139
ABRAHAMIC COVENANT	145
GOD'S PEOPLE	149
THE WILDERNESS	157
THE THIRD HEAD	161
ROME, THE FOURTH BEAST	167

JUDAH'S DESTRUCTION	173
THE SEVENTH HEAD	179
GOD'S THOUGHTS AND WAYS	183
SATAN'S GREAT DECEPTION	187
DIVIDE AND CONQUER	193
ROMANTIC AGE OF REASON	199
THE INDUSTRIAL AGE	205
WHAT IS SATAN'S IMAGE?	211
THE END OF DAYS	217

PREFACE

World History is generally written as if it were just an accident, just as scholars theorize the universe and evolution. Human existence is viewed as having no **purpose, design or plan**. All of God's "**creation**" is thought as having no reason for existence. It is proclaimed that humans must give it purpose by their intellect and effort. Is this true? This book *Satan's Image* is "World History," rewritten from "**God's**" scriptural "**point of view**." This book unites Paleontology – study of the ancients, archeology, historical findings and written history in the light of *The Bible*. It is up to you to decide which makes it more logical and makes more sense. You are about to venture through World History, starting with The Garden of Eden to this present time, right to The End of Days. This book contends that World History not only has purpose, but has transpired in a specific direction from beginning to end – The Alpha and Omega. It is up to you to decide which is "**the truth**."

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no monies are accepted for these books. All books are absolutely **free**. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given).

Art Mokarow

Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

email: art@mokarow.com

website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

download all books free of charge

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Work

Revelation Uncovered

Christ In You

The Great Apostasy

The White Throne Judgment

Discovering God

The Original Bible

Faith With Works

God's Story

God's Sabbath And Holy Days

God's Will

Satan's Image

God's Plan Of Salvation

History Of God's Law

Spiritual Growth

The Wedding Feast

God's Two Priesthoods

The History Of Revelation

A Guide To Bible Study

The Christian Sabbath

The Mark Of The Beast

Faith That Saves

Paul's Worship Service

INTRODUCTION

World history, as taught today, lacks continuity and, as presented, is a series of **accidental events**. It all started by a lack of historical writings. Paleontology, a discipline of ancient events had not much to go on until archeology – that is, digging up past civilizations, was discovered. In the last two hundred years, inroads into paleontology have erupted with new archeological discoveries.

In 700 B.C. Assurbanipal, an Assyrian King, built a palace and inside this palace, a huge ancient library has been unearthed. These ancient writings in cuneiform and hieroglyphics were written on **clay tablets**. These tablets were before the flood of Noah. Noah and others are recorded; going back to the most ancient people called “**Sumerians**.” They are the oldest known historical find located near the gulf, in Southern Mesopotamia.

Their history is quite well documented, as well as Egypt, Asshur and Babylon. The problem is, it is rife with mythology, with “**polytheism**” or “**the worship of many gods**.” The archeologists and historians, because of what they viewed as **fairy tales** in the last two hundred years, concluded they were **myths**. These myths tied into The Egyptian, Greek and Roman “**gods**.” Therefore, all that recorded history was not accepted as true by historians. That is the dilemma of world history – what is reality or true as opposed to fairy tales.

Recently, some historians are beginning to realize that all these so-called **myths** have **truths** behind them. You will see this approach fills in many gaps of world history. Once properly understood, historical continuity, will begin to make sense.

By studying archeology and biblical history as real human existence in history, will make rational sense and will reveal a real purpose for human life. These so-called **myths** become **reality**

and reveal Satan, the god of this world, who, purposely, **confuses world history**. Mankind's **human imaginations** go hand in hand **with** Satan's purpose and **goal**.

Rather than humanity being made in the **Image of God**, Satan is creating his own "image" so he can be like **God**.

By combining archeology and history with *The Bible*, suddenly a new understanding of world history is **revealed**. God's "**purpose**" for Satan becomes **clear** and plays a role in God making you in **His "image"** through His "**Son**," Jesus, by God's "**very power**" of His "**Holy Spirit**."

God's "**love**" will be manifested, which reveals God's "**will**" and explains why humans suffer in this life. Ultimately, human history acknowledges the need of God Almighty rescuing humanity from the children of **Satan's "image."**

May the **truth of history** open your **eyes and heart** to your **Heavenly Father's "long-suffering mercy"** and His "**love**" for you to enter **The Kingdom of God**.

CHAPTER 1

LIFE AND DEATH

When God finished His “work” in The Garden of Eden, “it was very good” (Genesis 1:31). Nothing was wrong. Sin hadn’t, as yet, happened, so all was well. This was God’s “rest,” His “kingdom.”

Two Trees

The Tree of Life was **good** and so was The Tree of Good and Evil. Adam and Eve had **free choice** and they chose the **human** way, which was to decide for themselves what was “**right**” and what was “**wrong**.” Both trees were **good**, as God said, but one led to “**life**” and the other to “**death**.”

Do you realize, there would **never** have been any **death** had they chosen The Tree of Life? Death was originated by Satan, “**the father of the dead and all murders**.” He is the one who has brought **all the pain and suffering** into the world. The “**trees**” weren’t the problem because Adam and Eve could have chosen The Tree of Life, instead. Adam and Eve made the **wrong choice**. Sin **entered**, followed by **death**. Satan caused the **problem**. The Tree of Good and Evil would have been okay to eat once they matured, after, first, eating from The Tree of Life.

To Those Lost

Paul defined the difference between those who had God’s “**spirit**” and those who did not. Amazingly, you will find the difference between knowing **reality** or **truth** or not knowing, is determined which “**tree**” you

choose to eat of. Paul declared those who do not know *The Gospel* are those who are **lost** (II Corinthians 4:3-6).

When one is **lost**, one does exist, but does **not know** where he/she is; or what they are really doing. They do not understand “**the purpose of life**” and can only discover what life is **by observation**. That’s what modern **science** is all about. By “**observing**” what is good or bad and by mathematical formulas, a scientist determines what is **true, real** or what is **not real**. This – they call **science**.

Without **observation**, humans would never know what they were doing. They would be completely **blind** or in **darkness**. So Paul states, “**In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, has shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory [goodness and riches] of God in the face of Jesus Christ**” (Verse 6).

Those lost are **blinded** by Satan, who keeps them in **darkness**. Satan simply **blinds** those **in this world** by allowing them to be an integral **part** of the **world**. That is why Jesus warned His Disciples to be **in the world**, but not **of the world**. But, amazingly, The Sabbath and Holy Days does not and cannot give you **Salvation**. This is very hard for some to understand.

Two Images

God told The Heavenly Host, “**Let us make man in our image**” (Genesis 1:26). Since God has complete **free choice** or **liberty** you, **also, must have free choice or liberty** to be saved. That is why God made two trees, one to inherit **life** and **liberty** and the other to inherit

death, bondage or slavery. Slaves are robots to their **masters.** Man was allowed to choose between **two masters – God or Satan.** Each man and woman had **complete free choice** to decide if **life** or death was their ultimate choice. Both trees were good, but each ended up with different **results.**

Since God **made man** subject to **vanity** (survival of the fittest), He gave humans **a choice.** Adam and Eve chose the **hard way.** Read the book *God's Will* and you will see a **perfect, loving God** could not allow man to die. God made **man in vanity towards death,** but, also, showed the way to **Universal Salvation.**

Either way, **God promises life for all,** but it is up to man **to choose.** Man must **freely decide which image they want to emulate.** Either you choose **God** or **Satan.** Adam and Eve **chose Satan's "image"** so they could be as a god, doing their own thing. The problem for Christians, who have chosen God, **in faith,** is how they can **tell God's "image" from Satan's "image."**

Two Kinds Of Fruit

Christ, your **Author of Salvation,** has given you the answer, **"Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt [no fruit]; For the tree is known by his fruit"** (Matthew 12:33). This includes both trees in **The Garden, The Tree of Life and The Tree of Good and Evil.** The first tree guarantees **life,** the latter promises death, but with either tree you have to make the decision. One promises **life,** which is **The Tree of Life by God's "Holy Spirit"** (probably was **the olive tree**). The other is by your own **effort,** following **Satan** which **leads you to death.**

The Tree of Good and Evil (perhaps a **fig tree**) can produce either delicious **figs** or **no figs at all.** This is Christ's **"example"** in Matthew 21:18-

20. Christ got up in the morning and was hungry. When he saw a **fig tree** on the way, he found **no fruit growing** upon it. He said, “**Let no fruit grow on thee hence forward forever. And presently the fig tree withered away.**” Why did Jesus perform this **miracle**? In Mark’s account of the **fig tree**, Jesus seeing **no fruit** upon it, even though He knew it was not the time for the tree to have fruit, He said, “**No man [human] eat fruit of thee hereafter** (Mark 11:14). The **fig tree** is The Tree of Good and Evil. Remember, after Adam and Eve ate of the **fruit**, they clothed themselves in fig leaves.

Jesus, just before He was to be **crucified** to pay for all humanity’s **sins**, was to **fulfill** what He came to **restore** – **The Tree of Life, God’s “Holy Spirit”** (Matthew 18:11).

Jesus was declaring mankind no longer had to seek “**righteousness**” by their **own works** such as doing **The Letter of The Law** or by any other **pagan ways**. From that point on, God was **giving His “Gift of Grace”** – “The Holy Spirit” – The Tree of Life through Christ and **His “Blood.”** God’s “**Holy Spirit**” would **write His “Law”** in your **heart and mind**. **Your very nature becomes “God’s Spiritual Divine Nature”** (II Peter 1:3-4). **The Law** or *Torah* was, **then**, to be **magnified** and truly **made honorable by a renewing of “a right spirit in you”** (Psalm 51:10-11). No longer is it necessary for humanity to try to **please God by their human works**, but by **faith** after The Order of The Melchizedek Priesthood! No longer do they have to **choose The Tree of Good and Evil**. That is why, in The New Heaven and The New Earth, there is **no Tree of Good and Evil**, only **The Tree of Life – Salvation**.

Fruit

God exemplifies **life** and **death** by the **fruit the trees produce**. Some trees, like the fig tree, can grow **fruit** or it **may not produce fruit**. That is why Jesus cursed the fig tree because it did not produce fruit. Re-

member, you can **only know good and evil** by the fruit a tree produces. A tree growing good or **useful fruit** is, therefore, **good** for those who **eat the fruit**. That is why Jesus said, “**Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**” (Matthew 4:4).

Galatians 5:22 reveals “**the fruits**” of God’s “**spirit**” are, “**love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law or curse.**”

Do you realize what you just read? God’s “**Holy Spirit**” grows this type of nature and character “**in you.**” It is God’s “**Divine Nature**” which He, only, can give. It is what The Tree of Life is all about.

Now, you need to read what human nature or the **flesh** can produce, “**Now, the works of the flesh [humanity] are manifest, which are these; adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, reveling and such like**” (Galatians 5:19-21). If you produce the works by human effort you shall not enter God’s “**kingdom,**” but Christians need to be led by God’s “**Holy Spirit**” (Matthew 20).

Just like Adam and Eve, you have, exactly, the same choice by your **free will** to choose **life** or **death**, **The Tree of Life** or **The Tree of Good and Evil**. It is all up to you!

The product of your spirit or nature determines whether or not you are **accepted by God or by Satan**. This is **very easy to observe** (Acts 10:35).

CHAPTER 2

WIDE AND STRAIT GATE

In The New Heaven and The New Earth, all God's "kingdom" will rule (Revelation 21 and 22). To enter New Jerusalem, God's "house" and "temple," you find The Twelve Gates. You are about to find whether you can enter The Gates of God's "house" or be kept out (Revelation 22:15).

The Strait Gate

In Greek, "the way into The Gateway of God's **kingdom**" carries a meaning of "**obstacles**." But these obstacles are "**spiritual**." They are like going up a steep stairway. Not that there are stumbling blocks going up, but there are **options** or choices you must make. These "**options**" along the way are imbedded in **your flesh**. The choices you make are like **unloading your body of excess fat**. Each time you **lose some body fat**, it becomes easier and more joyful to run or walk up the steps you may be climbing. The book, *God's Will*, reveals the choices you make when you begin climbing **Jacob's Ladder**.

Each step has its own specific obligation of **spiritual growth**. It is like climbing a **mountain**. Each **step must be planned** so you don't make any mistakes. There are angels helping you along the way whether you are **ascending up a step** or **have to take a step down**. After Christ came and paid for your **sins**, angels (through Christ) make the **steps** easier for you to have a sure footing (John 1:51).

The following are The 7 Steps you need to take:

Step 1 Fear of God (which starts the beginning of your high climb)

Step 2 Mercy

Step 3 Wisdom

Step 4 Understanding

Step 5 Faith (confidence) and Hope

Step 6 Justice or Judgment

Step 7 Love (all doubt or fear and torment is gone)

It is at this point you will have arrived at the top of the ladder, a seraph, the highest **angelic step**. Seraphims are **six winged** angels who sit over **God's "Mercy Seat."** A Christian is ready to **enter God's "house"** in **New Jerusalem** on **The New Earth** when **God makes all things "new"** including "a new you."

Stumbling Blocks

As with any mountain climb, you must be aware of obstacles; such as spiders, scorpions and rodents – the most dangerous being **poisonous snakes**. But God gives you His "**Holy Spirit**" so you can know what is or is not an **obstacle**. You will be able to recognize when a step is **safe** or not. Here are Christ's "**directions**" to help you since He is an experienced **climber** and will successfully help you to complete the task before you. Christ can and will

show you **“the way.”** **“Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction [death] and many there be which go there. Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads unto life and few there be that find it”** (Matthew 7:13-14).

Do you really understand what Jesus is telling you? It is never easy finding the **right path**. For **most humans**, the easiest way up **The Ladder may seem the best**. In reality, the **true** steps are **hidden** along the **way**. One must look to God and Christ, **constantly, in faith**. What **appears dangerous**, ends up being the **safer** and **truer way**. You need to follow the **path** exactly, following Jesus to show you the way to “life.” There are many counterfeits to deceive you along the **way**. It may appear to be the **right way**, but in the **end** it may lead to **death**. You need to **follow** the **true** or **real** trail to the **top** of the **mountain**. Jesus, your Shepherd, will lead His **sheep** up the **mountain safely** by describing any **pitfalls, very clearly**.

Sower And The Seed

Christ explained, **“Because it is given unto you [Holy Spirit] to know the mysteries of the kingdom of Heaven, but to them it is not given.”** Jesus is The One with the right trail up the mountain. Only He knows “the right way.” He is “the way.” **“For whosoever has [right way], to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he has”** (Matthew 13:11-12). When you follow the true way, it becomes clear you are following the map, correctly. How will you know? The fruit being grown (the changing of your nature) will show it. Remember, love, joy, etc. You become more and more blessed with happiness. If you follow the wrong way, it becomes more and more difficult to understand.

If you continue in the wrong direction, you will end up in outer darkness – completely lost. What is the wrong way? Now, for the parable concerning “the sower and the seed.” It states God’s “**kingdom**” is like a sower (God) who sowed good seed in the field (the world). Then, an enemy, Satan, came along and spread weeds in that same **field**. The weeds were to choke the good seeds so they wouldn’t grow (Matthew 13:24-30).

You must realize how Satan fights the good seed. Satan doesn’t destroy the good seed, he attempts to stifle and choke its growth. This is a very deceptive system. You tend to believe, when evil events occur – it is Satan doing it. Satan is very deceptive and cunning. Satan, at every possible moment, tempts the good seed, (God’s “**people**”), from growing spiritually so they cannot see or know “the truth” of The Mystery of God. God doesn’t work that way. When you follow God, He always allows you free choice.

In Isaiah, God said He creates good and evil. How? Does God do it or does Satan do it? Neither! Your human nature, such as it is, can make it all happen. You don’t give your human nature the credit it deserves which **will** deceive you. Satan causes the perfect circumstances so humans follow suit and fall into his trap. Because of “**survival of the fittest**,” you will fight for survival to the death! All Satan has to do, is keep you from the truth, just as he stays away from God’s “**truth**.” Satan has you, as one of his own, when you act like him. Instead of mankind growing like God, too many become more and more like Satan – following his “image.” How does Satan keep the good seed from knowing what they are doing? Satan does so by blinding you to “**The Truth**” of God. The sower will reveal how Satan’s “image” is passed on to the unsuspecting. The product of one’s spirit or nature determines whether or not you are accepted by God or by Satan. It is very easy to observe or understand when:

- 1 **Because of your disinterest in God and your interest in what you are accomplishing in this human life, Satan can distract you from learning “the truth” (Matthew 13:19).**
- 2 **The second type hears “the truth” and rejoices, but when family, job or life itself, causes them pain over God’s “word,” they want to quit.**
- 3 **The third case requires “a loss” of money or things in this human existence and if they are too greedy, they can become disinterested. Whatever your idol or deep desire, even your very life, can and will blind you.**
- 4 **The fourth group falls in good ground and grows to maturity. This group “spiritually” grows at all costs and produces good fruit. In all cases, it wasn’t God or Satan who were the cause. In each case, a life circumstance, chosen by your free choice, made the decision. Everyone in this life goes through pain and suffering. All Satan has to do is create the circumstance (as he did in Job’s case). However, Job refused to give up on God. This is why Jesus said, “If you lose your life you will receive it and if you gain your life, you will lose it!” It could not be any clearer!**

Why is this necessary for **Salvation**? Why do you have to be willing to **die**? Why, in this life, is there **so much pain and suffering** and **strife**? You need to understand God’s “**thoughts**” and “**way of thinking**” instead of your private and personal way of understanding.

CHAPTER 3

KNOWING THE TRUE GOD

God can be very vengeful and jealous. But He, also, is “merciful,” “compassionate” and very “longsuffering.” Seems like a dichotomy. In fact, it sounds a lot like just being human. What is God really like? You are about to find out the difference is “one’s heart.” “Intent” is a cardinal motivation. You are about to discover you may have been worshipping the wrong god, and it may surprise you to find that it happens to be Satan. How could that be? Because Satan does his job very well.

Motivation

The essence of any **act** has to do with your innate desire and your **motivation**. What motivates you, your real desires are really what is in **your** heart. Your **desire** is what determines the **essence** of what is in your **heart** (Proverbs 18:1-4). What is it **within** your “**heart of hearts**” or “**desire**” which **defines the real “you?”** What makes you by “**your choice**” to do what you **do**?

The first difference between God and mankind is the **way they think**, as opposed to God’s “thinking,” “**For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord**” (Isaiah 55:8). God does not think like humans think. Why? “**For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts**” (Isaiah

55:9). How clear! God thinks **universally** and humans can only think “**earthly**” from a **very limited** point of view (since mankind is **very temporary**). This is what Jesus said about the way you are, “**It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profits nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life**” (John 6:63).

Jesus was saying the only thing that “quickeneth,” or **gives life**, is “**The Spirit**.” Your **body** is **useless**. Only “**the spirit in man**,” given at **birth** with **God's “Holy Spirit**,” is what **life is all about**. God thinks **universally** (“**Elohim**” in Hebrew) is concerned about “**saving the world**” (I John 4:14). Your Father wants everyone to become “**a spirit being**” in His “**image**” like **God and Christ**. Because of this **reality**, God willingly gave His Son to take **your pain and suffering**. An example might be like watching a **child** whose **parent is punishing him/her** and is **suffering, while hoping the child will learn their lesson** (II Peter 3:9). Many times parents can do nothing but watch their children pay hard penalties for their “**wrong doings**.” The parents can only pray and hope the children learn from their errors.

The word “**longsuffering**” in Greek signifies “**being understanding**” and “**exercising patience toward humans**.” It means “one is **not angry** – hasty, but willing to **forbear**.” God has to keep His “**real purpose**” and **plan to work out for you**. God, in His “**heart**,” is determined to **complete** His “**will**” (Isaiah 46:10). God will do all His “**pleasure**” and “**counsel**.” God never allows punishment, **pain and suffering** unless it is for your **profit or good**. Notice how God releases His “**vengeance**,” “**For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me**” (Hebrews 10:30). In Greek “**vengeance**” merely means “**punishment**.” It does not carry the same meaning, as “**one getting revenge**.” More appropriately, it **signifies “justice**” or “**what is right and good**,” as

a tool to help you, eventually, get eternal life. It is exactly what Hebrews 12:10 declares, “**For they [human fathers] verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we may be partakers of His Holiness.**” God wants you to be “**Holy,**” in His “**image.**”

In Greek, “**sumphero**” is translated as “**profit**” and comes from two Greek terms. The Greek term “**sum**” signifies “**together**” and the Greek word “**pleroo**” means to “**fulfill**” or “**to complete.**” God only **punishes** you to bring you **together** to make you “**one**” with **God and Christ**. The following verse clarifies the meaning, “**Now no chastening for the present seemeth [thinks] to be joyous, but grievous [horrible]: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby**” (Hebrews 12:11). This is **how God thinks**. It is **what God wants to give you as an inheritance and gift** because **you could never earn it** for yourselves. God is creating riches in His “**kingdom.**” You have nothing to do with it, just as your **very existence was a gift**. God sets all the **conditions** and all the rules. Your job is all set when you agree.

Some think **God murders** people or is the cause of **suffering**. Only humans, animals or Satan cause **murder** and are to blame as it is certainly not God. To murder, you can take away life, but you are never able to **restore it**. God is The Only One who can **kill**, justifiably, but He can bring them back to **life**. Therefore, God **can never murder**. He is **The God of The Living**. When you die, God can and will **resurrect** you. That is why Moses asked what to do when Achan sinned. God, who can give life back, can **justly** put people to death because He, only, **punishes** for their **good**, then, He will **resurrect them**. God is **love**, it is how **He thinks**. **God, always, first and foremost, thinks of the welfare or good of His creation** (Romans 8).

God's Mind And Heart

God's "**word**" has bestowed **grace** upon you by revealing how He **thinks**. When God created The Heavens and The Earth (**uni-verse**), He used His universal, plural **title**, "**Elohim**" (Genesis 1:102). God has many **titles** for "His Name," each portraying the many things He can do, revealing "His power." You need to know who God really is, as He reveals it.

God intends to **save** the world through Christ (I John 4:14). The only way God's "**kingdom**" and His "**riches**" ("**doxa**" – "**glory**") can be **given** and still **preserve** a **kingdom of happiness, peace, joy and success** is to **create man in God's "image."** That is what God chooses for His "**pleasure**" and **guarantees** to **make you Holy, perfect and righteous** so His "**kingdom**" can and will stand **forever**. God is the architect of a perfect **predestined plan**. God, "**The Real God,**" wants to **reveal Himself** to you. To do so, you must be **exactly in God's "image."** If not, you would burn or be **consumed** since God is a **consuming fire** (Hebrews 12:29). So, there is no way you can see God, Almighty, unless and until, you are exactly as He is. If not, you would be consumed.

In I Corinthians 13:9-12, Paul relates that no one has **all the truth**, but have glimpses of (**only**) **prophetic parts**. When you are **perfect**, you will be able to see God "**face to face**." You will be in **God's "exact image!"** Only then, will you know **The True God**. At that time, **you will be exactly like Him in God's "glory."** The **Supreme God** has a **perfectly sound "mind"** with His "**Holy Spirit**" (II Timothy 1:7). That is why God's "**perfect plan**" must make you in **His "image."** Only then, will **eternal joy be forever and for everyone**.

CHAPTER 4

SATAN'S DECEPTION

As with Eve, Satan's system is not that he will destroy you, but is deceiving you into thinking you have the truth. Satan wants you to think all is well with you, but, ultimately, you will destroy yourself by your fleshly, sinful nature! Whether you remain in ignorance, foolishness or in Judaism, Christianity, Islam or paganism, to know "the truth" is the point. What God wants to give you is eternal life, but you must allow Him to make you "Holy" as He is. Period! This gift only comes from God by "faith" and "absolute trust" in Him. No one could conceive such a perfect plan, no one, but God.

All Satan has to do, is for you to think you are on the right path. That isn't God's **"Image,"** but Satan's "image." When Jesus was tested in the wilderness (the world), Satan did not say to Christ that He wasn't God's **"Very Son."** Instead, he asked, **"If you be The Son of God."** Satan was trying to trick Christ by the very scriptures to make Him sin. This battle was not over who was the stronger, but Satan's feeble attempt to deceive Jesus (Matthew 4).

You, today, live in the wilderness and are lost while Satan, as god of this world, tries to blind you, to make you think you know the truth, when you do not! Only God, through Christ, as The Shepherd, can lead you out into God's **"rest"** – God's **"house."** This takes complete trust or faith in God. All Satan has to do is make

you believe your way of thinking is “**the truth.**” That is Satan’s “image.” Satan believes his way is as good as God’s “**way.**” The question is, “Are you going to be in God’s “**Image**” or Satan’s “image?”

The Wilderness

There is no place as confusing as **this world.** Take your **pick.** Most logic conceived in human thoughts can be **absurd.** Every type of human existence “**imaginable**” is available. Who knows the best way? Of course, **you do,** or you ask any person on earth. They will be happy to tell you, but it will be their way of thinking or deciding a conclusion. You and they are really in Babylon.

You are **born** in the **wilderness** from birth and, generally, accept what you learned as you grew up **as the best** way to think or live. Government, geography, commerce, food, economics, science, you name it, the **entire world** has a **diversity** of **choice.** Some, as you mature, find other nations have more to offer and many choose to immigrate. At present, it is The United States. Many choose, wherever, there seems to be an opportunity for a better **life.** Wherever the streets are lined with gold, people will **flock** to it. All seek their desires rather than look for “**the truth.**”

Others may like where they live or are content to remain in an area they have lived in. Still others believe they have the right to **steal** other individual’s property and goods. Then, there are the nations who go to war to take what, legally, belonged to others, earned by their labor. In any human mind, it is **all justified.** The **poor** believe they can steal from the **rich** because the rich have **too much.** Then, the **rich** think they can take from the **poor** because it is their right or they just do not care or do not know better. What **mayhem!** What **confusion** or **Babylon!** It is **truly a wilderness**

living in this world. God calls things, exactly, by **what they are**. You find yourselves in a world of confusion, where some people are **decent**, while others are **lazy**, some **ignorant**, some **foolish** and some **evil**. Humanity is a mixture of many traits and you have been given **free choice** to decide what direction you plan to follow. Satan loves **this world** just as it is, based upon **lust** and **greed** and **lures you to follow him and his Satanic ways**.

God's Rest

If you choose to **follow Satan's** "image," God cannot **allow** you into **His "rest"** (as Israel sinned when they followed Satan's image when they left Egypt). If He did, they could end up creating **confusion**, which leads to **evilness**. They needed to **learn** to have complete **faith** in God. He sent them into the **wilderness** to be lost for forty years (Christ had to suffer for forty days). Only then, did they have a **choice**, to follow and trust **Satan** or have **faith** in God to lead them out of the **wilderness** into "**the promised land**" – **God's "rest."** It took that **entire generation forty years to die** and, then be able to enter **God's "rest"** with a **new generation** led by Joshua. This world is in the **same condition**, "**a wilderness.**" You or **no one else**, except for a **remnant of faithful ones**, have **any idea why you are here, what you are to become, where you are going and what you are going to do when you are there, wherever that is**. That is Babylon and **exactly the way Satan wants it**. **It is Satan's "image."** You are lost in the whole scheme of things in today's world.

How We Think

You have proven, through Christ, with your **free choice**, you can stay **ignorant**, **foolish**, or learn truth as babes. To be **ignorant**, you have decided to like things as they are. The world is fine, as

long as you can have it the way you want. Or, you like what you see and strive to achieve it. Either way, you are satisfied with things as they are and to die when it's your time, but right now, it seems a long way off.

The **foolish** want to know what it's **all about**. They get **educated**, attend colleges and universities and they study, read, experiment, trying to find the answers to **life**. The **problem** is they come up with answers out of their own **heads**. Since humans can only know what they know by what they **observe**, they never know if **they are observing "reality"** or, eventually, if **all there is to observe will bring them to "the truth."** That is why their **scientific findings** are called a **theory**, sort of a **guess**. As *The Bible* states, "**Forever learning but never coming to the knowledge of the truth!**" That is **science**. It just isn't **pure science**.

Pure Science

The only **pure science** would be if you existed at the **beginning of creation** and lived to this day and had **personally observed** what really happened through the centuries. Remember, humans can only know what they **see** or **observe in their short life span**. The problem is, **has anyone** observed all they need to **see** to make an accurate or **true statement**? Science knows you have **not**, so you can only know **theories**, based upon mathematical **formulas**. Science observes what is called **variables** and when those **variables** make mathematical **sense**, you may jump to **conclusions** which they call a **theory** but they can never be **facts**. The question is, have you observed all the **variables**? "Variables" are what you believe **are facts** you have observed and, therefore, you think you have the answer or "**the truth**."

Since **science** is always **in doubt**, they, continually, **change their**

many scientific theories. It takes more **faith** to believe in **science** than to believe in **God, The Creator.**

Technology

Many claim to look at “**scientific technology**” and all the good it has given mankind. And, this is **true**. The difficulty is all the technology is, only, based upon what is **observed**, which is no **big deal**. When learning by observation, like lighting a **fire**, humans can be **warm** and even **cook** by it. This doesn't take **rocket science**. That is why so many of the major technological discoveries come from **non-scientists**. It, only, takes continual **experimentation** and **observation**. Scientists are those individuals who are **more disciplined** in the **process** of **experimentation** and **observation** than others. They are called **scholars**. Then, they earn letters after their name.

The scholars of Jesus' “day” asked how can Christ know so much of The Word of God without having earned **letters**? That is why **so many non-scientists discover new technology**. A “degree of faith” is the answer. Through “**Christian faith**” you believe it is **logical** or you have a **sound mind** to believe in **The Words of The Creator**. Only God knows how He made everything and for **what purpose**, than from any of those **who were not there!** What makes **more sense**? In a **court**, a **witness is one** who **observed the crime**, if not, the **court** does not accept **their word**. The first, naturally, is more reliable than the **former**. The person who does not actually **see the crime** relies on “**hearsay**” or “**a guess**.”

Which, takes more **faith**? It all has to do with what or who you follow – **God's “Image”** or **Satan's “image.”** You either **choose “hearsay”** or choose “**the truth**.”

CHAPTER 5

PROPHECY TAKES TIME

When God predestined His “will” and “purpose,” He knew it would take time for its fruition. Since God requires, absolute, faith in Him, free choice demands change. Satan’s system is not that he will destroy you, but he deceives you into thinking you have “the truth.” All is well, but, ultimately, you will destroy yourselves by your fleshly, sinful nature to have what you want and, then, there’s always your innate desire to survive!

Human Change

Change can be fickle and varies with each individual since genetics vary, as well as, environment. No two humans function exactly the same. Because this is so, plans are conditional. God, purposefully, knew His “will” had to be a desire and not a command. Being dogmatic can only take place when no free choice is given. When Israel sinned and God knew they had a wrong heart, they would, only, obey Him when they were forced. Therefore, God gave no mercy in keeping The Letter of The Law. Always keep in mind, The Letter of The Law was made for carnal people (I Timothy 1:7-10). This law was meant to keep them in bondage.

Slavery

As much as humans despise **slavery** because they were **created** to be **free** and have **liberty**, all the **human family** has been in **slav-**

ery, at one period or another, in history. What is **slavery**? It is “a restriction of free will, choice and of activity.” This is contrary to the way you were created. Adam and Eve chose not to **listen** to God, let alone be His “**slaves**.”

Christians have, freely, chosen to either be **slaves** to God and Christ or to follow Satan's way. Christians know they, of themselves, cannot become “Holy” as God, unless by their **free choice**, they allow God to help them. That is why slavery, when administered with **love**, is **always** for the **good** of those **in bondage**. Today, civil **societies** have slavery and call them **jails** or prisons. For those who do not have a **sound mind**, they must be **imprisoned** for **their good** and for the good of everyone else. God, for your good and all your good methods, brings you to have a sound mind. This is called having a **conscience**, God's “**conscience**.” That is what **repentance** is **all about**. It is a **change of mind**. To do so, you must have a **renewal of your mind** whose thoughts begin to resemble God's “**mind**.”

Once, God gives you His “**Holy Spirit**,” it **leads you to truth so you can begin to acquire a sound mind**. No longer do you need a **written law**, for you have changed, to a point, where your whole being becomes The Law. You could say The Law “in you” or, literally, The Law “**is part of you**.”

Prophecy Fails

In *God's Story* you know God, purposely, stops, ceases or delays prophecy, (which is in His “**power**”) as He “**wills**.” Scripturally, you have your proof, “**prophecies shall fail**” (I Corinthians 13:8). Prophecies are events which God “**wills**” and, finally, “**performs**” depending upon **conditions** and **free will** (Isaiah 46:10). Prophecy is certain, but the **time-frame is not always certain**.

As an example, humans continually try to predict when Christ, The Messiah, will **return**. Everyone who tries – ends up failing. They prove, themselves, to be false prophets (Deuteronomy 18). Why is this so? Simply, *The Scriptures* reveal, only, God, The Father knows when Christ will return (Acts 1). Even God doesn't determine the date because it is **(first) “conditional.”** He, only, acts according to His **“plan.”**

God will **not allow** Jesus to **return** for His **“Bride”** until she is **worthy to be His “Wife”** (Revelation 19:7). God will **not permit** His Son to marry a woman who does not love Him to **death**, as He **loves her**. In such cases, God will stop, cease or wait for the **condition** or His **“goal”** to be achieved before the prophecy can be **fulfilled** and, then, later, becomes **history**.

Salvation Is A Gift

All Christians understand that Salvation is a matter of **spiritual growth**. That takes time for each person to become like Christ (Ephesians 4:11-12). Because God is **longsuffering**, very **patient**, even if it takes a thousand years for people to be saved, He will suffer **“with you”** until you become like Him and Christ (II Peter 3:8-9). Prophecy explains future history as **“the conditions which God demands,”** actually, do occur. Until these conditions are met, God delays His **“prophecy”** to be fulfilled **“completely.”** When **all** occurs, exactly, as it should, God delays the events until **all** things follow “the path” in God's **“plan.”**

Satan's Role

Satan, as God's **“adversary”** and, ultimately, as the **devil**, the **destroyer**, plays perfectly into God's own **“plan”** to **save the world** (I John 4:14). Salvation is a **free-will** activity. It is predicated

upon each person's individual **choice**. God **forces no one** to believe **Him or follow Him**. God never **forces** you to want to be **saved and, eventually, to go into His "kingdom."** God is reproducing His "**goodness**" – "**in you**" but only, by your **free choice when you make the decision to be one of His**. Kind after kind! Goodness demands it. Your free choice is to be in your own heart's desire. It has to be your decision.

Idolatry

Why does God hate **idolatry so much**? Is it because He is vain and wants all the praise? Some see God that way. No! That is, **totally**, contrary to what God is, which is **love**. Galatians 5:22 declares love is not **puffed up** or behaves, itself, "**unseemly**." And yet, God even gets **jealous** when someone sins by worshipping **idols**.

What is it about **idolatry** that God hates so vehemently? The Greek word for "idol" is "**icon**." An "icon" is "**anything that you worship above all else**." The problem is an **icon**, a **statue or object**, which is **not real**! Generally, you think of an **icon** as something that is made by humans and can do nothing for anyone. This is the most **vivid** example God gives in *The Bible*. If an **idol** is made of **wood**, the best God tells you that you can benefit from it, is to use it for making fire for warmth or cooking a meal. Worshipping a human manufactured **idol** is of **no** spiritual benefit. Paul expressed the **folly** in worshipping anything in **creation**, such as the stars, the mountains, volcanoes or things made by **human hands** (Romans 1). Why?

Paul warns that you should **mortify** or **put to death** any uncleanness (Colossians 3:5). Summarizing, he tells you to **put to death** or **destroy everything** you **covet** or **worship**. "**Covetousness**

is idolatry.” That is a complete **expansion** of what idolatry defines. Covetousness breaks **the commandment** and that requires **the death penalty**.

Paul opens the door for you to understand why God hates idolatry. This definition goes beyond what any human can build. This enters the “**spiritual**” intent **of your very heart and mind**. You, also, are able to build **idols** concocted from **your own mind**.

Anything physical or **imagined** can be an “**icon**” you worship. “**To worship**” is “**to adore**” or “**love even beyond human logical reason.**” You **worship idols** to the point you **cannot live without them**. You are even willing **to die**, for them, because of such **intense love or desire for what they may represent to you**. Whatever you **love so much**, you better **be certain** that it **deserves your love**, when you are willing to **die** for any of your **idols**. If it was manufactured by hands or **a machine**, **it will never help you, let alone help to “save” you**.

Now, you can start to realize why **God** is so, intensely, zealous against **idolatry**. **God hates any form of idolatry** because it can **lead you in the wrong direction**. Wow! This goes beyond jealousy, which is why in Hebrew the word **actually “signifies intensity”** or just how “**zealous God is.**” Above all, God despises **idolatry or false worship of anything that does nothing for you or anyone else**. This even includes **your human existence in your body** which “**profits nothing**” (John 6:63).

That is why **being perfect** requires such “**true love.**” **You must be willing to give your life to, only, worship or adore The True God and His “Son,”** even to the death. God is The Only **God** who has “**life**” and “**true riches.**” God’s “**prophecy**” will only happen when **you love The True God and follow Him!**

CHAPTER 6

WHO IS SATAN?

Many of you believe Satan is a snake. You think he crawls around on his belly just like any poisonous snake. You are about to find out how wrong you are!

A Cherub

Satan was a **special angel** but he was, also, a **fallen angel**. There is a prophecy of the downfall of The City of Tyre and their **prince**. This prince is not The King of Tyre since Tyre's real king is Satan who influenced and truly ruled over the physical Prince of Tyre (Ezekiel 28). God, purposefully, followed His "**will**." This could not be a **command**. Being **dogmatic** can, only, take place when **no free choice** is given.

The inhabitants of Tyre, called The Phoenicians, were the merchants of the earth and became, extremely, **wealthy** because of their **globalization**. There was **world commerce** from China to Africa (and to the entire **world**). They were **truly** the center of **commerce** in Israel's day. In Ezekiel 28:13-19, God relates that the **true king**, not the prince, is really **Satan**. Satan is "**the god of this world**" (II Corinthians 4:4) and the world's real ruler is exposed in Ezekiel's prophecy.

God describes Satan's beginnings and position. Read every **detail** of Ezekiel 28:13-19. God tells you when Satan was created, he was a **cherub** – a very **special cherub**.

In Hebrew, the English word “**cherub**” is “**keruv.**” It is, generally, just below a **seraphim** angel, being the highest angelic creation, because of their **impeccable moral achievement**. When one climbs to the level of a **seraphim**, one is **completely pure**.

Cherubs have wings as the two cherubs who covered the **mercy seat** above the **ark**. Their faces were comprised, on one side, that of a **lion** and the other side that of a **man**. One error some make when reading *The Bible*, is to believe these angelic creations really look like a lion and a man. The four cherubs which carry God's “**throne**” in Ezekiel in Chapter 1 and Chapter 10 had faces that had four different appearances. Read the book *Discovering God* for more details. In reality, these cherubs had faces like a **lion** and a **man**. This really signified the **strength** of a **lion** and the ability to **reason logically** as a **man**. Satan, as one of these cherubs, was highly intelligent, but, also, extremely **strong** like a **lion**. God would, naturally, have created these strong beings to guard **His “throne.”**

Jude 6 claims Satan, with his angels, kept “**not**” their **first estate**, but left their own **habitation**. Then, Jude states that Satan and his angels are now called “**demons**” and are **reserved** in **darkness** until The Day of Judgment. The book, *God's Will*, defines darkness as a total lack of knowing “**the truth**” and wandering in the wilderness (the world), until The Judgment Day.

Summarizing, God reveals, **Satan** was the **completeness** of **wisdom, perfection** and **beauty**. He was beautiful, “**You have been in Eden [garden], Garden of God; every precious stone was your covering [garment], the sardius, topaz and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created**” (Ezekiel 28:13).

This is the “**being**” Eve saw and talked to in The Garden of Eden and **not some snake** wrapped around The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. The snake is what Satan, eventually, became but had looked like **an angel of God** (II Corinthians 11:14). Satan does not **crawl** on the ground like a snake, but is like a **slithering snake who is in darkness**, not understanding why or what he is really **doing!**

When Eve confronted Satan, he was very handsome. He was a **high-level angelic creation of God**. Who wouldn't believe him? Every Christian finds himself vulnerable from the moment they are called by God to **repentance**. That is what the parable of the **sower** and the **seed** is all about (Matthew 13). That is why many preachers appear as “**angels of light**.” They do **not know** they are being deceived by Satan. **Christians**, as well, are under **attack** by **Satan**, the **beautiful fallen angel of God**. Christians must stop being **denominational**, which is being in **competition**, like the **world**. You must **unite in love** rather than arguing about **doctrine** and being **tossed to and fro** by every wind of **doctrine** (Ephesians 4:13-16). You must become **like Christ** to **save the world** (I John 4:14).

From Cherub To Satan

Jude 6 reveals God's “**special cherub**,” who **covered** or protected God's “**very throne**,” left his habitation. God relates how God's protecting **cherub** became **Satan** (Ezekiel 28:14-19). When Satan left God's “**house**,” he was filled with **violence**. “Violence” in Hebrew is “**chamas**.” It means “**total oppression**” and “**wickedness**.” “Chamash” means “**cruelty and violent damage**.” Satan intends to **cause complete violence** or **total war** and damage for the **destruction of God's “will”** and “**purpose of every vestige of His love and righteousness**.”

Satan, therefore, was **cast out of God's "house"** so he could **blind the world**. That is why Jesus said He **saw "Satan fall as lightning to the earth"** (Luke 10:18). Jesus made this statement after He sent out "the 70" to preach *The Gospel* to The Twelve Tribes of Israel. They were **overjoyed** because even the **devils (demons)** in darkness were subject to them.

Christ said Satan, "**the god of this world,**" really has **no power over God's "people."** Luke declares The Son of God has **given all power over God's "enemies"** (Satan and his fallen angels who are now **devils**). **The only way Satan can touch Christians is by your willingness to hear him, just like Eve** (Luke 10:18-19). Remember, **Satan does not look or sound like a snake**. He is a **snake** who is a **deceiver**. Watch out! Check, biblically, **everything you hear or read**. This checklist includes **all preachers and authors**.

Preachers and authors, themselves, can be **deceived by Satan and not know it!** They can be **very decent, helpful, wonderful humans**, but they, also, **can be fooled**. Check on everyone to see they are following **The Word of God** and not their human **words**.

Satan took on a **different nature or spirit**. He left being God's "**cherub**" and "**proclaimer**" to become a **fallen angel**, known as **Satan**. In Ezekiel 28, God ends His account by saying Satan became self-centered and saw himself as good as God, Almighty. His **ego** destroyed his **mind** and **heart** and ended up in prison's dungeon, the **darkness** of the **wilderness** on this **earth**. His end is **fire**. Isaiah 14:12-15 concludes, "**How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning** [light bringer like the sun]!" The word "**Lucifer**" was added by a monk in The Fourth Century, which in the Hebrew is "**Heylale**." The Hebrew really means "**the announcer**" or "**light bringer**." He was a "**covering**"

over God's "**throne**," announcing God's "**Holiness**" and "**Light of The Truth**."

Satan decided he knew better, but is now in **darkness** and works to **deceive the world**. His ultimate end is to be thrown into The Lake of Fire for **purging**. Satan, with a **new title** and name, has chosen to, **no longer**, be God's angelic "**light bringer**," but one who continually changes **his title** and **name** by falling **further** and **further** in **darkness** in his **mind** and **heart**. God's "**covering angel**," **protector** and **booming bolster** of God's "**Light**" and "**Truth**" became God's "**adversary**" and is the **bolster** of his **own ego**.

CHAPTER 7

SATAN'S CHANGING TITLES

In the beginning, God was allowing Satan, as an adversary, to have “his way.” Satan’s roll became as a District Attorney, to ferret out criminals. His plunge into outer darkness took time as he experienced one success after another until he lost complete sight and understanding of justice and judgment. Finally, God removed him from His “presence” in heaven. Satan positions himself as a judge against God’s “people.”

Christ's Warning

In Christ’s “**declaration**,” “**unless your eye sees light or truth, then darkness or deceit will be in you**” (Matthew 6:23-24). Then, He concludes with a warning, “**How great is that darkness?**” That is what, finally, happens to Satan. He, ultimately, loses all sense of wisdom and understanding. He ends up, totally self-centered in self-righteousness, being in outer darkness. He is in the prison of his own mind. Satan becomes The Devil and in Greek “**the devil**” means “**the destroyer**.”

God's Court

Did you know God has a **court** in heaven? In the days of Ahab, King of The Ten Tribes of Israel, he wanted to go to battle against Syria who, previously, had some of **his land**. Ahab was an **evil King** against The **True God** and His “**ways**.” Ahab invited Je-

hoshaphat, King of Judah, to join him in the battle. Jehoshaphat asked Ahab if there was a **Prophet of God** they could ask whether, or not, they would be successful. On the other hand, Ahab only wanted to listen to his **false prophets** because they told him what he wanted to hear.

But, Jehoshaphat persuaded Ahab and they asked Micah, a **true Prophet of God**, what the outcome would be. Of course, Micah told them they would lose. Ahab told Jehoshaphat, "I told you so." Then, Micah told the king what he saw in a **vision**. Micah saw God sitting on His "**throne**" holding court. Some of His "counselors" were on His "**left**" and some on His "**right hand**." God asked His "**courtiers**" who would persuade **Ahab** to go to battle Syria? One "spirit" came before God and said, "**I will persuade him**." God asked "the spirit" how? The "**spirit**" said, "**I will put a lying spirit in the mouth of his prophets**." The "**spirit**" wasn't going to **lie** but would, actually, **deceive** Ahab's prophets in believing they were true prophets. This "spirit" could, possibly, have been Satan. Read all of I Kings 2:2.

Satan, as **the adversary**, always uses **deception**. As his weapon against **God's "people"**, he knows better than to reveal who he is. He always appears as **an angel of light**. This had been **his method** with Eve in The Garden. Satan preached his first false gospel. Job was a good example of **God's "court"** in session. Satan, as an adversary, appears in God's "**court**" with the other Sons of God (spirits) and they discussed the profitable reasons of **Job's spiritual growth**. Satan, on God's "**left**," probably accused Job as to why he chose to be a **righteous man**. God listened and permitted Satan to **test** Job's **spiritual growth** and **his heart** which was not completely **faithful** because Job doubted God and His "**judgment**." In either case, the "**spirit**" in Ahab's situation or Satan's and Job's, God does **hold court** to discuss **human spiri-**

tual progress concerning **individuals**. God **allows** “**spirits**” like **Satan** to use **deception** for an individual’s (Christian) “**good**.” That seems contradictory, a real dilemma – or is it?

Ignorant And Foolish

Satan has very little concern worrying about ignorant and foolish people! These **ignorant** and **foolish** people are, actually, **extremely intelligent people**. Especially the **foolish** since the difference between the **two** has to do with using their intelligence. A little like **Satan**, who was **highly intelligent** from the day of his creation.

The **ignorant** just don’t care. They are too interested in their life in this world, surviving and having **fun**. They use their intelligence to be part of **this world**. They have no time or **interest** in why they were **born** or if there is a God or not. The **foolish** are interested in using, only, their own **intelligence** to answer **life’s real questions** of **truth**. God calls them **foolish** because they **seek** these answers by their **own ability**, without God in their formula. They are in love with their own conclusions. They are **foolish** since they can only understand **life** by what they **see** and **reason** in their minds. They can **never find the truth**. This is called **science**. For humans to seek knowledge of survival by their observation and experience does inform you, but **never answers the questions** of what is **real** or actual **truth**. Only God, who **created** all things, knows **how** and **why He did it, in the first place**. **Only God knows the correct way to use what He, Himself, created**. That is why God is **Holy, righteous and perfect**.

The **foolish** are like those who try to build their **own home** with **no previous experience or knowledge**. **Good luck!** Humanity, left to themselves, started living in **caves** and, even today, **some still**

do. Look how **many thousands of years** it has taken mankind to get **housing** as it is in this **contemporary day**. The dichotomy is we have “**the homeless**” all over the world; and a portion of Arab countries still roam the sands and live in tents.

Whether you discuss technology, electronics, cosmology, commerce, science or **even how to live at peace and in harmony**, all are **fools** without **God**. Reviewing World History will prove Satan's “**devices of deception.**” Satan allows the **ignorant** and **foolish to pursue** their **desires**, without **God**. Whether you are just not **interested** or you **refuse to accept** “**the reality**” of **God**, Satan interferes with the ignorant and foolish when they show only “**a slight interest**” in God and **His “ways.”** As long as those in this world are part of it, they worship Satan's “image.” Satan uses his full effort and concentrates on Christians **by using deception, although, always, with God's “approval”** as King and God of all. Satan, also, blinds Israel by the very Law which is “**Holy**” and “**good**” (to their own distraction).

Spiritual Blindness

If God **allows** and, even, wants Satan to deceive humanity, it is **easy to believe** that God is complacent in **Satan's crime**. Why does God allow people not to know the **truth**? You are about to **find out** what God's “**real love**” is **all about**.

Christ simply answers as to why God **blinds** people “**spiritually**” (John 9:41). Here is what Jesus said to The Pharisees, “**If you were blind, you should not have no sin: but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.**” What **love**? Though one is **evil, but blinded**, they are **not guilty in God's “court of law!”** Have you ever asked your little child why they disobeyed you and they replied, “I don't know.” Or ask a murderer, “why they com-

mitted a horrendous murder” and they **stare** at you as if **blind**. The answer is, it is **in everyone’s nature to be both good and evil**. The **free choice** to go, either way, is always up to you. Now, you can come to understand why God blinds you.

You, as Adam and Eve’s progeny and genetically, “**all**” are of the same “**tree**” – **good** and/or **evil**. That is why God said everything He created was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). That means even The Tree of **Good** and **Evil** was **good**. This **tree** allowed Adam and Eve to have **free choice** just as God allows you to have a choice.

Since He is creating “**kind after kind**,” He gives you **free choice**. The mistake Adam and Eve made was God said “**don’t eat**” for (**now**) and, only, because they **were not ready** to have liberty. They did not even know they were **naked**. There are some tribes in the wilderness who live in a **naked** state, in this day and age.

In God’s “**kingdom**” this Tree of **Good** and **Evil** (**free choice**) does **not exist** because in His “**kingdom**” there is only **liberty** or **free choice** for those who have been changed to “**spirit**.”

This is what Christianity is **all about**. You are “**doulos**” which in the Greek means “**slaves to Christ to the death**.” But, only when you, of your own desire, **choose to remain faithful** to become like Jesus and, then, receive **liberty** in God’s “**kingdom**.” The Tree of The Knowledge of **Good** and **Evil** is **desirable**. The Tree isn’t the problem, except that it only causes you a problem when you **eat it**. You have to be “**spiritually mature**” enough, like Christ, for you to be responsible on your own.

Knowing you can do something before you are **ready to handle it** can cause **death**. Any teenager, before **living life** and having experience, may be able to **drive a car** but **not safely**. You may

get your driver's license at sixteen, but it takes years to become a good driver. Since humans decide **right** from **wrong** on their **own**, they **lack** the **skill** as to **how to live** "life" **correctly**, for their good, as well as the good of others.

It is **clear** why **God blinds** people "**spiritually**." Until, by your **free choice**, you become **slaves** to Christ and God by daily **eating** of God's "**Holy Spirit**" so you can **grow** "**spiritually**." God never **holds** you **responsible** for what **sins you** commit when you are repentant. That is what Jesus said, God manifests His "**great love**" for you as one of His "**children**."

God's Helper

Satan knows, only too well, his end. He knows he will lose in the end. How does he know? Because he has to ask God for **permission** before he can do **anything**. Why does Satan keep insisting upon his way? Simply, because, of his **ego**, he **believes he is right**. He is **blind** and growing more and more so, going **into outer darkness** with **no light**. What a conundrum. Satan is becoming completely **demonic**. Notice, what comes out of **his mouth** just before Christ's "**return**."

Revelation 16:13-14 declares that Satan, the **dragon**, who rides the **beast**, has three **unclean spirits** which come out of his **mouth**. These "**spirits**" are "**devils**." Satan, in the end, is getting his forces together to **battle** when Christ "**returns**" at Armageddon.

Now, Satan, the adversary, has become **the devil**. No longer is he **an accuser but is literally, the destroyer**. "Devil" in Greek means, "**diablo**," "a **destroyer**." His **accusing** days will be over. He knows his end is **near**. Deception is over Satan's **real ego** bearing **fruit** to destroy those who wouldn't **worship him** as a

“god.” Hate and **vengeance** or **murder** consume his **desires**. God’s “**love**” and “**vengeance**” is **mercy, justice** and **goodness**. Satan is in **outer darkness** with these three devils or destroyers (hate, vengeance and murder) coming out of **his mouth**. What are they like?

God’s “**vengeance**” is against those who have **The Mark of The Beast**, (a **lion**, a **leopard** and a **bear**). These were the most **violent of beasts**. Read *Revelation Uncovered*. With these three **evil spirits** of Satan, the world comes to the **brink of world suicide** (Mark 13:20). Jesus returns during the times of **great tribulations** (as at the **fall of Judah** in 70 A.D.) to **save His “people”** (as Mark prophesies).

Satan slides down the **slippery slope** from a **cherub**, protecting and announcing God’s “**Holiness**” to a “Satan,” who is the **adversary** or **accuser** of God’s “**people**.” He becomes a **devil** or **destroyer** of life. On this **satanic slope** when **Jesus** defeated Satan in the wilderness, Christ saw Satan cast down, out of God’s “**court**” and was restricted to the **earth**, to become **the devil, a destroyer of life**. Peter said, “**Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary [Satan] the devil [destroyer], as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour**” (I Peter 5:8).

Now, his **sanity** is getting **more** and **more** demonic. He is falling, further, into insanity because his rule is close to its end. He is, slowly, **becoming insane**. He is like Nebuchadnezzar and must learn in the **wilderness** that God is the **only true ruler** and must understand what **holiness** and **righteousness** is!

By the time of the **end**, his mind is composed of three **demonic spirits** like a **lion**, a **leopard** and a **bear**, combined. He is **The Mark of The Beast**, in **prison** – in **outer darkness** (insane).

God's "**brilliant, gorgeous cherub**" became **Satan**, and in his fall became a **devil** and a **destroyer**. Ultimately, he becomes the most **violent** of **three beasts** and goes **completely insane** with **no wisdom** or **understanding** as to what he is doing. He is in **outer darkness**, completely.

You have just concluded **World History** from beginning to end, **The Alpha and Omega**. Prophecy is history "**to come**" during Satan's rule. You are, now, about to set on that journey from God's "**rest**" in The Garden until **you** return to God's rest, "**paradise**," in The New Heaven and The New Earth.

CHAPTER 8

IS HISTORY AN ACCIDENT?

Secularists maintain all of “world history” is an accident. All agree, religion was a great part of the peoples, tribes and nations, worldwide, from the very beginning.

Science, because it follows, only observed or experienced realities or truth, decided to take the secularist’s approach to truth. What is reality or truth in history?

Secularism

True science should, only, accept truth which is, absolutely, proven beyond a doubt. Much of what is taught in schools, throughout the world, is “**theoretical.**” It is based upon a “**hypothesis**” which seems to be true on a mathematical basis of repetition.

Some truths which are taught are, indeed, **real**, such as **gravity** upon the earth. No matter where an object is dropped from any height, it always falls downward. That is an **absolute**. The only exception would be where a **stronger force** overcomes gravity.

As to the type of science being taught, such as how the **universe** started, is pure **speculation**. There is no way to prove the hypotheses beyond **observation** and **mathematical probability**. History, generally, is presented, as an **absolute**, without hard data. Speculation is quite prevalent especially in regard to **religion**.

Faith

Faith, which is a true “**belief**,” but without human evidence, is an honest reality, that does not need human physical proof in order to believe it. Too many believe in religion, only as it is taught in their home, church or religious school. Today, much education is “**faith based**” and **taught as truth**.

When dealing with human behavior, it is known as a **personal agenda**. One’s **personal agenda** can be **true** or **untrue**. Too much education, today, is taught as **reality**, when it is really only a personal belief.

As an example, my life experience is personal. I was born and grew up in Chicago for the first 33 years of my life. It mostly covered the **time period** from the thirties to the fifties.

Once in a while, I would read an article or a book about Chicago, written by people who researched that period and, then, wrote a history about that time period. The reporter or writer may be about 35 years of age and did not even live at that time, much less ever lived in Chicago. While reading the article or book, I looked forward to reliving some of my past. To my chagrin, after reading, I wondered what city the person was talking about. Most Chicagoans of that period would wonder what research the writer did or didn’t do.

So it was, before any writing of any type was found. The question is – who wrote the **truth**?

Historians, in too many cases, when they research, come to their own agendas and write them as fact because their research didn’t have the answer. So, they simply make it up.

The Bible

The Bible is an ancient book started about 1500 B.C. This book claims to know history from the beginning. It, **also, was written from the perspective of “faith.”** I, myself, accept it as *God’s Instructional Book*. I do so, not only because of my **personal agenda**, but because the **story is so perfectly written** and fits in agreement, so well, and, yet, it has so **many human authors over thousands of years.**

The **mathematical probability** of all of these authors being in **perfect agreement** is astronomical. This is God’s **“science.”**

In **spite** of human **translations** over the centuries, since there are no originals, you can find the **true story** “is still **intact.**” This **faith** can be relied upon as a “truth,” far more, than assuming mere men, on their own, put it, all, together. It **does** take God’s **“help”** by His **“Holy Spirit,”** over years, to put the truth of the study together. As Christ said, **“Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God!”**

Read the book, *God’s Puzzle Solved* and you will prove God purposely meant *The Bible* to be a **puzzle**. Using many authors or scribes, over many years, guarantees it is **“a puzzle.”**

Amazingly, when you put it together, with God’s **“help,”** of course, it makes for **perfect understanding**. Satan’s **“image,”** in *The Bible*, covers **world history** from The Garden of Eden when two people began their existence to this present time. It continues in **prophecy** until God’s **“kingdom”** will come in The New Heaven and The New Earth. Satan’s importance in biblical understanding is **vital** for God’s overall **“purpose”** to **fulfill His “will.”** It is needful for you to understand Satan’s **“place”** in world history.

Satan's Role

So far, Satan began as a good top angelic being right by God's "**throne.**" He was the **protector** and **announcer** of **God's "holiness."** It isn't that God needs any **protection**, but to **protect** those coming to Him and **not being destroyed** by His "**presence,**" because **God is a flaming fire** (Hebrews 12).

God, then, allows this **great cherub** to become **Satan** or an **adversary** as a District Attorney in **God's "court."** Because of Satan's **brilliance**, he becomes the **devil** or the **destroyer**. In a sense, he becomes so proficient at accusing or indicting people, because his intent is to **destroy them**. Ultimately, his ego takes over and he becomes completely **violent** like a **lion, leopard** and a **bear combined – The Mark of The Beast**.

God's wonderful "**plan of love**" for His Creation unfolds as you start from the **beginning of human history** in **The Garden of Eden** to the time which, inevitably, will unfold before your eyes.

CHAPTER 9

SATAN, THE SNAKE

Everything in God's "Garden of Eden" was "very good" (Genesis 1:31). At this point, before Satan lied to Eve, everything was okay. But, when Eve sinned by eating the fruit and Adam followed, they, all, including Satan became sinners.

From this act, Satan fell from his lofty position and was made a snake or deceiver. No longer, was he merely, testing, but actually was an accuser, (falsely or not) to all generations of God's "people." When all three sinned, God, then, had to give penalties to each of them.

Satan's New Job

Because Eve was deceived, she becomes **subject** to Adam. Adam following her, must, henceforth, care for her. Satan's **new responsibility** is given by God. He is, then, to be a **snake** or **deceiver**. Jesus said Satan was a **liar from the beginning** (John 8:44). God said to Satan, since you want to **lie**, then, a **liar** or **deceiver** you will be.

Satan was a **false** District Attorney in God's "**court**." Satan judges people by **appearance** without **the necessity of proof**. Satan judges **basically** God's "**people**." He was a **snake** or **deceiver** biting people at their heels. He was, always, mindful of those who held to the truth. Satan would, finally, have the loss of **his herd**

in the end. That is Satan's new role as was **appointed** by God. Now, Satan is the lowest of **all beasts** (John 8:4), **crawling on his stomach** and he has become **God's "false accuser."**

Satan, The God Of This World

Adam and Eve's son, Cain becomes a murderer of his brother, Abel. Cain follows Satan's "image" and with Seth as Abel's replacement, the population of The World divides in half. Seth and his children, "**Call upon the name of the Lord**" (Genesis 4:26). The word "call" in Hebrew is "**quarais**" meaning "**to proclaim, preach and seek.**" Cain's children chose to build their own human society as pagans, without God.

Genesis 5 lists some of Seth's children who were prophets and preachers, as Enoch, who was a prophet (Jude 14). Noah was the eighth "**preacher of righteousness**" (II Peter 2:5). This was how God had *The Gospel* preached till Christ came (Hebrews 1:1-3).

Before the **flood**, Peter wrote that "**the world**" had God's "**Prophets**" speak the **truth** as led by God's "**Holy Spirit.**" *The Gospel of Christ* was proclaimed and prophesied by Enoch. "**The Lord comes with ten thousands of his saints**" (Jude 14). So, The Messiah was proclaimed by Enoch in his day. The pre-flood "**world**" knew of the coming of **the promised seed**, Jesus, The Christ, God's "**own Son.**"

Satan, "the deceiver," had **false** teachers, pretending they, too, are God's "**prophets**" among the peoples of each generation (II Peter 2:1). These false preachers, in Noah's day, knew the **true gospel** as being preached by Enoch, Noah and others but they **perverted the truth** (II Peter 2:2). *The Gospel of Christ* was being **twisted** and, actually, made to confuse and led to evilness.

This is what Paul said occurred, “**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness**” (Romans 1:18). Paul and Peter were in agreement. Even though *The Gospel of Christ* was preached, in truth, before The Noachian Flood, **false prophets** proclaimed a **false gospel** – then, as it is preached, today. Peter warns about those who knew **the truth** but held it in “**unrighteousness.**” They deceived **many** and made a **career (merchandise)** out of “**the truth.**” Finally, God’s “**wrath**” claimed all their lives in “the flood” because **the world** became evil (Genesis 6:5-8). God stopped “**world suicide.**”

Satan, the snake, as a deceiver thought he was winning. He had **fooled** the world before Noah. The **flood** was their baptism so they could look to the **last resurrection** (II Peter 2:9).

Historical Counterfeit

God instructed Moses to write *The Torah* about 1500 B.C. to witness the history of **the world** from its very beginning; until Israel became God’s “**people**” under The Mosaic Administration along with *The Old Covenant* which was added to *The Torah*. Many other written historical writings come on “**the world’s scene**” by the findings of archeologists. A real quandary was developing. Who is to be believed? What is **the truth**?

With archeology entering “**the world’s view of education as truth,**” a big decision was about to be made. Who holds reality? Which writings are to be followed and proposed to be **true science**? Does archeology determine truth? You are about to see how archeology renders **truth** in the name of science.

The Apostle Paul warned Timothy about the false **science** of his

day (I Timothy 6:20). “**Science**” in Greek is “gnosis” which means, “**knowledge or truth.**” Science, today, is held in high **esteem** as **truth**, but there is a great problem. Science or knowledge of **the truth** is dependent upon human **observation** in **relationship** to **mathematical probability**. That data or information is taken and, then, **judgments are rendered** by “**human interpretation.**”

In some cases, what one might call “**pure science**” or “**real absolute information**” isn’t always possible. Technological discoveries are proven to be so, by mathematical solutions and are considered true. There are **no variables**. From this science, you are able to make cell calls, use computers, watch TV, etc. Science which cannot be absolutely true, has what is called, “**variables!**” As long as you do not have all the **variables possible**, their study or **discipline** cannot be a **pure science** as **true knowledge** without knowing all variables or options.

“**Variables**” are options which apply in science as other possibilities of **truth**. As long as, “**all possibilities**” cannot be proven to apply to the science being postulated (a hypothesis, such as **evolution**) its conclusions cannot be construed as true **knowledge** or **science**. They can only be **taught as “theory”** or “a possibility.” Too bad our educational systems aren’t honorable enough to teach **all variables** or possible options and, instead, they only have a hypothesis (guess) or theory (possibility).

You are going to **discover** that **Satan counterfeits every system of truth**, whether **science, religion, commerce, social justice** or any attempt by **humanity** to seek reality or **truth, outside of God**. You will cover **world history** in the light of human efforts along with God’s Holy, **righteous “type of government.”** All knowledge requires **faith** or **belief**, whether it is **achieved by human effort** or through **God’s “revelation.”**

Humanity has an **enemy**. This enemy is Satan, who as a lion, **pounces** upon anyone who attempts to find **knowledge** or **truth**. He is most interested in those who leave “**the world’s false type**” **of the truth** and through **faith**, choose to follow God and Christ and their “**righteousness.**”

Satan is the **world’s best counterfeiter** and his mission is to deceive you by any evil method possible. He is trying to get people to worship him as “a god” just as he tried with Christ, but **failed!**

CHAPTER 10

TRUTH INTO UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

In the beginning, “truth” was given by God. When those who were on their own, without God, found themselves helpless and to survive, had to build a way of life by human effort and human intelligence.

It was their own ideas of what was “right” and what was “wrong.” One such group were those associated with Cain who were cast out of Eden. Cain and all his progeny were definitely on their own.

Two Choices

By these human efforts, they first learned crafts, manufactured some of them and, then, built towns and cities (Genesis 3 and 4). They grew into tribes and nations. Pagans, when left to themselves, struggled for survival, as any animal. One advantage they had, was their human creative power. “The World” was divided between those without God, but still had a “**fragment**” of **knowledge** of God from Cain. That is why Lamech, from Cain’s family, said if Cain was forgiven of his sin then, he, Lamech should be forgiven 70 X 7.

Religion was prevalent, “without God,” as well as, those “with God.” It was merely a matter of choosing which Preacher a person wanted to believe. Pretty much as it is today! So, there are

two groups of people – those who called upon God by His authority and those who were left to fend for themselves. Both started with God's "**truth**" as revealed by God (through Cain and Abel). Both understood **The Gospel** and **The Priesthood**.

Two Ways

The children of Seth followed God and His "**righteousness.**" Cain's progeny, knowing the truth from Cain, instead, decided to develop their "**own human ways**" which led to **unrighteousness**. In each case, they both had a **Priesthood**, a system of worshipping God with **sacrifices** just as Cain and Abel did. Seth's children followed God while Cain's family started to worship the creation instead of The Creator, which led them into **unrighteousness**.

Two Mysteries

Can you find the truth of "**world history?**" Because there is no proof, forthcoming, from those ancient times, future historians were left in a quandary. After Noah, the flood washed away much of pre-flood evidence. Also, at the time of Peleg, after the flood, God divided the nations and arranged for their individual inheritance (Genesis 11:8). In fact, there has been many worldwide changes over the period of mankind's occupation. The book, *Ages in Chaos*, reveals the earth has suffered much trauma.

Humanity, with his violent nature to struggle for survival, over the centuries has, also, contributed a great loss of ancient history. The little that remains, causes archeology a great dilemma. It has taken centuries for humanity to discern the past, accurately. There isn't a plethora of proof leaving archeologists and historians much room for interpretation. *The Bible* discloses two unknown **great mysteries** in the world.

The Mystery Of God

In Ephesians 1:1-9 God declares His **“purpose”** for His **“saints”** who have been **faithful**. God’s **“will”** has been pre-determined for all mankind to, eventually, become **“Holy”** and **“perfect”** without blame in God’s **“love.”** **“Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has hath purposed in himself”** (Ephesians 1:9). The Greek word **“musterion”** for **“mystery”** signifies **“being sacred and locked up”** or **“one must search to unlock its secret.”** How many are going to **attempt to discover the truth of this mystery** and, yet, will not understand it? Only a few find it. They are God’s **“saints”** who are **“the faithful.”** Considering the entire world, only a relatively few are to discover **“the truth of life.”**

In Colossians 1:26-27 God gives you the answer, **“Even the mystery which has been hid from ages [beginning] and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints.”** All the way from Cain and Abel’s day, the real truth has been hidden **from the world**. **“To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory [doxa] of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory”** (Colossians 1:27). Read the free book, *Christ In You*, for more details. In the **entire world** only a select group or **remnant of Israel** and **“the world”** will know and understand this **mystery**. Read, *God’s Will*, to understand God’s **“complete plan”** for you. This leaves the **majority of humanity, “the world”** in the **dark**. Peter tells you the world is held in **darkness** (II Peter 1:19) by **false preachers** and Prophets. Read all of II Peter 2. The stage is set, those **“few”** in the world are the only ones who understand God’s **“will”** and **“purpose”** are resurrected in the **first resurrection**. The **rest of the world** will not understand this wonderful **Mystery of God** and His **“will”** for the **last days or resurrection**. In John 9:41 it is

God's "love" which allows them to **be blind** so their **sins** will **not** be held **against them** in The White Throne Judgment. Since this is God's "**purpose**" to have the world **blinded** to His "**truth**," you are about to discover how your Father brings it to pass.

Mystery Babylon

Just before Christ returns, an angel cries out that **Babylon, The Great is fallen** (Revelation 18:2-3). Who is **Babylon, The Great**? She is a **whore** who fornicates **with the** entire world **by making the** world drunk with the wine of her fornication. This is what is written on her forehead, "**MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**" (Revelation 17:5). Read the rest of *The Book of Revelation* covering world history according to God's "**truth**" (from ancient times with The Birth of Babylon until The Image of Babylon fostered by the great dragon, Satan, and his "image"). Satan's "image" has prevailed the earth from The Time of Adam and Eve in The Garden to these last days.

World history, as it is written, along with archeology and *The Bible* **declares** mankind lives in **Satan's world** from the **beginning** to this **present day**. It will only "end" (The End Time) **when** Christ returns to **save the world** from **world suicide** (I John 4:14)! Mankind and The World began in **The Garden of Eden**. Adam and Eve were in **God's "rest," The Kingdom of God**. With Satan as "the god" of **this world** (II Corinthians 4:4), **his image** continues until **The End of Days** of mankind's rule. God bestowed His "**love**" upon humanity from the time of The Garden where everything, was very good (Genesis 1:31), to the ultimate destruction of the world which will be burning with violence. In the end, God will win **when Christ returns to save the world**.

CHAPTER 11

THE PREHISTORIC WORLD

Jesus said, “You shall know a tree by its fruits.” Paul said The Tree of Life brings forth the fruits of God’s “Holy Spirit” such as joy, peace, patience and, ultimately, love. The Tree of Good and Evil (Satan’s system by deception) was designed to produce evil. Mankind’s effort, without God’s “help” and His “Holy Spirit,” had free choice to be good or evil or a combination of both.

Mankind, throughout world history, always, had a choice. Which system did the world follow? History has shown you Satan has deceived the world to follow “his image,” without exception.

Truth Of The World’s History

From ancient history to this present day, you find there is no theme tying in “**the history of the world**” from a beginning to this present time. History taught in today’s educational institutions is merely a haphazard record of human events.

There is no purpose to historical educational teaching. Archeology and history constantly change as new findings are found.

Without God, humanity is left to itself because you can, only, observe what you learn and there are always too many unknown variables. The best you can do is to have theories or suppositions.

Unwise Choices

World history has two mysteries – one is God’s “**mystery**” and the other – Satan’s “**mystery.**” These are your choices of the **two trees** in **The Garden of Eden**. You will see you keep choosing the **wrong tree** and the world has shown the results – **of violence**, with very little times of peace or rest.

The **evidence** found from ancient times, in archeology and its **written** history, has always given mankind a choice. Each time, whether the proof reveals a God or **no God**, humanity has preferred not to think of God when explaining **reality**. This, in this educational environment, humans continually choose Babylon and that choice causes nothing but **confusion**.

Ancient Writing

Humans seeking historical **truth** have been unearthing past worlds for hundreds of years. The educational discipline is known as **archeology** or a study about **ancient times**, through digging in the earth, to get to know their history. They will find from “**science of the ancients**” they, always, tend to choose the same path even though **evidence** gives them different options by the very educational disciplines they choose to believe.

Since God in *The Bible* discloses there are **two** historical mysteries to **truth**, this book will present both mysteries.

The more antiquated “**a writing**” tends to be, the greater historical weight is placed upon the oldest information found. The human reasoning is, since it is **older**, it is probably more accurate. Notice the word “probably” doesn’t necessarily **equate** to being **true**. Nevertheless, this is a foundational premise for archeologi-

cal and historical findings which is called **truth**. That is how history is learned in “**schools of learning**.” Fortunately, there are some, today, who doubt this basic premise – when it is “**older**,” it may not be more accurate. You are about to **uncover** two paths of truth. One disclosed by human **logic** and the other by God. In the end, “**the truth**” becomes apparent. The fruits of these **two trees** will uncover **the truth**.

The oldest writings found, to date, are from The Sumerians. These prehistoric people date back to 4000 B.C. through archeology and their writings. They are “the ancients of the past” who have no known family tie to The Semitic, Indo-European or Hametic inhabitants. They seem to be unique in themselves but predate all other known humans.

They settled in the area known as The Mesopotamian Region. “Mesopotamia” merely means “the area between the two **great rivers** (The Tigris and Euphrates).” These two rivers happened to be mentioned in The Garden of Eden in *The Bible*. Because of this, there is much speculation about the location of The Garden of Eden. Some believe the location was the southern estuary of these rivers near The Persian Gulf.

The Sumerians’ writings were the earliest to be found and were in “**the cuneiform style**.” An alphabet had not, as yet, been developed. “Cuneiform” is “a writing style inaugurating syllables” but no alphabet for script. The writings goes back to pictographic origins much like hieroglyphics in Egypt, but evolved into cuneiform from its writing instruments. They used “reeds” for pens. By cutting the end, it formed a **wedge**. This wedge made it impossible to make circles or curves. Only straight lines were possible, like a pyramid with three straight lines and formed a **wedge** as their stylus writing tool.

These figures took on syllables as conveying human thoughts from the earlier pictographs. These cuneiform writings are the earliest found in history. Because of being first, Sumerian writings are looked upon as **mankind's first historical evidence of civilized human existence.**

The Great Guess

Since Israel, as a nation, had no writings until 2,000 to 1,500 years later, it is determined that *The Bible* copied the **history** of the creation story, the flood and **The Law** from The Sumerians who predated them. Wow! What a historical leap. The possibility that *The Bible* was inspired by God's "**Holy Spirit**" had never been considered.

Israel, as a nation, did not have any earlier writings because the children from Abraham through his son, Isaac, didn't even become a nation until they were in Egypt around 1500 B.C. Historians certainly chose Sumerian "**writings**" as truth over *The Bible*. Just because The Sumerian "writings" were "far more ancient" **does not** prove *The Bible Story* wasn't accurate concerning the creation and the history of humanity. It gets worse. What a leap has been taken by historians and archeologists.

After the downfall of The Sumerians by Sargon I, who was probably an Amorite, a Semitic group of people who came from the east and started The Babylonian Empire. Under The Babylonian Nation, Gilgamesh, a great, legendary "**king**," is in a great writing called *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, containing some great historical writings. There's one about **The Creation Story** and **The World Flood** and all **The Laws**.

The Torah "accounts" in *The Bible* were very similar, but not ex-

actly the same as many who believe in reference to The Law of Moses. Historians chose to call them “**myths.**” Again, negating their own premise and, therefore, looking for human logic, which only ended with “**a guess.**” They assumed a lot of it was myth and since the epic was first, they assumed Moses copied *The Torah Creation Story* and flood account from The Gilgamesh “**writings**” as well as, perhaps, other clay tablets.

Babylonian King, Hammurabi, had **laws** very similar to *The Ten Commandments*. Again, they assumed Moses copied them from The Babylonians, since Hammurabi’s “writings” were first.

Can you imagine using such **logic** to accept historical truth upon such weak principles? This is **not science**. It even gets worse. You need to cover the ancient writings of The Sumerians to, once again, see how similar both **the biblical** and Sumerian writings actually were.

CHAPTER 12

SUMERIANS AND GENESIS

Paleontology, the study of ancient history, states the oldest known civilization comes from Mesopotamia. The earliest tribes were The Sumerians. They go as far back as 4000 B.C. Comparing the account in Genesis along with archeological findings, reveals a tremendous amount of similarities. What is the truth?

Sumerians

The name “Sumerians” was given to them by their enemies. They were called “**The Black Headed People.**” Amazingly, their language has no roots from other known peoples such as Semitic, Indo-Europeans or Hamitic. From *The Genesis account*, this could be significant.

They were first noted in Southern Mesopotamia living in the marshy, fertile region at the estuaries of The Tigris and Euphrates Rivers. Interestingly, in the beginning their source of food and survival was from hunting because of the abundant game and fishing. It was years later, they became farmers tilling the soil and raising livestock. This change came about because they dug canals (like the country of Holland) for an expanded food source. With the canals, came fertile soil for agriculture.

Their early villages became sizeable “city/states.” In their beginnings, as hunters, they were nomadic and wandered as far south as

Egypt and Africa. You will see these are all in line with pre-flood times in *The Book of Genesis* (Genesis 10).

City/states were quite autonomous because enlarging their borders in those beginning years, made it difficult to maintain armies at a distance since horses, as yet, were not used.

The **city centers** always had a large temple for “religious worship” to their poly gods. Each city had their own “**gods.**” Some were human and others were not. It all depended upon their past history. What is interesting, is the genesis of humanity understood there was a “god” or “gods” from the very first discoveries, as well as, established systems of worship. Religion or the worship of a god, was from the very beginning.

The leader of the community was a priest/king just as Melchizedek who met Abraham. How did **early man** start with the concept of such a sophisticated and in some cases, a well-formed religious mystical system? In fact, all city life was deeply involved in their ritualism. All these questions need “**reasonable**” and “**logical answers.**” It is as though God and religion began right from the inception of the original humans. Theology was **full blown** from the very beginning.

From the King/Priest there were the nobles, priests and scribes who were the scholars, as well as business people, working citizens and, even, slaves. This highly formalized society was so well organized from its earliest period; it was as if someone ordered it from its beginning.

Listen to the rationale of paleontology as how this all came about. Since so much **seemed like a myth** it was, therefore, reasoned that societies struggling for survival from the horrendous human

conditions, were forced to dream up this **entire** system of “gods.” These were “gods” who had to be **appeased** to explain the dilemma of living this life. Wow! This concept comes from the **top educational institutions, worldwide**, from the scholars of well-known universities.

Universities should have, at least, postulated a variety of possibilities. Thankfully, there are some educators starting to question the theories of historians and archeologists. Even those who do not believe in a God should be able to come up with more logical conclusions. The damage has been done. Do you realize **the entire educational system**, worldwide, from the past thousands of years bought hook, line and sinker all these theories? It is so, especially, in the prior two to three centuries which caused most of the harm.

Today, they still reason “how foolish,” when religions would put people to **death**, if they didn’t accept the **theory** that the **earth was flat**. Of course, it was understandable since the capabilities of observation, in those days, were only by “**eye sight**.” When anyone observed the horizon it looked **flat** and, even, at one point was believed you could fall off the earth. On and on it goes. It is understandable why humanity thought, (the way they did) because it was the, only, reality or data they had up to that time. The **error** was not the assumptions made, but the **rigid belief** that they had **the truth**. It is built into human nature to be “**right**.” Although, most religions are based upon **faith**, some are too dogmatic.

Agendas

The human dilemma is to, always, believe he/she is, usually, “right” (Proverbs 18:1-2). It states it is mankind’s **desires** which causes loss of rational reasoning and never acquires **wisdom**

and **understanding**. This is, exactly, how Eve got into trouble in choosing to eat from **The Tree of Good and Evil**. However, Satan was right there urging her on. Notice, what Eve saw or **observed**, “**And when the woman saw [observed] that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make *one* wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat**” (Genesis 3:6).

The word “chamad” in the Hebrew for “**desire**” means “**intense coveting**” or “**not to be without.**” Eve had an **addiction for it**. That is why “**coveting**” is covered in *The Ten Commandments*. Drugs, food, cars, or whatever you cannot be **without**, is, then, a “**desire**” you covet. Have you wanted to buy something, so badly, but funds were not available? Then, when you had the funds, you couldn't remember what it was you wanted so badly?

All “**sense of reason**” **dies**. Wisdom and **logic** vanishes because of **mankind's deep desires**. Humanity reacts irrationally because **everyone must have what they want**. That is the **cause of crime**, even, to the point of murder.

Your historical interpretations are so distorted because of the **way you choose to see things**. That is why **repentance** is so necessary for God to reveal **truth to you**. Humans should not be **so sure to trust themselves**. That is why there are so many **religious denominations** in the **world**. But, you must be **right** and have **the truth**.

This way of human **logic infects** all and that is why God wants you to be **like a little child** – teachable or reasonable. If, only, you would **repent** or at least say, “I don't know.” Instead, you are proud to be siding with theories or putting your trust in those

(scholars or scientists) who, only, pretend to affirm false assumptions. This causes humanity to be left to themselves. All aspects of human existence has been **infected** with “the **disease** of human **desire**.” Human desire is the feeling when you have 10% of true facts, but by accepting 90% of unproven theories, you still feel you are so sure of your thinking. But, it is only your personal agenda you defend!

So, it is with history, archeology and paleontology. You are going to see there are two studies or views of world history from the earliest known tribe, The Sumerians – to this present day. One, reflects Satan’s “**image**” and also, reflects man-made gods as revealed in *The Bible*. It is up to you to choose. How will you know? Christ already told you, “**You shall know them by their fruits**” (Matthew 7:16). World history from the time of Sumeria reveals the fruits. The fruits are “love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith and meekness,” although there will, always, be grief, suffering, pain and self-suicide. The choice is yours. You can choose God’s “**way**” – which “carries blessings” or Satan’s “**way**” – which produces or “brings curses.”

CHAPTER 13

THE SONS OF GOD

**“The Sons of God saw the daughters of men and took wives of which they chose” (Genesis 6:2).
Who are these Sons of God?**

Scholars And Theologians

The world’s **scholars** and **theologians** have come up with three different theories to answer the question of who these “**Sons**” of **God** were. Early scholars believe that the Sons of God in Genesis 6:2 are angels. The reason is in Job it mentions angels are Sons of God, therefore, the daughters of men marrying the Sons of God, are angels. The “**second school of thought**” was that The “**Sons**” of God were the children of Abel, such as Enos to Noah, who married Cain’s daughters. Cain departed from God so his children were **without God**. The Jewish Rabbis agree with this idea or theory. The latest “**conservative scholars view**” is these “**Sons**” of **God** are an **order of divine kings**, as archeological “**mythology**” has uncovered. The latter two concepts are in agreement with ancient Sumerian’s history and *scripture*. Now, to find the origin of **The Trinity** and **polytheism** or **many gods**.

Lucifer, The Light Bringer

Referring to The King of Babylon as **Lucifer** or Satan, it reads that **Lucifer’s** ultimate purpose is to be **like God**, who is in heaven (Isaiah 14:1-4). By the way, this is God’s predestined “**plan**.” God’s “**purpose**” is to make Christians His “**adopted children**,”

so they could become **Holy** and blameless like **Him** (Ephesians 1:4-6). You are to become **like God**. That is **The Plan of Salvation** – *The Gospel* by **Jesus Christ**! That is why **Lucifer** said he is to be **like “god.”** It is the reason God made man in **His “image”** (Genesis 1:26). The Latin word “**Lucifer**” meaning “**the bright and morning star**” was translated by a Catholic monk in The Fourth Century A.D. In Hebrew, the word is “**Heylale**” meaning “**the bright and morning star.**” Who is this “the morning star” to appear in the morning as Christ is called in Revelation 22:16? Malachi 4:2 prophesies it is the **sun**, “**the morning light bringer**” which will come from The East when Jesus **returns** to bring **righteousness** or **God’s “kingdom”** to **this earth**.

First Gospel Preached

It was Satan’s job, as the **cherub**, posing as a snake, who preached **God’s “True Gospel”** to Eve. You are about to discover Genesis 1 to Genesis 11 reveals **God’s “Plan of Salvation”** (Ezekiel 28). Ezekiel testifies that The King of Tyre is ruled by God’s “**cherub**,” who was in **The Garden of Eden**. Satan’s “**intent**” is to be, not **God**, but just like “a god” who is worshipped. Why? Because Satan’s excellent **wisdom** was perverted by his **ego** and a wrong **heart** so he could get his desires fulfilled. Read the account of **Satan** being a liar and a deceiver, preaching a different **salvation** or *God’s Gospel* to Eve (Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). Lucifer, “**Heylale**” is “the **proclaimer of *The Gospel*.**” Satan referred to his “**tabrets**” as “**cymbals**,” “**very loud**” and his “**pipes**” are “**proclaimers**” in Hebrew (Ezekiel 28). Satan was to preach *The Gospel of Christ*, **The Light of The World** to all men (John 1) just like **the sun** (Malachi 4). Read what he preached to Eve.

The serpent known as the **snake dragon**, was **very subtle**, very **tricky** and a, believable, deceiver. After Eve told Satan if she so

much as **touches the fruit**, let alone eats it, she would die. Satan did not dwell on her question concerning the **tree**. Instead, he merely said, “**You shall not surely die.**” Of course not – all she had to do was go to **The Tree of Life** and she would have **lived forever**, which is why he continued to **deceive her** (Genesis 3). Satan said, “**God doth know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil**” (Genesis 3:5).

Satan knew she, only, had to eat of **The Tree of Life** and she would, then, be as “**a god**,” deciding for herself what is **good** and **evil**. Later, after she ate the fruit, Adam, also, followed her. This was Satan’s beginning “**plan**” to create **Babylon** or **confusion**. This was Satan’s purpose to confuse by originating **polytheism** – worshipping many **gods**. **The Trinity originated** in The Garden of Eden. The three gods were **Adam, Eve** and **Satan**. In Sumarian **history**, Adam is called **Anu** or **An**, Eve is **Ae** and Satan is **Bel**. In Egyptian history, they are called **Horas, Issis** and **Osirus**. Every ethnic group has their **trinity** of gods, but each differing by their name according to their native **tongue**. In Egyptian history, certain nations as **Egypt, Assyria** and **Babylon** are known as **sacred** because they possessed this mystery of **The Trinity**. Adam was “**Christ, the light bringer**” or “**type of Jesus**” (Romans 5:14). Eve, as **Ae, Ishtar** or **Easter** in Egyptian, **The Queen of Heaven**, is **The Mother of All** or, “all living” and Satan is **Bel** or **Baal** in *The Bible* as **The God of Fertility**. Now, for a **significant spiritual truth**.

Adam and Eve after they were created, did not even know they were **naked**, but, after eating the fruit, were aware of their **sexuality** (Genesis 3:7). In Genesis 2:25, Adam and Eve were not ashamed of their nakedness. They were as “babes,” and innocent as children.

Everything in The Garden, according to God, **“was very good”** (Genesis 1:31), even The Tree of Good and Evil. The reason God did not want them to eat of The Tree of Good and Evil was because they weren't **“spiritually” mature enough**. Salvation is a **process** and, therefore, they should have been eating of The Tree of Life, **God's “glory”** and **“Holy Spirit.”** The Holy Spirit would give them “love” which would have developed a sound mind with God's **“power”** (II Timothy 1:7). Then, they could have handled “freedom” or **“liberty”** to **choose wisely**.

Prophecy And Righteousness

Satan had established **The Trinity** or **many gods** right from **The Garden of Eden**. God had to expel them from The Tree of Life, lest they eat from the other tree and live forever and, actually, be like **“a god.”** Satan was ready to teach them reproduction “his way.” When Adam hid from God, He asked Adam why he was hiding. Adam replied, **“I was naked; and I hid myself”** (Genesis 3:10). God asked, **“Who told you that you were naked”** (Genesis 3:11)? God, at first, did not admonish Adam because he ate from the **tree**. In Hebrew, the word **“told”** actually means **“to be taught.”** Only Satan, The God of Fertility, instructed (told) Adam and Eve about **sex**.

Adam and Eve, who could have eaten from The Tree of Life (Salvation), are cast out of The Garden. They lost “the game of life” and must, from then on, have to survive by their own efforts. Satan now, became an **adversary** and will be constantly biting at their heels, as well as the heels of their offspring. Satan has become humanity's **snake** or deceiver and will, ultimately, be **destroyed** by Adam and Eve's **“seed”** – Christ (Genesis 3:15). The stage is set for God's **“purpose”** and **“plan”** to be put into motion. The question to answer is, “Who are **The Sons of God** who corrupted

themselves by **marrying The Daughters of Men?**” After Cain killed Abel, he is removed from Eden (a paradise or a pleasant land) and had to go to **Nod**, a land of **wandering** or **wilderness**. In Sumerian history, in **The Epic of Gilgamesh**, a **legendary, divine** god/king is revealed. Just as Cain felt his punishment was **greater** than he could **bear**, it was, also, how **Gilgamesh** felt (Genesis 4:13). Gilgamesh, who was a **King/Priest** in **Uruk** (or **Ereck**) in Babylon, spent his life in the **forest** or **wilderness**, trying to find **eternal life**. In the end of the **epic**, he defeats many gods, but is, finally, **killed** himself. This **history** is exactly what Cain’s life was after he left **Eden, The Land of Pleasantness**.

Cain’s Offspring

The next event is when Abel is replaced by **Seth**, who had a son named **Enos**. Now, for a surprise. In Hebrew, “**Enos**” means “**one who is named after The Lord.**” Just as Jacob’s name was changed to “**Israel**” meaning “**God’s people.**” Enos was one of **The “Sons” of God** and, therefore, from then on, **men** or “**Sons” of God** called upon the **name** or **authority of God**. Cain’s offspring were “**The Children of Men,**” never calling on God’s “**name**” or “**authority.**” This is history and scriptures showing you who The Sons of God and **The Daughters of Men** were. The Sons of God were Seth and his progeny. In time, they intermingled and married until God’s “**truth**” was lost and with only Noah preaching the **truth of righteousness**. God, therefore, stopped their **evil imaginations of violence**, to commit total **suicide** and flooded the world (Noah and his family, excepted). How did Noah preach **righteousness** in prophecy?

CHAPTER 14

THE GOSPEL PREACHED

Satan deceived Adam and Eve and, eventually, the children of Cain. Cain's children inter-married with the children of Seth, The "Sons" of God, who followed The True God. Because of intermarriage, *The Gospel* began to get lost, except through the lineage of Noah. The pre-flood world believed in The Trinity (three gods) Adam, Eve and Satan. Satan was the god of that world. Through The Trinity, the world ended up a mountain full of many gods.

The Gospel In Psalms

Did you know King David knew *The Gospel of Salvation*? David sang that the "earth" belongs to God and "everything in it!" The earth is where God chooses to dwell (Psalm 24:1-6). That is why *The Bible* ends in Revelation 21 and 22, with God's "house" in New Jerusalem. Jerusalem, The City of Peace, is on seven mountains.

Psalm 24:3 asks the question, "Who shall ascend into the hill of The Lord or who shall stand in His Holy Place?" Clearly, God will dwell on The New Earth, but His "temple" and where you will worship Him, is on a hill where His "Holy Place" is. The word in Hebrew for "ascend" is "a stairway" or "a ladder." The question asked is, "Who is to climb that ladder to God's "temple," The Holy Place?" David concludes The Plan of Salvation

by revealing how a person must become before they can enter **God's "kingdom."** Psalm 24:4-6 describes, it is "**only those**" with **clean hands** (their works) and a **pure heart** (right desires), not being a **liar** and not seeking **vanity** (in their life). They must be **Holy, like God**. Then, the **gift given** is a **blessing** from God with **The Gift of God's "righteousness"** with **Salvation!** That is *The Gospel*. Then, David concludes by singing while ascending God's "**hill**" to God's "**temple**" which is through Jacob or **Israel, God's "people."** This *Gospel of Salvation* was preached from the beginning, right from Eden, by the children of Seth through **Enos**.

Satan preached a deceitful **false gospel** to Adam and Eve, **which ended up with three gods – Adam, Eve and Satan**. Any **images** of the gods of Egypt and China have **Satan**, as a **snake** or **dragon** as its foundation, followed by **Anu** and **Ea**, which is **Adam** and **Eve**, The Queen of Heaven, **The Mother of All Living**.

Now, *The True Gospel of Christ*, **The Promised Seed** is **proclaimed**. It is written that **Enoch** was the **seventh person** to **prophecy** when Christ comes, He will be coming with **ten thousands of His "saints"** (Jude 14). As previously said, *The Book of Enoch* is filled with **The Return of The Messiah**. Who are **The Seven Prophets** in this **prophecy**?

This *Gospel* was preached when Abel was replaced by Seth. Those Prophets are listed in Genesis 5. Listed in their order, **first** was **Adam**, who was a "**Son**" of God, like God. Then **Seth**, who replaced Abel, was **second**. **Enos**, who had God's "**name**" or "**authority**," was **third**. **Cainan**, the **fourth**, followed by **Mahalaleel**, the **fifth**, followed by **Jared**, the **sixth** and then, the **seventh Prophet** was **Enoch**. These were the **seven** who prophesied *The Gospel of The Messiah*. But, there are more. II Peter

2:5, declares that Noah was **The Eighth Preacher of Righteousness**. This seems to present a problem, since in Genesis 5, from Adam to Noah, ten are listed. Is Noah **The Eighth Preacher of Righteousness**? Yes, he is. Adam knew *The Gospel* in prophecy from the time of **The Garden**, stated by God in Genesis 3:15. From Adam to Enoch, the prophecy was preached concerning The Messiah. How does Noah become **The Eighth Preacher of Righteousness**?

It was from Enos, that God's "sons," (named after God), called upon Him. Counting from **Enos** to **Noah** makes **eight**. God preached **righteousness** from **Enos** to **Noah** and, then, the flood came. The list of the **eight** is as follows: Enos, Cainan, Mahalaleel, Jared, Enoch, Methuselah, Lamech and **the eighth**, Noah. There you have *The Gospel*, first, falsely preached by Satan with polytheism, to the true prophecy, to **Enoch**, the "**righteousness**" from **Enos** to **Noah**. What is **righteousness**? What was the **righteousness** preached by Noah?

"Righteousness" is not "**The Righteousness of The Law**" or even **Christ's "righteousness."** In Matthew 19, Jesus told the **rich man**, only **God**, had "**goodness**" and Jesus, Himself, **in the flesh**, did not. It was, only, after Jesus asked God to be given His "**glory**" which Jesus had with God before being **human**. Noah preached God's "**righteousness**" (Psalm 24:4-5). Now, another surprise. To **ascend** the **ladder** to God's Holy "**temple**," you must go through **Jacob** or **Israel**, God's "**people**" for **Salvation**.

Jacob's Ladder

Jacob was on his way to Laban's house to find a wife (Genesis 28:10-19), near a town called Luz, where he slept during the night. While asleep, he dreams about **a ladder**, which continues

up into the heavens, where God's "**house**" or "**temple**" is. Going up and down this ladder are angels who are God's "**messengers**." The angels are, there, to help you in your attempt to ascend each step. When Jacob awakens, he takes the stone he slept upon and anointed it. He states fearfully, "surely this **ladder is the stairway to heaven**," right to **The Gate of The House of God**." From that time on, the town was called "**Bethel**" which means "**God's house**" in Hebrew. Read the book by Dr. Gileadi called *Isaiah Decoded* for details. Now, one more step for you to understand "the complete" **Plan of Salvation**. Christ, who was "The Word" before becoming **human**, was now on this earth, in the **flesh** (John 1). Jesus was to be **The Light of All Men** and Jacob was replaced as **The Promised Seed**, prophesied in **The Garden**. "**And he saith unto him [Nathaniel], I say unto you, hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels [messengers] of God ascending and descending upon The Son of Man**" (John 1:51). No longer is the ladder the spiritual steps to God's "**house**," through Jacob or Israel, but by **The Messiah, Jesus**.

The Ladder Of Salvation

That completes The Ladder of Salvation. It is **not The Law of Moses** or even Christ's "**righteousness**" on earth, but God's "**Holy Goodness**," which is **a gift by grace, through faith from Him**. God will give you His "**glory**" and His "**goodness**" at **The Resurrection** (Exodus 33:18-19). **The Tower of Babel** or Babylon was a form of **Jacob's "ladder"**, but Satan **corrupted** it by those in Eden when looked to as "gods." Not only The Trinity, but all in The Land of Eden such as Cain and Abel were considered "gods" according to The Sumerians. Abel was Tammuz in *The Bible*, killed by their "god – Cain." The gods had to be placated. They were, also, known to kill each other to gain supremacy. They were violent and Genesis 6 reveals it all to you.

CHAPTER 15

SUMERIAN'S TEMPLE

Sumerian city life centered around “the temple.” A complex religious system with its priests, virgins and scribes prevailed. From the most earliest historical evidence why do you find such a sophisticated religious system? All its daily religious ritualism was known as a mystery. They followed God’s “system” which is “a mystery” and in copying, Satan created his “mystery.” Which religion did The Sumerians follow?

Ziggurats

The Sumerian Temple was called a “**ziggurat**” in their tongue. It had a mystical meaning. “**The temple**” signified “a **mountain** with a circular trail going around the mountain all the way to the **top**.” At the top, their “little god” dwelt in a Holy of Holies. Priests offered sacrifices, virgins served in **the temple** and scribes kept meticulous records, especially concerning the sky. This was “**the birth**” of Astrology.

These Priests and scribes were the originators of mathematics, such as **geometry** which they considered “**divine**.” Why? Because they viewed the **sky** or heaven as their god’s “dwelling place.” He was known as **An**, “the god of **all things**.” He created everything and because of **An** their human life existed. Remember, the ruler of this city/state preceded The **King/Priest** who, also, was over **the temple**. If under this King/Priest their life and

society prospered, they felt protected. The ruler was considered to be of divine origin or **a god**. These leaders were looked upon as two-thirds divine and one-third human.

Since, each Sumerian city/state was governed by their individual god in **the temple** with a King/Priest considered "**divine**;" each regarded their city as "holy" and therefore, possessing **the truth** or **good news** of "**their gospel**." This made each **city** highly **competitive**. This **violence** continued between cities. Fortunately, because horses were not used in war, it kept each city at bay. It was too difficult to march men great distances and at the same time to be battle-ready. That is why city walls were built to protect the city/state from attacks. In the beginning their food supplies came primarily from hunting and fishing. Obviously, heroes were those who hunted and supplied each tribe with an abundant supply of food. They became **men of renown**. As farming superceded hunting these **nomadic** tribes settled into these **city/states** with the **suburbs** outside the city walls supplying the food. Farming became, extremely, important.

Mesopotamia became, especially, desirable because of its fertile crescent enriched by The Euphrates and Tigris Rivers. Its estuary at its southern end was highly **fertile** because of the sedimentary run off with all its nutrients. Just like The Nile River in Egypt, productivity in farming depended upon the snow from the mountains in the far north and its run off and how much rain they received. Good years meant their King/Priest was divine because the gods favored the ruler. Years of drought, merely, made him all too human. Wars were constant to overthrow poor kings, as well as protect and worship divine kings. Since **An**, the sky god, created everything, such as the mountains, rivers, wind and other natural phenomena, they were, **also**, considered a "**god**." Any natural creation which had power (rivers) or were monumental such as

mountains or trees were, also, worshipped as “**gods.**” The Tree of Life was divine. They worshipped “The Tree” as “The Christmas Tree” (Jeremiah 10). There was the one divine “**god of gods**” in heaven, but, also, all His “**creation**” was considered “**gods**” as well. Believing in many gods made them “polytheistic.” It was the gods which controlled daily life in Sumeria with their divine human representatives. Because their **god**, “An,” was “the sky god,” they considered the heavens were, also, divine and ruled their daily **lives**. **Astrology** was born with the highly mathematical skills of **The Priests** and **scribes**. Now, they had to **worship all the gods**, in **heaven** and on the **earth**. Astrology ruled their daily existence according to each person’s birth date (since they reasoned **An** created everyone).

The question becomes how did The Sumerians, the most ancient known humans, have such a sophisticated system of human existence? This complex mystical “**religious order**” came about because of humanity’s need to survive. This is the premise upon which history and archeology determines all its findings. It is **far more logical**, with the diversity of the human race. Many varied systems of belief would have developed. Today, some humans are **Atheists**, **Agnostic**, **Deists**, **Christians**, **Jewish**, **Muslim** and a host of other religions including varied **philosophies**. That makes **far more sense** in such a mixed human society in the world. We have this mixture of religions because of human nature and its tendency to interpret good and evil. With the plethora of Sumerian **city/states** being kept separate from each other, it would be far more probable that they would have the same diversity of philosophies concerning human existence and giving an explanation as to why a person was born in the first place. Instead, the first human family was separated by relatively vast distances, had their personal **city/states** develop their own “**concepts of life.**” They, themselves, reasoned how it all started and why humans exist at

all. The large Mesopotamian landscape, basically, believed and structured its social system, “homogeneously.” Their **temple religion** and beliefs were extremely similar. They only varied by their distance from each other, therefore, having different “**gods**” and personal rituals which met their individual needs. Why did they even believe in **any “god?”** Why not be as **any other animal?** Finding themselves living this life and very much **alone**, it would have been just as **simple** to say, “there is **no God.**” But, this was not so, that is, according to human history. Instead of “**no god**” or some other philosophy, history shows a highly structured and sophisticated social order with “a god” or “gods” having **extremely similar religious systems.**

Today's Cultures

Amazingly, besides the ancient Sumerian cultural nations in this modern world from The Aztecs, Chinese, Indians and other nations have histories of a world flood with a family who survived and produced all the world societies.

When you face up to the evidence of archeology and history each begins with a **God** or “gods” with extremely similar circumstances as if starting from a **common “genesis”** with a **complete religious system.** It is only rational to investigate each human philosophy of **life** with personal agendas or desires and, honestly, see which is logical and makes “**the most common sense**” to be **the truth** upon which to base **their individual faith.**

Since **biblical accounts** are so homogeneous and similar with archeology and paleontology this book is written as a **biblical study** on rewriting “**world history**” from “**a scriptural point of view**” from its archeological beginnings in light of finding “**the missing pieces**” in *The Bible.*

CHAPTER 16

THE MIGHTY ONES

Satan deceived Adam and Eve into believing a false gospel, based upon The Trinity and polytheism. The “Sons” of God are found in the genealogy of Genesis 5, including Adam, who was a figure or type of Christ. Cain, as well, was ”a god” to The Sumerians and you are about ready for Satan’s “image” to include more “divine gods.” The Sumerians believed they were two-thirds divine and one-third human.

The Men Of Renown

The Bible discloses that the known world had very famous humans who were considered more than human (divine as gods) (Genesis 6:1-6). The children born from Cain’s and Seth’s line produced giants. The Hebrew word is “**Nephil**” “**a bully**” or “**tyrant**” It comes from the root “**Naphal**.” The meaning is “**to fall down**” or “**to be prostrate**.” It signifies to fall from a higher level to a **lower position**. Those in **Eden** were looked upon as “gods.” Therefore, The Sumerians regarded them as “part god” and “part human.” If they were strong as an ox, they would be symbolized as part ox and part human. They would be very much like The Sphinx in Egypt (part **lion** and part **human**). They were, indeed, exceptionally strong. Some, actually, fought an ox or a lion barehanded and when they killed a vicious animal they were considered a “god.” They earned the title of “a god” because of their strength.

These were all human giants declared to be “gods.” They were **mighty men** because they were **champions** at one skill or another. They were so strong no **man** or any manmade “god” could beat them. They are the children of Adam and Eve through Cain and Seth. How far back do they go? These men were “**old men of renown.**”

There was no one more famous than Adam, Eve, Satan, Cain or Seth. The word “**old**” in Hebrew means “**going back to a beginning.**” Time is not attached to **Olam**. One can go as far back as Adam or into the future. In this case, these **mighty** ones go back to The Garden of Eden, as well as forward in time, to The Tower of Babel. Thus, the first **eight kings** (Genesis 5) of the Sumerians were called “**gods.**”

Nimrod, The Mighty

Noah's three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth were all **mighty men** of **renown** (famous kings). Now, to concentrate on the children of **Ham**, because they were the first to rule over dynasties. These countries came to be called “**Sacred Nations.**” They were called “Sacred Nations” because they were founded by “**gods**” or “**Mighty Men of Renown.**”

Ham had a son named “**Kush**” which means “**black,**” who had a son named Nimrod. His mother, in history, was Sumerian, a white woman (Genesis 10:6-10). Nimrod was part **black** and part **white**. He built a kingdom called Babel or Babylon. He, also, built **Erech** or **Uruk**, **Accad** and **Calneh** in Shinar. This is where they built The Tower of Babel. Since it is his **kingdom**, he was **the first King/Priest of Babylon**, in **The Land of Shinar** or **Sumeria**. He, as god/king, was one of the **mighty men**. Why? Because as a **mighty hunter** or **champion** before God, he could

hunt strong beasts, lions, oxen and bear – at times, only, with his hands. According to The Sumerians, he, too, was “a god” in their eyes.

Egypt, at first, was called Mizraim by a man named Mizraim. Later, Assur began Nineveh. All these men of renown were called “**mighty men**.” Therefore, these nations became **sacred**, because “the gods” founded them. All of these nations worshipped their gods as **King/Priests** with **temples** or **ziggurats** in their **city/states**. Competition created numerous wars with great **violence**. Babel, Babylon and Egypt were ruled by Nimrod.

Nothing Will Be Restrained

Noah, Shem and Ham, as “god,” warned the people not to be like the former generations, lest they be destroyed by The One True God. Noah was a **Preacher of Righteousness**. Some feared not only The True God, but feared many other “gods.” The world and The Sumerians, were “**one**” and God did not want them to commit genocide. God was longsuffering to have everyone come to **repentance** (II Peter 3). God did not give **grace** or **mercy** until He knew a person’s **heart** was ready to accept “the truth.” God knew with their carnal hearts, they would do anything they **imagined** (Genesis 11:7). God through His great “**love**” decided it was time to **separate** the people.

First Beast

With the **fear** of the **flood** and Noah preaching “**righteousness**,” The Sumerians had built God’s “**house**” as a reminder, but they made a great **error**. The Apostle Paul, knowing the history about “**all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness**” (Romans 1:18).

In Greek, "**Godhead Theiotes**" signifies "**all of God's righteousness or divinity.**" "**The tower,**" God's "**very ladder**" or "**stairway**" to God's "**house,**" His "**temple,**" was desecrated! Paul explains it clearly in the rest of Romans 1:2-15.

They took *The Gospel* which was written in the **stars**; changed it and **created "astrology"** instead of "**astronomy.**" They **worshipped the heavenly bodies, including the sun, (Shamash)** in Babylon. Paul declares when they **knew The True God,** they refused to **glorify Him as God,** neither were thankful (for **life**). So, because of their **human imagination** and their **foolish hearts,** their **minds** lacked "**light**" and were **darkened.** The Egyptians in their **Mystery Systems** believed in **The One True God,** yet never gave **God "the glory"** but worshipped **The First Three Heads of The Beast (Babylon in Sumeria, Assur and Neo Babylon).** Read what they all did in Romans 1:23-25. They changed God's "**glory**" (God's "**righteousness**") into **The Image of Man (polytheism)** and to **birds, four-footed beasts and creeping things.**

Since the human heart is **carnal, beast-like, they worshipped humans who were like beasts (Sphinx).** They glorified **man** as, god-like, **animals.** Satan, **the snake, as a dragon,** was supreme. Notice, Paul's final statement in Romans 1:25, "**Who changed the truth of God into a lie and worshipped and served the creature more than the creator, who is blessed forever.**" The Sumerians at the top of God's "**hill,**" His "**temple**" had **multitudinous idols** (other **human gods** they **worshipped**) **were idolators.** These gods were fighters to the extent of killing each other. Then, God stopped the fighters **by confusing their tongues.**

CHAPTER 17

MYSTERY BABYLON

From The Garden of Eden to this day, everyone had and has a choice to choose God's or Satan's "way." Sadly, without God and because of human nature, too many choose Satan. As "god of this world," Satan's purpose is to blind you by thinking you already know "the truth." Throughout history all humans have been deceived.

Religion And War

Time and again it is said, "More wars start over religion than for any other reason." Satan's greatest deception is taking what is **good** and turning it to **evil**. The culprit according to *The Scriptures* is Babylon, The Great (Revelation 17:5). Babylon, The Great is, actually, a mystery which has been kept a secret in **the history of the world** and will continue to be a secret until **The Return of Christ**. **Religion is at the core of the battle**. This blindness by Satan is the **vail** to keep the world in **darkness**. Satan uses the **truth unrighteously**.

Prophecy Foretold

Just before Christ's "**return**" and God is ready to unleash the seven last plagues, the angel revealed to John, "**I will shew unto you the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters**" (Revelation 17:1). These **waters** are The Mediterranean Sea from which the world's system of Babylon sprang. This is

Christ's "**prophecy**" about His "**seven churches**" and "**the remnant**" of Israel, His "**two witnesses.**"

Today, this **prophecy** is a warning to all of God's "**people**" to be a **witness to the world** and not be part of Satan's world (**Babylon**), "**For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication with her and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies**" (Revelation 18:3). This includes all nations (with none being excluded). This includes a **world economic system** whereby the **entire world prospers**. In the Greek, "**waxed rich**" conveys "**abundance.**" Before Jesus comes, the world is **super rich**. Why? Because of Satan and The Great Whore, Babylon. Babylon makes the **world drunk** or **deceived** by thinking they, actually, "**worship**" God. In reality, they follow **Satan's "image"** and don't know it.

Observe what God warns all Christianity and Israel, "**And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her [Babylon], my people, that you be not partakers of her sins and that you receive not of her plagues**" (Revelation 18:4).

Israel and Christianity is deluded and combine themselves into a Babylonian system. God regards Jerusalem to be like Sodom and Gomorrah "**the great Babylon.**" The **world** is in **Babylon and will be in Babylon at The Messiah's "return."** This is a warning to the **world** – Israel, Christianity and Islam. These three religions are all waiting for The Messiah or a Messiah.

Are you grasping this prophecy? All "**the world's**" economics, religion, history, education, social order or nations, have accepted world ideas and are, therefore, **drunk** or **deceived**. You need to seek **the truth**, instead of being **drunk with Satan's deception**. How did this happen? When and where did history go **wrong**?

The **origin** of Babylon must be, **biblically**, investigated to see how the entire world became **entrapped** by its system. This system is completely against **God** and **His** “**way**.” You need to understand history from **God’s** “**word**” as to this **great deception**. To do so, you need to interpret history, archeology and paleontology back in The Middle Ages and, then, came The Reformation to this present **time-frame**. How did everyone get into this **mess**?

The Dragon

You are about to **unravel Satan’s great deception**. *The Bible* reveals Satan’s “**plan**” for **the world**. How can you discover Satan’s “**mystery**?” Since *The Bible* covers “**world prophecy**” and Satan is the god of this world, you merely have to compare God’s “**biblical prophecy**” to “**the world**.” “**And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard and his feet were as the feet of a bear and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat and great authority**” (Revelation 13:1). God has given you a “**prophetic puzzle**” to solve. *The Bible*, also, gives greater insight into the origin of this beast, “**And I stood upon the sand of the sea [Mediterranean] and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns and upon his horns ten crowns and upon his heads the name of blasphemy**” (Revelation 13:1). This beast receives his power from a **dragon**. Who is this **dragon**? “**And the great dragon was cast out [of heaven], that old serpent [snake], called the devil [destroyer] and Satan [deceiver] which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him**” (Revelations 12:9). God, in the last three verses, has granted you many clues to understand “**world history**.”

The Dragon is Satan, a deceiver and destroyer of the **whole world**. What does Satan do in the world besides deceiving and destroy-

ing it? Satan “**blasphemes**” by deception and **destruction** (war). “**Blasphe**me” in Greek is “**to abuse someone.**” It is the very **worse** type of **slander**. Its intent is to **hurt someone’s reputation**, especially with a **false witness**. This false witness applies, especially, to **religion** and it is against **God’s “Holy Spirit.”** So, Christianity is the **prime target**. How? By **deception, to destroy “true” Christianity**. That is why Jesus said after “**the temple**” in Jerusalem was destroyed, the first enemy will be “the false preaching by many **deceivers.**”

Notice, Revelation 12:16-17 shows God protects some of His “**people**” in the **wilderness** while the **rest** are persecuted by Satan. They will be destroyed, even though they keep God’s “**commandments.**” To a great degree, this has already occurred but **more** is to **come**. Much of prophecy is already “**past**” **history**.

In the next chapter you will begin to unravel these prophecies and be amazed how much is “**history.**” **Satan**, as the **dragon**, has left **gigantic clues of all his damage** along history’s path.

CHAPTER 18

HISTORICAL AND BIBLICAL CLUES

The beast is extremely violent; combining the strengths and cunningness of a lion, leopard and a bear. This beast comes from the area of The Mediterranean Sea. This beast is given life by the dragon, who is Satan.

The Whole World

This **beast deceives the whole world**. You must **realize that the entire world** is run by this **beast** which originated from **The Great Sea**. Once you learn who this **beast** is, you will understand how the **world** is very much like the **beast**. This **beastly system** is **violent, deceptive** and whose final purpose is **destruction by war**. **The beast's** purpose is to **blaspheme God** and His "**Holy Spirit**." Ultimately, Satan wants to be worshipped as an equal with God. To do so, he must prove he is as great as God.

You must understand Satan blinds and deceives the **entire world**. That means **everyone!** Revelation 18:4 declares, "**Come out of her, my people**." God's "**people**" are, also, being deceived no matter who you may be. Regardless of your **faith**, Christian, Jewish or Muslim, all are ensnared, by this "**beast**."

Since this **beast** rules the world through Satan, he is, therefore, "**the god of this world**" who **blinds everyone** whether it is through education, science, government or **religion**. This deception includes **every aspect of human existence** (II Corinthians 4:4). Do you get it?

God's "**people**" are the **primary target** to attempt to deceive and, finally, destroy them. What better way could Satan choose, than to get different religions to **fight amongst themselves**? The beast is winning. Satan has religions **competing against each other**. Is it any wonder why **more wars are over religion** than for any other reason? That is why God is telling His "**people**" to come **out of her**. Who are you to come "**out of**?" **It is the beast!** Who or what is this **beast** that Satan controls?

The Book of Revelation gives **the history** of the battle between God and His "**people**" through Christ. Satan tries to kill Jesus through Herod but Christ, finally, beats Satan (Matthew 4). When this occurred, Satan was cast out "**in the world**" to try to influence God's "**people**." Read all of Revelation 12.

"**The beast had seven heads, ten horns**" – upon his horns were ten crowns and upon his **heads** is the **name of "blasphemy"** (Revelation 13:1). This **beast's** job is to **fight God** and **His people** by promoting the **blasphemy** of God's "Holy Spirit." This beast holds all of God's "**truth**" in "**unrighteousness**" (Romans 1:18). Satan's purpose is to deceive God's "**people**" by counterfeiting **the truth** and the end result is **death**.

Now, for an astounding declaration, "**And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast**" (Revelation 13:3).

In the book, *The Great Apostasy*, a **type** of this occurred with **Julius Caesar's death** but The Roman Government continued for nearly a thousand years more. But notice Revelation 17:9, "**And here is the mind who hath wisdom, the seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.**" The heads are **governments** not just **humans**. A "**mountain**" represents "**a govern-**

ment” either of God or Satan. It is just like The Ziggurats, “**a temple mountain with stairs (to God) in each of their cities.**”

Remember, The Sumerians had **temples** which reached to the **heavens**. These “**temples**” had a stairway circulating to the **top**. Their temples represented “**mountains.**” These temples could be God’s “**mountains**” or “**governments.**”

In Revelation 17:7 an angel tells John that the **woman** who sits on the **beast**, which is led by Satan, is hidden as a secret and, then, goes on to explain the secret, “**The beast that you saw was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit [a grave], and go into perdition [destroyed]: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder [question], whose names were not written in the book of life [Marriage Registry] from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains [governments], on which the woman sitteth [religion]. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the beast that was and is not, even he is the eighth and is of the seven, and goes into perdition [destruction]. And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast [eighth]. These have one mind and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, chosen and faithful. And he saith unto me, the waters [sea] which you saw, where the whore sitteth, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues [languages]. And the ten horns which you saw upon the beast, these shall hate the whore and shall make**

her desolate and naked and shall eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will and to agree and give their Kingdom unto the beast, until *the* “words” of God shall be fulfilled [Times of The Gentiles]. And the woman which you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth” (Revelation 17:7-18). This explains the history of the whole world from the time Adam and Eve left The Garden of Eden until The Return of Christ.

As you continue to read, most of the rest of this book will cover the history which **begins** as a **prophecy** and ends as **history**. There will be several **parts** to this **history** which will be as follows:

- 1 Five kingdoms and five kings fall.**
- 2 Christ and The Apostles' time.**
- 3 Dark Ages to The Reformation.**
- 4 Renaissance till End Time.**
- 5 End of Days.**

These periods include **all of world history** from **The Garden of Eden** until **The End of Days** and **Christ's “return.”** Satan is deeply involved and he is attempting to **blind the whole world** including **all the religions** of the world. Remember, those called to **The Wedding Feast** are both **“good” and “bad”** (Matthew 22). This is explained more fully in the book *God's Will*. Babylon is eating The Tree of Good and Evil – that is human nature.

CHAPTER 19

THE DEADLY WOUND

“And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast” (Revelation 13:3).

One Of The Five

When John wrote *The Book of Revelation*, this **beast** had seven heads and during that time, five **of them had** fallen. It was during that time, (the **sixth** head) that he wrote *The Book of Revelation* (Revelation 17:10). This **reveals** time which is different than the **sixth head (Rome)**. It is not The Caesars which fell, although they were **“a type.”** These five kings were over **governments**. The five fallen kings were different kingdoms or empires from **“the sixth”** which is Rome. Each head had to rule over the entire known world as the prophecy proclaims.

This beast rises and falls throughout World History (Revelation 17:8). At the time of the last head, the **eighth**, Christ will rule. This, indeed, includes the entire **“world’s history”** from The Garden of Eden till Christ **“returns.”** After John wrote *The Book of Revelation* another **“head,”** a **seventh government** reigns only to die and be superseded by an **eighth**, which is not, yet, another **government** but, only, **“an image of the seventh.”**

To address Revelation 13:3 you must go back to the beginning in ancient history to find this **“beast”** that was **wounded** but still

lived. This “**beast**” continues like “**the first**” but ruled by someone else. Who could this “**first**” be?

Remember, “The **Beast**” is “**Babylon**” ridden by a woman who is a **whore**. Go back in history to the beginning of Babylon to see who she is. After Cain killed Abel, he left for The Land of Nod and Seth replaced Abel, as the one who sacrifices to God and is **accepted by God** as a **High Priest** (Hebrews 5:1-3). Seth is accepted as God’s “**High Priest**” because **he calls upon The Name of God**. Seth’s children, also, followed in his footsteps.

Cain, on the other hand, believed as “**firstborn**,” he should be God’s “**High Priest**” and should make acceptable sacrifices. What Cain does not understand is The Priesthood of **Melchizedek** is not always chosen by anyone being “**the firstborn**.” Instead, he must be a **seeker and lover of righteousness**, as well as, having **absolute faith** (Acts 10:35).

This is why Abraham kept God’s “**commandments**” and “**statutes**” in **faith** and, therefore, proved his **faith** to be willing to **sacrifice Isaac**. This **faith** caused Melchizedek to **bless** Abraham, a High Priest of **Faith (not through the genealogy** of a Mother and Father). Truly, The Melchizedek Priesthood is “**A Priesthood of Faith**” and **not by human birth or effort** or both. *The Torah*, long before The Added Law of Moses, was based upon **faith** and not **The Letter of The Law**. God’s “**Law**” in *The New Covenant* is kept by **faith** just as Abraham did. In *The New Covenant* you are required to have a “**right heart**” rather than “**human works**.” Seth had A Priesthood of **Faith** in The **Order of Melchizedek**. Now, you are, historically, about to find out who were his **sons**. Genesis 5 lists the sons of Seth, who was the son of Adam, who was **The Son of God**. These are “**The Sons**” of **God** who are covered all the way to the **flood**.

Eight Kings

In Sumerian **history**, it is claimed before the **flood** there were **eight divine Sumerian Kings**. Who were they? These eight kings are Adam's sons:

1 Seth

2 Enos

3 Cainan

4 Mahalaleel

5 Jared

6 Enoch

7 Methuselah

8 Lamech

9 Noah

Adam had nine sons, (Cain, not counted, fostered another completely different society without God). These sons followed God. Now, read an amazing prophecy, "**And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints**" (Jude 14). In Jude it states **Enoch** was number seven as Adam's sons, but Genesis 5 only lists him as number **six**. How come? Easily, Cain was Adam's son, also, making Enoch number seven. Why was Cain

excluded from Genesis 5? Simply, because Enoch was a Prophet and Cain was not. Genesis 5 only lists those “**Sons**” of God who were Prophets like Enoch.

Noah was the **eighth** preacher of **righteousness**, The Order of Melchizedek (II Peter 2:5). How can this be when Noah was Adam’s **ninth son** in Genesis? Remember, **Enoch, The Seventh Prophet** did not see death and was translated and was removed from office, which made Noah, The Eighth Preacher of “**Righteousness.**” God is very precise. Genesis 5 lists Adam’s sons as **Prophets and Preachers of Righteousness** but that “**righteousness**” they preached was *The Gospel. The Gospel of Christ* was preached from the time of **Seth** (Jude 14). Wow! Christ has been preached from the beginning of **history**, right after The Garden of Eden. The Promised Seed, Jesus, was preached by **Enoch**.

World history is all the more **significant** when starting from the **beginning**. Satan, as the **snake** or **deceiver** had to attempt to **fool humanity** about **Christ** from the very beginning (after **The Garden of Eden**). Babylon, The Great begins once Adam and Eve left **The Garden**. Once Cain was gone, Satan had to deceive God’s “**people**” before **the flood**, as well.

That is why “**The Sons**” of God, the children, from The Prophets and Preachers, saw the daughters of men (without God) and married them. In the end, besides The Prophets and Preachers who proclaimed *The Gospel of Christ*, they fell victim to **unrighteousness** and their **words and deeds became evil in all they imagined** (Genesis 6:5). Humanity became **violent** and **world war** and **world suicide** was so prevalent, God **flooded** the world before they annihilated themselves (only Noah and his family was saved). Noah and his family survived on The Ark. Now, you can understand why The Sumerian “**writings**” have **only eight**

King/Priests listed in their pre-flood times. Remember, Noah was the number **eight** “**king**” minus **Enoch** who was translated or removed from office because he walked with God.

The Sumerian World began after **the flood**, considering Noah and his predecessors as Kings/Priests. In fact, the post-flood world regarded them as divine or gods since they were The Sons of God. When Noah, **The Eighth** Preacher of Righteousness, had Shem, Ham and Japheth, they **all** knew *The Gospel of Christ* preached by Noah, their father. They, also, knew and were familiar with The Order of The Melchizedek **Priesthood**.

Tower Of Babel

Now, for a seemingly simple story, which reads almost as a fairy tale. The Tower of Babel appears right at the time when the **whole earth** was of **one language**. Just as The Sumerians, after their historical account of the **flood**, were of **one language**. Strangely, their language is not like any other in the world. It has no similarity to The Semitics, Indo-Europeans or Hamitics. The Sumerians have a language that is unique to themselves.

In addition, their city/states all have **temples** in the city center and everyone took part. **The temple**, “a **ziggurat**,” is “a model of a tower like a **mountain** with a circular trail going around the outside to the very top” which represents The Holy of Holies where they felt their god, “An, the sky god” dwelt.

The name “Babel” in Hebrew means “**Babylon**” or “**confusion**.” This **confusion** or Babylon was actually caused by God in diversifying all the languages of the **earth**. Now, instead of **one-world language** like The Sumerians, the earth was divided by its own ethnic groups.

Astoundingly, Babylon was begun by Nimrod. Nimrod was the son of Cush. “**Cush**” means “**black**” but Nimrod was a mixture with a white mother. Nimrod during The Sumerian’s pre-flood days obtained most of their food source from **hunting**. Great hunters were looked upon as **heroes** for supplying the human needs to their followers. Nimrod was **a mighty hunter before the Lord**. In Hebrew, the word “**mighty**” is defined as “**a warrior, tyrant**” or “**champion**.” A hunter was one who ran fast and was, also, tall and strong as a **giant**. The statement “before the Lord” means “contentious” or “opposed,” denoting “one who is wicked” or “evil.” Nimrod built Babylon to rule the world with **one language** and **one religion**. The Tower of Babel was intended to hold humanity in a united **religion**, worshipping Nimrod as “a god.”

The Land of Shiner was a **light** and its King/Priest was known in The Sumerian language as “**Lugas**,” – the “**light** or **truth bringer**.” All Kings of Sumer began their names with “**Lugas**” as did Nimrod. Nimrod, also, ruled Egypt.

God’s objection to Babylon was its belief in **one-world-wide religion** which turned **righteousness** into **unrighteousness** with **no free choice**. They were in **domination, competition** and had to live by **survival of the the fittest**. No one could, individually, **grow**. By so doing, everyone was **protected** by “**the great King/Priest**.” In addition, all their basic needs were supplied and they had protection from enemies.

Satan, the **deceiver**, used this human weakness (to **survive**) as a means of personal worship with Nimrod, as his servant. God **wounded** this **beast** ridden by Satan, **The Dragon**, by dispersing mankind throughout “**the world**” (Genesis 11:5). This is a good time to reinforce your ancient history by reading all of Genesis 10 and 11.

Remember, this “**beast**,” as the **first wounded head**, was like a **lion, bear** and a **leopard**. A combination of **all three** and, therefore, the **most violent** and **destructive**. Again, just as before the **flood**, God intervened because of **world violence** to **save** them, by **baptism**, through **the flood** to be raised in the future. God was **saving** all the nations which were of **one language** by diversifying **their speech**.

To make certain the nations of the earth did not come together into one false religion, God caused the waterways to divide, causing the nations of the earth to be separated (Genesis 10:25). This was, temporally, to protect each nation from Babylon, The Great Whore.

Babylon was worshipping “the **creation**” instead of “**The Creator**.” The Babylonians were stargazers (from their **tower**) which attempted to reach unto the **heavens**. **Astrology** was born with the **Zodiac** directing and **controlling** each day of a person’s **existence**. Choice was removed and **freedom** was curtailed by **The Priests** controlling every aspect of a human’s **life**. The Melchizedek Priesthood, based upon **faith** or **free choice**, **did not exist**. Every citizen in Sumeria or Babylon was actually “**a slave**.” **First**, they were slaves to their man-made **religion** and, **then, they were slaves to government**. The Tower of Babel or Babylon truly made The Sumerians **drunk** with **wine** and they had **no rights** to determine “**right**” from “**wrong**.” This was the **first head** which was **wounded** by God. How was that **wound healed**?

Religiously speaking, God’s “**people**” are the **primary target** to be deceived and, eventually, destroyed. What better way could Satan choose than to get religious groups **fighting** between themselves? The beast was winning. Satan has all religions **competing against each other**. Is it any wonder **more wars** are fought

over religion than any other reason? That is why God is telling His “**people**” “**to come out of her, my people.**” Who is this “**beast**” Satan controls?

The Book of Revelation gives the history of the battle between God and His “**people**” through Christ. Satan tries to kill Jesus by Herod but Christ, finally, beats Satan (Matthew 4). When this occurs, Satan was cast out “**in the world**” to fight God’s “**people.**” Read Revelation 12.

The beast with the seven heads and ten horns and upon his **heads** is the **name of blasphemy** (Revelation 13). This “**beast’s job**” is to **fight God** and His “**people**” by the **blasphemy** of God’s “**Holy Spirit.**” This beast holds God’s “**truth**” but holds it in **unrighteousness** (Romans 1:18). Satan’s purpose is to deceive God’s **people**” by counterfeiting **the truth** with the end, resulting in **death.**

Now, for an astounding declaration, “**And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast**” (Revelation 13).

CHAPTER 20

THE DEADLY WOUND HEALED

“And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard and his feet were as the *feet* of a bear and his mouth as the *mouth* of a lion: and the dragon gave him power and great authority [power].” And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast” (Revelation 13:2-3).

Harlot Daughters

You are about to trace history, archeology and *The Bible* to discover what happened to the **beast** who was wounded and how he was **healed**.

God wounded **the beast** that was “**its first head**,” **The Tower of Babel** in the beginning of Babylon, built by Nimrod, by dividing the **nations** and confusing their **languages**. Remember, the Sumerian language had no roots, linguistically, to any known language. From this point on, The Semitic, Indo-European and Hamitic languages appeared.

The Sumerian tongue, over time, was lost to the world. It probably was the same language at The Tower of Babel. The **first head** of The Beast **was wounded by God and seemed dead**. **What occurred?** “**And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**” (Revelations

17:5). The **first head** had **died** but this **mother had reproduced** “**harlot children.**” The **wound** was **healed** by having children. No longer was Babylon the only head. The original Babylon, now **scattered by language**, became a **multitude of city/state nations**. Now, besides, Babylon, **Kish, Ur, Urutru** and many other city/states were born with their own **temple tower** in each city. **There were many new harlots being spawned.**

Poly Gods

Remember, the ideology of many gods came about by the distance from **The One True God**. Just as **Seth** called upon **The One God** and, therefore, knew the truth, others on their own, developed and dreamed up their own gods.

After the flood, Noah, being the eighth person, was The Preacher of **Righteousness**. Noah, because he had direct contact with God, was believed to be a **divine being, like God**. Historically, this is how humanity viewed those men – “humans as gods” because, originally, they were taught about The True God. Always remember, they were considered to be two-thirds **divine** and one-third **human**. They were humans who were **worshipped** as a “god” whether it was in Sumeria, Babylon or Egypt and then, finally, within the Greeks and Romans.

A **biblical** example of this is an event which occurred to Paul and Barnabas in Acts 14:8-20. Paul and Barnabas entered The City of Lystra. While they preached, an impotent man asked to be healed. When he stood up, whole and healed, notice what the people said, “**And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia. The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter and Paul, Mercurius, because he [Paul] was the**

chief speaker” (Acts 14:11-12). They, very likely, thought they came from Mount Olympus where they assumed the gods were. Each city in Sumeria had **Ziggurats** or holy mountains with circular staircases or trails to the **top of the mountain where, supposedly, God’s “house” was.**

This is why Paul said, “**They turned righteousness into unrighteousness**” (Romans 1). At The Tower of Babel, **the first head of the beast**, started to **worship the creation** instead of **The Creator**. Later, you will read where these **Ziggurats** were a duplicate of the **genuine faith to God’s “house.”**

In fact, besides **humans** (mankind) being called gods, anything which pointed to God or came by God’s “**creation,**” as the moon, rain, wind and trees, was, then, **worshipped as God**. They knew these creative elements were **not “the god,” but of God** and, therefore, **divine**. This is how much of the world worships the **creation** instead of **The Creator** (Romans 1). Some Christian groups look to “**holy people**” preaching as “**gods**” today. Some religions to this day worship humans as “gods” (idols).

Astrology, the worship of the **stars** known as the **zodiac**, came about at The Tower of Babel. That is why God confused their languages because their minds could imagine that which results into **complete Babylon** (havoc).

Birth By The Daughters

Once the languages of Babylon, (**the great whore**) was wounded from Babel, all nations were given their inheritance. “**By these were isles of the Gentiles [coast lands] divided into their lands; everyone after his tongue, after their families, in their nations**” (Genesis 10:5). Now, God dispersed all nations into their respec-

tive divisions so they could increase on their own. All these nations were knowledgeable about this **false worship** of God from Babel. The children of **Shem** held to their father's teaching, Noah, A Preacher of **Righteousness** (Genesis 11:10-31). Besides, Shem and his **household** which included **Abraham**, all other nations followed the system of religion to worship "a god," according to the **confusion** of **their Mother – Babel**, who had been **wounded** by God. All the world, historically, has a record of this **false pagan system, worshipping the creation** instead of **The Creator**. Only Shem and his progeny followed **Noah** (the **eighth** one) as **A Preacher of Righteousness**.

Nimrod, a **mighty hunter** who was **against** The Lord, built Babylon – Egypt and was its **first ruler, (having built Babel)** (Genesis 10:9-10). Once the nations were divided, they all, except Shem's household, believed **Nimrod** to be **divine**, since he started **Babel**. (**Nimrod** came from **Ham** who was of **Noah** and, therefore, he was regarded as **divine**, as well!)

Egypt held to Horas and Issis, as Nimrod and his wife (Ishtar or Easter and Tammuz). This prevailed throughout the **world** according to their **own languages** and names of their gods. Nimrod built Erech (or Uruk), Accad and Calneh, in The Land of Shiner. This was in Southern Mesopotamia near the gulf where Abraham lived in Ur (Genesis 10:8-10).

These city/states grew and expanded into other city/states, ultimately, throughout Mesopotamia. From there, throughout other continents, they brought The Babylonian **Religion** with them. These are **the daughters or harlots of The Great Whore, Babylon**.

All these city/states had a **Ziggurat** in its center with a King/Priest

as ruler of **both civil matters (government) and religious systems (Babylon)**. This Priesthood and kingship was **born** from the original **Melchizedek Priesthood**, started by God through **Abel**, God's "**first Priest**" after **The Order of Melchizedek**, was A Priesthood of **Faith**. Adam, as a figure of Christ, was Melchizedek, The Father of The Order of Melchizedek.

After the **flood**, Noah made sacrifices acceptable to God as His "**Priesthood**" and when he died, **Shem** became God's "**Priest**" to offer sacrifice and was **The Melchizedek** who met **Abraham**. Thus, the **godly inheritance continued** (Hebrews 5:1).

As these city/states continued, growing northward into Mesopotamia, you will find **Asshur** built **Nineveh**, Rehoboth and Calah. They were followed by Resen between Nineveh and Calah (Genesis 10:11-12). Nineveh is Assyria and repented after Jonah preached to them.

The **second head** of the beast was about to be **healed** and appear upon the **world stage** as the **second of five heads** (before John's prophecy in Revelation 17:10). The **deadly wound (Babel)** was, now, healed and ready to reappear upon the **world**.

CHAPTER 21

BABYLON REBORN

Each city/state had claimed their “god” or “gods” were stronger, better “gods” when The True God divided the nations, diversifying their languages. All claimed, according to The Sumerians, that An or Anu, “the sky god,” was “the creator of all things.”

Who Is King?

Once the nations were scattered to their individual inheritances, it was just a matter of who had the superior “gods.” Who was the stronger “king?” Each considered “the sky god” to be The God in heaven. In Egypt, He was called On, then Horas and Issis. Babylon had Marduk, then Greece and Rome had Zeus and Jupiter. Only “the sky god” was looked up to. The other gods had a status of being only two-thirds divine. Actually, they were all human, but worshipped and attributed to “the sky god.” After all, they considered The Great Spirit made them all.

When the volcanoes erupted, “the sky god” did it. When floods came, it was all because of “the gods.” One must not anger “the gods” but fear them. This became the cardinal rule for mankind’s behavior with each other. The question was, “Who had the stronger god or the truth.” Religion, to this day, functions upon this principle, which is nothing but competition!

Paul, The Apostle, speaks of this behavior as carnal or beast-like

(I Corinthians 3). Satan's key deception is to divide and conquer. This is Satan's "**image!**" Satan wants you to be like the carnivorous beasts. This is why religion causes more wars than for any other reason.

As long as horses were not used for warfare, the city/states were left to themselves. However, so no intruders from close neighboring city/states could attack, walls were erected for protection. With the advent of canals and food sources changed from hunting to agriculture, it became more difficult and a great problem trying to protect farmers and ranchers outside of the city walls.

Farmers were the easy prey and were attacked first. Later, when horses were trained for assaults, they ventured out in the more outlying areas. Now, an **entire city** could be under **siege**. Violence became prevalent; bribery, ransom and agreements to protect themselves was the **norm**. Is it any wonder that **Satan**, as the god of this world, uses the same principles today?

Rulers, today, are **dedicated**, first and foremost, to **protect the nation**. It all seems to be the **only thing to do in order to survive**. **Alliances**, from henceforth, historically, were the way to go. All a potential dictator, king or ruler had to do was convince the **citizens** that they or their god was **the true god** and their proof was they were **superior in strength**. **They felt they were intended to be the master race**. All others were **serfs** or **slaves** after being conquered.

The Second Head

Obviously, this system of **Satan's** was **natural** to human nature or a matter of "**survival of the fittest**." It only makes sense. God divided the nations because when left to themselves and with one

language for easier communication, they would end up in a state of **violence** as they did in Noah's day when God had to flood the world.

Armageddon brings the **world (all nations)** together for the **final battle** against **Jerusalem** (Zechariah 14). Read how the **second head** of the **beast emerges**. This is **the first harlot** or daughter of the **whore, Tower of Babel (Babylon, The Second Head)** is resurrected which was once **wounded** by God. This duplicate of **The Great Whore (Babel in type)** reoccurs throughout **history** by whether they be The Caesars in Rome or after **The Fall** of Rome, Justinian, Charlemagne, Napoleon or Hitler. This city/state of **civil government** and **religion** constantly raises its **new carnivorous head seven more times** before God's "**kingdom**" replaces **The Time of The Gentiles** with God's "**rest,**" God's "**Seventh Day Sabbath.**" Christ "**returns**" at the **seventh trump** as **The King of All Kings** with God's "**kingdom.**" These types of the former seven heads, Babylon and Egypt, Assur, Neo-Babylon, Media-Persia, Greco-Macedonia, and Rome are the seven heads followed by the eighth who are only images or types.

Asshur had built **Nineveh**, Rehoboth and Calah. Between Nineveh and Calah, a great city known as Resen was built (Genesis 10:11-12) This is Jonah's story when he went to Nineveh. Jonah's account in *The Book of Jonah* is significant even though this event in history doesn't happen until Shalmaneser's day but it revealed Nineveh as the **next revived head** of the **beast**.

Some believe Asshur or Assyria is from The Amorites in history, while others believe otherwise. One thing for certain, they came from Asshur. It seems Shem's second son was Asshur (Genesis 10:21-22). From Asshur, in archeology and history, Sargon I came forth and from Nineveh, because having horses, he was able

to conquer a good portion of Mesopotamia. He took The Sumerians captive and replaced **the first head of the beast** as one of the **whore's harlots** which started **New Babylon**.

This **second head of the beast, New Babylon**, a duplicate of the first Tower of Babel, was now one of the daughters of **The Great Whore**. Sargon followed the same city/state type of **government, (civil and religious)**. Now, with horses, Sargon was intended to be over the entirety of the known world.

The **second head** of the beast was in charge and, even, placed some of Sumeria's captives (**the elite**) into prominent positions. The wound was **now healed**.

CHAPTER 22

HAMMURABI'S CODE

King Sargon resurrected the second head of the beast, who was part of “the first wounded beast.” Sumeria was never again to rise to prominence as it had at the time of The Tower of Babel. They reigned a short time later, but could never again restore their kingdom.

The Second Head

King Sargon employed vicious tactics and had no mercy on his enemies who refused to obey and submit to his government. This **severity of rule** persisted throughout his reign and was followed by his son, Sargon II. who was just as harsh.

It was during this time of **the second head**, that Sumeria, being in The South of Mesopotamia, obtained some self-rule, since they were in obedience to Sargon's dynasty. He ruled from The North when Abraham came upon the scene. Abraham grew up in a city called Ur, not too far from Urutu about a thousand years after the flood (about 2000 B.C.). It has been written, during this time, a devastating famine hits Mesopotamia and is concentrated more in The South.

The commandments and statues were already known before Moses. This would become significant when *The Old Covenant* was added to *The Torah* by Moses at Mount Sinai. Very likely, because of the famine and drought in Meopotamia, Terah took his

sons Abram, Nahor and Haran's son, Lot, with Sarai and Milcah, Abram's and Nahor's wives and moved to **Haran**. Haran had died in Ur, the land of his birth, in Sumeria, with the Chaldeans coming into power into New Babylon. Terah named the new area they moved to, after his son, **Haran** who had died.

The Code

This is a brief insert concerning Abram and his family, because, later, they have a **greater part** in the writing of **The Letter of The Law**, *The Old Covenant* and the reason God added it to *The Torah*, five hundred years later.

Hammurabi, a great king, during the reign of this second head of the **beast** was both a **vicious beast** and while, at times, being, also, **just**. Archeologists have found **Hammurabi's "Code of Law."** Hammurabi, the second head, who lived in Babylon about 1700 to 1800 B.C. over two hundred years after Abraham, wrote his **Code of Law** given to him by **God**. How could this be? This code, historians claim, had many similarities to God's "Law" including *The Ten Commandments*. "**An eye for an eye**" was in his code.

This was a **giant historical leap** made by archeologists and historians. Most scholars seem to think "**older**" is better or more reliable and **Hammurabi's Code** is **older** than **The Law** written by Moses.

The Torah was written about three hundred years later (1500 B.C.). They figured **Moses copied from Hammurabi's Code**. Wow! This **historical error** not only confused today's world history, but future history and helped create the **great debate** in religion. This argument over "**The Law**" of **God was nurtured** over thousands of years, whether it be Muslim, Jewish or Christian "**doctrine.**"

Christianity, itself, is split over the question, “Is “**The Law**” of **God** in force for Christians or **not**?” Are Christians under “**law**” or “**grace**?” That is the question. “The Law” of God has been in **force** since the **time** of **Adam** and **Eve**. You will begin to understand The Law of God varies in its **administration** by **The Priest’s** “**ruling**.”

Did Hammurabi receive **God’s** “**Law**” from **God**? You should ask yourself, “**exactly how did Hammurabi** get to know **God’s Law**?”

Abraham And The Law

You are about to **resolve** the **great** religious **debate** about **The Law** or *The Torah* by a better understanding of **world history**. Today, you can look back at history because so much of it has already occurred (nearly **6,000 years** have transpired). **Knowledge of the truth** has **elapsed** and you can, now, look back with **greater insight** by putting **it all together**.

The answer is for “**truth**” to, actually, be “**the truth**,” whether you consider **any discipline**, individually, or as a **whole**. Everyone must **be in agreement**, so then, and only then, can the **truth** be **known**. This is how Christians and others need to study *The Bible*, as a whole and **all the answers must agree perfectly in order, to be “the truth.”** To correctly understand “**the truth of history**,” all hard **data** must be agreed to before any **conclusions can be drawn**.

As long as you, without human **interpretation**, explain away all the **unknowns** by **self satisfaction** or your own agenda, you will always come to your own conclusions and it, also, satisfies most of society. In **pure science**, **all variables** (options) must **agree**

before you can come to **“the truth.”** To get to **the truth of history, paleontology, archeology, mythical books, *The Bible* must make logical sense on its own.** Eventually, **“the truth” will become apparent on its own!**

To explain away history, whether you read *The Bible, Homer, Hammurabi's Code* or **old clay tablets which have been found** and decide all are a **myth** or a **fairy tale**, is complete **nonsense.**

Human intelligence is **“intelligence”** in any age and conclusions made, at any time, can only be **deduced** from what is **known** at that time. Errors are always made, therefore, the mistakes must be found but the **conclusions** should only be drawn when hard data or **truth** is found. Until then, **no truth** can be **established.** The best anyone can do when **they do not know “truth”** is to make a **hypothesis** or a **guess.** Making guesses is **not evil** and concluding them to be **“the truth” is not wrong, but can lead to evilness.** Finally, when **all variables or options (theories)** are answered in **total agreement**, then, **what is left, is “the truth.”** Human interpretation is **no longer required.**

In today's rewrite of **world history**, scholars are attempting to come to a **conclusion** by coming to a **total agreement on all aspects of learning.** What is necessary is the need to bring history, archeology, paleontology and all past findings including *The Bible* to coincide and be in **agreement**, to **find “the truth.”** Now, to resolve the issue of Hammurabi's Code and how God gave it to Hammurabi.

Genesis 26:5 declares the following, **“Because that Abraham obeyed my voice and kept my charge [as to what he should do], my commandments, my statutes and my laws.”** How did Abraham learn God's **Laws by His voice?** God told them directly to

Abraham. Just read Jude 14 where Enoch was a Prophet concerning **The Return of The Messiah, Jesus.**

Hebrews 1 states you have been told “**the truth**” of *The Gospel* from the beginning by God’s **Prophets** who only **spoke His “word.”** *The Torah* and **The Messiah** have always been proclaimed from the “**very beginning**” as Genesis 26:5, Hebrews 1 and Jude 14 stand as a testimony.

Hammurabi did get God’s “Laws” from God but only through His “**Prophets**” and “**Priesthood.**” Just as Daniel, God’s “Prophet” interpreted Nebuchadnezzar’s dreams when his magi could not.

Most historians and archeologists are wrong. It isn’t Moses who copied *The Torah* from Hammurabi. Hammurabi got his code from copying God’s “**Prophets**” and “**Priesthood,**” who were, indeed, preaching “**the truth.**” In fact, all the world twisted and changed everything. God had Moses write down, in their code (Egyptian), which were altered to suit the individual groups, towns or nations. Historically, you are ready to put *The Torah* and **The Law of Moses** in its proper **order.**

CHAPTER 23

THE PRIESTHOOD AND THE LAW

“For every High Priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things *pertaining* to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins” (Hebrews 5:1). God’s “method” of atoning sins and reconciling sinners to God is accomplished through the human Priesthood.

Two Priesthoods

Because Moses wrote *The Torah* and “**the added**” *Old Covenant*, some believe **The Priesthood** is of **Levi**, **The Aaronic Priesthood** and was primarily written to Israel. The Melchizedek Priesthood is considered secondary, as an event occurring to Abraham (Genesis 14:17-24).

The entire *Epistle of Hebrews* had to be written to both Jews and Gentiles to reveal it is **The Priesthood of Melchizedek** which is **superior**. Knowing the difference between those “**two**” Priesthoods is vital to **Salvation**.

The Levitical Priesthood could not **take away sin** (Hebrews 10). Whereas, the **superior Melchizedek Priesthood** not only pardoned **sin** but, actually, **destroyed sin** and **sin** was **forgotten** as if it never happened (Hebrews 10)! You need to confirm in your mind, God is perfect and His “**plan**” is, also, perfect.

You need to understand the difference between these Priesthoods

and the **purpose** God **ordained** them to fulfill. In fact, their **impact** upon **world history** is **enormous**.

Who Was First?

The Old Covenant, being old, being **added** to *The Torah*, seems to be older than *The New Covenant*. A real dichotomy. How can *The New Covenant* be far older than the old? The problem was, *The New Covenant*, originally under **The Order of Melchizedek** could not be **fulfilled** until **Christ died for everyone's sins**.

Melchizedek

In Genesis 14, Melchizedek appears (seemingly out of **nowhere**) as **The King/Priest of Jerusalem**. Hebrews 7 informs you this Priest had no human genealogy, no father or mother but is a human directly appointed by **God, Himself** by an **oath**. This **oath** is “**an order**” or has conditions ordained directly by God. What are these **conditions** (Hebrews 8)?

In Hebrews 7, this Priesthood stands for a **King of Righteousness**, but, also, **The King of Peace**. This King/Priest rules in **The City of Jerusalem, The City of Peace**. There is one more demand by God to choose a person who has “**faith**” to **fulfill** this order. That is why, in Revelation 1:5, Jesus is called **The Faithful Witness** and **Prince of The Kings of The Earth**.

The driving purpose of Satan is to destroy this “**Priesthood**.” Satan, “**the god of this world**,” has blinded **Judah** by the very **Law** which was to bring them to **Christ, The Anointed High Priest** (II Corinthians 3). Satan tried to replace Jesus, **The Christ**, by offering the world to **Him**, if Jesus would only **fall down and worship Satan** (Matthew 4).

Satan never stops infiltrating this Priesthood, which, only, belongs to **Christ** “**forever**” (Hebrews 7 and 8). Satan has, even, convinced “**his people**” to replace Jesus as The High Priest.

The **Beast**, who is ridden by this **Great Whore**, has also, throughout **history**, made **harlots** out of her **daughters**. This **beast** was slain at **The Tower of Babel** by God in confusing the languages, but it keeps rearing her **whorish head** and will continue until Christ “**returns**” when He is “**crowned,**” **King of Kings** and **High Priest** over all the earth! This is how **superior** this **Melchizedek Priesthood** is.

Levi

Many read *The Old Covenant* **falsely**. Men, in The Second Century A.D., in the church, could not accept *The Old Covenant* “**God**” as The God of *The New Testament* or *New Covenant*. Men like Maricone rejected The God of The Law under Moses as **too cruel**. God could not have been “the same god” as at The Time of Jesus. Maricone, therefore, not only rejected *The Old Testament* as **bogus**, but all *The New Testament*, as well, with the exception of Paul’s writings. What a **pity** he did not understand most of *The Torah* was under The **Priesthood** of **Melchizedek** and not **Levi**. However, those who accept Maricone’s view today (in four theological schools) didn’t understand the **purpose of Levi** or **Melchizedek**. Levi had a completely different reason for its purpose which at its time was very “**Holy**” and “**good.**”

The Melchizedek Priesthood was a **Priesthood** of total **liberty** or **freedom of choice**. It required **the commandments** and **statutes** to be kept because one **loved God’s** “**commandments**” and “**statutes.**” This Priesthood was a **complete free choice** “**condition**” on the part of humanity just as with Abraham, **The Father of The**

Faithful, who kept “**the commandments and statutes**” because **he decided, as his choice, he wanted to and had a great desire to keep them** (Genesis 26:5).

From the beginning, in **The Garden of Eden**, Adam and Eve had the **same free choice**, it was up to them to decide who they **trusted** or would have **faith** in – either **God** or **Satan**.

Since keeping The Law or *Torah* was a **matter of faith**, having a **right heart**, there was **no need for any curses**. That is why, when Jesus was crucified and paid for the **world's sins**, “**the curse**” of **The Law** in *The Old Covenant* was removed. This is so, because The Melchizedek Priesthood is based upon **faith** with a **right heart** (Galatians 3:10-13).

Levitical Conditions

You are about to find out “**the added**” *Old Covenant*, Letter of The Law, with its **curses**, was only for **carnal people**. That is why **Gentile King/Priests** adapted **God's “commandments”** because these **Laws** kept their **societies obedient and civil**. Hammurabi's Code received his **Laws** from **God** but was **filled with curses**. The **Law** became “**a court decree**.”

This is the **reason** *The Old Covenant* was **not the same covenant** made with The Fathers, like Abraham, Jacob and Isaac (Deuteronomy 5:3). Read why God gave this *Old Covenant* to **only Israel** and **not the fathers**, “**O that there were such an heart [nature] in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children forever**” (Deuteronomy 5:29). This statement by **God** defines what is **required for Salvation for all time** – “**forever**.” You need to **understand spiritually** what “**a right**

heart” is. **“Through desire, a man having separated himself, seeketh and intermeddleth with all wisdom”** (Proverbs 18:1). Having a right heart is when your nature desires righteousness **and doesn’t meddle with all wisdom**. Having a **right heart** is when your nature **desires “righteousness” above the pulls** of the flesh or doing what everyone needs to survive. God cannot **give mercy** until a **person has a right heart**. When your heart’s desire is **“righteousness,”** then, **God** knows you are **ready to change**. **God** calls it **repentance**.

You must understand the **difference** between **The Melchizedek** and **The Levitical Priesthood**.

Moses And Aaron

You may ask why God chose Moses to lead His people, **Israel**. In fact, why did God ordain **Aaron as High Priest** when he helped Israel **“sin”** by building the golden calf? The **biblical** answer is in Genesis 49:5, **“Simeon and Levi are brethren; instruments of cruelty are in their habitations. O My soul [life] come not thou into their secret; unto their assembly, mine honor, be not thou united: for in their anger they slew a man, and in their self-will they digged down a wall [city]. Cursed be their anger, for it was fierce; and their wrath, for it was cruel: I will divide them in Jacob and scatter them in Israel.”** You are reading the **wisdom** of God and his **great love** for you.

This prophecy by Jacob before his death reveals why God chose Moses and Aaron to lead His people. No inheritance was given to Moses and Aaron in The Land of Israel, so they could not form into a tribe and become violent.

When Levi’s sister was raped by a Canaanite, Simeon killed him

and all the males in his **entire city**. After this, their father Jacob agreed to have The Canaanite “**circumcised**” and allowed Dinah to marry the man and live at **peace**. The word “hatred” is “**chamas**” which in Hebrew means “**a violent, unrighteous act.**” That is why God chose Moses and Aaron to lead God’s “**people,**” Israel. However, both understood, genetically, they had a problem with controlling their tempers.

This is why The Israelites would not believe Moses when he killed “**The Egyptian.**” They knew he was **hotheaded** and might turn on them as a **Prince of Egypt**. It is why Aaron died and didn’t go into **The Promised Land** or Moses because he **lost his temper** in **striking the rock for water**. God’s “thoughts” are not **mankind’s thoughts**. He **always** thinks of man’s **good**. This was **good** for **Israel**, **good** for **Moses** and **good** for **Aaron**. Miriam, their sister, had the same problem when she and Aaron tried to **usurp** Moses’ authority and she ended up with **leprosy**. Now, you can begin to understand the difference between **The Melchizedek Priesthood** and **The Levitical Priesthood**.

Hebrews 7:15 relates it is **necessary** for **The Priesthood of Melchizedek** to **arise** because **The Priesthood of Levi** was a **carnal priesthood** because of the people. It wasn’t that the commandment was **carnal** but the people of **Israel**, were **carnal** with a **wrong heart**. Hebrews 7:18-19 states the **people were weak** in the **flesh (nature)** and *The Old Covenant* had to be **disannulled** and replaced by **Melchizedek, The Christ!**

Paul was adamant and said this **Law** under **Moses** was made for **unrighteous criminals**. They could **not control themselves**, to follow the **do’s** and **don’ts** as a study pattern, so perhaps by doing so, they would repent (I Timothy 1:7-10). Now, it is **apparent**, with the change of **The Priesthood**, there had to be a **change of**

The Law. **The Law** is not **done away** or **destroyed** (Hebrews 7:12 and Matthew 5:17). **It is a change of administration.**

Under The **Melchizedek Priesthood**, “**The Keeping of The Law**” becomes much more complicated. You must have God write His “**commandments**” in your heart. Literally, you must have a change of heart and it must be done “spiritually.” No more will the grammar school of **do’s** and **don’ts** teach you or ever change your heart. Under **Levi**, **The Law** is administered by **judgments or curses** (Deuteronomy 27 and 28). The Levitical Priesthood settles **sin** by **punishment**. The Melchizedek Priesthood settles **sin** by **The Blood of Jesus, The Christ, The New Covenant** (Hebrews 10).

CHAPTER 24

GOD AND SATAN'S MYSTERIES

God, who fully understands the two types of human nature, has decreed “repentant humans” can be changed and will change carnal hearts into spiritual hearts. These are His “sons,” like Jesus, who keep God’s “commandments” and choose to, because they made up their minds to do so (through God’s “love” – by faith).

Carnal people, who choose “not to change,” needed a written law to know sin or “right” from “wrong.” Every civil society knows written laws are a must for social harmony. The system for the two types of people is called “mysteries.” God uses mysteries (the unknown) so as not to hold the ignorant or foolish responsible (John 9:41). Satan’s mystery is to make you believe you are gods and can decide right and wrong by yourself. By Satan making you believe you are “gods” (he fools you into thinking you need no True God) and, therefore, created the entire belief system to worship humans as “gods.” This is idolatry, which leads to death.

Ancient History

From **The Tower of Babel** onward, governments created their mythological fantasies by making gods out of leading King/Priests.

These kings were the divine providers of their followers. In some cases, they became “**the god above all gods.**” This concept prevailed in the known world until religion, itself, became both “a civil government” and “a god of worship” by its citizens.

The government which held to a divine ruler (a god), was worshipped and, therefore, decided they had no need of **The One, True God.** Other rulers of governments could not **stand up** to the power of these stronger heads or “gods.”

When Christ came with **the truth**, these **false gods** and their **myths** began to **crumble** and many attached themselves to any form of Christianity they could. The Roman Government had a dilemma on their hands. From The Second Century A.D. Christianity grew exponentially. The Roman Government had trouble in their control over the people. This weakness allowed The Vandals, Ostrogoths and Huruli to invade Rome, a city already, internally, weakened. These tribes came, basically, from France, Germany and North Africa.

Constantine stepped in, moved to Constantinople to keep The Eastern and Western Government together. Finally, he brought Christianity into Rome which lasted almost to The Eighth Century when France and Germany began to take over The Roman Government by leaders like Charlemagne and Napoleon as “resurrected heads.”

When Martin Luther divided The Roman Church into Protestants (The Eastern Church separated earlier) about 1100 A.D., Satan was, then, ready for his final assault by **secularism** (not to have a need for **The True God** or any god).

Then, Satan was about to **play** his final **role**, as usual, by using

man's truth as his **trump card** – “**science.**” Science or what can, only, be proven by **human observation as fact.** With **The Reformation** under Martin Luther underway and the printing press invented, Satan had the world at his fingertips, with the birth of **science**, above all else, including **religion.** **The Renaissance** or **rebirth** was **ready to go.** The **religious wars**, as always, were underway for **supremacy** to control **The Government of God.**

This short synopsis, *Satan's Image*, is given for you to gain an **overview** of **Satan's plan** to blind the world. From the **truth** in **The Garden of Eden**, given by **God Almighty**, Satan turned the **truth** into **myths** and **unrighteousness** by worshipping “**the creation,**” itself, instead of **The Creator.** Satan deceived Eve to believe she could be a god when in **reality**, **Satan** intended, from the beginning, to be **worshipped** as **God** is. Satan's ultimate plan is to get **rid of God** by secularism and **false science.** “**So he carried me [John] away in the spirit into the wilderness [world] and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy [lies], having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls [world's wealth], having a golden cup [religion, false Christ] in her hand [drinking] full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication [idolatry]**” (Revelation 17:3-4).

This golden cup causes the world to be **drunk** from this **wine** and Christ had to drink that cup of **wine** which was **His “blood”** to pay for **all the world's sins (all sorts of idolatry).**

Jesus tells **His “people”** to come out of Babylon, ridden by the **whore (all false religions)**, in which Christians find **themselves** (Revelation 18:4). That is why Revelation 2 and 3 warn Christianity, as well as Israel, (both of whom are God's “two witnesses”)

to come out of false religions. *The Book of Revelation* is written to Christ's "**seven candlesticks**" or "**churches**" including **Israel**. Christ's "warning" is, if His "**two witnesses**" do not come out of **Babylon**, they will receive **their appropriate penalty** when He "**returns.**" These are "**the two mysteries.**" One mystery, is God leading His "people" into **truth** by His "**Holy Spirit**" and the other is **Satan's "image"** in **Babylon**, causing **confusion**, getting **drunk** by drinking from the **wrong cup**.

Two Down, One To Go

The **Tower of Babel**, which was the **original head** of Babylon, now healed by the **second head**, was "**a harlot**" of **The Beast**, under The Assyrians. The Assyrians were the **first true empire** which reigned from Mesopotamia down to **Egypt**. The first head, at **The Tower of Babel**, never got off the ground because God stopped it by confusing the languages and dividing the nations. This second head, New Babylon, under The Assyrians, spread worldwide and became known as **The Fertile Crescent**.

In approximately 2000 B.C. Abraham moved from Ur to Mesopotamia and, then, to Haran, where his father died. He became responsible for Lot; Haran's son and Nahor, his other brother who married Lot's sister, Milcah.

Abrahamic Covenant

Abraham and his family were safe in Haran, Southern Turkey, and could follow **The True God** after he departed **Babylon**. God "**calls**" Abraham since he had been faithful in following **Him** and not **Babylon** as so many others had. God tells him to leave his father's house or family and go to a land he would inherit for himself and his progeny. Abraham came out of Babylon just as

Christians must do. He obeys and takes **Lot** with him leaving Nabor, his brother and family. Once in Canaan, he came to Sichern and went to a **mountain**. Later you will find why this **mountain** is so important. While in Sichern, God told him he would give the land to Abram (Abraham's new name). The mountain was east of Bethel – House of God and Abram built an **altar** unto The Lord and called upon The Name of The Lord. Years later, you will see a great significance to this altar in Bethel. In Hebrew, “**beth**” is “**house**” and “**el**” is “**God**.”

Assyrians Fall

Under Hammurabi, Assyria reigns from the mountains of East Mesopotamia to Egypt and becomes great as a society, especially with Hammurabi's Code which allowed no room for **error** with **harsh penalties** or **judgments** for breaking any of the codes. Many of its laws are similar to The Law of Moses such as “**an eye for an eye**,” which will, later, be **important** when *The Old Covenant* is given to Moses. Hammurabi, also, claimed to receive “**his law**” from God. When The Assyrians fell, so ended the **second head of the beast**. These two **mysteries existed side by side** – **The Mystery of God's “kingdom”** and **the mystery of Satan**. God's “**mystery**” is for a person's good, until one comes to **repentance**. Satan's **mystery** is to keep Christians from knowing **the truth** about who is **The Real God**. Satan tries to imitate God and be like Him.

It is time to investigate **Satan's mystery** known as **Babylon**. You will find its purpose is to **confuse** and deceive humanity so they cannot find **the truth** of who and why there is a Real True God. **Mythology**” is “**the satanic tool**” used by The Devil to keep “**everyone**” in **ignorance**!

CHAPTER 25

BABYLONIAN MYSTERIES

Did you know the idea of The Trinity started in Babylon? This trinity or three gods, is the beginning of all mythology. This mythology is Satan's way of deceiving the entire world so they do not know the whole truth of world history. The three initial "gods" were known as Anu, Bel and Ea or Ishtar.

World Mythology

The book *Sargon, The Magnificent* written by Mrs. Sydney Bristowe, writes the following: "According to Babylonian priests, several gods, Anu, Ea and Bel (at first) took part in the creation of the world, and in later times, as Shamas, and Istar (Easter). Sin ruled the heavens, the earth and the affairs of men. **No room is left in the Babylonian pantheon for a supreme being.**" Wow! All **mythology** in Greece, Rome, Aztec, Indian, China and Babylon have mixed true history with **fables**. *The Iliad* or Homer and all other ancient writings are replete with these fables so to, purposely, keep mankind in deception.

Half-men and half-animals had their names changed, according to the differing languages, from one culture to another. These formed Satan's "**mystery religions**," attempted to fool everyone! To, intellectually, determine truth from reality becomes a **maze of distortions**. In too many cases historians, archeologists and paleontologists have taken the easiest path of dismissing it all **as**

myth. Satan's "**image**" is **distortion** or mythology and it, alone, can keep society in **Babylon**.

Professor Salyce, another noted scholar said, "In the pre-Semitic days of Chaldea, a monotheistic school had flourished but this school died out" (Sargon on page 116). "The theology of Babylonia, as is known to us, is an **artificial product**. It combines two wholly different forms of **faith** and **religious conception**. One of these was **overlaid** by the **other** at a very **early period** in the history of the people. The theological beliefs of **Sumer** received a **Semitic interpretation**" (Religion of Egypt and Babylon).

In the book *Assyria*, the Princess states: "The higher minds of nations struggled, now and again, to a **purser** form of **faith**, but the **dead weight** of **polytheistic beliefs** and **practices** prevented them from ever really reaching it" (page 85).

Satan's **great deception** was to sink the world into **idolatry**, by the breaking of **the first commandment of God**. His tool was **effective**. He couldn't use **atheism** because **the earliest humans** knew God, personally. God created them and **spoke to them**. Making Adam and Eve, as well as, Satan, "**gods**." **Mythology**, so called, seemed to make **rational sense** to them.

Origin Of The Trinity

Early mankind was highly intelligent and concocted **great mysteries** from their **elite**. Priests, scribes, King/Priests were all part of developing "**a system of gods**." **Polytheism** made **sense**. After all, the early Sumerians invented writing, mathematics and science which today astounds world scholars. No one seems able to figure out how they could build such large cities and even the **pyramids** of Egypt without modern technology. In fact, some

of them seemed superhuman – intellectually and physically. *The Bible* reveals who these humans were.

God reveals in pre-flooded Sumeria there were **giants**, seemingly **super-human**. “**There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that when the sons of God [Seth’s family] came in unto the daughters of men [Cain’s family] and they bare children, the same became mighty men [Hercules, Apollo] which were of old**” (Genesis 6:4).

In the **known world** these **humans** were **giants, mighty** and of **renown somewhat like worldwide celebrities**. The Hebrew word for “**giants**” is “**nephil**.” It defines the word as “a **bully**, like a huge **bull**, a **real tyrant**.” The Hebrew word for “**mighty**” is “**gibbour**” and relates to “a **warrior, powerful, chief, a valiant man**.” In fact, in past history, they fought **bulls barehanded**.

The “**old humans**,” the Hebrew word “**olam**” conveys “going way back in **time** to the **earliest days**.” They were **renown** and **famous worldwide**. They were known in Babylon, Sumer, Egypt and China. Who were these men?

God stopped these men from continuing their violence by bringing Noah’s **flood**. However, after the flood, they again, were showing their violent heads. Their **blood lines** continued after the flood, through Noah’s children and their wives. Who were these **mighty men**? All cultures name these “**first super-human beings**” in their ancient histories even though they are **masked** as “**gods**.” This was the beginning of “**the trinity**” since each nation reveals **three original gods** by different names, depending upon the language of the nation after God confused the **tongues**.

In **Sumeria**, they were called “**An**” or “**Anu**,” “**Ea**” and/or “**Bel**.”

Anu was “**of the sky god,**” Ea was “**a female mother of all humans**” and Bel was “**the serpent.**” In Egypt they had **Osirus, Issis** and **Horas**. Each nation called these same **gods** in their appropriate language. This was “**the origin of the trinity.**” Later, “**a fourth god**” came along, who was called **Tammuz**.

World archeology, also, determined **Anu** had come from “**the sky**” and **Ea** was “**a female, the goddess from whom all the world was born**” while **Bel** or **Baal** was “**the serpent god.**” This was “**the trinity**” and they all came from the **unknown, inhuman god** who lived in the heavens. In Egypt, this God was called **Amun**; in Sumer, He was called **An** and in Babylon, He was called, **Murdock**. How did this come about?

Noah had three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. Japheth was the **eldest** (Genesis 10:2). These three sons married women from three races or blood types – yellow, white and black. Ham had Cush who was black. **Cush**, meaning **black** and **Mizraim (Egypt)** and **Phut** and **Canaan** (Genesis 10:6). **Cush** had **Nimrod** who became the world’s first tyrant/leader, **a mighty man** (Genesis 10:8). Nimrod ruled Babylon and Egypt. **Nimrod**, a **giant, a superhuman**, a god who becomes the known **world’s champion**, like a **bull**. In history, Nimrod marries a white woman known as **Semiramis**, now a human goddess who becomes known as **The Queen of Heaven**, like Eve.

Early Sumerians were **nomadic** before they became agriculturists and depended mostly for their food from hunting. Nimrod became a **mighty hunter**, which is how he became a **King/Priest** of the known world. *The Bible* reveals he was a **mighty hunter** before **God**, a tyrant who was **violent** like a **bull** and **against God** (Genesis 10:8-9). Notice, who builds the **first head** of the **beast** with **the seven heads** controlled by Satan, **The Dragon**, “**And**

the beginning of his [Nimrod's] kingdom was Babel [Babylon] and Erech [Uruk, present day Iraq] and Accad and Calneh in the land of Shinar [southern Mesopotamia]" (Genesis 10:10).

You are ready to put together the **pieces** of the puzzle of “**the polytheist superhuman gods.**” Since Nimrod was a **mighty**, super human, his family and lineage were, also, mighty. How far back did his family go? Nimrod, was the son of Ham, who was the son of Noah, whose father, Lamech, goes back to Adam, who was “**The Son**” of God (Genesis 5). Adam was the **first human** “Son” of God, who was **made in the image of God** and, therefore was, also, a potential “god family!” Adam, in ancient history, whether Sumerian, Babylonian or Egyptian, is called a god or God’s “human son” made in **The Image of God** (Genesis 1:26).

This is the reason Sumerians, Egyptians, Babylonians, all regarded Adam as “a god.” They believed Adam was two-thirds “**godlike**” and one-third “**human.**” In fact, **cultures** or nations, in their history, have the same “**gods,**” but were addressed by different names. Each nation, therefore, claims they have the only **truth** and **compete** against each other with **their nation’s religion.**

Now, for “**the trinity.**” Adam was **An** of The Sumerians followed by **Ea** or **Eve**, the mother of **all living** and **Bel** or **Baal**, the god, Satan, the **snake**. Is it any **wonder** why the **snake**, the **dragon**, the **bull** or mighty ones are venerated and worshipped as gods in all **cultures worldwide**? Now, you know the **origin** or “**the trinity**” which is **Satan’s image** and **deception**. **The Ancient Babylonian Mysteries** were only known in (truth) by **The Priests, Scribes** and **King/Priests**, while the citizens all worshipped these humans as gods.

CHAPTER 26

SHEM, GOD'S HIGH PRIEST

In *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, a legendary king regarded himself as “a god.” He was a super human, warrior, tyrant and King of Ur, in Abraham’s hometown. This mythic poem covers the battle between Gilgamesh and other gods who, also, regarded themselves as “gods.” Ultimately, Gilgamesh is taken to the place of the dead, by “the god,” Anunnani, The Judge. This epic is nothing more than the fight between Nimrod and Shem, a righteous judge and High Priest of God. Now, to put history together.

Gospel Preached

The Gospel of Christ was preached since The Days of Enoch, God’s “Prophet.” Jude 14 declares Enoch preached The Return of The Messiah with ten thousands of **His saints**. This is *The Gospel of Christ*. Enoch, as God’s “**seventh prophet**,” was followed by Noah, The **Eighth** Preacher of **Righteousness**. In those days, “**The Priesthood**” of God was a Priesthood of **Faith** and “**lover of righteousness**.” Of Noah’s three sons, only Shem followed his father. Shem was one of the **nine** Preachers of **Righteousness** by **faith**. Noah believed God concerning **the flood** and built the **ark** and he and his family were saved. Just like Abraham, both lived in **faith** and believed God.

In *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, he seeks to find **eternal life** and he

seeks out **Utnapishtim**, a son of Ea, Ishtar or **Eve**, who is his mother (**great grandmother**). Utnapishtim finds the answer to **eternal life** and is taken to **Dilmon** where the sun rises. The epic states he has entered “the **assembly** of the gods.” Biblically, this is very probably Enoch, who walked with God and was “**translated**” so he would not see death.

Remember, Gilgamesh was on his journey to find **eternal life** when he went to **The Mountain of God**. The **scorpion** “god” told him he must go on his trek till he found God’s “**mountain**.” He came into **darkness** (no light) but kept going. Darkness kept increasing **tenfold** until he was in **total outer darkness**. At the end of **the twelve leagues of darkness**, he finally **saw light** and he **found himself** in “**the garden of the gods**” or **paradise**.

This is very similar to those who, one day, will come out of The Lake of Fire (twice dead) and find themselves in **outer darkness** as related in *The Book of Jude*. In the end, Gilgamesh returns to his home and dies. The entire **epic** is filled with myths and deception. The story comprises the **flood**, **Noah** and his family, then, into **outer darkness** and finally, the **death** of Gilgamesh. The intent of the epic is confusion with glimpses of insight. Gilgamesh could very likely be Cain, who built Babylon (the first head of the beast), when God confused their tongues and, thus, The Kingdom of Babylon and Gilgamesh’s “**rule**” ended.

Shem, who lived for over 600 years, continues as The High Priest of God after **The Order of Melchizedek**. Shem, as “**King/Priest**” of Jerusalem, is a **lover of peace** and **righteousness**, who, later, meets Abraham and blesses him with all the blessings of this life. Then, through Abraham’s **seed** he was to have **eternal life**. Worldwide polytheism and **the trinity** are firmly established in the religions of the world, except for Shem and his followers.

The second head of the beast under Hammurabi, with his **code**, reestablishes **The Neo Babylonian, an empire** from Mesopotamia to The Mediterranean Sea, to Egypt. The **second head** under Hammurabi could be very vicious but was **just**. Any infringement of Hammurabi's code had **severe judgments and penalties**. This code becomes very significant in world history when *The Old Covenant* under Moses was established.

Historians and some theologians conclude Hammurabi existed about 1700 B.C. to 1800 B.C. These same scholars believe Moses copied The Law of God with all its **harsh judgments**, from Hammurabi. They concluded his code could not be the same as God is in *The New Testament*. But they, definitely, are from **The One and same God**. The Law of Moses wasn't written until three hundred years later and never copied from Hammurabi's code.

After Abraham, Shem, the other fathers, such as Isaac and Jacob, were born and continued as the line of **the promised seed**. Isaac, born to Abraham and Sarah, was a miracle **birth**, just as **Jesus' "birth"** would be in the **future**. This birth, miraculously, brought about by God, continues The Holy Promised Seed and through **Jacob**, "**a covenant**" is made with God.

Jacob's Ladder

When Isaac sends **Jacob** to marry a girl from his family line in Haran, Jacob's twin brother, Esau, is furious because he sold his **birthright** to Jacob. In route, Jacob stops at **Luz**, a city north of Jerusalem for the night. Sleepily, he found a stone for a headrest. Once asleep, he had an unusual dream. In his dream, he sees a **ladder** starting on the ground and going up into heaven to God's "**house**." He sees angels running up and down the **ladder**. Upon arising, he is befuddled by the dream. What does it mean?

He realizes at **the top of the ladder** was a **gate** through which you could **enter** into **God's "very house"** in **heaven**. The angels were assisting those going up and perhaps missing a step and then, the angels are steadying them on the previous step and helping them to attempt to reach another step up higher.

Jacob makes a **startling statement**. This is **God's "house."** Jacob changes the name of the city from **Luz** to **Bethel**. The word "Bethel" in Hebrew is "Beth," meaning "house" and "El" meaning "God." Jacob enters into a **covenant** with **God**.

Since Jacob is fleeing Esau in the **wilds** of the wilderness, he promises God if he is safely delivered from his fears and comes back home, he will pay **tithes** of all he has. Here is the **principle** of **tithing**, which God **instituted**. Remember, Abraham, also, **tithed** to Melchizedek, (Shem) The High Priest. In both circumstances, the **tithes** were paid or promised because Abraham or Jacob never **received** any of "**the promises**" God made to them (to that point). That is why Abraham said he gave **tithes** to Melchizedek as a **proof** he knew **God would prosper him** in his human life.

This is the same situation with Moses and The Levites or **The Levitical Priesthood**. **Levi** would, also, not receive an inheritance in **Israel** and, therefore, had a right by God to receive **tithe** (Numbers 18:24). "**Tithing**" is God's "**system**" of providing a guaranteed income for those who have **no inheritance**. It is very similar to the widows and orphans who have no **inheritance** and, therefore, become the obligation of **the church**. That is why, biblically, only "**a priesthood**," which had not, as yet, received an **inheritance** for **serving God**, could receive tithes.

Christian ministers cannot take tithes because according to Ephe-

sians I, Christians have **all received an earnest** (down payment) of their inheritance. When The Christian Ministry takes **tithes**, as a **command** from God, they are **stealing** from those who should be getting those very tithes. However, it is not wrong to give ten, twenty, fifty or hundred percent, if you have the funds, to help those, in need, in the church, as long as tithes are not used as a **command from God for the ministry**. You are always to remember the **poor** or **needy** in the church and that includes the **ministry**, who, if they do not earn enough from their job – are worthy of their hire. The entire church is “**a priesthood**” and not just “**the preaching ministry**.”

Ziggurats

Jacob's **ladder** is a duplicate of **The Tower of Babylon**. It has stairs going to **heaven** and on the top of this **mountain** is a **gate to God's "house."** What is the difference? Instead of angels assisting those climbing **the ladder**, **The Tower of Babylon** had **false human gods** being worshipped, hoping those “**imitation gods**” could help them to the top. This is **idolatry** or worshipping **false gods**. Instead of **The One True God**, they worshipped “**a trinity of gods.**”

Babylon, by Satan, The Dragon, “Bel” or “Baal,” is “**the deceiver.**” He created many false gods (who were but human) as a requirement to have **eternal life** in God's “**kingdom.**” That is why Christ tells you in Revelation 18:4, “**Come out of her, my people.**” **Babylonian Mysteries** took **the truth** and made it **fiction**. As Paul said, “**They took righteousness and made it unrighteousness**” (Romans 1). **They worshipped the “creation” (polytheism) instead of The Creator!**

CHAPTER 27

ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

Babylon and its mysteries were ensconced in the world when Abraham entered the religious scene. He had been born and reared in Ur and was completely familiar with “the polytheistic system” and its mysteries. When Abraham left for Haran in Southern Turkey, he was told by God to go to a land He was going to give to him and his progeny, forever. In faith, he and Lot, his dead brother’s son, departed for Haran. Abraham, in faith, fled Babylon and by doing so came out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

First Covenant

Many are not aware God made two **major agreements** with Abraham. When Abraham departed, God told him that in this Promised Land, God would bless his family and bless them who blessed Him and would curse them who cursed Him. Also, through Abraham’s seed, all nations would be blessed (Genesis 12:2-3). Then, in Genesis 17:4-14, God made His formal “**first covenant**” with Abraham. This is a physical agreement based, only, on physical blessings. No **eternal Salvation is promised**. In this contract, God declares, first, a change of **name** for Abraham meaning “**A Father of Many Nations.**” No longer was he known as Abram. Secondly, many nations and many kings would come from Abraham. This covenant would last forever. Also, his seed inherits Canaan, forever and God would be their God.

To seal this contract, God instituted “**male circumcision**” to show it **only applied, physically**, to humans born from Abraham. This “**covenant**” was based upon Abraham’s “**faith**” to, always, **obey** God’s “**voice.**” Abraham **trusted God.**

The **second covenant** was after Abraham was willing to offer Isaac as a **sacrifice**. Likewise, Isaac was willing to be **sacrificed**. Here is what God promised Abraham. “**That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess gates [rulership] of his enemies. And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice**” (Genesis 22:17-18). This is a universal promise. It includes all nations. It is God’s “**announcement,**” His “**way**” will prevail over Babylon.

The **first covenant** was “physical” with “physical promises.” This **second covenant** was not physical and, therefore, did not **require circumcision**. Circumcision denotes human birth or reproduction but the second covenant is **spiritual** and does not require circumcision for a **very good reason**. This covenant is of the heart (spiritual).

A Spiritual Covenant

These two covenants are explained in Galatians 4. Paul reveals God’s “**two agreements**” as an allegory or **type**. Abraham had two sons, one by Hagar, an Egyptian, a slave of Abraham’s. This **slave** could not receive an inheritance because she and her son, Ishmael, were slaves. God tells Abraham to let them go **free (no longer to be slaves)**. Even though they came from **slavery** because Ishmael was of Abraham’s **seed**, he was to be **exceedingly wealthy**. This birth was as a human birth, therefore, needed cir-

cumcision for “human blessings” only. Abraham’s **legitimate heir** by a **miraculous birth** and **Isaac’s** willingness to be **sacrificed**, qualified Abraham and Isaac to be **heirs** of God in **all nations**. This **covenant** had, therefore, **no physical** requirement of **circumcision** although this agreement was, **also, spiritual** (Romans 2).

Paul understood these two **covenants clearly**. *The Old Covenant* made with Moses covered the first Abrahamic contract of **physical blessings, only**. Read Deuteronomy 28 where all the **curse**s and **blessings** are written. There is **no promise** of **Salvation**. This is why The Pharisees and Sadducees argued about “**a resurrection**.” Read Paul’s answer, “**For I testify to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law**” (Galatians 5:3). Why? Unless one keeps every part of The Whole Law, one cannot receive any blessings, but, instead, is liable for the curses. Remember, they received only “human blessings.” “**Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law** [Moses law]; **you are fallen from grace or mercy**” (Galatians 5:4). If you keep the **entire Law of Moses, perfectly**, there is still **no Salvation**. This **Law of Moses** only **blesses** one **physically**, because it only applies to **slaves** and their release to physical freedom and **prosperity**. This is the first step – coming to Christ (Galatians 3:24). “**For we through the spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh love**” (Galatians 5:5-6). How clear! The Epistle to Philemon is an example of Onesimus being set free from slavery and to look to Christ.

The first covenant with Abraham was only based upon physical blessings and curses so Israel would come out of **slavery** to **prosperity** in **The Promised Land**. In the **second covenant** “**prom-**

ise,” it was, completely, upon **faith** without **works**, because of **Isaac's sacrifice**. This was a **promise for Salvation**. How clear! Genesis 26:5 reveals Abraham **obeyed** God's “**voice**” when God told him, of His “**commandments**,” “**statutes**” and “**ordinances**.” Notice, **no judgments** or **curses**. Abraham obeyed God **because “he had a great desire to.”** He had an innate, deep desire to do so, through his **faith in God**. That is why Abraham prospered and was a **wealthy man**. That was the **first agreement** God made with Abraham and “**circumcision**” was required.

The **second covenant** was **totally** by **faith** and needed **no circumcision**. This was a contract by God with **no curses**. This is why **Christ, by His “sacrifice,”** removed the **curse** or **curses of The Law**. Now, The Law or “**commandments**” were kept by **faith** because, through Christ, **you just “want” to obey them**. For Christians it becomes **a matter of a change of your nature**, in your **heart** which never allows you to, even, think of lying or stealing, let alone murder or having a “false god.”

Priesthoods

Hebrews 7:12 **declares a change of The Priesthood requires a change in The Law**. Under Melchizedek, it is **all done with faith through Christ**. Is The Law **done away?** **No!** Now, by **faith** under The Melchizedek Priesthood, your very **nature** in your mind and **desire** are **changed to faith in God** because you **trust God** and want to **obey His “voice”** through your “**love**” for Him. This is The Covenant Story by Abraham, “**The Father of The Faithful**.” The stage is **set**. Babylon with their mysteries are established **worldwide** and God's “**promised covenants**” through Abraham and Christ offer the world “**free choice**” – choosing God's “**Tree of Life**.” But, they can choose **The Tree of Good and Evil** and follow Satan, if that is their choice.

CHAPTER 28

GOD'S PEOPLE

With most of the world “blinded by polytheism” (The Babylonian Mysteries), God is ready to call a people to be His “witnesses.” Abraham had Isaac, who had Jacob, who had twelve sons, known, eventually, as The Twelve Tribes and/or The Nation of Israel.

Out Of Sin

Jacob favored Joseph (his second from the last son) and gave him a coat of many colors. Some of Joseph's brothers were jealous of him and when they had the chance, they sold him into slavery. As time goes by, Pharaoh had a dream and, only, Joseph could interpret it. Joseph pronounces seven years of plenty followed by no rain (drought). Joseph suggests Pharaoh save twenty percent of grains each year of the good years. Pharaoh is impressed and places Joseph second in command in Egypt after him. It is during this time, Hammurabi is ruling Mesopotamia “**righteously**,” with a severe code, which he had or remembered God had instituted.

When famine came and Canaan is hit, Jacob, (now called “Israel, God's **people**”) sends his sons into Egypt for food. After two trips, Joseph makes himself known to his brothers who, all along, thought he was an Egyptian ruler.

All brothers are given a feast of rejoicing and invites their father, Jacob and his children's family to move to Egypt. Jacob is

elated to find Joseph alive and brings his family of seventy souls to Egypt.

Over the years the twelve sons grew into a nation of thousands. Then, the friendly Pharaoh dies and the new Pharaoh becomes hostile to the growing Nation of Israel. Pharaoh comes to fear the great number of Israelites who are, also, prospering in The Delta Area of Egypt. The Pharaoh decides to make **slaves** of The Israelites and has harsh taskmasters put over them.

In the meantime, in Canaan, The Amorites become totally vicious and violent. The “**promise**” made to Abraham, four hundred thirty years earlier, as God prophesied, was about to take place. This places the world scene about 1500 B.C.

Israel, because of **sin**, is about to be delivered from **slavery**. They were **steeped** in The Babylonian Mystery system of Egypt which the **whole civilized world** followed. God was ready to send His “**people**” into the world as His “**witnesses**” to **observe their inheritance** of becoming a **prosperous nation in The Promised Land**. All they had to do was have **faith** in God and **obey Him**. Abraham’s tithe was to be blessed. Jacob’s tithe was, also, to be blessed.

As a baby, Moses, God’s “**chosen leader**,” from The Tribe of **Levi**, was miraculously saved from the river while floating in the basket and adopted into Pharaoh’s house by the Pharaoh’s daughter, who was a **princess**. For **forty** years Moses was revered as a **prince** in Egypt and educated in all the ways of The Egyptians. After Moses killed an Egyptian guard because he was mistreating a fellow Israelite, he had to flee Egypt to Jethro in The Land of Canaan.

There he spent forty years in Midian. He married, had a family

and his father-in-law, Jethro, was A Priest of Midian and known as a **God-fearer**. God abode in The Mountain of Midian, a true **Ziggurat**, as Jethro, The Priest, explained. Jethro, a Midian Priest followed Melchizedek as a Priesthood.

One day, Moses had an encounter with an angel within a burning **bush**. Moses was told he was on **Holy “ground”** and to take his shoes off because God’s **“glory”** was there (Acts 7).

God gave Moses His “commission” to deliver His **“people”** out of Egyptian **slavery** (sin) or The Mystery System to be **God’s “witnesses”** to the **world with God’s “blessings;”** (**liberty** without **slavery**). Moses was eighty years old at this time. Although he had forty years of an Egyptian education and forty years of God’s **“truth,”** he was very hesitant and was afraid to deliver Israel because he did not **speak well**. After God smites all **the firstborn** in Egypt (while saving Israel’s **firstborn**), Pharaoh allows Israel to leave with Moses and Aaron.

Firstborns, as the world knew, were special to God because they are to receive a **double inheritance** and become responsible for the **welfare** of their family. Egypt was, now, destitute of firstborns, but **all Israelites** were **safe** and left after that Passover evening on “the night to be remembered” with a **high hand** out of Egypt. God had passed over Israel’s sins and they were blessed. Because they were in **slavery** all those years, God had them take a share of plunder from The Egyptians. It was payback time. Read Exodus 1 to 18 for the complete story. Israel had to come out of Egypt (that was Babylon) like Abraham (Revelation 18:4).

God’s Change of Mind

Israel was delivered from **slavery** and, now, was rejoicing. The

last hurdle to **freedom** was crossing The Red Sea. All of a sudden, Pharaoh changed his mind, literally, became mad, when all their firstborn were killed, including his **own son** and went after them with his army.

At The Red Sea, The Pharaoh and his army believed they had Israel trapped. What protected Israel was a cloud in the daytime and a pillar of fire at night. Moses said to Israel, “**Behold the salvation of your God**” and the **sea** parted and all Israel was **baptized** as they went through, safely, to the other shore, (delivered from **slavery** and **sin**). Pharaoh pursued and he, with his army, all drowned. Sin was, then, put to **death** with that **baptism** and Israel was **clean** because they **relied on God**, in **faith**, for **safety**. Israel was ready to **enter The Promised Land**.

Assembled at Mount Horeb, Israel was ready to agree to a **covenant** with **God**. Here is what they said, “**And all the people answered together, and said, all that the Lord hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto God**” (Exodus 19:8).

Now, Israel had to cleanse themselves and appear before The Lord who was in a **cloud**. The third day they were assembled before God, who was on “**the mount**.” With lightning, thunder and the earth shaking, God began to speak. Here is how the people reacted, “**And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightning, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice [angel] of the trumpet exceeding loud, so that all the people that were in the camp trembled**” (Exodus 19:16).

God knew Israel would be **afraid**. He knew all the “**man-made gods**” they feared, followed and worshipped kings, caesars and

rulers. You are about to see why some scholars and theologians believe **this God of Israel** was not the **same God** as in *The New Testament* and, was the reason they, **rejected** *The Old Testament* and Israel's True God. What an **error!** This was done by God for a very important **spiritual reason**. Before **Moses** went to the mountain to receive *The Ten Commandments* (in **stone**), God, directly, **gave Israel The Spoken Word** – *The Ten Commandments*, verbally (Acts 7:38-39). Read all Exodus 19 and 20.

Because Israel feared God and agreed to obey Him to learn of God's "**righteousness**" they were **accepted by God** (Acts 10:35). Israel, at this point, became "**God-fearers.**" After God spoke *The Oracles* or *The Ten Commandments*, **verbally**, here is what the people said, "**And they said to Moses, speak [you] with us, and we will hear: but let not God speak with us, lest we die**" (Exodus 20:19). Israel was willing to obey God because they **feared Him**. "**The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom**" (Proverbs 9:10).

Moses entreated God, saying "The Gentiles will say you brought Israel out of Egypt to kill them." (The Gentiles always believed they had to **placate** their gods and they treated **The True God** like all the pagan gods they had encountered in the past). God made this statement after Moses pleaded to give Israel mercy, "**And I will make all my goodness pass before you, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before you and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy**" (Exodus 33:19). God told Moses the advice he gave Him was **good**, "**for you have found grace in my sight, and I know you by name [who you are]** (Exodus 33:17).

The question is – "did God give Israel **mercy** or **grace?**" God told Israel, He would not lead them but would send His "**angel**"

or “**messenger**” to lead them. Here is how God’s “**angel**” would be with Israel, “**Beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgression: for my name is in him**” (Exodus 23:21). God would not give **mercy** or **grace** to Israel. Why not? This sounds just like Hammurabi’s code of “**no mercy**” or “**an eye for an eye.**” This does not **sound** like The God of *The New Testament*. It isn’t! First, God wouldn’t **lead** them; it was **an angel** or **messenger** of God who was to **lead them**.

If The God of *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* are the same, then why was God, who was full of mercy, not willing to lead them? Here is God’s “**answer**” as to why **no mercy** would be **given them**, “**The Lord made not this covenant [contract] with our fathers [Noah, Jacob, Isaac, Abraham], but with us [Israel only] even us, who are all of us here alive this day**” (Deuteronomy 5:3). This was an additional covenant **added** to *The Torah* because of their **sins**. None of the fathers ever had this type of agreement made with them. Why? “*Deuteronomy*” meaning “a rewriting of **The Law**” was an **addition** to The Law because of **sin** (Galatians 3:19). Deuteronomy is **The Added Law** to *The Torah*. *The Torah*, till then, **did not include the judgments, curses and blessings** (Deuteronomy 28). Now for the **reason**, “**O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it may be well with them and with their children forever**” (Deuteronomy 5:29).

They certainly **feared**, but they had a **wrong heart or desire in their nature**. They were still **carnal** with a **stubborn, stiff-necked heart**. That is why God changed His “**mind**” and gave this **covenant**, which He called “**a carnal commandment**” (Hebrews 7:16).

By using the word “**carnal**” (Hebrews 7:17-18) it did not mean *The*

Commandments, but meant the **people** had a weakness. Israel was **carnal** and, therefore, required not only **blessings, but curses**, as well. God changed **His “mind”** because of their **wrong hearts**. On the other hand, all the fathers had a **right heart** and needed **no curses**, but had **faith** in God as **faithful Abraham**, who kept *The Commandments* and statutes **because he “wanted to”** and **trusted God** (Hebrews 11:8). Then, God changed **His “mind.”**

CHAPTER 29

THE WILDERNESS

Hebrews 7:12 reveals “when there is a change of The Priesthood” necessitates “change of The Law.” Under The Melchizedek Priesthood, The Law is kept by faith or a desire to do so without the need for curses or works. With Levi, The Priesthood had no mercy, but had sacrifices and death.

One Priesthood administered “the righteousness” of The Law by faith, through Melchizedek. “Levi” was a “carnal administration” like The Gentile Code of Hammurabi. It had curses and death.

A Change In The Law

With Melchizedek, it isn't a matter of sin, but a matter of a change of your **nature** from **carnal** to **godly**. This statement by Jesus clearly clarifies the difference, “**Wherefore I say unto you, all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against The Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men**” (Matthew 12:31). Can't be simpler! **Rejection** of God's “**Holy Spirit**” is what decides **Salvation**.

God knows everyone is a **sinner**. As humans in the **flesh**, no one can stop **sinning**. This is what is important about God and knowing how God thinks. **God never expects you to do that which a human can't do**. That is why God intends and allows individuals

to be **blinded**. John 9:41 reveals God does not hold you responsible for **sins** when you are spiritually **blinded**.

With Melchizedek, you are **forgiven** for all your sins when you, finally, **repent**. What God wants is a change of your human nature to a Godly nature so **you cannot sin** because your **conscience** will no longer **permit yourself to sin** (you wouldn't even **think** of sinning). God wants to **destroy sin**. That is the change of The Law under The Priesthood of Melchizedek.

Under **Levi** as a Priesthood, you are only **told** what **sin** is, but, you never could change your **nature** to stop **sinning**. That is why only **animal sacrifices** were required.

Salvation is not a **matter** of **Law**, but a change of **nature**. With a **new nature**, God changes your **conscience** by allowing you to climb Jacob's **spiritual ladder**. When you come to the **Seraph** level of God's "**love**," **you will have fulfilled The Law**. Israel was **blinded** by The Letter of The Law, which was to bring them to Christ or Jacob's "**ladder**" which is, now, Christ's "**ladder**" (John 1:51).

Back To The Wilderness

Slavery did not teach Israel their **lesson**. They feared God just as pagans feared their "little gods." Even when God delivered them from **slavery**, they didn't get the point.

God gave them one more chance to show **faith** and **trust Him**. They came to **The Promised Land** and sent **spies** to see **the land**. The spies returned filled with **fear**. The **land** had all **the blessings** God **promised** but **The Canaanites** were **giants**. They lacked **faith** in **God** with the exception of Joshua and Caleb. God felt

they still had a wrong heart, so He decided they needed more **instruction**. So, back to the **wilderness**. This is what happened to Cain. “**Wilderness**” represents the **world** where Babylon exists and the people have to **live through it and be tested**. God, once again, led Israel by the **angel** for **forty years (one generation)** into the wilds to further, prove them. This time, unlike Egypt, God was with them to save them when they **needed help**. Ten times, Israel was tested and chose not to **trust God** even though He helped them with **miracles**. God’s “**desire**” is to prove you can have **faith** and **trust in Him**. Once you have a right heart and are **teachable**, God grants mercy for you to start climbing Christ’s “**ladder**” to **Salvation**. God will not try you until He knows you are **ready to trust Him**, in **faith** and you have a desire through God’s “love” without any fear.

Ten Talents

In Acts 10:35, God accepts any human from any **nation** as long as they work His “**righteousness**” with **faith in Him**. Since only God can make you **righteous** through Christ’s “**ladder**,” God allows you to continue, only, when He knows you are ready. Otherwise, as Israel, it does no good and the carnal Israelite nation (after forty years) was dead. They died in the **wilderness**.

This teaching by God, *The Torah*, “**the path**” or “**way**” applies to **all humanity**, including **Christians**. In Matthew 25, Christ tells the **parable** of **The Ten Virgins**, in reference to His “**return**” for His “**Bride**.” He accepts **five** and **rejects five** – why? The **five** wise ones keep growing **spiritually** with their oil. The **unwise virgins** run out of oil or God’s “**spirit**.” Christ turns down those who are not able to climb “**the ladder**” to **Salvation**.

Over and over The Letter of The Law cannot **give Salvation** –

only The Holy Spirit of God can. Acts 15 clearly reveals it isn't circumcision or **The Law** which will save you, but grace, through Christ, will give God's "**Holy Spirit.**" Until God knows by your **free choice**, you are **ready** to die for Him and His "**Son,**" you are not ready to become **like Him.** God always thinks of His "**children's**" good.

Change Of Witness

With the genesis of **The Third Head of The Beast** (Babylon – Israel was in trouble) from the days of Moses to Solomon. Israel, in *The Book of Isaiah*, corrupted herself with her lovers (Babylon and Egypt) and had to go into captivity to become **slaves** once again. It was back to **the wilderness** to be tried and **tested** again. Israel was first enslaved by The Egyptians around 1500 B.C. Then, in about 586 B.C. Israel became enslaved, a second time, when she had to surrender to her lovers (business partners), making deals with Babylon and Egypt for their survival. It was, literally, their second time in slavery.

The Third Head of The Beast, driven by Satan, once again, conquers all its enemies and God is ready to test His "**people**" so they could gain **trust** and have **faith** in Him (their Father, God).

CHAPTER 30

THE THIRD HEAD

Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, known as the head of gold, was The Third Head of The Beast. Carnal and violent, destroying everything in its way, in creating a world empire. This Third Head was one of The Four Beasts which would finalize the end of Gentile rule.

Image Of The Beast

Most Bible enthusiasts are familiar with The Great Image “**of the four world ruling Gentile Kingdoms**” in Daniel 2. The head is of **gold**, the breast and arms are **silver**, belly and thighs of **brass** and his legs of **iron**, his feet part of iron and clay. Obviously, his **head of gold** is the **most** valuable of all in **the image**. You will find a good reason as to why Nebuchadnezzar was “the head of **gold**.” The **legs** are of **iron**, being, exceptionally, militarily **strong** and **powerful**. The **feet**, on the other hand, are of **clay** and **iron**. The legs represent **The Fourth Head of The Beast** and the **feet** are of the **eighth**, which is of the **seven**. This **image** in Daniel 2, covers all of The Times of The Gentiles which includes all of world history till The Return of Christ when Jesus establishes **God’s “kingdom.”**

Nebuchadnezzar is truly the head of **gold** because he plays a **very important role in God’s “plan.”** God was ready to **transfer** from **Israel (God’s “people”)** from being His “witnesses” to anyone in the world who “**fears God and seeks righteousness**” (Acts

10:35). Now, “**the wedding invitation**” is sent out to all the peoples, worldwide, both to the “**bad**” and “**good**” (Matthew 22:10).

Babylon, in Nebuchadnezzar’s time, took over (from God) as Israel’s “**head**” and “**leader**.” They wanted to look to their **lovers** (business heads) rather than God. So, God turns them over to The Mysteries of Babylon, (although God is always mindful of them).

Israel And Judah

The Book of Isaiah reveals the **prophecy** of this period from The Time of The Gentiles until The Return of The Messiah, The Christ and the formation of The New Heaven and The New Earth. That is why the name “Isaiah” means “**God saves**.” God allows The Ten Tribes of Israel to go into **captivity** (under The Assyrians). These Ten Tribes are, then, scattered throughout the world and become known as **The Lost Ten Tribes of Israel**.

Two and a half tribes, led by Judah are called by the name of “Judah.” One hundred thirty years after Israel’s captivity, Judah goes into captivity under Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon in 586 B.C. During Judah’s captivity by this **Third Head of The Beast**, The Jews try to remain faithful to God. Because they tried to keep their faith, they were almost eradicated in the days of Queen Esther, by Haman.

Because of Daniel, The Prophet and his continual prayers to God to deliver His “**people**,” The Jews, God told Daniel they would come back to Jerusalem in **seventy years**. Once they returned it would begin what was known as **troublesome times**. At this time The Gentiles were still the rulers. God gives Judah one more chance to be Christ’s “Bride.”

Nebuchadnezzar's Lesson

During Nebuchadnezzar's rule, he had a dream. He had dreamed about a large tree which was finally cut down to its roots. The King asked Daniel for an interpretation of the dream. You can read the account in Daniel 4.

Daniel interpreted the dream, "**As long as you give The God of Heaven credit for your success and kingdom, that God was The True Ruler of the earth, you would continue to be blessed.**" Instead, The King became carried away with himself and thought he was "**a god.**" Because he hadn't acknowledged God as The True God, he was to lose his throne and wander in the wilderness as an animal for seven years, losing his mind.

This happened to Nebuchadnezzar as foretold by Daniel. When he came to his **senses**, he acknowledged The True God as God and was restored to his kingdom. He had learned that God blessed his authority and kingdom so God's "**people,**" The Jews, could be protected. He was The Head of Gold and a valuable vessel in God's "**house**" over His "**people.**"

Another example is when Belshazzar became King of The City of Babylon while his father was in another part of his empire, he got carried away with himself and had a great feast, giving honor to himself as "**a god.**" Because of this, he lost the kingdom to The Fourth Head of The Beast, Media-Persia (Daniel 5).

The rest of *The Book of Daniel* covers the prophecy relating to The Fourth and Fifth Head of The Beast, Media-Persia under Cyrus and The Greco Kingdom under Alexander, The Great (Daniel 6 and 7). Daniel 9 to Daniel 12 gives you the prophecy of **the restoration** of Judah to Jerusalem in **troublesome times** under

the decree of Cyrus, The King of Media-Persia, right to The Return of Messiah in **the end-times**. It is in the **end-times** Christ will return and conclude **The Time of The Rule of The Gentiles** and establish **God's "kingdom"** with all Israel.

In Daniel 7, under Belshazzar's rule of Babylon, Daniel has a dream covering all **The Heads of The Beast**, seven in all, with a final eighth head, an image of the seventh, shall arise with ten kings to rule **the world**, precariously. They are The Ten Toes of Daniel, who are **part of iron** and **part of clay**.

Fourth And Fifth Head

Following Babylon as The Third Head of The Beast is Media-Persia, The Fourth Head and, finally, The Fifth Head is The Greco-Macedonian. Once again, you come to an important time in world history, The Sixth Head of The Beast, The Roman Empire, the most violent of all.

Alexander, The Great, only ruled for ten years, but during those ten years, he was compelled to spread The Greek Culture to the rest of the world. Every kingdom Alexander conquered, he forced The Greek Philosophy, its customs and "human gods" upon it. One way was by having his generals marry the local princesses of the countries he conquered.

This was the Greek influence upon Christianity with its "**gods.**" Ptolemy, a Greek general, also followed The Babylonian Mystery System. By the time of his death in 333 B.C., the world was changed to have a Greek influence. When he died with no heirs, four of his generals divided his empire. In Egypt, Ptolemy became the new Pharaoh. The King of Syria under the Selucids became The King of The North. This caused great troubles for Judah and the

building of **the temple**. This was especially true for Antiochus Epiphanes when he desecrated **the temple** with The Abomination of Desolation in 267 B.C.

Rome, **The Sixth Head** of The Beast, finally takes over the kingdom from The Greeks in 64-67 B.C. by Julius Caesar. This is a **crossroads** for world history. Ancient history enters **The Modern Era**. The first five heads are gone as John reveals in *The Book of Revelation*. Judah signed a decree with Julius to keep their religion but would obey Rome.

The Sixth Head, then, rules and the anticipation of The Messiah, The Christ, is **high** in Judah. All look to a new King David to emerge and deliver God's "**people**" (The Jews) from the captivity of **The Fourth Beast** in Daniel 2. The Last Days begin as Hebrews 1 and 2 reveals The Return of Christ which had been **greatly anticipated**.

CHAPTER 31

ROME, THE FOURTH BEAST

The last, The Fourth Beast of Daniel 2, was The Sixth Head of The Beast, which Satan rides. This beast is awesome and terrible. It was a composite of the former three – Babylon, Media-Persia and Greco-Macedonia. It was like a lion, bear and leopard, all in one. It was truly The Mark of The Beast, 666 (Revelation 17:10 and Revelation 13:18).

A Powerful Beast

Because of its superior **military technology** and **strategy**, no nation could stand up against it. Its phalanx, stone-throwing equipment and military strategy were advanced above every enemy it encountered.

Its government was a **republic**, like The United States, with a **senate (elders)** and a **counselor** as a leader, who became a “**caesar**” or “**tsar**.” In Hebrew, meaning “a supreme power with consent of the **senate**.” Power was to be **shared** and, therefore, in constant **competition**. Its **citizens** were relatively **free**, as long as they did not commit **treason** against the **state**.

Religion was tolerated as long as the specific religion was run by Rome and its policies. In 67 B.C. Julius Caesar signed an agreement with Rome and Judah. Judah was allowed to worship their God in “**the temple**.” The Roman government chose Herod, an

Edomite, as Judah's king. Rome, also, was responsible in choosing all their High Priests.

Rome followed pagan customs and was highly influenced by The Greeks because of Alexander, The Great's input. Their "**gods**" were similar, but their names were changed from Greek to Latin, such as Zeus to Jupiter, etc. This was The Babylonian Mystery "**system**" like The Tower of Babel. The Sixth Head of The Beast continued.

Slavery was common because of the abundant supply from conquered countries. The slaves, however, could gain their freedom, but many remained loyal to their master. Some masters who had no heirs, "willed" their estate to some of their slaves, who, in turn, became senators in The Forum.

Some Caesars earned the standing of "**a god**," such as Nero. This came about by the **bribery** of the **senate** and/or forced by Caesar. But becoming "a god," generally, meant they would be assassinated. They were a type of The Five Heads of The Beast, which were defeated. God's "**lesson**" to Nebuchadnezzar was not learned.

As the years went by, you will see some **popes** and **kings** were, also, swallowed up and went "**the way**" of **The Five Fallen Kings** for the same **reason** in thinking they **were the ones in charge, instead of God**. God allowed The Gentiles to rule over His "**people**" – Israel and "**the church**" but God was, always, in charge.

Reasons For Wars

You are about to find out why **more wars** are fought over **religion** than for any other reason, "**From whence come wars and**

fightings among you? Come *they* not hence, *even* of your lusts that war in your members” (James 4:1)? James reveals war is inherent in human nature. Why? Humans want things to go **their way. In this world, **blinded** by **Satan**, the **greatest human prize** is **world government**, both **civil** and **religious**! **Everyone, after all, must be “right” or “righteous.” Who knows better than the human race?** But what about **God’s “righteousness”** and His **“way?”** Being **“self-right”** is **“coveting”** and **“idolatry”** (Colossians 3:5).**

Now, back to The Garden of Eden and **The Tree of Good and Evil**. This is **Satan’s image**. Satan wants to be **like God**. That is why there are **more wars over religion** than for any other reason. The **government controls** the people through **religion**. This is why **The First Five Heads** had **religion** and **government together** ruled by a **Priest/ King** in their city/state empires. Rome’s High Priest, as in Egypt, was The Pontifex Maximus.

God compares **“this world’s rulership”** to The Beast With Seven Heads followed by an Eighth **“image.”** Beasts, such as a lion, bear and leopard, devour everything in their path when it lusts for food. That is a definition for The Mark of The Beast’s actions. When Christ **“returns”** He says, **“But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance”** (II Peter 3:8-9).

Some Christians believe this, **only**, refers to **Christians**. **Can’t be!** The **subject** is **repentance** and Christians have **already repented**. This is talking about **Universal Salvation**. God will be patient **until all have the opportunity to repent**. There is no date

set and **God** will wait till everyone **repents**. The Roman Government, The Fourth Beast, could have been set at **The End-Time** if The Tribe of Judah would have accepted their Messiah, Jesus, The Christ. Instead, they didn't and a curse was placed upon the earth (Malachi 4:6). Read the book *God's Story* for all the details.

Matthew 21:43 states, "**Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.**" What nation is this? It is "**the nation of God's people.**" But, this will **not happen** until **The Bride becomes worthy to be The Wife** (Revelation 19:7).

History from **The Time of The Fourth Beast** continues until **God's "people" are worthy**. Till then, **Satan's image** continues because of **lust** and the **desire** for **government** and **religion** to control **the world**. This is why Christ declares God's "**people**" need to come out of this Babylonian-Mystery "**system**" of Satan's (Revelation 18:4). Who are **God's "people?"** Acts 10:35 states, "**But in every nation he that feareth Him and worketh righteousness, is accepted of Him.**" This is **God's "decree."** It matters not what denomination, religion or government, if one comes out of Babylon by **fearing God** and works "**righteousness,**" **God accepts that person!** These are the **people God finds to be worthy**. God, from The Time of **The Sixth Head**, **patiently "endures" until "all" come to repentance.**

You are ready to continue **the story** and **trek** through history as you watch God's "**plan**" unfold.

Rome is in control of the world as The Sixth Head of The Beast, crucifies Christ and "**a new wedding invitation**" is sent out to the world, rather than, only, to Judah, who rejected Him, "**Then saith he to his servants [church], the wedding is ready, but they**

which were bidden were not worthy. Go you therefore into the highways and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good; and the wedding was furnished with guests” (Matthew 22:8-10).

Rome, **The Sixth Head**, becomes the **spiritual crossroad**. This is **history** in the making. Rome’s **government** and **religious control** becomes a **forerunner** of the world which is **Satan’s image**.

Babylon, The Great Whore, blinds or makes the world drunk with her golden chalice of wine (Revelation 17:2-6).

CHAPTER 32

JUDAH'S DESTRUCTION

Roman rulers were not only violent, but were “mad men” who thought they were divine. Those who ignored God’s “warning” to Nebuchadnezzar “to always remember God, who is The Ruler of The Earth,” were driven by their egos. Caesars like Nero, who thought he was God, literally went mad. These Caesars would try to completely, destroy their enemies such as Judah and all Christianity.

Judah's History

In 70 A.D. “**the temple**” was destroyed by Titus, who became Caesar after his father, Vespasian, died. However, this did not abate the **zealots** from fighting Rome. Masada was an example of their resistance.

The **curse** of Malachi 4 began with “**the destruction of the temple,**” as Christ predicted in Matthew 24. Christians in Jerusalem fled to Pella as Jesus instructed them. Zealots, like Bar Kokba continued their fight until they were defeated completely in 135 A.D.

From that time forward, no Jew was allowed in The City of Jerusalem. His prophecy in Luke 21:24 was fulfilled, “**And they [Judah] shall fall by the edge of the sword and shall be led away captive into all nations and Jerusalem shall be trodden down**

of the Gentiles, until the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.” Judah's complete destruction was accomplished by The Sixth Head of The Beast, (Rome). Now, Satan would go after “the church.”

The Republic And The Caesar

Most of society sees The Roman Government as 1,000 years of absolute rule. The Government of Rome was anything but that. The Emperor who couldn't always act as an Emperor had to constantly use **bribery** and spies and intercepted, when necessary, to keep his authority between **the senate** and The Roman People.

On the surface, Rome was a **republic**, much like The United States. In reality, the amount of power of The Caesar was constantly in flux. Some of The Emperors like Nero and Caligula thought they were “**gods.**” They were harsh and dictatorial to get the people to do exactly what they expected of them.

They really were a **type** of The **Five Heads** that had fallen. Just as Nebuchadnezzar went **mad** for seven years, so, also, did some of The Roman Caesars. Later you will see that some Popes played as “**gods,**” and some acted as “**kings.**”

God is The Ruler of The World and when others thought they were a “god,” usually they were assassinated by their own troops or family members.

Praetorian Guards

After Octavian's rule as Caesar Augustus, the position of emperor became more dangerous. The senate passed “**a law**” to allow bodyguards or an army in Rome, which was against Roman Law, to protect The Emperor. This army was called The **Prae-**

torian Guard, just as The Popes have The Swiss Guards. This army meant to protect world leaders was instituted by The Roman Senate.

Pontifex Maximus

The title of Pontifex Maximus related to **the religion** of Rome, was given to **The High Priest**. By this time, The Office of Emperor over **the civil government** and **religion**, The Pontifex Maximus, had separated. At times a Caesar would carry both powers, “**civil**” and “**religious**.”

The Sumerians had King/Priests just like The Order of Melchizedek, who was a King/Priest. This is significant in God's “**Plan of Salvation**” which will be covered later.

During The Assyrian Babylonian Government and Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar, The Office of King and High Priest were separated. The same process was followed under The Egyptians with Pharaoh and a **High Priest**.

This concept of High Priest and a King was of Babylonian origin. Throughout world history attempts of controlling both offices under a “**ruler**” or “**king**” (with The Priesthood gave authority or power over peoples' lives, both religious and civil). Wars have continually been **fought** over “**the King/Priest principle**.”

Enemies All Around

Rome, **The Sixth Head** of The Beast, was almost constantly at war, if not internally, then externally. Captive nations conquered by Rome did not like being “**in tribute**” to Rome. In The **East**, during Julius Caesar's day, into Octavian's rule, The Parthians,

constantly, fought against Rome when temporary agreements were made. The only peace they had was when North Africa, especially The Carthaginians or Phoenicians, were in battle with Rome.

Commerce

The central motivation for war or peace was always **commerce**. **The Silk Road** from China to Egypt was **vital**. The Phoenicians, from Tyre, constituted merchant commerce throughout the known world. Britain for its **tin** and goods from other European areas, such as The Gauls (which were comprised of the countries of France and Germany) were of great interest to Rome. War enlarged the **coffers** of Rome. In fact, Rome paid their **legions** with, not only, free daily **rations**, but a part of the **spoils of war**, also. This is why so many **patricians (the wealthy)** sent their sons to **war**. In time, even **slaves** became part of The Roman Army and achieved hero status and were allowed to become part of the **senate**.

Over time, all these senatorial policies led to **the weakening** of The Roman Empire. Commerce or business was at the **heart of it all**. Commerce, by these **violent methods** of **The Sixth Head**, kept **Rome prosperous**. It is very much like the world today – citizens, basically, are not interested in government as long as their prosperity continues. Having jobs, paying bills and enjoying life is what matters. In time, when Rome had trouble controlling their neighbors with **their legends** and **tribute**, Rome deteriorated to a **welfare state**. Greater and greater benefits had to extend to its **citizens** to keep them **content**. Read *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire* by Gibbons.

Slaves from captive nations multiplied to such a point, they became a political power. Some of these slaves worked on farms

for their owners. When the owners died and had **no heirs**, they left their **wealth** to their **slaves**, who they **freed** upon their **death**. Slaves, **now free**, became wealthy and became part of the political scene and, finally, some were part of **The Senate**. Later, new policies became **law** and Rome continued its **plunge into a welfare state**. In *The Decline and Fall of The Roman Empire*, it is said two-thirds of Rome was on welfare before it fell. The United States and much of the world are headed in that direction.

CHAPTER 33

THE SEVENTH HEAD

The Sixth Head, The Roman Empire, was crumbling between 220 A.D. till Constantine started The Seventh Head of The Beast. The Old Roman Empire gave way to a New Roman capitol, Constantinople.

The Constantine Vision

When Emperor Diocletian had no heirs and he wanted to retire, he appointed two proconsuls to head Rome. Right at this time, Rome's enemies, the revival of The Persians in The East and The Visigoths (Western Goths), The Ostrogoths (Eastern Goths), were chipping away at The Old Roman Empire. The Sassanian Persians ended up in control of The Eastern Roman Empire, including Palestine, Syria and all of Mesopotamia. The West was attacked by The Ostrogoths and Visigoths from The North making inroads into Italy, itself. For the **first time in 300 years**, a wall was built around Rome. The Roman Government, in prior years, was protected by its **superior Roman Legends**.

Old Rome was **gone**. This Sixth Head died and a new Rome was about to have a **rebirth**. **The Seventh Head** was about to be **resurrected** with a **new religion**.

After Diocletian retired, about 300 A.D., he gave The Old Empire to two Caesars, **Constantine** and **Maxentius**. But, they stood in opposition to each other at **The Milvian Bridge**.

Constantine had claimed to have a **vision** when he looked to worship “**the sun**” and **saw the symbol of a cross**. Christians, a persecuted people for 300 years under The Old Roman Government, had, then, penetrated every aspect of Roman “**life**.” From the slaves to the poor, right to the patrician populous and The Emperor’s “**household**,” Christianity was present. Rome, it seemed, was to be **rescued** by Christianity, with Constantine bringing Christians and “**pagan sun-worshippers**” together. The sign of the Sun and the Cross were to become Christianity from Constantine’s vision.

It was relatively simple. **The High Priest** in pagan Rome was called **Pontifex Maximus** or **High Priest**, who worshipped the old Babylonian “**sun god**” – **Shamash**. By transferring The High Priest’s office to Christianity, by calling The Roman Bishop, Pontifex Maximus or “**First Among Equals**,” both pagans and Christians were being **united**.

It is said by The Vatican, that Constantine, in his will, passed the office of Pontifex Maximus to The Bishop at Rome to be Pontifex Maximus or The Pope to inherit The Old Roman Government, itself. That is why **The Vatican** is a **separate state** with its own army of **Swiss guards**. The Bishop of Rome became The Father of The Roman Empire. **The Vatican** claims to have this document in their library.

Constantine, heading “**A New Rome**,” pushed his rival, **Maxentius**, over the bridge, which was too narrow and he drowned. Constantine had become **The Savior of Rome** and established this new Rome in **Constantinople**, between Asia and Europe. Constantine had united both The Western Christian Church under Rome and The Eastern Christian Church at his **new city**. The Greek Orthodox Church with its **Patriarch** was head of all The

Orthodox Religion. Rome was called **The First Among Equals** because Rome was the original capitol of The Empire. This union of Eastern and Western Christianity stayed united when the **split** came about 1100 A.D. over doctrine and power. **The Seventh Head of The Beast**, The Roman Government, was **saved** by Christianity when united with The Pagan Babylonian “**system**” of “**sun worshippers.**”

Though The Catholic Church has a Seventh Day Sabbath liturgy as **The True Sabbath**, in 325 A.D., The Council of Nicea gathered over 350 Bishops from around The Mediterranean Sea to discuss the **divinity** of Christ. A Christian war began between **Arius** and **Athanasius** over Sunday “worship.” Sunday, **officially**, became their “**Sabbath.**” The divinity of Christ was the issue.

For some time, Christians argued over keeping The Seventh Day Sabbath according to *The Ten Commandments* of **God** or change to the **first day** of the week, Sunday, because they claimed Christ was resurrected on the **first day**. Some already kept Sunday and, then, it was official.

Constantine married paganism and Christianity together by placating Christians to keep “**pagan days**” earmarking them with Christian names as Christian days, like Easter after The Babylonian “goddess,” Ishtar or **Issis**, in The Egyptian **faith**. The union of **The Two Legs** in Daniel 2 of **The Great Image** was complete. Eastern Christianity and Western Christianity with The Pagan Babylonian “**system**” became one known as **The Seventh Head of The Beast** and now **full-blown**.

Acts 10:35

When The Apostle, Peter, baptized The Centurion, a Gentile and

his household in Acts 10, Peter realized God was calling **all nations**, pagans and Christians, to **fear Him (God)** and **seek righteousness**. This was a “world-shaking event” and was about to call God’s “**people**” from all nations out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4). “**Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation he that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him**” (Acts 10:34-35).

God has always used Satan for His “**purpose.**” God was ready to call **all nations** – the pagans, Christians, Muslims, atheists and agnostics to Christ’s “Wedding Feast,” both the good and the bad (Matthew 22:10). All are waiting for The Messiah or their Messiah.

This is the **method** or **plan** God has instituted and **pre-determined** to offer a chance for those who have a **right heart like God's!** God was **revealing Himself to those who had a heart to understand “the truth” and follow Him.**

God’s “**thoughts**” and “**ways**” are **higher** than **mankind's**. Clearly Isaiah wrote, “**So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper [succeed] *in the thing* whereto I sent it**” (Isaiah 55:11)! God, through His “**word**” (Christ), is **revealing Himself as The True Almighty God**. The people of the world, in too many cases, have been worshipping a **false god**. God wants you to know His “**thoughts**” and “**ways.**” God, through His “**word,**” is **letting you know who He is.**

CHAPTER 34

GOD'S THOUGHTS AND WAYS

God gave His “two witnesses,” Israel and The Church of God over to The Gentiles. From this captivity by The Gentiles, God would be accepting Christians from any nation who fear Him and seek His “righteousness” (Acts 10:34-35). What is God’s “righteousness?”

Christ's Ladder

In Genesis 28:11-19 God revealed to Jacob that “**a ladder**” is the way to God’s “**house**” and Jacob was responsible to climb that ladder. There are “**seven steps**” to ascend to the top of the ladder with the help of angels. But, Israel failed and had to go into captivity. In *The New Testament*, Jesus becomes “**the ladder**” for you to ascend to God’s “**house**” (John 1:51). **Perfection** is to become, exactly, like Christ (Ephesians 4:13). Christ shows Christians the steps to the ladder and The Church of God is now God’s “**witnesses**” and they must climb “**the ladder**” so they can achieve “perfection.”

You are to become **Holy** and **perfect** like Christ and God. How does God achieve this goal where you grow to have God’s “**righteousness?**” It isn’t **The Righteousness of The Law**, but under *The New Covenant*, you must take on the **very divine Nature of God** (II Peter 1:1-4). Exactly what is this “**divine**” Nature of God? **God is to “be all and in all”** (I Corinthians 15:28). God appeals to the wicked and unrighteous man to turn his thoughts unto

God (Isaiah 55:7). Then, God states He will be **merciful** to the wicked and the unrighteous by **pardoning their sins**. How? **“For my thoughts *are not your thoughts*, neither *are your ways my ways*, saith The Lord”** (Isaiah 55:8). God tells you, **“Seek you the Lord while He may be found, call you upon Him while He is near”** (Isaiah 55:6). **“For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thought than your thoughts”** (Isaiah 55:9). Israel received **The Law of Moses** because they **feared God** and said they would **obey Him**.

Notice what God said about Israel, **“Harden not your hearts, as in the day of provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness. When your fathers tempted me, proved me and saw my works forty years. Wherefore I was grieved with that generation and said, They do always err in *their* heart; and they have not known my ways”** (Hebrews 3:7-19). But, even if they tried, Israel couldn't enter God's **“rest” (kingdom)** because of their lack of **faith** or **trust in God** (Hebrews 3)! How did they **lack faith** and, thus, never received God's **“Holy Spirit?”**

Adam and Eve had the **same problem**. It wasn't a **matter of keeping The Law**. **As yet, there was no law or code** in force. The Law of Moses wasn't added until four hundred thirty years after Abraham. Now, The Church of God, by the **end of The First Century**, was, **also, in spiritual confusion** and God allowed **The Fourth Beast** to take over **Christianity** and instilled **“pagan beliefs”** mixed with God's **“righteousness.”** From 325 A.D., The Council of Nicea, God cries out, **“Come out of her [the whore] my people”** (Revelation 18:4). Matters not what **denomination** of Christianity, paganism, atheism, agnosticism or any other **religion**, God, then, works with **all nations** and **accepts those who seek His “righteousness”** and want to follow **His “ways”** (Acts 10:35).

Torah And Law

Did you know *The Torah* and **The Law** are not the **same thing**? The Law of Moses tells you what **sin** is (I John 3:4). *The Torah* is completely **different**. In Hebrew, the word “Torah” conveys the **idea** of “shooting a **straight arrow**.” “Torah” means “a **learning, a path or the way**.” The Law is **never done away**, but by keeping it, **no one can receive Salvation**. God gives His “**Holy Spirit**” so **you can learn His “thoughts” and “ways”** which will lead you to Christ and Salvation. That is why it **requires faith**. **God is *The Torah* or *The Way***. From Genesis to Moses, God reveals **The Way to Salvation**. You have each step listed of **the seven steps** up Jacob’s **ladder**. The Holy Spirit guides you up the **ladder of truth** to God’s “**house**” – His “**rest**.” Read the book *God’s Will*.

The Torah grows spiritually! It began with Adam and Eve when they had access to **The Tree of Life**. They rejected God’s “**Holy Spirit**,” which ended with “**the flood**” for all their progeny, except Noah and his family. God, after the **flood**, gave His “**First Law**” – that is, a **penalty or curse** for the **sin of murder**. It was **the covenant** with Noah and **sealed** by God’s “**throne**” – **the rainbow**. The more humanity rejects God’s “**Holy Spirit**,” the **necessity for Laws** becomes **greater**. That is the **reason The Law of Moses** was instituted, because of Israel’s **wrong heart**, which penetrated “**sin**.”

Christ came and **magnified The Law** (Isaiah 42:21). In Hebrews, it does not mean to keep it, but to **enlarge The Law** to the **statue of *The Torah***. The Law became **spiritual** (Romans 7:14), **a way of life** by The Holy Spirit and, therefore, made **The Law** more **honorable** because **there were no curses or death** connected to it. Now, **The Law** was **based upon mercy or forgiveness through Christ!**

Who Is God?

What God does through *The Torah* is to **reveal Himself** to you by His **“Holy Spirit,”** **“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power and of love and of a sound mind”** (II Timothy 1:7). God’s **“Law”** reveals sin and is important to know, but The Law **cannot and does not give Salvation**. God’s **“Law”** is **“a duty”** but you do not attain **Salvation** (Luke 17:10). Salvation can only come by **faith** in God, through Christ and His **“blood,”** with God’s **“Holy Spirit.”** **Period!** That is God’s **“Plan of Salvation.”** Read the book *God's Plan of Salvation*.

God’s **“Holy Spirit”** gives you **His “power,”** **His “love”** and **His “very thoughts”** and **“ways,”** which creates a **sound mind!** God, by His **“Holy Spirit,”** is revealing who **He** is and **how He “thinks.”** **“So shall my word be that goeth forth [Holy Spirit] out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper *in the thing* [purpose] whereto I sent it”** (Isaiah 55:11).

Now, you know God’s **“thoughts”** and **“ways”** to **“Salvation.”** Adam and Eve chose the **wrong way**. Israel made the **wrong choice** because of **fear**. Now The Church of God is in **confusion** or **Babylon** because of **The Fourth Beast, The Seventh Head, Constantine**. He forced God’s **“church”** to ride The Beast (the whore), confusing them by mixing Christianity with **paganism**. **“Come out of her, my people,”** is what God told Israel and all mankind (Revelation 18:4).

CHAPTER 35

SATAN'S GREAT DECEPTION

The Beast with The Seven Heads existed from The Tower of Babylon and continued to Emperor Constantine's time. The Seventh Head had two legs, a Western Kingdom, in Rome and an Eastern Kingdom, Constantinople in Turkey. Israel is nonexistent as a nation and is scattered throughout the world. The Christian Church was taken over by Rome, The Seventh Head of The Beast, which moved to Constantinople to rule The West and The East. Religiously, The Catholic Church runs The West as "First, Among Equals" with the title Pontifex Maximus. The Greek Orthodox Church is The Eastern "religious head" with a Patriarch overseeing it. Satan was ready to enforce his great lie upon the world.

The Eighth Image

Revelation declares that of The Seven Heads of The Beast, **five are fallen and one is** and the other, is yet to come and when he does come, **he will continue for a short space** (Revelation 17:10). Recapitulating, the five fallen are The Tower of Babel, Assyrian, Babylonia, Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar, Media-Persia and The Greco-Macedonian. Rome was **The Sixth Head** and **The Seventh** was Constantinople under Constantine, **"And the beast that was [seventh], and is not, even he is the eighth and is of the seven and goes into perdition"** (Revelation 17:11).

The Greek word for “**perdition**” means to “**cut up abruptly.**” This, actually, refers to the time when The Beast turns against the **whore** and **destroys her**. This eighth resurrection of **The Seventh Head** is spoken of, as if it is **like The Seventh** or **from it**. What does that mean? John gives the answer, “**For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill His will and to agree and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled**” (Revelation 17:17). Wow

God has given The Church of God to **Satan** and **The Beast**. Why? For God’s “**people**” to **learn their lesson**, “**to come out of her, my people.**” God will allow Christians to be **tested** and **tried** by Satan. With the downfall of **The Seventh Head**, Constantine and his government lasted until about 350 A.D. What comes **next**?

Image Worship

Revelation 13:11-15 reveals another “**beast.**” This one comes out of the **earth** and is not out of the **sea** like **The Beast** with **Seven Heads** and **Ten Horns**. This, earthly, beast has **two horns** like a **lamb** or **Christ**, but **it speaks like a dragon** or **The Beast**, which comes out of the **sea**. This “**beast**” with two horns, (western and eastern), are two world religions that believe in Jesus, but are **deceived** by **The Dragon** or **Satan**. Unknowingly, they **blaspheme** God. What do these two religions preach? The rest of Revelation 13 announces they should preach that Christians should **worship The Image of The Beast** with **Seven Heads** and **Ten Horns**. When does this happen?

Constantine brought all The Christian Bishops around The Mediterranean Sea and told them what to **preach**. They had **no** choice. Even Eusebius, a Church Father and Bishop, didn’t agree with Constantine and had to figure out what to tell his church when he

went home. The Bishops had **no choice** since behind **each** “attending Bishop” was a Centurion holding a **sword**.

Before Constantine moved the capitol of the government from Rome to Constantinople in Turkey, he claimed **The Bishop at Rome** was **The First Among Equals**. The Eastern Bishop became **The Patriarch** and was **equal** to the one in **Rome**. The Roman Church was **first** because it had The Priesthood, Pontifex Maximus (first) from Egypt.

Constantine took Rome’s government, the pagan office of **Pontifex Maximus**, which is **The High Priest** and gave it to **The Bishop** at Rome, making him **First, Among Equals as Pope**. Before this, all **Bishops** were called **Popes** or **Fathers**. Now, as Rome’s Pontifex Maximus, only **The Pope at Rome** was **First, Among Equals**. He, therefore, was **The Pope** or **First**. Constantine, **The Seventh Head of The Beast**, declared that **The Bishops of Rome** and **Orthodoxy** were **First** and **Patriarchs**. The Roman Bishop was **The First Pope** and The Orthodox Head, **The Second Pope** (was equal to Rome). Satan, then, had The Christian Church preaching or worshipping **The Image of The Seventh Head Of The Beast**. **The Lamb** (Christianity), now, was a **Beast**, worshipping **The Image of The Beast**.

After Constantine died, The Roman Government continued to weaken and **The Seventh Head** was **vanishing**. By 800 A.D., it had died and was replaced.

The two leading Christian Churches, Rome and Orthodoxy, remained to **foster Rome’s style of government**. These two churches **spread** and **approved The Image of The Beast** with **The Seven Heads** and **Ten Horns**, Rome in **The West** and **Orthodoxy** in **The East**. That is why Revelation 18:4 tells Christians

to come out of **The Roman Government's System (Satan's Image of warfare and violence)**. It is a **carnal system, predicated upon competition**. Rather than **loving each other**, they went to war **against each other**. That is why **more wars are fought over religion than for any other reason**. As Constantine died and control of Roman's government weakened, history entered **The Dark Ages** until **The Reformation**.

The Dark Ages

What made The Dark Ages “**dark?**” Rome, in The West, (after Constantine and his son's reign) was under attack. Beside being under siege, Rome was in a drought and it created a famine. It seemed like God was intervening to end the rule of **The Seventh Head of The Beast**.

In Byzantium, things were better, but, also, enemies from The North and East created a plague upon Constantinople. What was left was **The Two-Horned Lamb**, Catholicism in The West and Orthodoxy in The East. What was lacking was a military power, especially in **The West**.

Rome, as a city, was under constant need for **tribute** or funds. Its **legions** were depleted and it was much weaker than they had been in the past during Rome's glory days. The **legions**, being as they were, were scattered, being under attack by The Ostrogoths, Visagoths, Lombards, Heruli and Vandals. These tribes were originally from The North (as far as Scandinavia). All, including Germanic peoples, were depleting Rome. The Lombards were, actually, in Italy and by 800 A.D., needed a **savior**.

For a time, Justinian, was a Roman hero and gave some semblance of old Rome in The Sixth Century. At this time, an enemy from

The East appeared. He was a type of The Head of The Beast. **These enemies were The Arabs**, who were converted to **Islam**.

Because of widespread polytheism in The Western and Eastern Christian Churches, Mohammed suddenly appeared and was proclaiming **one God** (not many). The Western and Eastern Churches were under attack from all directions. **The Seventh Head** was **falling apart**. This was the **reason** why **The Dark Ages** were so **dark**. Famine, drought, disease and war from 400 A.D. to 800 A.D. prevailed.

The Image

The, only, powers left were **The Vatican** and The Orthodox in The East. Neither was a **military force**, but they took on The Image of The **Beast** and, actually, fought their enemies. Bribery, forcing agreements and a military force was their answer. Roman Popes had military forces under their rule. Finally, the answer to **The East** was The Crusades against **The Arabs** or **Islam**.

Following Justinian's attempt around 500 A.D. to resurrect The Roman Empire, Charlemagne or Charles, The Great of France made a pact with **The Vatican**. He was crowned by **The Pope** as the new head of The Roman Empire. This occurred in 800 A.D.

These attempts to reestablish The Roman Empire was a **type** of **The Five Original Heads of The Beast**, but they did not last. In fact, some Popes, militarily, attempted to start another "**new**" **Rome**, but it didn't work.

The Vatican claimed they had part of Constantine's "**will**," where **The Emperor** not only passed on The Pagan Priesthood of Pontifex Maximus, but that Constantine, also, **named The Vatican**

as The Roman Government's "**head.**" This contract was called **Domitian Constantine** (His will). No one, however, has seen this document.

The Vatican, after Constantine, was **legally responsible to continue Rome's system** or **The Image of The Beast, The Eighth Head**. This **Image of Rome, The Eighth Head** throughout history, is prevailing until Christ "**returns.**"

Because of this pact with Rome, both **civil** and **religious**, **The Vatican** began selling civil jobs and religious positions to **the highest bidder**. This is what caused Martin Luther to condemn Catholicism in the 1500's.

This **Image of The Beast**, (Satan's image), continues until Christ's "**return**" and He establishes **The True Kingdom of God**. Once The Nations of The World realize The Image of The Beast **led them falsely** by **The Great Whore, The Beast**, then, it, turns on this **woman** and **destroys her** (Revelation 17:16-18). This takes place when **The Ten Toes**, leading (as Kings) the **entire** world turns upon this **Whore** (Jerusalem, who martyred **The Prophets** and **The Saints**). God, at this time, regards Jerusalem as Sodom and Egypt, as Babylon (Revelation 18:20-24 and Revelation 11:8).

CHAPTER 36

DIVIDE AND CONQUER

In The East, The Byzantine Empire of Rome struggled with enemies from The Arabs and others, until The Turks took over control and Roman rule was over. The West was in chaos with duchies, tribes and nations, constantly, at war. Bribery, tribute and violence were the end results during The Middle Ages. Ultimately, between 1300 A.D. to 1400 A.D., The One-Hundred-Year War had started. Ultimately, the battle involved England and France. Highways throughout Europe were unsafe. Kidnapping and ransom were common. Their lives were in their own hands. Castles, walled cities and armies were built with tax money. Military might and success was extremely expensive. This limited amount of funds made it difficult for any one group to take over control of The Old Western Roman Empire. The Muslim Arabs made huge inroads into Europe and The Asiatics or Mongolians, like Ghengis Khan, who controlled vast amounts of Europe, as well as, The Far East. They, even, controlled The Steppes of Russia. All these invasions took place between 1100 to 1300 A.D. Rapid changes took place. The Western and Eastern “legs” of The Empire of Rome, by 1100 A.D. had ended. A new beginning was about to take place, which was laying a foundation for The Image of The Beast.

The Rebirth

About 1400 A.D. all the wars, over Europe, were coming to a **time of historical change**. The Byzantine control of The Eastern “leg” of The Roman Empire was concluded by The Turks taking over Constantinople, **The Seventh Head of The Eastern Beast**. The Turks changed the name of Constantinople to **Istanbul**. The Western Roman Empire, by the end of Roman’s rule, separated into many city/states. Historically, it was the time known as **The Renaissance** or **Rebirth**.

The Image Of The Beast

The Eighth Head, which is of **The Seventh** or like **The Seventh**, is about to become an “**image**” of The Beast, but not The Roman Government. This **image** of Satan will culminate world history, just as it started at The Tower of Babel or Babylon. God decided to stop the building of The Tower of Babylon for a very good reason. Read what God said, “**And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one and they have all one language; and this they begin to do and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do**” (Genesis 11:6). This is the origin of **globalization**. The world was one and God knew through **human imagination**, they, who already believed in **polytheism**, (many gods), would, ultimately, become “**at one**” with **each other** in **violence** and, then, He would have to intercede, as He did during “**the flood**” in Noah’s time.

God’s “**Plan of Salvation**” would, then, have to come to a **halt**. God, therefore, confused their **languages** and divided the nations to continue The Gospel of Salvation. They had built the tower, one **religion** with **many gods**, to keep, themselves, united as one Babylonian Mystery “**system**” and to give, themselves, **one name**

to stay **united** (Genesis 11:4). This was not God's "**Plan of Salvation**," but once again, Satan deceived The Gospel of Christ by **polytheism**. **The Trinity** was, now, in play.

The Image Reborn

The Renaissance, truly, was a **rebirth**. Human **imagination** was, finally, set **free**. Remember, Satan's image is to give humanity what it **desires** and it is a **mixture of good and evil**.

In Italy, The Old Roman Empire, "**the first**" European University began. Italy was no longer a united nation, but a grouping of **city/states**, just like the city/states after The Tower of Babel. The rest of Europe was fragmented into **dutchies** or **dukedom**s. Commerce rose to **new heights** and wealthy families became **nobles** as they financed wars between the dutchies.

As Italy had the first university, they, also, gained prominence in **art**, and The City of Florence became The Europeans "**art center**" which was financed by the wealthy **Medici** family. Europe was on the **way to progressivism**, just as it is called, today. Once Europe was no longer controlled by The Western Roman Empire, each nation was permitted to progress on its own. The only controlling factor was The Roman Church, by **The Papacy**. This restructuring was soon to be **released**. The Eastern "**half**" of The Old Roman Empire was gone but controlled by **The Muslims**. The Orthodox Church had fled to Ethiopia, Greece and Russia.

In 800 A.D. Prince Vladimir of **Kiev**, Russia, was searching for a religion to unite The Russian People, just like Constantine did through Christianity. Russians, up to this point, were considered **barbaric** and **pagan**. The word "**pagan**" meant "**country people**" or "backward, uneducated," as opposed to **The Greeks** and

Romans. The Prince came to see where God was, in Rome or Constantinople.

He was so impressed with the cathedral, called “**Sophia**” meaning “**wisdom**” – from that time forward, Russians became Russian Greek Orthodox. The Greeks were believed to be a **wise culture**. That is why Rome adopted Greek ways, as well as their gods, they just changed the names; such as Zeus to Jupiter. The worship of The Trinity from The Garden of Eden continued.

The head of Russia became **The Tsar** or **Caesar**, **The Divine Ruler** of The Eastern Roman Empire. The Russian alphabet was of Greek origin and, therefore, considered “**Holy**” as well.

The world scene was set. China, Japan, The Asiatics were far enough away to be **free** to build their own cultures with Satan’s **image** of the **snake** or **dragon** to be worshipped. In The West, **The Aztecs** and other tribes, developed their cultures with the **snake** and **dragon**, as well.

In Polynesia and all the world, along with Eskimos and Indians, the **creation** was **worshipped** instead of **The Creator**, each able to build their own ideas of the **survival of the fittest** – a mixture of **good** and **evil**.

Age Of Reason

The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel and The Jews, were all scattered in Europe. Thus, began amazing philosophies and technologies. The Jews were scattered, both in The Eastern and in The Western Nations. God’s “**people**,” Israel, were an “**influence**” – **worldwide**.

In Europe, the rapid development of **the university system**

spawned **modern science**. Education, especially among the **wealthy**, gave rise to the **reality** that humans advanced in **knowledge** by **observation** and **experimentation**. Modern-day **science** became a **reality**. Science in most universities took precedence over **religion**. Faith or **trust** left The Hands of God to mankind's observation and experimentation (**science**). **Secularism** was **born**, especially, when European **printing** was **invented** in Germany. The first to go on the "internet of the day" was *The Bible, The Gutenberg Bible*. This was right in the beginning of The Renaissance. Knowledge **exploded**. Not only did religion get **released** from **denominational control**, but science, then, replaced God as **The Source of The Universe**. This truly was a **rebirth of human society**. Humanity was, **then, free to use its own imagination of good and evil**. **The Renaissance** roughly ran from 1100 to 1700 A.D.

The Hebrew word for "**imagination**" is "**zamam**." It means "**to devise**" or "**invent**." It carries a **meaning of "to plot"**. It is a "**plan**" or "**purpose**." Satan's **image** was well **underway**. Now, humanity was **totally free to be like "a god"**. The difference is God is completely **good**, whereas humanity is a **mixture of good and evil**. Adam and Eve chose to **eat** of the **wrong tree** and **listen to Satan** as the **god of this world** (II Corinthians 4:4). The stage was **set**.

All that God had avoided at The Tower of Babel was set free to take place. Martin Luther, fed-up with Catholic polytheism, the **worship** not only of **humans as divine**, but **idols or things** being **worshipped** as gods. Bones and relics of all sorts were **sold** between churches. Bishops became "**bishops**" for a price. The church was up **for sale**. Remember, anytime Christianity was allowed to fear God and **seek righteousness**, **Satan** attacked as prophesied in Genesis 3:15. Satan did not leave The Church of

God, alone, when **Protestantism** was born by Martin Luther, a Catholic Priest. Satan stepped in, very rapidly, once again. This was a time of human new birth, to start over again. Another **Image of The Beast, The Eighth Head**, was **underway**.

Lutheranism was not enough. Now, a **host of denominations** was **spawned**. Satan attacked not merely with the denominational variety from Quakers to Lutherans and Baptists but those with **philosophy** or the **knowledge of life**. An educated person had to choose the church of their choice and there were so many to choose from. Satan, had finally, arrived and cast his **image** upon The World Babylon, **The Great Whore!**

The Renaissance was truly **The Age of Reason**. **Human imagination** or human reason or Babylon or **confusion** was the educational **environment of the world**. This was **The Last Days of The Fourth Beast, The Image of The Roman Empire**.

You are about to see the world **discover** amazing **technologies, medical advances, astronomical theories** and more. Since they originate from **science, observation** and **experimentation**, each **discipline** is both **good** and **evil**. Even religion, under **scientific eyes**, is in **Babylon or confusion**.

CHAPTER 37

ROMANTIC AGE OF REASON

The latter part of The 18th Century and The 19th Century was known in history as The Romantic Period. It was so-called because people were getting fed up with The Age Of Reason. The Romantic Period, a movement to satisfy the emotions, like fine art and classical music came into vogue.

Age Of Change

The Romanticism movement required money such as a king or a successful business man could fund. Money funded the best artists and musicians – Chopin, Wagner and others were hired by royalty to play in their palaces or write music, especially, for them. Fine art and the best furniture, placed in palaces and mansions, set the wealthy apart. This was, indeed, **The Time of The Classics**. It was known in architecture as the “baroque” period. It was elaborately ornamental.

Human nature, once again, took on the **blue bloods** as opposed to the **poor**. The **rich** stole from the **poor** and the **poor** stole from the **wealthy**, whenever they could. It was a time of **slavery**, as well. There was no **cheaper labor** than a **slave**. As usual, wealthy people continually, with human nature being what it is, “**survival of the fittest**” or the strongest, took advantage of the **weaker**.

One of the cheapest ways to make more money and cut costs was

to buy **slaves** from **Africa**, because **the tribes** were, constantly, fighting each other and sold their **captives** as **slaves**. Tribes began to sell these humans, wherever they could, to all the wealthy in far away towns, cities and nations. As time went on, "**whites**" bypassed buying from tribes and directly took slaves themselves, thereby saving the middle man's cost.

Another mode of **slavery** was to put poor people in prison when they couldn't pay their **debts**. It is done, today, by charging far more interest or **usury** to those in **debt**. **Debt is slavery**.

Many are not aware that a good number of **whites** became **slaves** and were **sold** to whites in the **north** during the time of **the thirteen colonies**. Slavery was not exclusive to the **blacks**. White slavery developed by the **wealthy** buying indentured **whites** as slaves in The United States, especially The North.

"**Black**" **slavery** was **most prominent** because it was the **blacks** who were the **last** to receive their **freedom**. In time, **white slaves**, **bought** their **freedom** just as some of the **blacks** in The North did. Only in The South were they slaves as long as their **masters** did not allow them to buy their freedom.

In the original **Constitution**, it wasn't only **the blacks** who could only have two-fifths of a vote, but included some of **the whites**, as well. Any slaves of any color, even The Asians who came to America to work on the **railroads** were **slaves** being bought by the wealthy **railroad** companies.

The **worst** of **all**, many immigrants had to have their young children, eight to twelve years old, work in factories. This certainly was humanity at its worst. To the surprise of many, this practice was worldwide, not only in the new settlements of America.

Kidnapping was, also, popular. The term “**shanghaied**” occurred in Western United States. When white men and women were **drunk**, they were taken to be **slaves** and **prostitutes** in **Asia**. Slavery has existed as a means of greater profits for the **wealthy** beginning with The Tower of Babel to this present day. Slavery and kidnapping prevail in nations today, as in The Southern “border” of The United States. This is **the history of humanity** when left to its own **human imagination**.

Government Robbery

Mankind, when left to itself with no **moral base**, ultimately, achieves its **lowest depravity**, where **governments steal from their own citizens**. Carl Marx, experiencing the robbery of the poor by the wealthy, felt justified in returning the **favor** by a **form known as equal distribution of wealth**. **Socialism or communism** became the **sophisticated term** for **government to steal from its citizens** by **taxation**. Who is to determine what “**fairness**” is? Certainly you can’t ask the poor or the rich what is really fair.

Christ gave a parable about an **owner of land** who was hiring **laborers** for his field. One agreed to work from early morning till night time for a **penny**. Each hour he hired another laborer for the same price of a **penny**. Even, at the **last hour**, he paid his final worker one **penny**. Those who worked longer complained. Complaints were the **origin of unions**. Christ merely stated, “**Didn’t you agree with me [to work] for a penny? Don’t I have a right to take what is mine and decide what I will pay?**”

Our American forefathers wrote *The Constitution* guaranteeing a **right of privacy**. Government, legally, **corrupted that privacy law**. Criminals, also, invade your privacy when they steal from

you. Because businesses comprise both **good** and **evil**, does anyone have a **right** to **pronounce all the wealthy as criminals**? How absurd! **Laws** are to protect the citizens from **criminals**. Turning **our governments into thieves is not God's "answer."** Look at the **fruits or results**.

Today, because of **selfish human nature**, the **government** has **stolen** from **Social Security** when **citizens** had already paid for their **retirement**. **Taxation** becomes **usurious**, like **interest** by some banks and credit card companies. **Charities**, in some **cases**, spend 85% to 90% of the money on salaries, plush offices, travel and other luxuries. Most non-profits and all unions collect, primarily, for their own benefit. They have so much money from the poor, they can invest to make more money for themselves. When one can't pay their taxes, the governments begin "**the usury game**," like banks.

Satan's image is rampant. The **rich** steal from the **poor** and the **poor** use the government (welfare, food stamps and grants) to **steal** from the **rich**. What has it done to most countries? Governments (financially) **collapse**, as **history validates**. The French Kings, under Louis, stole from the **poor**. In time, The French Government had to put up all its **land** as collateral to **receive more money**. The **poor** had **no more to give**. Revolution took place and a **republic** under Rousseau followed, which was **worse** than the rule under a "**king**." At least, if one paid their **taxes** and committed **no crime**, a **citizen** was left alone. They did not have to worry about **the guillotine** or a **secret police**.

Napoleon revived **The Beast**, **The Roman Empire**, by putting the **crown** on his own head, by taking it from **The Pope**. Napoleon became **Emperor of The Holy Roman Empire**. If he only kept to France, his children would probably be still ruling the country

today. **The Beast, Satan**, is their god and controls everything. The ugly head of The Beast reigned again until 1815, when Napoleon met his Waterloo and France was once again ruled for a short time under **King Louis, XVI**.

This was the state of The Western World during **The Romantic Era** of the 1800's. The **Arab** world was in decline and Asia was left to itself until Captain Cook entered the scene. The United States and The British Commonwealth (**empires by trade**), instituted **The Age of The Industrial Revolution**. The rest of the world **followed suit**, led by **Europe** and **The United States**. Then, the rest of the world bought into that Image of The Beast. So, Satan continues his rule.

Technology, by **observation** and **mathematical experience**, gave **birth** to **The Industrial Age**.

Remember, Jesus said you can know **a tree** by its **fruit**. The Tree of Life **produces Salvation** or **life**. **The Tree of Good and Evil** results in the **fruit of death**. One can know a **tree** by its **fruit** – **life** or **death**.

In world history, you have **traveled** from “**paradise**,” God's Garden of Eden to about 1800 A.D. What is the **result so far**? In **The Industrial Age**, what are the **fruits of mankind's effort**?

CHAPTER 38

THE INDUSTRIAL AGE

The Industrial Age ran concurrently with The Romantic Period because of The Renaissance. It was a time of rebirth of the world, because it was The Age of Reason – “human reason.” It was led by Abraham’s children and, later, to be impacted by Abraham’s firstborn son, Ishmael, The Father of The Arabs.

Esau married one of Ishmael’s daughters (to become Edom) known as The Edomites. Now, united with Ishmael, The Edomites and The Arabs became an important part of world prophecy (Psalm 83). In the next few hundred years (1700 A.D. to this present day) significant changes appeared upon the world scene.

Good And Evil

England invented the **steam engine** fueled by **coal**. This was one of the most important inventions for a society which was, relatively, immobile. Up to this point, passenger service was by stage coach or horse. It took days to get or transport commerce. Ships were the best option until the railroad. Of course, to transport goods and services one had to be near water otherwise no goods could be shipped, rapidly.

The **steam engine** spurred **The Industrial Revolution**. England,

Europe and The United States had a **new spurt of entrepreneurs**. A steam engine could go anywhere tracks could be laid. An entire continent was made accessible to business. People could be transported and **new towns** sprung up and lacked **laborers** to fill the gap. Immigrants came from all over to fill these jobs.

England increased The Commonwealth by railroads in India, Africa and other parts of The World. Other European nations followed suit. America, a new country, jumped in to cover the nation with railroads.

Of course, this was only the beginning, innovations as the **cotton gin** and **tractor** rapidly increased agriculture. Cars came along in the early 1900's which, really, boosted commerce and travel. Finally, airplanes, starting with The Kitty Hawk began to escalate world commerce and travel. The Industrial Age was beginning.

Technology Escalates

Wealth rapidly increased, worldwide, with all these “**new technologies**.” Human energy expanded, needing to work many hours a week including child labor. Immigrants moved to the most productive and prosperous nations. The **Industrial Age** had **arrived**. As is the case, human nature is a combination of **good** and **evil**. Many technologies were improving human living conditions but no consideration was made for employees or what results would come to pass in the environment. Everyone was busy becoming wealthy **and more leisure time became available as technology** took the place of human labor. Production, no longer increased by human energy but by **machines**. This revolution hasn't stopped since.

Slowly, it became apparent when technology advanced, it would

have a downside. To cut production costs, labor had to work longer. With the fantastic growth around 1800 A.D. to 1900 A.D. escalating so rapidly, there had never been anything like it in history. More inventions had come about, than during the previous 5,000 years of civilization. In the span of one hundred years, society went from a horse-drawn age to **space travel**.

The **baggage**, however, caused damage to this **earth** and **even** to the health of the population. Rivers, lakes, springs and the ocean revealed **signs of corruption**. The **air**, the **water** which you drink and the **food** eaten showed damage. It encompassed the entire earth, causing havoc to man's health. The earth, our asset from God, has been corrupted by the human reason of good and evil. In the 1930's, 1940's and 1950's going to a doctor continually **multiplied** until, almost, everyone **needed or had a personal doctor**. Two world wars didn't help, either. Human nature seems to desire more than their "**needs**" and, then, is replaced by "**wants**" or "**covetousness**."

Limited Assets

One problem with **greed** is, it can **never be satiated**. God becomes lost in mankind's **earthly pursuits** but, finally, the **piiper** must be **paid**. "Materialism" replaced "spirituality" and "secularism" became **popular**. God, no longer, has any interest in your daily living and Satan is tempting you with a **great time**. This result is called "**progress**" or "**progressivism**." The lessons of the past are never learned until survival becomes an issue. History keeps repeating itself no matter how much **suffering mankind** has to go through.

Slowly, an awareness takes hold that the earth does not have unlimited resources or assets, for "**life**" to exist. Everyone blames

everyone else. A “**self-centered**” society explodes with many crimes and no one thinks they may be at fault.

Survival Of The Fittest

Up to this time, in **history**, humans with their imaginations have attempted to take control of the world. The **seven** heads of **The Beast** have come and gone. Now, the **eighth head**, an **image** of the **seventh head**, through **religion** and **government** have been, in **type**, resurrected throughout history. By the end of The Industrial Revolution as The Information Age came into being, it is **apparent** the way humanity has **managed the earth**. Mankind never counted the cost, but, eventually, they will realize they have placed the world **in jeopardy!** **Survival** enters the present age.

Will there be, enough, **water, food, energy** and, now, the awareness of **the green age**? Mankind has desecrated The Van Allen Belt. God has given a **protective shield** from gaseous effects like overuse of **carbons**, as well as, **astral** attacks.

In **The Garden of Eden**, God gave **humanity one task**. God directed humans to **replenish the earth**. They had to have dominion or rule over it and take care of **every living thing on this earth** (Genesis 1:28).

God has made humans the **rulers** of the **earth** to take care of it and keep it, in the **pristine** condition, just as God created it. When God completed **His “work”** and **hallowed The Seventh Day** because **everything was very good** (Genesis 1:31), He, also, offered everyone **eternal life, Salvation**, if the **job was done right**.

In this 21st Century mankind has come to a Time of Judgment. Ask yourself, how **good a job** has been done since the forefathers

ate of **The Tree of Good and Evil**? Christ said, “**You shall know them by their fruits**” (Matthew 7:16). Human nature has been in charge of this **earth**, although they followed **Satan’s image**. From the beginning, at **The Tower of Babylon**, the **first head of the beast**, “**survival of the fittest**,” or “**strongest**” has ruled this **earth**. The time of **decision is upon Christians**.

What form of **government** is **best**? What type of **religion** or **moral values** are best? A time of **change has come**. The question is what change is best – God’s “**rule**” or Satan’s rule? Satan’s Image, **The Dragon**, **The Snake**, who started his rule in **The Garden of Eden** or God’s “**rest**,” God’s “**plan**,” or The Sabbath in The Garden of Eden – giving **Life Eternal**.

CHAPTER 39

WHAT IS SATAN'S IMAGE?

Nearly six thousand years of World History has transpired since The Sumerians built The Tower of Babel. They worshipped many idols and gods since Satan, their “chief god,” has, literally, blinded The World (II Corinthians 4:4). Satan's Image has prevailed throughout history as The Beast (violent-carnivorous) with Seven Heads followed by The Eighth as an Image of The Seventh.

Satan's Image Defined

What is Satan's Image? Simply put, Satan's Image is the **history of human rule by human nature!** That's it! Mankind's legacy, so far, has been filled with **sickness, disease, world poverty and violence.** Malachi 4:6 declares, “**And he [Elijah], shall turn the heart [desire] of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.**” The word “**curse,**” in Hebrew, is “**cherem.**” It is defined “as something intended to be **Holy** but **destroyed** because of **corruption.**” When Jesus lived as a human, He said that John, The Baptist, was The Elijah (Matthew 11 and 14) “**to come**” and the people rejected what he said. They, also, rejected The Christ, so a curse was prophesied in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. Human history has rejected God. Secularism is on the rise **world-wide.** Satan's Image, which gives you the **history** of the **world,** is ready to make a **radical change.** What will that change be?

God's Wrath

“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith” (Romans 1:16-17).

Christians, either, make the change to God's **“righteousness”** through *The Gospel of Christ* or another outcome will be in their future. The other outcome is in Romans 1:18, **“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.”**

Paul pretty well defined it. You either turn to Christ and God's **“righteousness”** or your end will have **God's “wrath.”** This will be God's **“final spanking”** to get your **attention**.

God is **fed-up** with human imaginations and their reasonings. God has **suffered** with His **“people”** through sickness, torture, famine, disease, pain and suffering (II Peter 3). Even now, **He** pleads with you (being **longsuffering**) so you would come to **repentance** (II Peter 3:8-9). God is **longsuffering** who will only intervene with His **“wrath”** when mankind is ready to **commit self-suicide**.

It is, only, when your **heart** or **desire** is with God that He can **give you this gift of “righteousness”** – by **“grace.”** God does not want **perfect robots**, but for you to have **liberty** or **free choice**. God is making you into **His “image”** (Genesis 1:26). Then, God knows that His **“people”** will always do **good** for Him and His **“creation.”** You will receive the blessings of God and be happy in doing **“good works”** as He had done for those who followed Him in the past and will continue to do for eternity.

God reveals the “**entire creation** [universe] **groans and travails** [suffers] **waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God**” (Romans 8). This earth and universe is tenuous. The **earth**, by God’s “**care**” keeps it habitable for humans and one day will have the universe changed to a place of **stability** and **rest, eternally** (Revelations 21 and 22). The Kingdom of God, continues “**Salvation**” and **His loving creative powers** with Christians becoming **His “sons.”** His sons, with Jesus, will be doing God’s “**eternal works.**” Read the book, *God’s Will*.

On the other hand, The Tower of Babel turned the creature and creation into “gods” rather than following the truth of your loving Father (Romans 1).

Three Hundred Years

From 1708 A.D., the genesis of The Industrial Revolution spawned by **human reason** (science) and mathematics (vast technological inventions) have helped humanity **in their struggle for survival**. Even pleasurable objects have escalated such as wireless computers, games and cell phones. Health wise, there is a drug for almost every ailment. Just watch T.V. commercials – but try not to think about their side-effects. Humanity has never in world history had it so good. Leisure and pleasure are, all, at your every “beck and call.”

Technology has produced many **good things** or has it? Mankind has progressed more in the last 300 years of history than all the thousands of proceeding years. Sounds great, doesn’t it? The problem is these very innovations have a down side. Human nature and its **imagination really are the combination** of “**good**” and “**evil.**” Adam and Eve **ate the wrong tree (Satan’s Image)**. Now, the world is confronted with a polluted planet, reduced hu-

man resources, disease becoming stronger from the drugs used for healing, etc. On and on, it goes. So the world's answer is "**conservation.**"

But, that's no solution. That is only a "**put off**" for disaster. Don't you get it? Mankind has come up with the wrong solutions by listening to their **human imagination** instead of God, their loving, Father, who created them. The Age of Reason is what God hates. Human imagination left to itself, always ends in chaos, as was the case at The Tower of Babel when God had to divide the tongues of the nations. He **wounded the** first head of the beast, **so** humanity could have **time to come to repentance.** How ignorant and foolish can humans continue to be?

The Anti-Christ

The anti-Christ does not necessarily refer to "**a being,**" although one is prophesied. "Anti-Christ" in Greek merely means "against Christ." Besides referring to a **leader,** it, also, **defends a system.** The Apostle Paul, clearly, understood The anti-Christ "**system**" began a long time ago.

Before Jesus "**returns**" on The Day of The Lord, that "**system**" will have, already, started, "**For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let [allow], until he be taken out of the way**" (II Thessalonians 2:7).

The system of anti-Christ existed long before Paul's day. When did The anti-Christ begin? There will have been many anti-Christ's before the final one at Christ's "**return.**"

II Thessalonians 2:9 reveals that The anti-Christ started at the time of Satan's "**involvement**" in The Garden of Eden. The anti-Christ

is Satan, followed by his “image” in many forms. All the **resurrected heads who** followed **Satan’s Image** as he revealed himself in the **seven heads** and, now, in **his final image (the eighth head)**.

Besides the **seven heads** covered, other types like The Caesars, The Justinians, Charlemagne, Napoleon, Hitler and some popes were acting like a Lion, Bear or Leopard (The Mark of The Beast). The final eighth image – the **government** and **The anti-Christ “leader”** is about to come and change your life forever.

CHAPTER 40

THE END OF DAYS

Nearly six thousand years of human civilized history has been covered. You have discovered during that time, Satan has been “the god of this world” with his image. What is Satan’s Image?

Two Minds

The Two Trees in The Garden of Eden, The Tree of Life and The Tree of Good and Evil, symbolize two types of fruits. The Tree of Life is portrayed as an olive tree, which fruit reveal the product of God’s “Holy Spirit.” The Tree of Good and Evil bears the fruit of “human nature.” This tree is a symbol of a fig tree, sometimes bearing fruit and, at other times, bearing no fruit, whatsoever.

Regarding the two trees, Jesus said, “By their fruits you shall know them” (Matthew 7:20). The fruit of The Tree of Life bears truth – Salvation. The Tree of Good and Evil produces death. Salvation is guaranteed if one eats from The Tree of Life – which is God’s “Holy Spirit.” Why does God’s “Holy Spirit” give you The Gift of Salvation?

Isaiah 55:6-11 details the answer for Salvation. God states, first, one must seek God while He can still be found. Faith enters the arena of Salvation. You must want God and His “way” by putting complete trust in Him. If you forsake evil and unrighteousness and seek God, He will be merciful to you and pardon

any **unrighteousness** you have caused yourself. Next, God tells you why! Here is what God said, **“For my thoughts [mind] *are not your thoughts, neither *are your ways my ways, saith The Lord*”*** (Isaiah 55:8). God is referring to the way His **“mind”** **“thinks.”**

God states His **“mind”** and **“ways”** are higher than the universe. He, finally, promises that the **words** which come out of His **“mouth,”** which originated from His **“mind”** will, absolutely, **come to pass**. It is God’s **“Holy Spirit”** which reveals His **“truth”** or **“mind”** and **“power.”** You must read the definition of God’s **“Holy Spirit.”** II Timothy 1:7 clearly explains God’s **“Holy Spirit,”** **“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love and of a sound mind.”** Wow! First, your human fears must go, then, God gives you power to have His **“love”** which will give you a **sound mind**.

Amazingly, once you have **faith** and you **trust** in God, only then, you can receive God’s **“Holy Spirit,”** which will lead you to **truth**. At that time, you will have **The Mind of God**. The word **“fear”** in Greek is **“phobus,”** meaning **“a phobia”** or **“false fear.”** It is a **fear** which is **not real**. This fear is like being in a **dark** place or having the fear of **high** places. A **fear of God** – not knowing how **God thinks** – is a **false fear**. On the other hand, fearing God because of His **“power”** is **honoring God**. Once you **honor God** through **faith**, He grants you the **power** of His **“Holy Spirit,”** which leads you to **The Truth of His “Love”** (giving you a **sound mind**). **“Sound mind”** in Greek means **“a disciplined mind”** which has **“wisdom.”**

Now, you understand **“the two trees”** in The Garden. **The Tree of Life** bears **fruit of God’s “Holy Spirit,”** which is, also, recorded in Galatians 5:22. God’s **“mind”** gives **everlasting peace, joy**

and **prosperity**. Satan's mind will lead you to **death**, because it does not bear **any** "good" fruit (Galatians 5:19-21). When humans have **faith** or **trust** in Satan, they, only, produce the **evil fruit** of the **flesh** (human nature). Now, it is clear what "**the two trees**" represent.

The Tree of Life bears the **fruit** of God's "**thoughts**" from God's "**mind**," by His "**word**." **Salvation** is **guaranteed**. The very **mind of Satan** and how he **thinks** is **Satan's Image**. That is why Satan's **words** are **deceptive**. When you follow Satan's **mind**, you become subject, only, to your **human imagination** of "**right**" and "**wrong**." Too many "**wrong**" decisions lead to **death**.

The **End of Days** is upon the world and **human history** has **manifested Satan's Image** in The 21st Century. Now, you will look ahead in **prophecy** to see the future – The End of Days. God accepts anyone, from any **nation**, who **fears Him** and **works righteousness** (Acts 10:35). **The End of Days** is when Jesus will return to stop **The Gentile Rule of The Earth** and institute God's "**kingdom**" and "**rest**."

Just before Christ's "**return**," there is a plethora of religions, plus multitudes of governing states, mostly Democratic. All are looking to **profit** from each other, by competing against each other for the world's assets and resources. A real State of Babylon. They are **uniting** with agreements to **trade** for the **good of world peace** and **prosperity**, but each using **human nature or imagination**, (their **reasoning**) to get the **most for their own government**. Daniel 2 reveals this is the future and the changes are transpiring before your eyes. Ironically, the number "40" is God's number for "**the end of a trial**." This book, *Satan's Image*, contains 40 Chapters. (It just turned out that way). Now, read your future and what changes in **The World** will transpire. This change is proph-

ecy, written many thousands of years ago and is God's "**answer**" to human imagination.

Information Age

In The 20th and 21st Centuries, **The Information Age** entered because of **technological scientific** advances. You are in the "**apex**" of "**The Progressive Age.**" More information comes out every few years than has come out in the last few thousands of years. Electronics have made it possible for "**the world**" to become **one nation** by **Globalization** just like The Tower of Babel. As **one language** is developed by computers, along with cell phones, there will be nothing anyone's human nature cannot dream up. You are entering **The Biblical Times of The End of Days**. Daniel 12 reveals these **End of Days**.

Last Days And End Days

The Last Days began with **The Fourth Beast** as described in **The Image of Daniel 2** which is **The Time of The Gentile Rule** of "**the world**" by Satan (Hebrews 1:1-2). The **seventh resurrected head** of **The Beast** in Daniel 7 and Revelation 13 is concluding with its **image, The Eighth Head**, nearing **The End of Days**.

At the time of Christ's "**human existence,**" Rome began **The Last Days** and from that time The Word of God, His "**Holy Spirit,**" manifested, itself, by Jesus, The Christ. That Holy Spirit **reveals** a "**sound mind**" or "**The Very Mind**" of God (II Timothy 1:7 and I Corinthians 2:16).

The End Of Days

The Time of **The Gentiles** is, almost, **fulfilled (completed)**. Hu-

man history has **exposed Satan's Image**. It is a mind lacking God's "**Holy Spirit**" which could have revealed His "**righteousness**" or His "**thoughts**" and "**ways**" (Isaiah 55:8-11).

Notice, at **The End of Days**, God's "**thoughts**" and "**ways**" will be exposed and you will see God do all **His pleasure**." What will happen in **The End of Days** (Read all of Daniel 12). The End of Days concludes **the last days** or The Times of The Gentiles "**rule**" over God's "**house**" the earth. Then, you will see Michael, God's "**archangel**," stand up for God's "**people**."

It is a time of **world trouble**, "**the second tribulation**" after which "**the first resurrection**" takes place. During this time, **The Wise Christians**, not following Satan's Image, **turn many to righteousness**." When does all this happen? It states while many have turned to God's "**righteousness**" it causes Satan to become furious. God's "**people**" (Israel and The Church) have to be sent to a place of safety, while some others will go through 3 ½ years of **tribulation**. Daniel 12:3-4 states, at that time, God's "**people**" will turn many to The True God. **God's knowledge**" will continue to grow while the rest of the world will be running to and fro.

God will not allow His "**wrath**" to be unleashed until His "**truth**" is fully **proclaimed**. That is why Revelation 18:4 states, "**Come out of her [Babylon], my people**." The **truth** will be declared and it is the **reason** The Beast will turn and destroy "**the whore**" who made the world **drunk** with Satan's "**unrighteousness**." Then, the armies gather at Armageddon.

The Mystery of Iniquity will be revealed when Satan's Image will end and God will institute His "**kingdom**." Satan and his demon angels will go into a Lake of Fire during this period and the

world will enter God's "**rest.**" *The Gospel* will be preached about God's "**kingdom**" in a New Heaven and on a New Earth (Revelation 21 and 22). In the **first resurrection**, God's "**saints,**" The Bride of Christ, will be **worthy** to be The Wife and will join Jesus in the clouds.

The Millennium to follow is "**the engagement period**" when the world is called to The Wedding Feast by The Bride and Christ. "**Mercy**" is offered to everyone to be God's "**sons**" to receive **The Mind of God** with His "**love**" and "**power**" through His "**Holy Spirit!**"

Secularism And Religion

Secularism has been gaining followers and growing throughout the world and morals have continued to decline. Christ does ask, "Will there be any **faith** left on the earth when He **returns?**" The **knowledge of The Truth** will explode at **The End Time** (Daniel 12). The problem is there are "**two types of religion**" at **The End of Days**. The anti-Christ will be claiming to be **The Messiah**, but the trouble and confusion is, there will be "**three types**" of Messiahs from Jerusalem. (1) Islam from The Mosque is looking for their "**savior.**" (2) The Jews are, also, expecting their "**messiah.**" (3) Christians will, also, be expecting their "**Messiah.**" That alone will be Babylon or "**confusion.**" Some agreement has to take place during **The End of Days**. There will be anti-Christ's ruling from Jerusalem, creating a confused "**mixture.**"

Then, what about the secularists who deny God? The Ten World Rulers, all over the world, will come to want and need "world peace" and "prosperity." With so many criminals growing in society (as it is today) "**survival of the fittest**" will be the motivating factor. With energy needs and prices escalating, the world will

have a rude awakening. Individuals, the world over, will always respond to their survival – first and foremost.

Society will realize having good **morals**, actually, makes for a safer and more peaceful society. For the common good, “**religion**” will win out over Secularists and The anti-Christ will re-impose religion with all its human confusion. Possibly, *The Ten Commandments* will be **mandated** from Jerusalem. All major religions will accept and believe in *The Ten Commandments*, whether Islam, Jewish or Christianity. It is “**Religious Babylon**” but the world coming together for **economic** reasons, will, then, accept the need for **religion**. The world, in high prosperity, with “**religion**” mandated to reduce **crime**, will claim **peace**, at long last. But, there will be no peace. Then, **war** erupts (Daniel 2).

As this false peace occurs, suddenly this “world power” of clay and iron falls apart and World War begins with Armageddon. Christ, at this time, intervenes to save the world from total annihilation. It is The Day of The Lord to establish God’s “**wrath**” and, finally, will bring God’s “**kingdom.**” The Beast, seeing The Great Whore of “**religious confusion**” was not The True Messiah, turns and destroys all the false religious systems of Babylon (Revelation 17:16). This is The Destruction of Jerusalem in Zechariah 14.

From Kings To The Age Of Reason

God is The **Great King, The Almighty One**. God created all things and is your “**protector,**” “**life giver**” and “**The One**” who prospers those who follow Him. He, truly, is the **greatest servant of all** as Christ said. In Hebrew “**servant**” means “**King.**” Whenever God gave control of the earth, every **king divinely** appointed by Him to rule, was only allowed to rule, as long as, they acknowledged God’s “**authority**” over them. As with Nebuchad-

nezzar, King of Babylon, he forgot God and had to wander in the **wilderness** as a **beast** and only, later, came to his senses and turned to God. Then, God restored His "**kingdom**" (Daniel 4). Because Nebuchadnezzar accepted God, he, of all The Gentile Kings, was "**the head of gold.**" "**Gentile Rule**" by **these kings** continued to degenerate until the world's nations have replaced **monarchies** to become **republics** and **democracies**. The history of **mankind**, now, worshipped **human reason** or **the age of reason**. Humanity instituted **science** as **truth**. Science had replaced God as the **source of reality**. Science is the study of **human reason** by **observation** with the probability of **mathematics**.

Return Of The Tower Of Babel

World History has come "**full circle.**" God warned at **The Tower Of Babel** (Babylon) when mankind was **united as one**, **that nothing would be limited in their thinking** because of their **human imagination**. "**The Age of Reason**" is nothing **but** "**human imagination.**" Those living, today, are living in The Time of "**man-made imagination,**" in The Time of Babylon, The Great.

The End of Days have crept upon the world and because too many have been following **Satan's Image**, they will reap God's "**wrath.**" "**Woe be to you**" as a **new golden age** is nearing, suddenly, **The True Messiah, Jesus**, The Christ will come to **save you** from "**world suicide.**" Christ is ready "**to return**" when His "**bride**" is worthy to be His "**wife**" (Revelation 19:7-8). The choice is yours! But, the wisest decision you can ever make, is to pray and study to show "**yourself approved.**"

GOD'S KINGDOM

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *God’s Kingdom*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God’s Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ’s Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God’s Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God’s Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God’s Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul’s Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God’s Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God’s Old And New Covenant

What’s It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan’s Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God’s Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God’s Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God’s Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God’s School

God’s Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don’t Bury Your Talents

God’s Work Vs. Man’s Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon’s Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God’s Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God’s Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God’s House

Bible Study God’s Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner’s Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

PREFACE	VII
INTRODUCTION	IX
WHAT IS A KING?	1
THE GREATEST SERVANT	7
FREE CHOICE AND LIBERTY	13
GOD’S KINGDOM	19
EARNEST OF INHERITANCE	25
THE WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT	31
GOD’S HOLY PREDESTINED PLAN	39
GOD’S KINGDOM AND MARRIAGE	45
GOD “ALL IN ALL”	53
IT’S ALL ABOUT LAND AND MARRIAGE	59
YEAR OF JUBILEE	65
FLESH OF FLESH AND BONE OF BONE	71
THE WEDDING FEAST	77

PREFACE

For thousands of years, mankind has been trying to determine which is the best form of government. You can choose from democracies, republics, dictators, kings and even tyrants. Who knows what the human mind can conceive? Should the people rule themselves? Democracy seems to be the choice most people want, although in various forms. Perhaps a mixture of all forms is best. During the last thousands of years the world has tried a variety of governmental structures depending upon various human conditions. *The Gospel* declares The Kingdom of God is best. That is why the word “**gospel**” means “**the good news.**” Since God created everything, why doesn’t He just impose His structure of government? Instead, God, from the beginning, allowed Adam and Eve and their progeny to decide for themselves. God allows you free choice to make your own decisions. Just what is The Kingdom of God? This book answers that question. The best solution for the human dilemma is The Kingdom of God. Truly good news for everyone. Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no monies are accepted for these books. All books are absolutely **free**. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given).

Art Mokarow

Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

email: art@mokarow.com

website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

download all books free of charge

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Work

Revelation Uncovered

Christ In You

The Great Apostasy

The White Throne Judgment

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Story

God's Sabbath And Holy Days

God's Will

Satan's Image

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

God's Kingdom

The History Of Revelation

The Wedding Feast

History Of God's Law

The Mark Of The Beast

God's Two Priesthoods

The Christian Sabbath

What Is Idolatry?

Truths Creeds And Doctrines

The True Church Of God

Sons Of God

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Temple Of God

The Mystery Of God

INTRODUCTION

Rulers

From the beginning God has allowed mankind's form of government. On that 7th Day God rested from all His **work** while Adam and Eve lived in Paradise. They were given The Garden of Eden as a gift, forever. They never had done any of the work. This was God's **Sabbath Rest** in His **Holy House** which He built to share with mankind. All was very good or perfect. There was no sin and **no missing the mark** of perfection. They were truly in Paradise.

In The Garden were many delicious and nutritional trees. Their choice was to choose what they wanted to eat. God told Adam and Eve living in The Garden of Paradise, He was giving them two choices. Since they were human, they could have lived forever by eating of The Tree of Life. Instead, they ate of The Tree of Good and Evil which produces death. God was literally allowing them to vote for their system of government. The Tree of Good and Evil allowed **free choice**. Adam and Eve's real choice was to decide who they would accept as the one to rule them. They had the right to vote for their choice. Government was the issue from the beginning. God could have been a dictator or even a tyrant and could have forced His **rule** at the very beginning. You will find God didn't force or demand His **perfection** from the start. If He did, today everyone would have been in Paradise. Why did God give free choice?

From the time Adam and Eve decided to eat from The Tree of Good and Evil, they desired to make their own choices of how they should live, so they ended up choosing death. They felt they would be in charge and get what they always wanted. Remember to be careful what you wish for, because you may get it. God knew that since they hadn't created anything or done any of the

work in paradise, they would not understand what was best for them. Out of His **love** for them, He caused them to leave The Garden where The Tree of Life was, but allowed them to live on His **land** in Eden. Since they chose to do what is good or evil they really didn't understand how life would work for them. God allowed them to learn through experience and observation. Today it is called science. Over the next thousands of years God permitted the world to experiment on their own, as to what would be good or evil. Humanity finally came up with their own system of knowing **the truth** – called science. Amazingly, science still makes mistakes or sins. Science is a trial and error system which is based upon mathematical probability. That is the best humans can do when they do not know **right** from **wrong**. A guess and a mathematical probability gives them a theory which is not an absolute fact.

Humans have created disciplines in almost every aspect of existence. Government or politics has its own science called political science. The world has and still does experiment with the best method of rulership. That is why so many human systems have been tried and failed. Each form of governmental rule begins with good intentions and even the tyrant believes he/she knows what is best. Each of these governmental structures are humanly designed. A tyrant is generally one who sincerely believes he only knows the best way for everyone to live.

Rulers Come And Go

For the last six thousand years, the world has continually tried to discover the best way to live. That is why the pattern repeats itself. Every new beginning has great hopes of success. Since they are subject, ultimately, to death, their primary efforts are to survive. When a system of rule or government meets their survival needs and they are allowed to pursue their personal interests of pleasure, they generally accept that way of life. That form

of government can persist for thousands of years. It is the best anyone can do. Medical science tries to extend life and attempts to search for immortality. With human imagination, the possibilities are endless. That is why God, at The Tower of Babel said, “**And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do**” (Genesis 11:6-7). Humans are in a form of Babylon by their very natures. That is why God confused the languages to forestall the inevitable conclusion which will be annihilation. God warned that mankind’s way of thinking, “without God” produces death. When Christ tells you to come out of Babylon (the world’s human system), He is telling you to stop listening to the human ideas of right and wrong (Revelation 18:4). God and Christ want you to cease eating of The Tree of Good and Evil which only is more of man’s own way of thinking which leads to death.

All systems of world government whether democracies, kingdoms, tyrants or dictators begin with celebrations of joy and build to their natural apex only to become corrupt and fail. This is mankind’s history of human civilization. Read the book *Satan’s Image*. There are the few worldwide individuals or groups who remain faithful to God and His **good news** of The Kingdom. What is it that God knows which humans do not understand? Since God created all things, only He knows how you can be at liberty – that is, using your ideas and still have all mankind able to live in Paradise, eternally. *The Bible* discloses mankind’s inherent genetic weakness and how to come out of Babylon to finally know **the truth**. Then, and only then, can you, by free choice, finally choose what is good and what is evil. God’s **kingdom** is *The Gospel* or good news. Only when you live in The Kingdom of God will you have the answer to goodness and be able to be right all the time. This book covers The Kingdom of God as the only way to **eternal Paradise**.

CHAPTER 1

WHAT IS A KING?

Why does God claim “a monarchy” is the best structure of government? One would think democracy or the people’s choice would be the best. Why is God’s government called a Royal Kingdom?

Human Imagination

When Adam and Eve ate from The Tree of Good and Evil, “Babylon” or “having human ideas” dictated right and wrong. To the chagrin of many, God rules the world while Satan deceives it, then mankind manifests its solutions. Once Adam and Eve decided to follow their own way of thinking without God, He left the world, pretty much, to its own devices. All have sinned and so everyone has been choosing their own way of doing things. Follow all the misdeeds in history (Romans 5). Your human conclusions are pretty much determined by how you observe all the experiences of mankind. Most see kings as **self-serving** and abusive. Dictators are even worse. Democracies and republics always end up corrupted in one form or another. In the end, you will find all are full of corruption and self-serving. That is why God calls it “**Babylon.**” So, what government is best?

The Human Heart

Human desires distort all **wisdom** (Proverbs 18:1-4). Your **motives** and **desires** mold your **human heart**, which **is** the core of

your problems (Matthew 15:19). That is why Jesus said The Kingdom of God is not an observable government but His **kingdom is “within you”** (Luke 17). Christ explained He was a representative of that government and His **life** was an example of that **kingdom**.

Any structure of **government** should be fine if **the ruler** and the ruled have a **right heart**. No personal or private agendas – only love. The basis of all perfect rulerships is one’s **motivation** or **desires**. That is why The Kingdom of God has Christ as its **foundation**. This, in God’s **way** of thinking, is **the requirement** for a **righteous system of governing**. The human heart has **good** and **evil desires** or **motivations** of figuring what is **right** and what is **wrong**. That is why Christ said it is by **their fruit** you shall know them (Matthew 7). What a person produces determines their inner thinking or desires. What a wonderful time it will be – no jails, no policemen, no judges. A time will come when no one will even do or think anything but **“good.”**

An Agenda

How does a **righteous ruler** get his/her agenda? A righteous ruler should want God’s **mind** and His **wisdom**. A person’s wisdom can be clouded by their **“natural thinking,”** much like being in **deep murky waters**. When you follow your desires, it hampers you from having wisdom (Proverbs 18).

An example would be when you go to a store and see a suit or dress and think how much you want it. You feel you need to buy what you see in the store. But in reality, you may not need the garment, you only want to add it to your already crammed closet. This applies to any spur of the moment **desires** of your **heart**. Wisdom, on the other hand, would trigger in your mind, that the

purchase might put you into debt. You probably have enough clothes and don't really need it. God calls it a "**form of idolatry**" (Colossians 3:5). When you have a **personal agenda** which involves **coveting**, then it is **idolatry**. "**Coveting**" is "**an intense desire**" which causes no peace unless and until fulfilled. An **idol** is **worshipped** because of a **personal agenda** and a **wrong heart**.

That is why **wisdom** is like a clear running stream of water that constantly cleanses the mind to see **the true facts**. No personal agenda should affect your thinking. You, then, can use the intellect God can and will give you. You must start to understand righteous rules or government. Any ruler or **form of government** should only work with a **righteous heart**. Why does God choose a **monarchy** as His **form of rulership**?

A King

Most kings are **self-serving**. Because of their personal agendas, they can become abusive and perhaps murderous. This can occur with any form of rulership including a **democracy**. Usually, a government has laws to control abusive rulership. To understand why God chooses a monarchy as **the best form of government**, you need to understand "**spiritually**" what a king is.

In Hebrew and Greek, "**a king**" is "**one who has a domain**." It can be a mayor of a town or a judge over the court or a person over their **household**. A king, biblically, only refers to any **ruler** that is over others. God accepts a king as long as he realizes He is **The One True God**. Remember, Nebuchadnezzar had to spend seven years wandering in the wilderness until he came to his senses and acknowledged **The True God** (Daniel 4). Whenever a **ruler** saw himself as a **god**, his days were numbered. Remember the kings of France or The Caesars? Christ clearly defined what a **godly**

king was and gave you the reason God chose a monarchy over other forms of government.

Jesus answered the mother of Zebedee's children when she asked for her sons to share Christ's **throne** in The Kingdom of God (Matthew 20:26-27). Then Jesus compares the rulership of the world's **kings** and what a godly king should be. He said Gentile Kings (without God), exercise **dominion** and **great authority** over their subjects. This is **not** God's **definition** of a king. What did Christ say? "**But it will not be so among you [disciples]: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister [servant]. And whosoever will be chief [top] among you, let him be your servant [minister].**" That is Christ's **definition** of a king which is just the opposite of how the world views a king.

God's mind is **perfect** and **Holy, without blemish** (Ephesians 1:4-5). Godly **kings** are truly to be **the servants of the people**. To be **chief**, one must **serve the people more so than anyone else**. God is your example as He is "**The Greatest Servant of All.**" God is **love** and wants to serve you only for your good (Hebrews 12:9-10). God has **no personal ego or agenda, only love** which **He gives to those He rules**.

Jesus "**is not God**" but is "**The King over other kings.**" Why? "**Even the Son of man came not to be ministered [served] unto, but to minister [serve] and to give His life a ransom for many**" (Matthew 20:28).

Stop and think what a difference this is from what humans think. God is **The God** who is **the chief servant**. Christ is King over other kings but only God is **The King** over His Kingdom, **God is The Greatest Servant**. When covering world history, humans have judged their kings and rulers exactly how God has directed.

A king, to be chief, even in a **household**, must **serve the most**. A head or overseer of a household is one who is responsible for their own house. “**But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith and is worse than an infidel [unbeliever]**” (I Timothy 5:8).

It can't be any simpler, whether over a kingdom (domain) or a family, the one who is **the greatest servant** is **the chief**. If the woman is the greatest servant in the house, she is **the chief**. Only when a man serves **the most** is he the head or chief of his house. It is not gender but **a condition**. God appointed the man to be over his house because Eve was **deceived** but Adam was not. God made man the head in the family to protect His wife. Adam truly loved his wife and was willing to **die** for her just as Christ died for you. Adam, as he was eating **the wrong fruit**, knew he signed a contract to die for his wife. That is why Adam was made **the head or a type of Christ** who gave his life for Eve just as Christ did for you (Romans 5). A king, to rule over a domain, must be the greatest servant in his nation or kingdom. If not, he is not the king.

The scriptures are very clear. A king, therefore, must **show the fruits of service** to be **the chief** or head. That is why God allowed every king, good or bad, to rule as long as they were willing to acknowledge Him (God) as The One True God. You are about to discover why God is The Only True God and Chief King over His **house**. You will understand why God can be King of Hosts because only He created everything and always knew and always knows **The Right Way**.

CHAPTER 2

THE GREATEST SERVANT

God's *First Commandment* demands, "You shall have no other 'gods' before me" (Exodus 20:3). Then, God continues warning not to make anything that even looks like or refers to God. Don't worship other gods or hold God's name in vain or in any unholy way.

God Is Jealous As Translated

The One True God states He is a "jealous God." Also, you are not to have any other god or ruler as your king. A king is the one who is the greatest servant or **care-giver** and the one with **all blessings**. No other god should be **The One True God** for a very good reason. No other god can give you **eternity in Paradise**. In Hebrew the word "jealous" really conveys "intensity" or "zeal." Some believe God has jealousy but God is love (I John 4:8). God cannot be jealous as written. God does not have human **ego** and therefore is only motivated by **love**. God is, therefore, **zealous** for you to not have any other gods than **Him**. Why?

God – The Creator

God created **the heavens and the earth** (Genesis 1:1). God **created** everything that is or can be. There is nothing that exists that isn't from God. Humans are **alive** by God giving you His "**spirit of life**." **Life** exists only because of God. God also **sustains** and **provides** everything the universe needs. There is **nothing** with-

out God. God is **truly The God** over all gods since He is **The Greatest Servant**. He is **The YHVH** of The Sabbath or **Lord of Hosts**. God, besides creating “**all**” and sustaining “**all**,” is everything He wants “**to be**” or wants “**to do**.” God is **The Lord of Hosts** or your “**everything**” because He is “**everything**.” No one can defeat Him. There is **no servant** greater than God. God is **The Supreme King, The Only True King to create, care for and give “all”** because He is “**all**.” There is **no greater servant**. Now you know why God is **so zealous** for you to worship only **Him**. There is **no one else greater** who can make or **create** what He can! Without God there is only **death** or **non-existence**. To have life eternal, a person must know what it is and how to be blessed with this great gift.

Idolatry

Paul calls **idolatry covetousness** (Colossians 3:5). There is a reason the worship of any god besides **The One True God** is “**covetousness**.” Your little mini-gods can do **nothing**. Worshipping anything besides God is **folly** because only **God is The Greatest Servant**. God’s name, **YHVH, The I Am** or **The Only Existing One** is **The Only True Greatest Servant, The Chief and The Head**. The word “**archon**” in Greek means “**the top**.” **God is The Only One True God** who has the power to do **everything**. Without **Him** there would be **nothing**.

Wanting anything above God, including life, is “**idolatry**.” Coveting or desiring anything before The Creator replaces Him as The Only One who can do anything and everything. Idolatry is **destructive** because it is **a lie** and can do **nothing but lead to death**. God is **The God of The Living** and **not of the dead**. God hates **idolatry** because He is **zealous** and wants to **bless His Creation** because of His great **love** for you.

A World Of Gods

Starting in The Garden of Eden with Satan extending to The Tower of Babel, the people began to **worship idols**. By nature, humans have a tendency to create gods for themselves. Individuals **worshipped “the creation”** more than **The Creator** (Romans 1). World history is the story of **idol worship**. Humans worship rulers, nations, religions and ideologies including themselves. Humans tend to look to everyone or anything other than God to worship. So many humans are **ignorant, foolish and unlearned**. Individuals claim the universe has **no purpose** and has **no need** for a God. In their small capacity, they think everything started from **nothing**. How can something begin from **nothing**? Any **fool** knows anything that exists **must** begin from a **first cause**. Even **The Big Bang Theory** starts with **something**, but what it really is, turns out to be only a **guess**. It’s only a guess because you still must begin with **something**. Where did The Big Bang come from? This **universe**, with all its **complexity** and awesomeness, should seek **some greater cause** than **The Big Bang**. Even **The Super String Theory** starts with **something**, but never asks where **The Super Strings came from**. On and on it goes, always one **idol** or another in place of God. Is it any wonder why God is so **zealous**? There is **no other God besides Him**. God has **great love** for His **creation**. He is **truly The Greatest Servant** and **The Only Chief** who should be worshipped.

What Is Worship?

In Hebrew and Greek the full meaning of “**to worship**” is “**to adore above all else**.” It only makes **sense** to do so when you begin to understand God is **The Greatest Servant**. God is **the only reason** for **everything there is**. It is difficult **not to adore** someone when that “**being**” does only “**good**” for you. An exam-

ple might be when you follow **celebrities**. In the beginning, *The Bible* tells you there were men of **renown** or **celebrities** (Genesis 6:4). Today all your “**little gods**” are worshipped or **adored entertainers, kings, deliverers, saviors, wealthy individuals and the powerful**. Can you believe even those who make you **laugh** or act and entertain you as in **movies** or **sports** are your “**gods?**” **In some cases** you want to be **like them**. Others resent and hate what **others have** and want to steal and take what they have or **murder them**. Some feel **justified** in stealing or killing others. It is a form of revenge. That is plain **coveting** and **idolatry**. **The world is filled** with many forms of **idols**.

Sound Minded

If you are honest with yourself only your parents and God gave you existence as human beings. Who else had anything to do with your coming to be? So how can anyone else be responsible for you? That is why God made **the family responsible** for **each other**. God, Himself, admits He is responsible for **everything** and promises to **care for His creation**. If you look to Him in **faith** He will take care of you. You are **to have no mini-gods**. He gave you *commandments* to have **no other gods** or **idols**. God promises to give you **Paradise** if you **trust Him**. Humans ignorantly chase **the famous** or **physical things**. “**The famous**” cannot and will not do anything **for anyone**. As you **mature** you find only **God** can be **trusted**. You must have **absolute faith** in **Him** as your **greatest celebrity**, being **The One True God!** The world has created their own form of “**Babylon**.” What **confusion!** There is only **One God** and **Father** who **loves you** and wants to **bless you** with **His Kingdom in Paradise**. **The Kingdom of God** is far more **than a monarchy** or **government**. God’s **purpose** is to make you initially **human** and **temporary**, then make you “**spirit**.”

CHAPTER 3

FREE CHOICE AND LIBERTY

Why did God have two trees in The Garden of Eden? In The New Heaven and The New Earth there will be no Tree of Good and Evil. Only The Tree of Life or Salvation will exist in Paradise. Why?

Son's Of God

What activity will you be doing in The Kingdom of God (Revelation 22:17)? God, **The Supreme King and Greatest Servant**, will continue to give you more of His **spirit**. In the future, there will be no death in The Garden of Eden. With **sin destroyed**, there will be **no stress or pain** – instead there will only be **joy in Paradise**. When **human nature** doesn't exist there will be **no need for The Tree of Good and Evil**. Everyone will have confessed Jesus is The Lord, so **Salvation** continues. How?

How does God make everything new? God declares these **words** are **faithful and true** and states God is The Alpha and The Omega, The Beginning and The End. Where one ended, the other continued. God guarantees He will **make all things new**. “**I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely**” (Revelation 21:6). **Salvation continues in God's Kingdom on The New Earth. Wow!** “**He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God [greatest servant] and he shall be my son**” (Revelation 21:7). Only those thrown into **The Lake of Fire** are left in **outer darkness** (Jude 12-13). The

New Paradise was **lost** to Adam and Eve's children. There will be those who experience **the 2nd death** (Jude states: They will **twice die** – Jude 12 and 13). After they are resurrected from The Lake of Fire they will be in outer darkness and will be drinking "**the waters of life**" coming from The Throne of God (Revelation 21 and 22). Outer darkness is their **everlasting punishment**.

The Cardinal Point is God continues **Salvation** in **Paradise** so more Christians will become **Sons of God**. The **Potential for Salvation continues** until everyone **repents** by their choice (II Peter 3). What a **loving Father!** Sons are to be in the exact image as their father, like Christ for a very good reason (Hebrews 1:3). Those who become **Sons of God** will **inherit all things** just as those in God's **Kingdom** (New Jerusalem).

Just as on **the old earth**, there will be a **Kingdom Rest** in New Jerusalem. The **saved** will live on **God's property**, His **Promised Land**. Those in **the country (the wilderness)** are in **outer darkness**. They are lost in **the woods (forest)** and will only be able to grow by **drinking from the river's water with healing leaves** (Revelation 22:1-2). Salvation will continue. Those who become The Sons of God inherit **all things**. Read the book *Sons of God*.

When **you** become Sons of God and **no longer servants** but **heirs**, you will inherit **everything** (Galatians 4:1-7). That, my friend, is **free choice** and **liberty**. You are no longer **servants** or need to be directed by **anyone**. Heirs, since they own **everything**, are **free to do** whatever they want or **choose** to be and do. That is like any ruler, but there is one difference – The Sons of God will have "**love**."

There is **no longer any slavery**, no more **Gentiles** without God. But, until they look to God, they must stay in **everlasting pun-**

ishment until they grow “In Christ” by drinking **the waters** with **the healing leaves**. Paul said, “**For you have not received the spirit of bondage [slavery] again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father...And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together**” (Romans 8:15-17 and Galatians 4). The result is, “**Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage [slavery] of corruption [human death] into the glorious liberty of the children of God**” (Romans 8:21).

God’s “**glory**” in Greek is “**doxa**,” the same meaning as in Hebrew being “**all His goodness and riches**” (Exodus 33). God will give all Christians liberty. “**Liberty**” in Greek means “**totally and completely unrestrained**.” You can be part of “**The I Am**” with God and Christ. Those are The Sons of God and, therefore, **heirs of a loving and a completely giving Father**. My, oh my, what a “**love**” God has! What a **wonderful purposeful plan He predestined!**

Now the question becomes how does God bring to pass this **free choice and liberty of all things**? “**That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh [human works], but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded *is* death; but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace**” (Romans 8:4-6).

Those who look to **human deeds or works**, whether it be The Letter of The Law, any pagan or human ideas in worshipping God, produces only **death**. Only that which The Holy Spirit teaches as **truth in The Righteousness of The Law** is what can change you. You, then, are no longer a **carnal being** with human thinking, but

have a spiritual mind with God's **thoughts**. Nothing any human can do, even in **The Worship of God**, can change anyone. Only God's **Holy Spirit** can give you **peace** with **the power of love (agapé)** to have a **sound and logical mind** (II Timothy 1:7).

While in **the flesh** you just naturally **mind** the things of **the flesh**. You **think like humans** and that thinking is a form of **Babylon**. Also, all your **interpretations of good and evil** are a form of **Babylon**. It is only **The Word** of God by **The Loving Power** of God's **Holy Spirit** which can give you a **sound or wise mind**.

It becomes clearer and simpler to understand **the power** of God's **love**. You then have **total faith** in Him, and you are given **Salvation as a gift**, as you can do **nothing** to earn it. You must put your complete **trust** in Him, so you can be removed from your human **bondage** and slavery. You must be totally **free** to be **Sons of God** as **heirs of everything in The Kingdom of God's Rest**. Mere words cannot fully praise **The Creator**.

God's Plan of Salvation is not only **good news** but it means you have a **wonderful father** who wants to give you all blessings. Kind after kind. God is not only **Holy** and full of **goodness**, but also **adopts** you from **human parents** to become **His Very Sons** (Ephesians 1:5). It is clear until God makes you His **Very Son**, like Jesus, He could never give you **Salvation in The Kingdom of God**.

A Royal Kingdom

Who are God's people? "**But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that you should show forth the praises of him who has called you out of darkness into his marvelous light**" (I Peter 2:9).

The Characteristics of God's People are:

- 1 **A chosen nation** are those who fear God and work righteousness (Acts 10:35).
- 2 **A Royal Priesthood.** “**Royal**” because you are to be great servants and sacrifice yourself for humanity. You are to be Kings and Priests after The Order of Melchizedek.
- 3 **A Holy nation** consists of individuals who are without sin and are blameless.
- 4 **A peculiar people** are those who are not like most who have their main interest in this world.
- 5 **Praising** God by **witnessing the truth** in bringing others to **The Light** of Christ. “**Witnessing**” so others can come out of darkness contrived from their imaginations which causes confusion (Babylon).

Only meeting these requirements can make you a Christian. Then you become **a Son of God** and **an heir of all things in The Kingdom of God**. Free choice and liberty is **God's goal** for you in His **glorious Kingdom of Rest**.

CHAPTER 4

GOD'S KINGDOM

When Christ was asked when The Kingdom would come, He said The Kingdom of God will be very different than any other government (Luke 17:20-21). This Kingdom doesn't come by human observation like human governments, but is "In You!" Christ is The Kingdom!

The Great Promise

God's **Kingdom**, the **promised land** given to Abraham, was to be a **government – A Horn of Plenty**. These were gifts God was going to give His **people**. Those occupying **the land** had to be a **special people** (I Peter 2:9). It took seven times for God to make sure **the right conditions existed**, to be sure **all He promised could be fulfilled**. God's "**houses**" began in The Garden of Eden; the second was with The Tabernacle; the third was Solomon's Temple; the fourth was Herod's Temple; the fifth was Christ's **Temple** (the church); the sixth was during The Millennium and the seventh will be when The New Heaven and The New Earth are made. Of all seven houses, four were of human origin and three were built by Christ and God. You are told about these **Houses** of God which were to be **The Kingdom of God** on earth in the past and in the future, "**Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus; Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house. For this man was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inas-**

much as he who has built the house has more honor than the house. For every house is built by some *man*; but he that built all things is God" (Hebrews 3:1-4). Paul begins these words addressing **the people** as "**Holy.**" These are the requirements to be in God's **Kingdom** (I Peter 2:9).

The Kingdom of God is more than **the promised land**. It includes all of God's **citizens**. The reality is both land and the people are married. That is why an inheritance of land also includes **the people**. Therefore **the people** have a **profession** or **job** to qualify to have a right to be **married forever** and live in God's **promised land**. You qualify by **having faith in God**, so God does the work by changing you through His **Holy Spirit**.

God is The One **who builds all things**. God with Christ **does the work**. The work is not done by any man. Four Houses of God were attempted to be built by **man**. **The people** were weak because of **the weakness of the flesh**. They were not qualified. In each case only a **remnant** will qualify from both Israel and The Church of God. That is why Jesus said only **a few will be able to enter The Gate** of New Jerusalem (Matthew 7:14). Salvation continues in God's **Kingdom** with Christ and God as **The Temple** (Revelation 21:22). Jesus was right when He said The Kingdom of God is "**within you.**" The **citizens of The Kingdom of God** live in the **land forever**, a **Paradise** and are **married to the land**. This is the **only** way God can promise **rest, peace and joy forever!** God is **perfect**, **His work is perfect** and **He will make you perfect**.

A Spiritual Temple

Paul and the ministry are helpers with God in being a **master builder** (I Corinthians 3:1-17). They all know how to help build

The House of God. However, each minister only knows “**a part of the house**” and **must learn together “in love,”** how to help build the complete House of God. Paul declares, “**Know you not that you are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwells in you? If any man [preacher] defile the temple [Christianity] of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which *temple* you are**” (I Corinthians 3:16-17). Wow! In New Jerusalem God and Christ are **the temple**, but **so are you!** Those **living in New Jerusalem** are **Holy** and will be considered **The Temple of God.** **The House of God is a Holy house** and Christ is Melchizedek, The High Priest, who can make you Holy. Christians are a Royal and Holy Priesthood and useful **servants of honor** living and serving in **God's great house.** God, The Father, is **The Greatest Servant** in building and caring for **His House.** Then Christ is followed by all of Adam and Eve's **progeny** according to **their works** and each will receive a **reward** (Revelation 22:12).

Basis Of Paradise

Those who **dwell in The House of God** and on His **property** (Promised Land) are foundationally grounded **in faith.** As long as **faith** (absolute trust) in **God** exists in **His people (The Sons of God)** there will be **no need for any law** – only **liberty** and **unrestrained freedom.** You will live, eternally, in **The Rest of God.** The **power** which sustained such **peace** and **harmony** with **total joy** and **happiness** is “**love.**” God's **law** will be kept by your **holy nature** given to you by **God's Holy Spirit.**

Competition will no longer exist. However, the desire to help each other's personal goals will be **good** for everyone. Attempting to be better than others will no longer exist. No more **ego**, since survival of the fittest will no longer exist but be destroyed.

Together everyone can have what is good for them. The **greatest**, the heroes or those of renown, are those who **contribute the most**. Celebrities will be those who **produce** and **give the most**. What a **difference** from this present **world!**

Since all mankind is a mixture of good and evil, people can swing from those who **beat others** in sports or war, to those who **save lives**. An example is the pilot who saved all his passengers when he safely landed in The Hudson River. Back in the twenties, thirties and forties, a real athlete was one who was a **good sport** also. Any display which demeaned others meant disqualification from the game. "**Unsportsmanlike displays**" were looked **down upon** as a lack of character. In **The Kingdom of God**, "**Laws**" will not be needed because **no penalty** or **curse** will be needed, because of **God's love** and **faith** in His **Son**. Sons of God will keep *The Ten Commandments* in their hearts and there will be **no sin**. **They will not even THINK of lying, stealing or committing any sins**. "**All unrighteousness is sin**" and **sin no longer** will occur (I John 5:17). **Righteousness will prevail**. **The Kingdom of God** becomes obvious. It isn't just a **place but also a condition**. The **condition** is **love** and **righteousness**. The **famous** will be those who **contribute the most**. Where one lives is determined by **works** which is a special **reward**. One **lives** or **dwells** either in **The House of God** in New Jerusalem (in **the suburbs on God's property**) or beyond the suburbs in **outer darkness**. Those in outer darkness must grow "In Christ" – by drinking from **the waters** with **the healing leaves**. Real **justice** prevails in The Kingdom of God. All are **satisfied**, a true Paradise is **eternal** because only "**God's righteousness**" **will exist**. It becomes apparent that **the place** and **the citizens**, who are **The Sons of God** with Christ and God, comprise **The Kingdom of God**. **The Kingdom of God** is truly "**within you**."

CHAPTER 5

EARNEST OF INHERITANCE

Christians have only received an earnest of their inheritance which is a pledge or guarantee if they remain faithful (Ephesians 1:14). This inheritance is an absolute promise if you are faithful to the end. Then, all those in Christ (both in heaven and on earth) will be gathered together “In Christ” in the fullness or completion of times (Ephesians 1:10). The fullness of times occurs with the dispensing of God’s “will.” This earnest or pledge is a process, yet is an absolute promise predicated upon faith.

A Dispensation

In Greek, “**dispensation**” signifies “**a dispensing**” or “**putting God’s ‘will’ in force.**” Christ has inherited all things (Hebrews 1:2). When Jesus returns, He will have control of The Kingdom of God (I Corinthians 15:24). Jesus must reign as King of Kings until He puts down all of God’s enemies – the last enemy being death (I Corinthians 15:26). When God creates The New Heaven and The New Earth, **death will no longer exist**. All have **the gift of eternal life with incorruptible bodies** (I Corinthians 15:54). Now, according to God’s “**will,**” Christ dispenses each person’s **inheritance** according to **his/her works** (Revelations 22:12). A Christian is either a Son of God and worthy to be **Christ’s wife** or **a guest at The Wedding Feast**. Those not in *The Book of Life*, **The Marriage Registry**, are left in **outer darkness** (Revelations 19:9 and Matthew 25:30).

The Gift of Eternal Life is given to everyone for a very good reason. All are finally saved but each man receives an individual reward, **“That all *men* [universal – everyone] should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honours not the Son honours not the Father which has sent him. Verily, verily [forever], I say unto you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation [destruction]; but is passed from death unto life”** (John 5:23-24).

When a person **gives honor** to Jesus as The Christ and listens to His **word**, at The White Throne Judgment that person will no **longer die**, but pass from death to **life eternal**. How plain! This is exactly what occurs at The White Throne Judgment. Read the book *The White Throne Judgement*.

It is a time when everyone honors Jesus as Lord and listens to His **word**, **“For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation”** (Romans 10:10). This is what Jesus demanded for Salvation in John 5. Paul states, **“That if you shall confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and shall believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead, you shall be saved”** (Romans 10:9). That’s it. There are **no works** or **deeds** of any kind which are demanded for **Salvation or eternal life**. It is a **gift!**

If you give honor to Jesus as The Christ, who was raised from the dead, and believe He is The Lord, you shall be **saved** and **receive eternal life**. This, however, does not make them a Son of God in The Kingdom of God. Each reward is determined by a person’s work. Who will Christ give Salvation to (Romans 10)? Now read when this takes place. Paul explained what would happen in the future, **“Wherefore God also has highly exalted him, and given**

him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee [universal] should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth [graves]; And *that* every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. Wherefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence [jail], work out your own salvation with fear and trembling” (Philippians 2:9-12).

God’s “**will**” is to **save the world** which is why Jesus came. Read I John 4:14. God promises **His pleasure will be done** (Isaiah 46:10). How does God’s “**will**” come to pass? **Salvation or eternal life is a gift** given to everyone when they confess Jesus is **The Master** and believe in Him. When Jesus returns as King of Kings and Lord of Lords at The White Throne Judgment, everyone is **resurrected in the last judgment and everyone will see Jesus as Lord in God’s full glory**. This is **The Second Resurrection** (Revelation 20).

This resurrection produces a judgment with **two results**. This last **resurrection** does not have **three resurrections** as some believe. **Everyone is resurrected in the second or last resurrection**, “**Marvel not at this: for the hour [time] is coming, in the which all that are in the graves [everyone] shall hear his voice.**” Only one resurrection, not two. “**And shall come forth [all]; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation [judgment]**” (John 5:28-29). “**Condemnation**” in Greek is “**krisis**” meaning “**a critical resurrection.**” This **judgment** is a **crisis** because one’s fate is to be decided. They go into The Lake of Fire to be **destroyed**. They are not as the others who enter **life**. This is obviously **one resurrection, the last one for judgment or “krisis,” or “a crisis.”**

How Christ Will Judge

Jesus sets the time-frame (Matthew 25:31-32). He tells you when He sits on His **throne** with all His **glory** is a period when **all nations** are gathered and He separates **the sheep** from **the goats**. The sheep enter into God's **Kingdom** as their **inheritance** (Matthew 25:34). The **goats** are sent into an **everlasting punishment** – The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:41). Notice, **no third resurrection** but an immediate separation.

What happens to those who are thrown into **the fire**? Obviously they are not destroyed forever, but resurrected after their **death** in The Lake of Fire. How? They end up in a **state of everlasting punishment** until they repent. Where does their **everlasting punishment** take place (Matthew 8:12)? **The righteous** receive **everlasting life** and receive their rewards, according to their **works**. **What works?**

God always reveals **the truth** to those who labor to become **righteous**. "**Works**" do not guarantee **Salvation**. Sin isn't even part of the question of **Salvation**. **Works** have to do with a **reward** and **not Salvation** or **eternal life**. What Christ uses for **The White Throne Judgment** is **The Parable of The Talents**. It is the **talents** or **works** which determines **the outcome of the sheep** and **the goats**. What end is in store for those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire? The Parable of The Talents has to do with the different abilities God grants each converted person (Matthew 25:1-30). "**The context**" is The Kingdom of God. The one with one talent had refused to grow. He buried his one talent. The one with two and five gained more or doubled their talents. Christ will reward the growing servants in The Kingdom of God, "**For unto every one that has shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that has not shall be taken away even**

that which he has. And cast you the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth” (Matthew 25:29-30). They do not stay dead in The Lake of Fire, **“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive”** (I Corinthians 15:22-23). In Greek, **“all”** does not mean **“all”** until every **condition** is met. That condition is met when an individual is **“In Christ.”** Then, **“all of them”** will be saved. Notice not **“all”** of Adam and Eve’s children go into The Kingdom – only **the sheep**. The **goats “In Christ”** must die in **The Lake of Fire**. After their resurrection, the last enemy – death is destroyed (I Corinthians 15:26). No one is **dead** or Christ could not turn over The Kingdom to The Father (I Corinthians 15:25).

When death ends, **“all are made alive”** because the condition of death ends, **“But every man [universal] in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ’s at his coming”** (I Corinthians 15:23). This is only **the first resurrection**, but not **the last**. **The sheep** go into The Kingdom of God and **the goats** are thrown in **The Lake of Fire** and then are resurrected. They go into **everlasting punishment in outer darkness**.

In The White Throne Judgment, how does Christ decide who are **the goats** and who are **the sheep**? The sheep are those who have received **the earnest of their inheritance** (God’s **Holy Spirit**) who grow and remain **faithful to the end**.

CHAPTER 6

THE WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

The White Throne Judgment is highly misunderstood. Most view it as a time of punishing the guilty in a court. “Vengeance belongs to me... says the Lord” (Hebrews 12:30). Humanly you may think it is pay-back time.

God only punishes as a father would with any son He loves. At times, human fathers may punish for their own satisfaction, but God punishes only for your good, “For whom the Lord loves he chastens, and scourges every son whom he receives” (Hebrews 12:6).

The Judgment is The White Throne Judgment. It is a time when those punished are made white and righteous. It is exactly what occurred to “**the bride**” who is dressed in white, which is “**righteousness.**” This “**righteousness**” represents her willingness to give her life for Christ (Revelation 19:8). The Lake of Fire is a scourging or cleansing. Fire purges **sin**. Read Isaiah 6 and His purging by the angels.

Fire Purifies

John, The Baptist defines what Christ came to do, “**I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he [Christ] that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit], and**

with fire” (Matthew 3:11). Then, John explains **the purpose of fire**. “**Whose fan is in his hand and he will thoroughly purge his floor and gather his wheat into the garner [shear]; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire**” (Matthew 3:12). Jesus purges the sheep by fire or trials but He burns up **the chaff**. Always remember **The Parable of The Sower and The Seed**, “**So the servants of the household came and said to him, Sir, did not you sow good seed in your field? From whence then has it tares [weeds]**” (Matthew 13:27)? The servants asked The Lord, “**Wilt you then that we go and gather them up**” (Matthew 13:28)? Here is Christ’s answer, “**Let both grow together until the harvest; and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers [angels]. Gather you together first the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn**” (Matthew 13:30). The question becomes which are called **the wheat** and which are **the tares**.

Jesus gives the answer in Matthew 13:26-42. **The field is the world** and **the good seed** are **the children or Sons of God**. In this system people live righteously, like Job, but still have human nature, like an animal (survival of the fittest). Hence, they require a legal law. The **tares** are **the children of Satan**. These **tares** or Satan’s children are thrown into The Lake of Fire and there will be **wailing, crying** and **the gnashing of teeth**. Pretty clear what happens to **the tares**. They are destroyed and are still dead until they too, will be resurrected.

Paul uses Esau as an example of one who sold his birthright and lost his chance to be a Son of God (Hebrews 12:15-17). After he lost it (by trading it for a bowl of porridge), he found no place to repent although he sought it with tears. Now, what is the outcome for Esau and those like him. Paul compares Israel at Mount Horeb as those afraid of God. Israel was “**the congregation**” or “**church**

of the firstborn” who feared and went into the wilderness and died. Just as Esau, they never came to repentance. Now for **the outcome** of those of Israel and for Christians who do not remain **faithful to the end**, **“Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he has promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven”** (Hebrews 12:26). This is The Time of The Judgment, **“And this word, Yet once more, signifies the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken [spirit] may remain”** (Hebrews 12:27). The last verse ends with these words, **“For our God is a consuming fire”** (Hebrews 12:29).

God is The Lake of Fire and consumes everything combustible as He comes with The New Heaven and The New Earth. This is God’s **vengeance** when everything **combustible burns up** (Hebrews 12:11 and Isaiah 30:33). **All flesh is destroyed or dead** which is **the full payment for sin**. Those saved by **the blood of Christ** are in **The Kingdom of God** and **the tares are burned up**. They are **dead or destroyed** and **sin** has been paid in full by **the unrepentant**. What does God do with those who are **dead**? **Everyone** is resurrected. Those born from Adam and Eve are **“All In Christ” and death no longer exists** (I Corinthians 15).

Now, **“All In Christ”** are saved in **The Kingdom of God**. Salvation continues. The **fire purges everyone of sin** and sin no longer exists (I Corinthians 15:53-57). **The victory over death** comes through **The Lord and Savior, Jesus, The Christ** (I Corinthians 15:57). The only question remaining is how Christ judges between those who are sheep who enter The Kingdom of God and the goats who do not enter. What makes you a goat and what makes you a sheep? Read Jude. **The goats** are resurrected as **spirit** after they **burn up** in The Lake of Fire and end in **outer darkness** (wilderness) wailing and gnashing their teeth (Matthew 25:30).

The Unpardonable Sin

Those “**goats**” thrown into The Lake of Fire **are resurrected** to go into **outer darkness**. “**Outer darkness**” will be “**the wilderness**” and they will be seeking **heart-felt repentance**, crying and gnashing their teeth. They have been resurrected and received eternal life but they find themselves in **the darkness** which excludes them from **The Kingdom of God** in New Jerusalem (Revelation 22:14-15).

Jesus explains if you are in court with an **accuser** or **indicted** for a **crime** you must, “**Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are in the way with him** [not in court]; **lest at anytime the adversary deliver you to the judge** [trial by judgment], **and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison** [outer darkness]. **Verily I say to you, you shall by no means come out thence** [jail], **till you have paid the uttermost farthing**” (Matthew 5:25-26).

This is what happens to those in **outer darkness**. God’s “**prison**” is like “**tartaroo**” for Satan and his angels (II Peter 2:4). Clearly “**outer darkness**” is “**God’s jail**” or “**a dungeon**” where one stays until they fully pay for their **crimes**. They have already confessed but they throw themselves upon **the mercy of the court** and are still confined in prison until they completely grow “**In Christ**” (Ephesians 4). Then, they are rehabilitated. That is why Christ said to visit prisoners so they can come to Christ. **The river of healing leaves** begins to heal them, “**And the Spirit [Holy] and the Bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water [Holy Spirit] of life freely**” (Revelation 22:17). Being athirst refers to “**the healing leaves**” from “the river flowing from The Tree of Life.” This is the whole context for you to understand.

The Waters of Life comes from **The Throne of God and Christ** while The Bride visits those **in prison (outer darkness)**. Now, how does Christ conduct “**the trial**” at The White Throne Judgment? First, what is the crime? It is not sin because everyone has already confessed and mercy was given to each and everyone.

What is the indictment or unpardonable sin? “**Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy [abuse] against the Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaks against the Holy Ghost [Spirit], it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world [new earth] to come**” (Matthew 12:31-32). Jesus simply defines **the unpardonable sin**. So many, erroneously, believe God keeps a list of **your sins**. Once you confess, God not only **forgives your sins**, but **forgets them!** Wow! It is the refusal and rejection of God’s **Holy Spirit** which abuses or blasphemes God’s **Holy Spirit**. It is your rejection of God’s **gift** of His **Holy Spirit** leading you to **the truth** (which is **unpardonable**). Your refusal of **your Father’s loving words** (to be saved) by your **ignorance (not caring)** or **foolishness (denying God)** is **the unpardonable sin**. Most individuals are **unteachable** and not as little children inquisitive to learn.

Now for the trial. Listen to how Christ separates **the sheep** from **the goats** (Matthew 25:31-46). What will be **the indictment** at **The White Throne Judgment**? It is **not sin** since all have **confessed**, but it is how you have behaved and **treated humanity**. Can’t be any clearer. There is **no sin** brought up in **The Judgment**. That is why Jesus follows this **indictment** or **crime** to **humanity** after giving **The Parable of The Talents**. Eternal life is given as **a gift**, but each person receives a different reward according

to **his/her works**. You are either growing **spiritually** or **not**. If not, then you end up in **God's "prison of outer darkness"** until you pay **the last farthing**. God is always "**just**" and **loves you**. Why does God punish you? "**Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby**" (Hebrews 12:11). There is your scriptural answer. God is a **loving Father!** You, on your own, must have **free choice to choose "righteousness."** You can choose either God or Satan.

Even The White Throne Judgment leads those in **the fire and prison** into rehabilitation but only when **each** decides of their own **free choice** to repent. God allows pain, suffering and death, so each of you can make **the right choice** to follow either **good** or **evil**. It is all about "**the trees**" and what **fruit you produce**. You recognize **The Sons of God** by their fruits (Matthew 7:20).

CHAPTER 7

GOD'S HOLY PREDESTINED PLAN

Christians argue about “doctrine” which has very little to do with “what is truth.” Doctrine changes and is a process. It is a “learning.” Romans 14 is Paul’s answer to doctrine. It is not “differences in doctrine” which determines “spiritual growth,” but how your heart and mind becomes more and more like Christ’s.

Spiritual Growth

Paul said, “**for whatsoever is not of faith is sin**” (Romans 14:23). A Christian’s belief constitutes their personal right to believe. Doctrine or **teaching** is important, but only on a personal, individual level. You cannot observe any doctrines dogmatically or you will hold yourself back from growing with all your doubts and continual debating. Read the book *Faith That Saves*.

As long as respecting and learning to love each other prevails, the different “**understandings of doctrine**” should cause no harm to The Body of Christ. When **dogma** becomes **the church’s truth**, an individual’s **spiritual growth is damaged**. “**Doctrine**” in Hebrew and Greek means “**a teaching**” (Acts 15). Gentiles were followers of Christ and did not need to be circumcised or keep The Law, but could receive God’s **Holy Spirit** and grow into **truth**. These are two different doctrines or paths to become **righteous**. The Apostles and The Entire Jerusalem Church accepted the truth of The Gentiles becoming God’s “**chosen called-out ones**” with-

out The Law. The Law would, then, be written in their hearts and minds (Hebrews 8:10).

A **new doctrine** (one for **The Jews** and another for **The Gentiles**) was given by God. No dogmatic stance of doctrine, but God instituted a **new way** for Gentiles. **Spiritual growth** was the new way to God (Acts 10:35). Christians are no longer thrown **to and fro** by every wind of doctrine (Ephesians 4:14). Paul said, “**Till we all come in the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**” (Ephesians 4:13).

Christians must grow **spiritually** as an individual matter. You must respect and love each other. In a respected environment, Christians can grow at their own level of ability as God's **Holy Spirit** leads them (Philippians 2:12). “**Love**” is “the only **spiritual gift** from God which **never fails**” (I Corinthians 13).

An Individual Matter

Adam and Eve ate of the wrong tree, embellishing their own human nature and ended with death because of their decision. Israel followed her lovers so God gave them over to “**the beast power.**” Christians, by the end of The First Century, were in **chaos** and finally absorbed by Rome (The Fourth Beast of Daniel who Christ will fight at His **return**). Your God and Father does not **force** you to **love Him** or His **Son** or His **creation**. God grants **liberty**, not **dogma**. The Letter of The Law **was codified** and became a **legal document** because Israel **sinned** by their choice between **the two trees**. The Law was only meant to be a Schoolmaster to lead them to Christ (Galatians 3:24).

Secondly, God **does not** expect you to do what you do not have

the ability to be **taught**. You can only learn when you are as **little babes** on mother's milk (Isaiah 28). If you have any **resistance** because of **personal desires**, (**a wrong heart**) you cannot be taught additional truth. How can you **expect** everyone to continually **think** and **reason** the same way "**all the time?**" Sooner or later, **thinking differently** will cause **splits**. You cannot be "**non-denominational**" if you must "**doctrinally**" agree with the church you attend. Once you grow into **new truth**, you will gain **a new spiritual doctrine – faith**.

Paul said if a **member is told** after **two** or **three** warnings to stop being **dogmatic** or **forcing** others to believe like they do, that person is to be left alone. Eventually, God (or Satan) will test him/her and they will begin to grow. Then, he/she can return to the fold (I Corinthians 5:4-5). In all examples, whether Adam and Eve, Israel, Christianity or an individual's Christian behavior, God always allows **liberty** or **freedom** to do as they prefer. Only those causing **trouble** or **debates** are to be left alone. No **dogma**. **No one can remove** you from your God. Only God and Christ can remove you and only because of your lack of repentance.

God is not a God of **slavery**. God completely believes in **liberty** or **total free choice**. Why? God is **love** and you are to be like God. Laws are needed to rule you if you are a criminal. "**Dogma**" means "**a command**." "**A command**" means you have "**no choice**." God had to give Israel a command since they had a **wrong heart** (Hebrews 3:10). They simply were **not teachable**.

"Love" **fulfills** "**The Law**" because you **choose** by **faith** not to **sin** and **not because** of **The Letter of The Law** (as a **dogma**). You obey God because you choose to and as you **grow** in **God's love**, you learn to love Him. You no longer fear Him, because you are growing in God's **love**. "**Perfect love casts out fear**" (I

John 4:18). Perfect love is so intense toward **the one loved**, that person begins to be willing to die for them. In Greek it is “agapé love.” There is no **torment** or overwhelming **stress**, because your **love is so strong**. “**Fear**” no longer exists. This level of **love** is so **strong**, it is **courageous beyond human belief**. To grow into God’s **love**, it must be and will be by “**free choice**.” If not, then you **do not** have God’s **love**. That is why in The Kingdom of God, to become Sons of God, you must have this type of love. This **love** only occurs through **liberty** – never **slavery**.

God’s predestined Plan of Salvation (to become Sons of God) can only happen by God’s **Holy Spirit** on an individual basis. Only God knows a **heart**. God knows when your heart is ready to be **taught** as **little children**. It is a time when with a **right heart** you **desire** and want to be **taught**. Then God’s **Holy Spirit** is accepted by **you** and you are **teachable** “**spiritually**.” Only God can determine **the true desires of your heart**.

Christ said Peter would not have God’s “**love**” until he grew old and just before he died (John 21). You should all have **the patience** of Christ and grow in **His love**.

CHAPTER 8

GOD'S KINGDOM AND MARRIAGE

Jesus is asked by The Pharisees if it is right for a married man to put away his wife. Christ said, “What did Moses say?” “They replied, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* [wife] away” (Matthew 10:4).

Then Jesus said, “For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife” (Mark 10:5-7). “What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder” (Mark 10:9). God joins a man and a woman by His love, through His Holy Spirit (Romans 5:5). In The Garden of Eden, the relationship between a man and a woman was different than marriage under The Law. What was the difference and what has it to do with The Kingdom of God?

Hardness Of Heart

Marriage, under **The Law**, is different than when **being bound** by God in The Garden. The difference has to do with a **state** of **one's heart**. You will see marriage under **The Law** is one thing, but to be **united** by God is different, because it is based upon one's heart. Again, you are about to learn **scripturally** what the differ-

ence is. Jesus said, “**The kingdom is within you**” (Luke 17:21). God’s **rest** is a place in **The Promised Land** given to Abraham in Canaan or **Paradise** on **The New Earth**. What is the difference? In Canaan, God’s “**physical promised land**” was based upon The Letter of The Law. One could be in **God’s rest** in Canaan as long as they kept **The Letter of The Law**, perfectly. **Illegal immigrants** were **not allowed**. One was either circumcised and kept *The Old Covenant* in every aspect or one could not be in **God’s Land of Rest**. Now for a biblical surprise. The requirement to be in God’s **Paradise** in The New Heaven and on The New Earth is entirely different.

One has to have a **different heart** to be in The Kingdom of God. It has to do with a **spiritual difference** which has to do with **The Marriage of Christ**, The Groom and His Wife. One’s heart is the deciding factor. In *The Old Covenant*, entering God’s **rest** was completely different than entering **The Marriage Feast** in The New Heaven and The New Earth. Canaan and Paradise are opposites. *The Old Covenant* had to do with **works**. *The New Covenant* in The Kingdom of God is “**within you**” or “**spiritually in you**.” Israel had a **wrong heart** and was **permitted to divorce**. The Law administered under Moses allowed **divorce** (Deuteronomy 24). The Law in *The New Covenant*, administered by Christ was **spiritual** and, therefore, had to do with **one’s heart** as to their marriage commitment and **no divorce was permitted**. Godly holy marriage is the joining of male and female becoming one with God (I Corinthians 15:28).

Disciples And Marriage

After Jesus concluded the marriage question about divorce, The Disciples were astonished to hear marriage was originally intended to be **forever** (Matthew 19). They still did not understand

why Moses permitted **divorce** in The Law in *The Old Covenant*. Here is what **The Disciples** remarked concerning the marriage question, "**His disciples say unto Him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.**" They knew The Law permitted **divorce**. Jesus replied "**All men cannot receive this saying**" (Matthew 19:10-12). He was referring to being a **eunuch** for The Kingdom of God's sake.

What is it about **the heart** which **must change** to **make it right** for **a man** and **a woman** to be joined together till **death do them part**? Jesus answers the question with **the account of the rich man**. The rich man asked Jesus what he must do to **inherit life**. Christ answered, "**Keep The Commandments.**" The rich man acknowledged he had done so since his birth. Jesus loved him. Then the **rich man** said, "**What do I lack?**" For Salvation, The Keeping of *The Commandments* was not enough. Christ told him, he needed to **sell all he had** and **follow Him to be perfect**. The **rich man** had an **agenda** or **idol**. He couldn't do what Jesus said and **left**. Then, The Disciples said exactly, "**Who then can be saved**" (Matthew 19:24-25)? Notice, Christ declared, "**It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into The Kingdom of God [heaven].**"

The original state of marriage in The Garden of Eden and entering The Kingdom of God are the same. Adam and Eve were in The Kingdom of God's "rest," but they gambled on the wrong tree and lost **The Kingdom**. **They couldn't do it. What was the answer Jesus gave?** "**With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible**" (Matthew 19:26). How does God allow you to **enter The Kingdom of God?** "**And every one [world] that has forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold and shall inherit everlast-**

ing life” (Matthew 19:29). There is your answer biblically. To be married to one wife or husband is the same requirement.

One must have **a heart** whereby one must be **willing** to give up **everything**. That is why Adam was **a type of Christ**, because he was **not deceived** and was willing to give his **life for Eve** (Romans 5:14). Adam was a **figure of Jesus** and knowingly **died** for his **wife** (Romans 5:14). Jesus said you must be willing to die. Just as Adam died for Eve and Christ died for **all humanity**, likewise you must be willing to **give up everything for Him**. Having a right heart is when **a man becomes one flesh** with a **woman**. This type of **marriage** is not **based upon Baal** (god of fertility) but upon **the woman** belonging to **man** and **the man** belonging to **the woman** as **one flesh**. That is why Paul said, **“For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as The Lord the church”** (Ephesians 5:29).

Baalism And One Flesh

Moses permitted divorce in The Law because of a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 24:1). In Hebrew, the word for **“marry”** is **“baal.”** **“Baal”** is **“a false god”** or **“an idol.”** In Hebrew it means **“a god of fertility.”** Worshipping **“baalism”** or **“the gods of fertility”** is to marry for **sex**. God warns about this type of **marriage**. A man or woman believe they cannot live without each other. This is a **dichotomy**.

God tells you **not to marry** till you are willing to **die** for the other. When you **marry** having agapé **love**, you **marry** because you both want to be **“one flesh.”** The others want the woman or man for themselves (sex). What is the difference? Your **heart** is the **answer**. When you have a **godly heart**, you only **do** and **think** what is **the best for your mate**. It is a matter of **conscience**

and **concern**. A man or woman in marriage reveal their **behavior**. Jesus said you can tell a **right heart** by the fruits you produce. Either your behavior reveals a **good heart** (the best for the other) or you have a "**baal type of marriage**." That is the difference.

A marriage only based upon sex and **compatibility** can't last. **In an eternal marriage, both must love each other as one flesh!** That is **perfection** and why Jesus said you must be willing to **give up** everything for His **name's sake**. Jesus has **died for you**, so Adam and Eve and now **Christ's Wife** must be **willing to die** for her **Husband** (Revelation 19:7-8).

Penalty Of Baalism

God saw Eve was **deceived** by Satan. Adam wasn't deceived and he willingly died with a "**godly love**." From this point, **marriage** was changed from its **original purpose**, "**Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you**" (Genesis 3:16). God wanted to **protect Eve** and from this point, **the man became her master**, to care for her and protect her. The woman from this time forward would have **pain in childbirth** and her husband **owned her** according to a "Baal" marriage. Because Adam was willing to **die** for **Eve**, this was his responsibility.

Adam chose Eve over God who provided everything for both of them. So this is what God decreed for Adam, "**Thorns also and thistles shall it [earth] bring forth to you; and you shall eat the herb of the field. In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread, till you return unto the ground; for out of it were you taken: for dust you art and unto dust shall you return**" (Genesis 3:18-19).

Because Eve was deceived, she had to be under the care and control of her husband, Adam. Because he ate of **the wrong tree, knowingly**, he had to struggle for **survival** and be responsible for his **wife**. Now **the marriage contract** had to be changed. “Baal marriage” is when **the land** and **the woman** were regarded as **the man's responsibility**. Both **the land** and **the woman** became Adam's job. He now owned them both. **The woman** became man's **property** to care for and to rule over, (which is fine when the husband rules as God and Christ would).

CHAPTER 9

GOD “ALL IN ALL”

“And when all things shall be subdued unto Him [Christ], then shall The Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be All In All” (I Corinthians 15:28).

God’s Kingdom

The definition of The Kingdom of God is quite simple. After Jesus puts down all enemies, including **death**, He then gives all **control** back to The Father so God may be **All In All** (I Corinthians 15:25-28). **The Kingdom** is “**within you.**” Now what Jesus said becomes quite clear. God tells you He will do **all His pleasure** (Isaiah 46:10). God is **love** and **nothing gives greater joy and happiness to Him than blessing all His creation, forever.** **God’s kingdom is not only a place, but rather a condition or quality of life.** In this **physical life**, happiness is very **elusive**. It comes and goes. Happiness does not permanently occur in human existence. What is **missing**?

God promises His **rest** will be **Paradise**. In your human love, you desire to take **vacations**. You vacate your present **stress** and **seek rest**. It is always somewhere else in this **world**. You are “**on the go**” to find a **true rest** much like a **vacation rest**. Just as Cain who sought repentance, but couldn’t find it, the world constantly seeks a **vacation**. A state of continual **happiness** and **joy** is in your **nature** to find. Some believe fulfilling **your desires**, other **idols**, will answer **the human dilemma**. Even to the point of

wanting to be like the world's celebrities. On and on it goes. As Solomon said, "**Vanity of vanities...all is vanity**" (Ecclesiastes 1:2). **Paradise, God's rest, is not a place but a condition. Happiness and joy is and must be "within you."** You are told The Kingdom of God must be "**within you.**"

A State Of Mind

In this life, people can be somber, depressed, erratic, joyful, pleasant or happy. You are truly a mixture of **good** and **evil** or a form of Babylon. What is the difference? Some poor individuals are basically happy and some of the rich are miserable. In other cases, the rich are happy and the poor are unhappy. Obviously, it isn't **things** or **places** which makes the difference, but **the individuals themselves**. Again, it is **within you** and not something outside yourself. You are about to find out **it is a state or condition of your mind and heart**.

Paul clears up this dilemma, "**For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace**" (Romans 8:6). You want a **vacation** but perhaps can't afford one. Perhaps you should **change your mind**. How? Stop having a **carnal mind**. A **carnal mind** also pursues its **own survival or desires**. Stop thinking of **yourself**. The culprit is **your mind** and your hearts desire. You must **give them up** and **seek a new mind**. You need to learn how to **think logically** or have a **sound mind**. That requires **repentance**. When one "**repents**," the word in Greek means "**a change of mind**." What kind of **mind**? You have found when you repent, God will **give you His Holy Spirit**. With God's **Holy Spirit** you **lose all fear** by **the power of God's love**, which produces a **sound mind** (II Timothy 1:7). "**A sound mind**" in Greek means "**a disciplined mind**," one that is no longer in Babylon, but a **logical mind**. You must have **the same mind**, which is **God's**

mind (Philippians 2:5). God’s **mind** is far **superior** to **yours** (Isaiah 55). God’s **mind** only **thinks straight**, because it is based upon **love** and **not self**. God has **no ego** while most individuals have enormous egos.

Walking Together

No two people ever think exactly the same. Sooner or later, you have **conflict** because of your differences. Peace only exists when either one goes along with the other. The only other possibility is a **compromise** or allowing each to be as they choose. In **truth**, it isn’t the answer to **Paradise**. Paradise requires **far more**. You **must all think “alike”** and still be **individuals**. How is that possible? **“With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible”** (Matthew 19:26). There is a very basic principle to be in **God’s rest** or **Paradise**. Can two walk **together** unless they be **agreed** (Amos 3:3)? God and all His **creation** must be **in total agreement** to live in **eternal peace**. Billions and billions of humans must have the same mind as Christ. How is that possible? God promises a **kingdom of Eternal Rest**, **“For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of The Sons of God”** (Romans 8:19). God’s **Sons** must have the **same mind** and **heart**. They will think **the same way** – because of **God’s love**. That is why **God’s love fulfills The Law**. **The Law is the way you think and the desire in your heart**. *The Old Covenant* of **The Letter of The Law** isn’t needed. You become *The Torah* because of your own heart and mind. Then, and only then, you **walk together in peace** – God’s **“rest.”** **Paradise then will be guaranteed.**

Babylon Today

Internally you are in **Babylon**, until you have **the mind** and **heart**

of God. Very few of you know **good** from **evil** and everyone has their own **ideas**. The **human ego is self-centered**. Unknowingly, you **worship yourself** and your desire is to **survive**. God made you “**subject to vanity**, [having no purpose], **not willingly, but by reason of Him [God] who has subjected *the same* in hope**” (Romans 8:20). God predestinated you to exist in **Babylon** or **confusion**. Why should this be in His **plan**? God is reproducing **Himself** and not creating **robots**. Each of you must **walk in agreement**. What a **superior God** you have! When you understand all the parables, all the pieces of the puzzle, and the mystery, you will find God has created a **perfect plan**!

Once God is “**All In All**,” you will be “**At One**.” That is why Jesus said He and **The Father are “One**.” It isn’t some mystery that God and **His Son** are “**one being**,” but of **one mind** and **heart**, as separate **individual beings**. When you become Sons of God, you will **all be “One”** with **Christ** and **God**. All of you are **individuals**, but still “**One**” in **mind** and **heart**. Then Sons of God like Christ and God will be – **All** and **In All**. That **love** guarantees absolute **rest** in **The Kingdom of God**.

This Flesh

This **flesh** has **no profit** or **good** (John 6:63). It is **useless**. Once God, by His **Holy Spirit**, creates a **new mind** and **heart “In You”** – it is time for a **new body**. As Peter said, this **tabernacle** or **tent** you live in, **must be changed**. This change occurs at **the resurrection**. **When death ends**, you will put on a **new eternal body** with a **mind** and **heart** exactly like God’s and Christ’s (I Corinthians 15:54 and Philippians 2:5). God will be “**in all**” and **Paradise will be eternal** which will be **God’s Wedding Feast**. This is **The Kingdom of God “within you.”**

CHAPTER 10

IT'S ALL ABOUT LAND AND MARRIAGE

God is at this time, creating a New Heaven and a New Earth. This temporary universe disappears by fire because when God returns from His throne in heaven, He, as a consuming fire, destroys all that is old (Hebrews 12:29). You are about to learn why God and Christ are involved with a marriage which includes the land and the people.

God And The Earth

“The earth is The Lord’s and the fulness thereof; the world and they that dwell therein” (Psalm 24:1). This earth and all humans belong to God. He is **The Lord** or **Master**. This present earth and all of you in it are **ruled** by God as **Master**. The question becomes how will He rule The Kingdom of God. What is the difference? You will prove it is **all** about **marriage, the earth** – the land and all of **mankind**.

God Marries Jerusalem

Read all of Ezekiel 16. God speaks of “**Jerusalem**” as “**a woman**” (Ezekiel 16:7). “**Jerusalem**” is the one He loves and wants to enter into a covenant with so she could become His (Ezekiel 16:8). Then, God married Jerusalem. Remember, marriage at this time is **Baal** or a **master** or **lord over a wife**. Some men act the same way to their wives today. Yet, in a few cases, the woman becomes the master.

In either case, God in **the master translation** means “**the lord** marries Jerusalem, a geographical piece of **land**.” Then, you find another biblical example taking place during **The Millennium**. Jerusalem shall be restored to **righteousness**. **The Gentiles** will also seek God’s **righteousness** in Jerusalem (Isaiah 62:1-4). Jerusalem will no longer be **desolate**, but beautiful [Hephzibah] (Isaiah 62:4).

Marriage according to the Hebrew word “**Baal**” means “**lord or master over the woman**” (Deuteronomy 24:1). Eve’s new marriage agreement with Adam meant he would be **ruling over her**. Adam was the master of the land which carried a penalty of having to do hard labor. After Adam transgressed, he had to do the work instead of God as was done in The Garden of Eden. Read *The Book of Ruth* about Ruth marrying Boaz and his purchase of the land belonging to Naomi. Both **the land** and **the woman** were **married to Boaz**. This is a “**Baal marriage**” as was decreed in The Garden of Eden after Adam and Eve sinned. Now you can understand why David said that God was **Lord** and **Master** over **the entire earth** (Psalm 24:1). When God marries, He will then be **The Lord** or **Master** over **the land** and **the people**. The entire *Bible* is about God’s **property, the earth** and **all mankind**. *The Bible Story* is the account of how God marries His **property** and everything in it. He is **The Master** or **Lord**.

God Makes All Things New

God is **The Alpha** and **The Omega**. What He **begins**, He will **finish**. God declares that what He started in **ancient times**, He completes at **the end** (Isaiah 46:10-11). To understand how God makes **all things new**, you must go back to the beginning. Jesus reveals that in the beginning, **marriage was different** (Mark 10). Marriage, in The Garden of Eden, was not a **lord** or **master** “rela-

tionship” but based upon “**one flesh.**”

The reason Christ told The Pharisees “**divorce**” was permitted in **The Law of Moses** was that **the people had a wrong heart.** Adam **loved Eve** because she was **bone** of his **bone** and **flesh** of his **flesh.** They virtually were of **one flesh.** Since God instituted their **godly marriage** with a **right heart,** Adam was willing to **die** for Eve and, therefore, was a **type of Christ** who **dies** for **His Bride.** “**What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.**” That is the entire story of *The Bible* and *The Good News* or *Gospel of Jesus Christ* (Mark 1:1). The Kingdom of God is predicated upon a **godly marriage.** You are becoming “**One**” with Christ and becoming “**One**” with God. Truly, The Kingdom of God is “**within you.**” It is all about a godly **marriage.** God in The New Heaven and The New Earth makes **all things new** by becoming “**One**” with Christ.

Servants And Heirs

A **servant** who is a **slave** must serve their **master or lord.** In a Baal-type of marriage “**the husband**” is “**lord.**” Sarah and all **the holy women** were in **subjection** to their husbands. Sarah called Abraham **lord** and **master** (I Peter 3:5-6). An amazing change is about to take place in The New Heaven and The New Earth.

Once one receives an **inheritance,** their status changes. Even though one is an **heir,** until they receive **the promise,** they are **servants under a master** (Galatians 4:1-7). They are being **trained** by **tutors** and **governors,** who are their **masters.** They are no **different** than any **servant** or **slave.** Today, all Christians are “**servants**” and the word in Greek is “**doulous**” defined as “**a slave.**” Christ is **your Husband** and He is responsible for **cleansing** and making you **ready** for **The Wedding Feast,** to be **His Wife.**

Jesus cannot and will not return until **His Bride** makes herself **ready** to be **His Wife** (Revelation 19:7-8). Then again, God will not allow Jesus to marry until **His Bride is ready** or **worthy to be The Wife**. That is why Jesus said it is only in The Father's **hand** or **power** to decide when The Kingdom of God will come (Acts 1:6-7). Everything depends upon when The Bride is **worthy**, just as Jesus proved Himself **worthy** (Revelation 5). The Groom died for His Wife, just as **The Bride** must be willing to die for Him. Both The Groom (Christ) and His **Bride** (The Church) must have God's **love** before being ready for marriage. Then, it can be a "**Godly**" marriage and not a "**Baal**" marriage.

You become a Son of God, "**God has sent forth The Spirit of His Son** [Holy Spirit] **into your hearts, crying Abba** [like Daddy], **Father**" (Galatians 4:6). From this gift of inheritance, God's **Holy Spirit**, "**you are no more a servant** [slave] **but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ**" (Galatians 4:7). This change from **slave** to **an heir** now places you in a **special category**. Once your training is complete, some wonderful blessings will be given you. Your Father, in heaven, loves you and is waiting to give you the greatest gift – **Eternal Life**.

CHAPTER 11

YEAR OF JUBILEE

“The Law is a shadow of good things to come” (Hebrews 10:1). The Law of Moses is a prophecy for the future. That is why Christ said, “one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled [completed]” (Matthew 5:18). Christian churches who memorialize God’s Holy Days understand these prophecies. Read the book *God’s Sabbath And Holy Days*. Amazingly, these churches understand The Holy Days and their prophecy except for The Jubilee Year in Leviticus 25.

The Jubilee Feast occurred every fifty years in Israel, which was **“a year of release of all debts.”** Everyone is to return and receive their **inheritance**, even if they **had sold** or **lost it**. Only The Gentiles in Israel remain slaves or servants forever. Gentiles are those without God.

Sacrifices were to be made of sheep and oxen. However, one sacrifice **“the azazel goat”** was different, meaning **“one sent into the wilderness or outer darkness.”** There were **two goats** to be **sacrificed** – **one as a burnt offering**, totally consumed and destroyed by fire. The **azazel goat** had all **the sins of Israel** placed upon his head and then sent into **the wilderness** with all those **sins**. This occurred on The Day of Atonement, once a year. The Year of Jubilee was known as **The Horn of Plenty**. **“A horn”** in prophecy is **“a government”** (Revelation 13). The Year of Jubi-

lee was a time of complete **liberty** – debts erased without slavery except for The Gentiles (Leviticus 25:44-46). The sacrifice of **the two goats** took place on The Day of Atonement (Leviticus 16), but The Jubilee only happened once every fifty years. Annually, **The Day of Atonement** was kept to make Israel remember their sins and be forgiven for another year, but all the blame for their sins were placed upon **the azazel goat**, which went into **the wilderness**. Year by year these **sins** were pardoned, but **freedom from all debt** was only on The Jubilee Year. The Jubilee Year was a **year of liberty and plenty, a horn of plenty** with its government of plenty. How do these **sacrifices** shadow a future prophecy? Jesus gives you the answer.

The **sheep** enter The Kingdom of God and **the goats** go into an everlasting **punishment**. The azazel goat, “Satan,” who has **the sins of the world** goes into A Lake of Fire (The Valley of Gehenna) and after **The Millennium, they go into The Lake of Fire** [the whole universe is burned up]. The **goat** is sacrificed and the other **goat**, Satan, goes into **outer darkness** with everyone else coming out of The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:31-46, Revelation 20 and I Corinthians 15:22-23). Not only is **The Law** a shadow of prophecy, but it reveals **sacrifices** (Hebrews 10:1).

This prophecy foretells the time when there will be **no death** and God will wipe away all **tears** from everyone’s eyes. God will rejoice (Isaiah 25:6-9). This is **The Time of The Resurrection** (Isaiah 26:19). Isaiah is describing The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth, when **death** no longer exists and there will be **no more crying**. This is exactly what is prophesied in Revelation 21:4. Can’t be any plainer! At this period, you need to observe what takes place in **prophecy**.

At this Time of The Resurrection, followed by The New Heaven

and The New Earth, a **glorious event** takes place, “**And in this mountain** [government] **shall the Lord of hosts make unto all people** [universal] **a feast of fat things** [Horn of Plenty], **a feast of wines on the lees, of fat** [abundance] **things full of marrow** [life], **of wines on the lees well refined**” (Isaiah 25:6). This is The Jubilee, The Wedding Feast, when all receive **liberty** except The Gentiles who go into **the wilderness** with Satan in outer darkness (Romans 8:21 and Leviticus 25:44-46).

The Marriage Feast in The Kingdom of God dramatically changes the way God dwells with **man**. In this universe, the creation is subject to **vanity** or living on empty worldly promises. Because of this truth, God functions in a different manner, as a **Lord** or **Master**. Since Adam and Eve chose Babylon, to decide **good** or **evil** on their own, God prudently, with His **superior wisdom**, functions with mankind on **their level of understanding**.

To believe that those **blind to the truth** or reality are able to accept or perceive good and evil is ludicrous. To ask someone what is **good** and **evil** – the best they can do is **guess** with their limited understanding of the universe. To expect more is not only unjust, but very foolish. God is left with the choice of being **The Master** or **Lord**.

In The Kingdom of God, **liberty** or **free choice** is openly offered for a very good reason. Sin will be forgiven (Matthew 12:31). “**And He will destroy in this mountain** [New Jerusalem] **the face of the covering cast over all people** [universal], **and the vail that is spread over all nations** [everyone]” (Isaiah 25:7). “**And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely**” (Revelation 21:6). Salvation will continue in The Kingdom of God and the prophecy in

Isaiah and Revelation mandates it. God's **role** as **Lord** and **Master of The World** will end and **He**, becomes everyone's **Father**. At that time, everyone can have access to **God, The Father**.

God, as King of Hosts becomes The Greatest Servant of All. God as The Father treats everyone as His Sons. The Tree of Life with God's **Holy Spirit** with The Waters of Life freely flowing from the throne, heals all the nations (Revelation 22:1-2). Christ came to restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11). Now God, as Father of The World, offers "Sonship" for everyone, "**He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God [universal], and he shall be my son**" (Revelation 21:7). Everything in The Garden of Eden is restored and all of Adam and Eve's progeny can receive Salvation. The potential for Salvation continues forever. Marriage, as well, is changed. No longer can anyone have a Baal marriage. Marriage at this point becomes as it was in the beginning. You are about to discover what transpires in God's "**rest**" – The Kingdom of God.

The Jubilee Year begins and everyone will have **liberty** except The Gentiles (without God) in **outer darkness**. Godly marriage becomes a **special event** with those with a **right heart**. Now God joins Christ, The Groom and His **Bride**, who is now **worthy** or **ready** to be **His Wife**. The **special event** is The Wedding Feast. Those in *The Book of Life*, **The Marriage Registry**, will be invited to **The Wedding Feast** (Revelation 19:7-8). "**And he said unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said unto me, These are the true sayings of God**" (Revelation 19:9). A special invitation to The Wedding Feast.

CHAPTER 12

FLESH OF FLESH AND BONE OF BONE

Jesus made an amazing proclamation about getting married in The Resurrection, “For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven” (Matthew 22:30).

In The Beginning

Recall when Christ was asked the question of divorce by The Pharisees? He said in the beginning the union of a man and a woman was different. “**Baal marriage**” allowed “**divorce**” which was permitted in The Law, but no longer existed. The man is not the head of the woman any longer. A union is now decided by two individuals being **bone and bone and flesh and flesh**. Everyone has complete freedom, without masters. Christ has His **Bride** as His **Wife** because both parties “**agapé love**” each other as one flesh. This is God’s **love**. In God’s **love** each cares for the other as their own spiritual body. They are joined together by God and His **love**. “**What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder**” [divorce] (Mark 10:9). It is eternal with everlasting bodies.

Two Resurrections

In The New Heaven and The New Earth, God has a **royal family** (I Peter 2:9). It is also **A Royal Priesthood**. This family has a profession producing **Salvation**. The Husband is Melchizedek,

The High Priest of God. His **wife** is also of **The Priesthood**, after The Order of Melchizedek. Mary, Christ's **mother**, was of the lineage of Aaron. So, not only Jesus, but His **Bride** is of **The Order of Melchizedek**. Christ **saves** and so does **The Wife**.

God, The Father, is King of Hosts. As King, God is **The Creator** and **The One** who provides and does **all the work**. God keeps creating and constantly **blesses** His complete **family** – **The Sons of God**. God is **truly The Greatest Servant of All**, with all of **God's glory, The Shekinah**. As King of Hosts, God will be **The Great "I Am."** He will be whatever He chooses to be. As His Sons, they will follow God and keep **His creation in perfect condition**. Now all The Sons of God have **agapé love** and **fulfill The Law** by **their spiritual nature**.

Why does God have two resurrections? **The First Resurrection is special**. There are "**few**" who enter The Gate to The House of God in The First Resurrection (Matthew 7:14). The rest, consumed with **the flesh**, during their human life, have the enticements of this life.

Jesus said some are interested in **earthly pleasures** while others quit following God because of human persecution. The third group went to find on their own, about **the purpose of life** without God (Matthew 13). Only **few** can be in The First Resurrection to enter The House of God. They place **all their faith** in God, who **adopts** them from human parents to become God's **Very Sons**. In spite of **the enticements of the flesh**, their **faith will save them**. Only they become The Bride of Christ who, when **worthy**, become **His Wife** (Revelation 19:7-8). These are those **few** who are in **The First Resurrection**. In The Kingdom of God, those in **The First Resurrection** are The Bride. The Bride will be willing to give **her life** for Christ and become bone of His **bone** and flesh of His

flesh or “**One**” in **agapé love**. God joins them together as “**one flesh**.” Both are in **The Priesthood of Melchizedek**, with Jesus as **The High Priest**. Both can now produce **Holy “children”** or Sons of God. These are those in **The First Resurrection** with Jesus as **The Firstfruits** (I Corinthians 15:20). Paul said, “**For as in Adam all die [everyone], even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man [everyone] in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ’s at His coming**” (I Corinthians 15:22-23). Remember, “**all**” does not mean “**all**” because “**all**” is in the **subjunctive mood** having **conditions**. What are those **conditions** to be “**In Christ?**”

The very purpose of The Kingdom of God during The New Heaven and The New Earth is when God will bring to pass **all things (universal) new**. This is God’s **pleasure** and He will fulfill His purpose (Isaiah 46:10-11). God **will do it!** You must understand **The First Resurrection is a special group**, comprised of only “**few**,” to enter The House of God. Now, the purpose of The Second Resurrection. The Second Resurrection includes everyone including those in their graves (John 5:28). Can’t be any clearer. What happens to them? Those who come forth from **the grave**, those who have done **good** are resurrected to **life (The Kingdom of God)**. Those who have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation go into The Lake of Fire (John 5:29). There are not three resurrections, only two. What does God do with those in The Second Resurrection and why?

All In Christ

Adam and Eve were “**one flesh**” from the beginning. Now, true, Godly love is to prevail and will make everyone worthy. The Second Resurrection is for those who are saved and go into New Jerusalem, to keep growing **spiritually** by eating of The Tree of Life

in New Jerusalem and drinking from the river that flows from the throne. They have **proven faithful**, but have not qualified to be The Bride who will be dressed in **white** denoting **righteousness**.

Bridesmaids and the guests are not dressed in **white**, but are dressed in **varied colors**. They still must grow in **glory** from year-to-year. Those not allowed in the city – The Kingdom of God – are left out! Those in outer darkness have been **purged of sin** in **The Lake of Fire** and now in **outer darkness** will have to grow **spiritually** in **the truth** (Isaiah 6:5-7). God will make **all things new**.

Now everyone can be “**In Christ**” as everyone has his/her **order** (I Corinthians 15:22-23). “**All**” becomes “**all**” because God is to be **All In All** (I Corinthians 15:28). **The potential** for being in The Kingdom of God continues in The New Heaven and The New Earth. New Jerusalem is “**mother of us all**” (Galatians 4:26). This truth was known from The Time of The Garden of Eden, but they **worshipped** The Queen of Heaven, “Eve” and not God (Romans 1:25). New Jerusalem will become The Queen of Heaven, The Mother of everyone.

At **The Tower of Babel**, they knew **the truth**, but made it into **unrighteousness** (Romans 1:18). They made God unimportant. The **worship** of The Queen of Heaven superseded God in too many cases. In some cases, **humans** are **worshipped** as **saints** instead of God. Too many pray to humans and not to The Father as Christ commanded you to do (Matthew 6). Even Jesus never said to pray to Him, but only to **The One True God**. You pray in **His name** by His authority for cleansing **your sins**, but always to God, The Father! You ask for **His authority**, since only Christ is **Your High Priest** and makes you **sinless** when you pray to God! You are to **pray** to no one else. God is the only one who can make you bone

of bone and flesh of flesh or **one body**, “**Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees The Father do: for what things soever He does [God], these also does The Son likewise**” (John 5:19).

Only **God does the work**. **No one else** does any work and this includes Christ. Do you get it? In The New Heaven and The New Earth, it is God **who makes all things new** without anyone lifting a finger.

In The Kingdom of God, because God **loves you**, He keeps granting you His **heavenly blessings (gifts)**. What are these **blessings**?

CHAPTER 13

THE WEDDING FEAST

So many believe The Wedding Feast is a one-time event. As with most marriages, a wedding feast is just the beginning. Beginning of what?

Purpose Of Marriage

The original Godly marriage was not The System of Marriage as in The Law of Moses (Deuteronomy 24:1). The Law of Moses had to allow divorce because Israel had a **wrong heart**. From the time **sin** was committed by Adam and Eve in The Garden, Baalism, which is marriage between a man and a woman, **divorce** was allowed. It was allowed because they had a **wrong heart** with their lack of Godly “**love**.”

Godly **marriage** between a **man** and **woman** must be between **two people** who become **one flesh** or **one body**. A **love** so intense they would be willing to **die** for each other. If not, they are **not ready to marry**. Why? Because marriage is to be **successful**. If not successful, a divorce causes unhappiness and damage to the family. The most damage is to the children because they also **literally** are of one flesh (through their parents). God is **perfect** and **Holy** (**sinless**). God will **not dwell** where there is **sin which causes death in a society**. Any act which continually **divides** a people will **not stand**. Christ said, “**Every kingdom divided against itself...shall not stand**” (Matthew 12:25-26). Whether it is government, religion, commerce, family or any group effort, if there is any form of **division**, it will not work. “**Can two walk**

together, except they be agreed [in agreement]" (Amos 3:3)? Original marriage, in The Garden, is the only system which works. That is why Adam, who wasn't deceived, ate the wrong fruit with Eve, because he didn't want to live after she died. So Adam **was willing to give his life**. The purpose of **marriage** is that it be **successful**, so all of **society** can prosper and live in **Paradise**. That is **the purpose** of a **Godly marriage**.

Purpose Of The First Resurrection

What is the role of a Godly **marriage** and its **goal** (Revelation 21 and 22)? In The Kingdom of God, New Jerusalem, a **fountain** of **living waters** will flow throughout The New Earth. Everyone is **freely** invited to drink of the waters. Those who do overcome their nature seeking a Godly "**mind**" will become Sons of God (Revelation 21:7). This profession is based upon a Godly marriage between Christ, The Groom and His **Bride**. Both The Groom and The Bride are **worthy** and ready to **marry** because they both have **God's righteousness** (agapé love) (Revelation 5 and 19). God, The Father approves this marriage and permits Jesus to return and resurrect His **wife**, who will be ready. This is **The First Resurrection**, which is **special** because it is based upon a **right foundation** for a Godly **marriage**.

Christ said only **few** will be able to enter **the gate to dwell with God in The Kingdom of God**. Both are **worthy** being "**One**" with God and will **dwell** in **God's rest**.

The Second Resurrection

In The Second Resurrection everyone will be resurrected and then divided in The White Throne Judgment between those entering The Kingdom and those going into The Lake of Fire (**damna-**

tion or **outer darkness**) (John 5). Who are they? The Wedding Feast and everyone invited are written in *The Book of Life*, **The Marriage Registry**. They have access to come into New Jerusalem or Paradise and eat of The Tree of Life. Those left out are those **who have not** accepted God's **Holy Spirit** or The Tree of Life in their human lifetime. They are in **outer darkness**.

What Is Outer Darkness?

Rather than merely “**a place**,” you must understand it is “**a way of thinking**.” Satan has been in **darkness** since he stopped being God's cherub angel. He and those angels who followed him, all ended in **darkness** and, finally, at **The End Time**, **will go into outer darkness**. Those who do not grow to **love their** brother are **in darkness**. “**He that loves [agapé] his brother abides in the light [faith], and there is no occasion of stumbling in Him**” (I John 2:8-11). How plain! Darkness can make you **stumble (sin)** by **missing the mark**.

When one has a **sound mind** they have God's **love** and, therefore, **the power to think logically with wisdom**. God is love [agapé] “**and every one that loves is born of God, and knows God**” (I John 4:7). Therefore, in God's **love**, you, too, can be a Son of God.

“**Darkness**” is a person's human nature deciding on their **own** what is **good** and **evil**. That is what happened at The Tower of Babel, when God divided their tongues. Satan, at this time is completely insane and can no longer understand **right** from **wrong**. Logic is gone and Satan, along with everyone who has The Mark of The Beast, is totally **destructive** and cannot **think straight**. Just before **The Flood** “**violence**” was a **way of life**. God had to stop human **genocide** before Noah and his family were also killed.

There will be another process of annihilation just before Jesus returns.

Those in **outer darkness** cannot **think logically**, they are completely **blind**. God **will** not hold them responsible for their blindness (John 9:41). After they have been **purged of sin**, they need to **grow "In Christ"** by drinking and eating **the healing leaves of The Fountain of Life** (Isaiah 6:5-7 and Revelation 22:2). They must **overcome** and become Sons of God.

Wedding Feast – The Foundation

The Wedding Feast is so important to God, Jesus told what their penalty will be for not having **the right garment** for The Wedding Feast, "**And He said to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away and cast *him* into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**" (Matthew 22:12-13).

The Wedding Feast is so **vital** to God that those without a proper wedding garment go into **outer darkness** (Matthew 22:12-13). The question becomes: "What is **the wrong garment and what is the right garment?**" It is **The Saints** who are dressed in **white**, which "**is the righteousness of The Saints**" (Revelation 19:7-8). **The Saints**, who grow in God's **righteousness**, become The Bride of Christ.

Now, you know, biblically, The Bride of Christ are **The Saints** (those who are Christians who are to die for Christ). That leaves the bridesmaid and **the guests** who have different colored garments. They can attend The Wedding Feast, because they also have the proper garments (of being **faithful**).

In a wedding, the bridesmaids are not dressed in **white**, but do have beautiful garments with their own colored-themed gowns. **The guests** will, also, dress appropriately. But who are they? You know God only reveals the truth to **The Saints** and **all the faithful** ones. **The Saints** are The Bride of Christ (Ephesians 1:1-5). That leaves **the faithful**. “**The Saints**” in Greek are “**the hagios**” or “**Holy ones**,” who are “**the righteous**.” In Hebrew, they (the faithful) are “**the tsedaks**” or “**righteous ones**.” “The Bridesmaids and The Guests” are “**the faithful ones**.”

You are saved by **faith**, but only the **righteous** or **Holy ones** are **worthy** to be The Bride. They loved Christ enough to be willing to **die** for **Him**. **The faithful** are those who prove their **trust** in God, but not to the place of **dying** for **Him**. “Bridesmaids” are “**virgins**,” undefiled, but have not completely grown in God’s **Holy Spirit** (Matthew 25). The guests have also **trusted God**, but fall short of being a **Holy one**. These are those of the **nations** who are saved and allowed in **The City of New Jerusalem** to keep growing “**spiritually**” by eating of The Tree of Life and drinking from The Fountain of Life. Those “**left out**” or “**without the city**” are “**in outer darkness**” and must desire to **drink the waters** with the healing leaves or they must stay in **torment**. “**Isolated**” in Greek is “**kolasis**.” Gentiles must desire to make that decision by their free choice. However, they are not **freed** of their **debts** until they grow “**In Christ**” (Leviticus 25). They are **the servants** of those **saved** and stay in **torment** forever until they drink of The Fountain of Life and grow to become a **Son of God**. The foundation of **Salvation** is predicated upon having the **proper garment** to enter or be part of The Wedding Feast.

Importance Of The Wedding Feast

God announces He will have a **continual feast** and all blindness

of the truth will be removed. **Death** ends and God's **Salvation** can take place (Isaiah 25:6-9). This is The Wedding Feast in New Jerusalem. All receive their **rewards**, according to their works (Revelation 22). The groups that are saved comprise The Wife of Christ, The Bridesmaids and The Guests. Those left out are **the unfaithful** and **the unsaved**. They will go into **outer darkness**.

After **the marriage** of The Groom and His Wife, here is what Christ said they would do, "**For this cause** [they are one] **shall a man leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife**" (Mark 10:7). That is why Jesus tells you, "**What...God has joined together, let not man put asunder**" (Mark 10:9).

The importance of The Wedding Feast is to continue to manifest a **successful Godly marriage**, "**Like as a woman with child, that draws near the time of her delivery, is in pain and cries out in her pangs** [torment]; **so have we been in your sight, O Lord**" (Isaiah 26:17-20). Do you understand what Isaiah just wrote? He is telling you about those in **outer darkness** in **torment forever** waiting for The Groom and The Wife in New Jerusalem. They need a **new birth**. Jesus came to save the world (I John 4:14). When The Wedding Feast happens, New Jerusalem as **The Mother of All** has this to proclaim, "**And the Spirit and the bride say, Come** [birth]. **And let him that is thirsty come. And whoever will, let him take the water of life freely**" (Revelation 22:17). **The mother, the wife**, will have this new birth after those who come out of darkness by drinking The Waters of Life to become Sons of God. Read *Faith That Saves*. This birth will not be easy. There will be much pain coming out of outer darkness (torment). **God's ways** are truly wondrous! The Wedding Feast is God's **way** for The Groom and The Bride to be **married** and have **an entire world** to **bring forth Sons of God**. Of a **truth**, The Kingdom of God comes **not** by **observation** but is "**within**

you” through God’s **Holy Spirit, The Very Glory of God**. Will you be The Bride, one of The Guests or one of The Bridesmaids or The Fourth Group, the ones in **outer darkness**? The ones in outer darkness are in torment and have to learn to repent and begin to trust God. Which group do you really want to be in? You have to make your own choice. God will never force you. He spans, but never makes you into a robot. It will take discipline, a great deal of striving, study and prayer for you to make the right choice. At the end of life’s dark tunnel, there is light – a fabulous light spotlighting the glorious world of Eternal Life with your Heavenly Father. Be there!

THE WEDDING FEAST

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *The Wedding Feast*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION	vii
THE RETURN OF CHRIST	1
THE MIND OF GOD	7
THE SEVEN CHURCHES	13
THE SLAIN LAMB	19
THE SEVEN SEALS	25
CHRIST'S WIFE	31
HOW THE BRIDE BECOMES THE WIFE	33
THE WEDDING FEAST	37

PREFACE

The Wedding Feast is the consummation of a marriage with wedding guests as **witnesses** rejoicing at the marriage. John wrote, concerning The Wedding Feast, “**Write, Blessed are they which are called [invited] to The Marriage Supper of The Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God**” (Revelation 19:9). *The Book of Life* is *The Marriage Registry*. This Wedding Feast occurs at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth (Revelation 21:1-2). That is when the bride is adorned for her husband. The Wedding Feast is God’s **rest** in The Kingdom of God.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no monies are accepted for these books. All books are absolutely **free**. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Study *The Bible* to show yourself approved!

Art Mokarow

Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

email: art@mokarow.com

website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

download all books free of charge

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Work

Revelation Uncovered

Christ In You

The Great Apostasy

The White Throne Judgment

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Story

God's Sabbath And Holy Days

God's Will

Satan's Image

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

God's Kingdom

History Of Revelation

The Wedding Feast

History Of God's Law

The Mark Of The Beast

God's Two Priesthoods

The Christian Sabbath

What Is Idolatry?

Truth, Creed, Doctrines

The True Church Of God

Sons Of God

Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Temple Of God

The Mystery Of God

INTRODUCTION

“**He came unto His own and His own received Him not**” (John 1:11). Jesus came to The Jews and they rejected Him. What did Christ come to do? “**For The Law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ**” (John 1:17). Christ came to give grace (mercy) for sin, instead of sacrifice (Matthew 12:7). What truth did The Savior bring? After Christ was baptized by John, He said, “**The time is fulfilled and The Kingdom of God is at hand: repent you and believe The Gospel**” (Mark 1:14-15).

Wedding Feast

Jesus reveals **The Kingdom of God** represents a **wedding feast** (Matthew 22:2-10). You find there are three times in world history that an invitation to The Wedding was announced (Matthew 22:2-10). The Messiah had come to The Jews to declare The Kingdom of God was at hand. **The Wedding Feast** was being prepared (Matthew 22). Read about that **invitation**, “**Again, He sent forth other servants [Prophets] saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings are killed and all things *are* ready: come unto the marriage**” (Matthew 22:4). This was **the truth** Jesus came to bring. The Kingdom of God is a **marriage feast** which was about to take place. But how did The Jews react?

Well, it seems The Jews made light of this great honor and went on their merry way. Some went to their farms while others went to their individual businesses (Matthew 22:5). The King was very angry and He said when they killed His Prophets (like John, The Baptist), God would send His **armies** and destroy them. This came to pass in 70 A.D. through Titus (Matthew 22:7). Then, The King announced, “**The Wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy**” (Matthew 22:8). What did Jesus do after that? “**Therefore say I unto you, The Kingdom of God shall**

be taken from you [Jews], and given to a nation [people] bringing forth the fruits thereof” (Matthew 21:43). What fruits?

The Two Trees

Jesus describes **two trees**. Christ said **one tree** brings forth **good fruit** and **the other tree** produces **evil fruit** (Matthew 7:15-19). Then, He announces, “**by their fruits you shall know them**” (Matthew 7:20). It is that **simple**. Which trees was Jesus referring to? None other than **The Tree of Life**, which produces **Salvation** and **The Tree of Good and Evil**, which does not produce **life**. Read the book, *God’s Plan of Salvation*. Jesus revealed a **Christian** eats of the olive tree, which is The Tree of Life (**God’s Holy Spirit**) and this is **the fruit** it produces (Romans 11). It is The Spirit of God which produces this **fruit**, which is “**love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law**” (Galatians 5:22-23). Why is there no law against this? “**Love works no ill to his neighbor: therefore** [these fruits] **love is the fulfilling of** [or completes] **The Law**” (Romans 13:10). This **Tree of Life** is **The Magnified Law** Jesus came to bring. It is *The Torah*, which is **the way or the path**. Christianity is not known by a **doctrine** or **dogma**, but by a **way** or **path** to Christ (Galatians 3:24). It is **the fruit of the doctrine** that **manifests The Truth of Christ**. It isn’t **the teaching**, but what **fruit is manifested**, which proves **Christianity**. **Spiritual growth** is the point. Read the book, *Spiritual Growth*, for the full meaning.

A Worthy People

Read the final announcement to The Wedding Feast, (which is The Kingdom of God). This **Wedding Feast** takes place in The House of God. Here is Christ’s third and **final announcement** for His **invitations** to go out to invite everyone to The Wedding Feast. The final announcement does not go to a specific group of peo-

ple, “Go you therefore into the highways and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants [Christians] went out into the highways and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests” (Matthew 22:9-10). Amazingly, this **final wedding invitation** will call all individuals, both **the good** and **the bad**. Was there a **criteria**? Yes, there was. When Peter stated that Cornelius and his household received God’s **Holy Spirit**, they were to be baptized. Here is the reason Peter gave approval, “**Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation he that fears Him [honors God as The One True God] and works righteousness, is accepted with Him**” (Acts 10:34-35). How clear and simple the requirements for anyone to come to The Wedding Feast of Christ and His **Bride**. You must believe and **honor God**, to the point of **fear** and then work on becoming **righteous**. How good or bad a person may have been in the past does not matter as long as these two conditions are **met**. It isn’t any particular nation, people, gender, race, denomination, but whether or not you **fear God and labor** (like pulling an ox out of the ditch who resists) and continue to keep trying to become **righteous**. You are ready to discover what **righteousness** is, because it is **the goal** to produce **the right fruit**, through God’s **Holy Spirit**. What are the two different types of **sin**?

Sin Of Unrighteousness

The two types of sin are: **transgression of The Law** and **all unrighteousness**. “**Sin is the transgression of The Law**” (I John 3:4). A **law**, to be a **law**, must have a penalty or a **curse**. Moses’ **added Law** – The Letter of The Law had **curses** listed in Deuteronomy 28. Paul said The Law was not for a **righteous person**, but **for the unrighteous person** (I Timothy 1:7-10). Christ removed **the curse** of **The Law**, so under Melchizedek, The Law was a **matter of faith** and **righteousness**, without any **curses** (Deuteronomy 28). Jesus, with His **blood**, paid for everyone’s **sin**. Now,

The Law, magnified by Christ, is kept spiritually through God's Holy Spirit. Paul tells you **In Christ** there is **no condemnation or curse.** Now, by God's **Holy Spirit, the righteousness of The Law is fulfilled "In You"** and not by **the works of the flesh** (Romans 8:1-4). I John 3:4 is a definition of **sin** for **the unrighteous.** Read the definition of **sin** for those who **work** to be **righteous.** "**All unrighteousness is sin**" (I John 5:17). How plain! This is, exactly, why Peter defined who God **accepts.** Christians are to become completely **righteous** (God's **righteousness**), which is a **spiritual matter.** Paul called The Law spiritual (Romans 7:14).

He went on to say individuals are **carnal in the flesh.** That is why Jesus said the following, "**So likewise you, when you shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do**" (Luke 17:10). So, keeping **The Letter of The Law by your works is unprofitable.** The rich man kept all the commandments, but it never made him **perfect** (Matthew 19). In Greek, the word "**unprofitable**" means "**useless**" or "**could not be saved**" for The Kingdom of God. You must take that extra step to become righteous – **spiritually.** That is why Paul said the definition of "**sin,**" according to The Letter of The Law, "**is for the unrighteous**" (I John 3:4). That is why Jesus said He **did not come to destroy The Law or The Prophets,** but to **fulfill or complete The Law** (Matthew 5). Then, He warns, to be in **The Kingdom of God.** You have to be more **righteous** than **the scribes and Pharisees.** How? Read all of John 5, 6 and 7, where Christ reveals it is a **spiritual matter.** He sums up **His point,** "**Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**" (Matthew 5:48). The word "**perfection**" in Greek is "**being guiltless**" or "**without flaw.**" That is The Righteousness of God and not by **the works of the flesh.** **Righteousness** is a **cardinal key** to be in The Kingdom of God. In order to enter **The Wedding Feast,** you need to learn about The Return of Christ for **His Bride** to find it is predicated upon **spiritual growth.**

CHAPTER 1

THE RETURN OF CHRIST

When will Christ return? For thousands of years preachers have tried to name the date. Those who attempted were all false prophets (Deuteronomy 18). Christ's return is not a set date, but relies on a condition which needs to take place. *The Book of Revelation* gives you that condition, which is The Bride of Christ becoming worthy to be The Wife of Christ. That is why Jesus told His Disciples that only The Father has the power or authority to decide when The Kingdom of God will be restored to Israel (Acts 1). God is the only one who knows when the marriage will take place (Revelation 19:7).

The Apocalypse

“The Book of Revelation” in Greek means *“The Apocalypse”* which means **“the unveiling.”** An unveiling refers to A Wedding when The Bride is made known as to who will be **The Wife of Christ**. *The Bible* is the story of how God, The Father, chooses a virgin to be Christ's **wife**. Initially, Israel was to be **The Bride** of Christ. But, something occurred to make God change **His mind** about Israel. Paul reveals what keeps Israel blind (II Corinthians 3:15). Read it earnestly! The Law of Moses which was to lead them to **Christ** blinded **them**. What **blinded** them? The Glory of God, The Shekinah, **His goodness** blinded them (Exodus 33:18-23). They could not look at The Glory of God. They

only understood **The Letter of The Law**, but not **The Spirit of The Law** (Romans 8). When Moses came down from **The Holy Mountain**, The Glory of God **was shining with such intensity** on his **face**, he had to **wear a veil**. Israel was **fearful** of The Goodness of God. They were not willing to face **God's goodness**, **The Shekinah Glory**. **The Very Law of Moses** was **given to Israel** as a **covenant**, as a **path** to lead them to their **future Husband** (Deuteronomy 5:3). The **Goodness of God – The Holy Law** – blinded them because they had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

The Veil

This **veil** on Moses' **face** kept them from **seeing all The Glory of God**. Christ came and **introduced A Greater Glory** which was *The New Covenant (Salvation)* **than Moses had with The Old Covenant**. However, Israel again rejected their **Groom** (Matthew 21:43 and John 1:11). They killed **The Groom**. In ancient times, **The Muslim** women who were **unmarried**, **veiled** their faces until they prepared themselves to be **ready** for **The Wedding Day**. You will remember in *The Book of Esther* (**Esther**, as a **physical type**) going through the preparations that were necessary to be a Bride. A Christian has to prepare, the same way to be Christ's **Bride**, as Esther prepared herself to be the bride of the king. Remember, when Esther was chosen from the virgins of the king's harem, it took **two** years preparing herself to become **the king's wife**. It is the same when Christians are preparing to be Christ's **Bride**, during their Christian lifetime.

Preparation included a cleansing process of various perfumes, which made her skin **soft** and **glowing**. When the choice was to be made of all **the virgins**, **Esther** was the only one who stood out as **worthy** to be **the king's wife**. As well as being beautiful **outwardly**, she was beautiful **inwardly**. She was **tested by**

God, when she actually **gave her life** for her people (**The Jews**), just as Jesus did. Esther was worthy, **externally**, and by having a **right heart**, was worthy **internally**. Ahasuerus, The King, saw her beauty and goodness and removed the veil for all to observe. He divorced Vashti, his former wife. She refused to show her **beauty to The King's court**. A **court** consists of a trial by **witnesses** and she proved **unworthy**. Read all of *The Book of Esther*. This is why The Jews keep **The Feast of Purim** (because Esther saved The Jews). That is why Jesus honored **The Keeping of The Purim**, as He knew it **shadowed The Groom and His Bride**. A “**veil**” means “**a covering which blinds for a very good reason**.” Christ told this to The Pharisees after they asked Him if they were **blind**, “**If you were blind, you should have no sin: but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remains**” (John 9:41). Couldn't be clearer! God keeps people **blinded from the truth until they are ready** to obey Him. In this way, He never holds them responsible when they **sin** because they do not understand. The Pharisees knew better (that He was **The Messiah**) and yet, they **rejected** Him and had Him killed. Later, in 70 A.D., Titus slaughtered them. As long as someone **is blind to the truth**, God does **not hold that person responsible for sin**. People begin to be responsible when they **repent** and start to **know better** by having a **right heart**.

Israel, as a nation, is blinded, to this day, by the very Law which was to reveal their **Husband**. They remain veiled and do not understand. They have a wrong heart and do not know God's **ways** (Hebrews 3:10). As long as Christ's **Bride** remains **veiled**, she **has not made herself worthy to be The Wife of Christ!**

A Greater Glory

“**But if the ministration of death, written *and* engraved in**

stones [*Ten Commandments*] was glorious [Shekinah goodness], so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory [goodness] of his countenance; which *glory* was to be done away: How shall not the ministration of the spirit [spiritual growth] be rather glorious [greater goodness]? For if the ministration of condemnation *be* glory, much more does the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory” (II Corinthians 3:7-9)! Paul concludes the difference between The Administration of Moses and The Administration of Christ by saying, “**But their minds were blinded: for until this day remains the same veil untaken away in the reading of *The Old Testament*; which *veil* is done away in Christ. But even until this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart**” (II Corinthians 3:14-15). Do you really understand what Paul just said? Paul describes being **under Moses’ Administration of The Law** only brought **death**. Why?

Because their **flesh** was **weak** and they sinned; therefore, **the curse of The Law** was **death** (Deuteronomy 28). By breaking *The Ten Commandments*, which was **sinning**, they were found **guilty** and had to be **put to death**. God’s **glory** was to lead them to Christ, but instead only brought **death**. They were **no longer blinded**. They knew better! The **culprit** was their hearts, which **blinded their minds**. By not having a sound mind they made bad decisions. So, the problem was that they had a wrong **heart** and a wrong **mind**. That is **the reason they lacked righteousness**. It is **your desire** which **gives you a wrong heart**, therefore, **you lack wisdom** (Proverbs 18:1-2). Your heart has to do with **your innermost feelings and your desires**, which affects your **heart**. If you are **fearful**, as **cowards**, you just want to **run away and hide**. Read what **God’s Holy Spirit** can do, “**For God has not given us the spirit of fear [cowardice]; but of power and of love and of a sound mind**” (II Timothy 1:7). When God gives you **His**

Spirit, it changes your heart. **You will not be fearful** or act like a **coward**. God's **love** will be shed abroad **in your heart** so you can have a **sound mind**. Your desire will be to have a sound mind. In Greek, "**a sound mind**" means "**a disciplined**" or "**a wise mind.**" God's **Holy Spirit** gives you **His love** which gives you the power to grow to get **wisdom** or have a **sound mind** (Romans 5:5). That is what **spiritual growth** is **all about!**

The Two Priesthoods

"For The Priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of The Law" (Hebrews 7:12). Christ was of The Priesthood of Melchizedek (not Levi). The Law "**isn't being done away with,**" but it had to be changed. The question is how? The Law is **administered** differently under Christ than under Moses. Under Christ, **The Law** is **magnified** or **made larger** so it can be **honorable** or more **glorious** (Isaiah 42:21). Read how **The Law**, under Jesus, is better than it was **under Moses**. **The Law** by **Christ's Administration** brought life; while Moses' Administration of **The Law** led to **death**. This was *The Old Covenant* with Moses, which was meant for The Twelve Tribes of Israel and now, includes **all nations** (Deuteronomy 5:3 and Acts 10:35). *The New Covenant* has to do with becoming **righteous** (II Corinthians). It calls The Administration of The Law under Christ – **The Administration of Righteousness**. That is why the definition of "**sin**" for Christians is, "**All unrighteousness is sin**" (I John 5:17). The Administration of The Law under Moses led to death, as it explains what sin is, but cannot make you righteous (I John 3:4).

Righteousness Is Perfection

Under **The Priesthood of Melchizedek**, it changes **the carnal or fleshly commandment** to **eternal life** (Hebrews 7:15-16). It isn't

that *The Commandments* were carnal, but **The Letter of The Law** was **for unrighteous people** who were carnal. “**For The Law [Moses] made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope *did*; by that which we draw near to God**” (Hebrews 7:19). There it is!

Only under *The New Covenant*, **The Priesthood of Melchizedek**, can Christ write **God’s Law** in your heart (**desire**) and **mind**. Therefore, you receive **God’s righteousness** and do not have to do **The Works of The Law**. Humans who are **carnal** will keep sinning **until they die**. Christ cannot **return** until **His Bride** becomes **worthy** to be **His Wife** to be **righteous or perfect** (Acts 10:35). Christ will return when **the veil of The Bride** can be **removed**. Then **her glory**, The Glory of God and The Righteousness of God will be seen – **The Shekinah of God**.

CHAPTER 2

THE MIND OF GOD

How does The Bride become worthy to be The Wife of Christ? As a human, Jesus, also, had to prove He was worthy to be The Groom. What is God's standard for The Groom and The Bride?

Spiritual Growth

During all your human days upon earth, you should strive to become **perfect** in stature, like Jesus (Ephesians 4:11-13). Your job is to grow **spiritually**, to be like Christ, The Bridegroom. God, The Father of everyone, requires you to be **a certain kind of "being"** before He permits your **marriage** to His **Son**. This is the reason **you must** continue to grow **spiritually** during your human existence.

The Father's Choice

Because of Adam's and Eve's sin, a genealogical choice of their progeny no longer existed. God instituted **The Priesthood of Melchizedek** from the beginning, rather than through **the firstborn**. Melchizedek is an **order** or selection by **oath**, directly from God and not through a human father or mother (Hebrews 7). Melchizedek's choice was determined that one had to have **faith** and **love righteousness**. The Tribe of Levi only required a genealogical selection by **firstborn** and did not need God's **approval** (through an **oath**). **The Melchizedek Priesthood** was Godly, while **The Aaronic Priesthood** was not. The Priesthood

of Melchizedek needed a prepared human body to be a **sacrifice** (Hebrews 10:5-10). This **act** proved **the agapé love** in The One giving His Body as a **sacrifice**. Christ gave His **life** for **His Bride**. God said He had **no pleasure in animal sacrifice**. It was only a **type** and proved nothing as to one's **love**. The Aaronic Priesthood could only lead a person to Jesus, **The Groom** (Galatians 3:24). Not only was **The Groom** to be **worthy**, but **The Groom's Bride** must be **worthy**, also.

Mind Of God

God's **Plan of Salvation** is revealed in Isaiah 55:6-11. When you **seek God** by listening to **His word**, a **miraculous transaction** will take place "**In You**."

If you **seek God** for **His answers**, **the first thing** He will do for you is **be merciful**. Because of Christ, He will forgive you for all your **sins**. Then, God declares His **thoughts**, **His very mind** **which** is superior to mankind's **way of thinking**. He explains, as the heavens are **higher** than the earth, so are God's **ways** and **thoughts** higher than any human's thoughts. If you desire to seek **His word**, you are going to **prosper** in all you do. Wow!

The answer to being **worthy** is to listen and seek **God's word**, so you can know and have **The Very Mind of God**. **The Bride** has to, **spiritually**, **grow** into **The Mind of God**. Paul said, "**Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus**" (Philippians 2:5). Christ's **mind** is **The Very Mind of God** (Hebrews 1:2). Christ is in **God's exact image**. How does God give you His **superior mind**? Paul told Timothy that God has not given you a **spirit of fear**, but has **given you His Holy Spirit of Power**. He gives you **His agapé love**, so you can have a **sound mind** (II Timothy 1:7 and Romans 5:5).

The Dilemma

God wants to give you **His mind**, by **His word** for a **very good** reason. God's **Plan of Salvation** is how He is solving the problem to give you **eternal life**. God wants you to live forever. Who wouldn't want to **live forever**? God wants to **grant** you all **the blessings** of **all His creative power**. God is promising you a **life in Paradise**. How does God, in **His superior mind**, bring this to pass? God declares He will **succeed in all He desires** and will complete all **His plans** (Isaiah 46:10). That is a promise. It is an **absolute guarantee**. How does God resolve this dilemma that in **The Kingdom of God** there will be nothing but **joy and happiness forever**? Only those in The Kingdom of God must, by their **free choice**, always **choose** what is **best** for God and all **His creation**. Anything **less** defeats His **purpose**! Paul said, "**The creature waits for the manifestation of The Sons of God**" (Romans 8:19). The reason God has made you with a **temporary life** – ending in **death** – was so you could **learn to want** "**life eternal**." By wanting **Salvation**, it **motivates you** to **pursue eternal life**. It should be your primary desire. Fear is what **drives you to live**. Therefore, you **are afraid to die**. "**The fear of The Lord is the beginning of wisdom**" (Proverbs 9:10).

We Seek God Because Of Fear

Why believe in God at all? You find you believe in God because you do not want to die. You were born to die and, therefore, believe in your Creator because there is no other option. Paul said, "**If Christ be not raised, your faith is vain [nothing]; you are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished [dead]**" (I Corinthians 15:17-18). There is your answer. You believe in God because you can turn to no one else. Either there is a God who resurrects you, or you will die and **stay dead**.

You begin to be **fearful** not to believe in God! God reveals that **fear** is the **beginning of knowledge**. When Israel believed God, it was because they **feared Him**. Here is what Israel said when God gave them *The Ten Commandments*, “**Go you [Moses] near and hear all that The Lord Our God shall say: and speak you unto us all that the Lord our God shall speak unto you; and we will hear *it* and do *it*. And The Lord heard the voice of your words, when you spoke unto me; and The Lord said unto me, I have heard the voice of the words of this people, which they have spoken to you [Moses]. They have well said all that they have spoken**” (Deuteronomy 5:27-28). They agreed to obey God because they **feared Him**, which was the **beginning of knowledge**. Then, God said to Moses, “**O that there were such a heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children forever**” (Deuteronomy 5:29)! They were still **carnal and unconverted**. But they did **fear God** and that was the beginning of following The Path to Salvation.

It is the way you start to **learn the truth**. Parents, at times, have to discipline their children to look before they cross a street or **not** to touch a hot stove. Israel sinned when Moses went up **the mountain** to get God’s **word**. God gave them a **very special covenant**. Moses told Israel this covenant was made, only with them and not their fathers (from Adam to Jacob or Israel) (Deuteronomy 5:3). Later, you will see the fathers were under *The New Covenant* and not **the covenant** which was only a Covenant of Fear. Israel’s covenant was not based upon **faith**. Whenever a Priesthood is changed, there is, also, a change in **The Law** (Hebrews 7:12). **The Law of God** and **The Law of Moses** are two different **laws**. Israel **erred in their hearts** and **did not know God’s ways** (Hebrews 3:10). Why? They **did not have faith**, they had **fear**. They were just beginning to get **knowledge** and

God accepted them. Since Israel feared God and agreed to work to be **righteous**, **God accepted them** (Acts 10:35).

God's Salvation

God begins to change mankind once they **fear** Him and are willing to work for **righteousness**. **Before** the creation of the earth and the universe, God predestined **a plan**. What was this plan? Paul tells **The Saints**, **The Holy Ones** and **The Faithful**, God would bestow upon them **all the spiritual blessings** (Ephesians 1:3-10). These blessings are not The Law of Moses (**works of the flesh**); they are all **the gifts** (through grace) which come from God. What are these **blessings**? God adopts you from your human parents by Jesus Christ, through The Holy Spirit, to be **Holy** and **without blame**. God **planned** it before there was a universe. Here is **The Plan of Salvation**. God receives **great pleasure** in making **you just like Him**, to be **The Very Sons of God**. Why? It is the only **perfect way** God can **give you eternal life in Paradise**. God's **plan** is to have His **family** with Him. This is God's **great will** or **desire**.

Once God accepts you to do **His will**, God gives **grace** or **mercy**. God reveals this **Mystery of His Will** to Christians, according to His **good pleasure**. God is **love** and **His nature is to give** and **share that love**. Therefore, **He must always create**. The completion of this purpose is at **the dispensation of His inheritance** (heavenly gift). In Greek, "**a dispensation**" refers to "**The House of God**" or "**all that He has**." This is at the time when all is **Holy** and in God's **love** without blame or sin! God, then, through Christ, distributes His **blessings** to **all things** in **heaven** and **earth**. God works **all things** according to His Own Counsel and **will**. It is **The Very Purpose of God to be All In All** (I Corinthians 15:28). This concludes **The Will of God's Inheri-**

tance. God's **Plan of Salvation** has to do with **righteousness** by **faith**, and not **Law** by **works**. This **flawless Plan of Perfection** **guarantees** that everyone in The House of God will live in **Paradise, eternally**. They will do **no harm** to God or **His creation**. That is why Paul concludes with these words, "**That we [Christians] should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ**" (Ephesians 1:12). God's **great, abundant, heavenly gift** is **God's glory**. The word "**Doxa**" in Greek, means "**God desires to share His riches with all His Creation.**" (Remember, one word in Hebrew or Greek can only be explained by almost a dozen English words). What a **loving Father!** Praise be to **Him!** This **dispensation** concludes at The Wedding Feast, which is God's **Gift of Riches** to everyone, because everyone will be **righteous, like God**. You are about to cover this **life's adventure** where God, through Christ, makes Christians **worthy** to be **His Son's Wife**.

CHAPTER 3

THE SEVEN CHURCHES

Bible study can be approached from turning a page or a scroll reading. Most Bible study is like reading a book. Reading *The Bible* as a book is to read one page at a time, but while reading the scroll, you unroll and view it as a whole. *The Book of Revelation* was written to Christ's Seven Churches in Asia Minor. It was written to uncover or reveal future events. You read about The Seven Seals, The Seven Trumpets, The Seven Last Plagues, to The End Times of The White Throne Judgment, concluding with The New Heaven and The New Earth. The book, *Revelation Uncovered* describes *The Book of Revelation* as all the invisible events are made visible. Now, you are about to unroll Revelation as a scroll, to unveil its true purpose.

Warning To The Seven Churches

Christ, specifically, had John write this *The Book* to **The Seven Churches**. The word “**Revelation**” in Greek is “**Apocalypse**” meaning “**the unveiling**.” This is The Unveiling of The Bride, to see if she is **worthy** to be Christ's **Wife**. To be **The Wife of Jesus**, **The Bride** must be **righteous**. Today, all Christian Churches have to ask themselves if they are **sure** they will be **Christ's Bride** (and be in **The First Resurrection**). They won't be, unless **they are dressed in righteousness**. That is why Peter said, “**God only accepts those who fear Him and work righteousness**” (Acts

10:35). “**He that fears Him [God] and works righteousness, is accepted by Him.**” The trouble with **God’s Seven Churches** is that they were not growing in **the right direction** to become **the prospective bride**. All had something **wrong** with them except The Philadelphian Church of God (having a little strength) (Revelation 3:8). What was **the little strength** they had?

The little strength of The Philadelphians is they had **kept God’s word** and **did not deny Christ, their future Husband**. Jesus set an **open door** so they could enter to be **His Wife**. Jesus, The Groom, tells them, “**I come quickly.**” Then, He warned them to “**hold that fast which you have, that no man take your crown**” (Revelation 3:11). This **crown** represents **His Wife**, who will be **The Queen at The Wedding Feast**. This wedding is **A Royal Wedding**, between a **Prince** and a **Princess**. There are those in **The First Resurrection** who do not have to go through **the tribulation trials**. They are **faithful** and **Holy (righteous)**. **Salvation** has nothing to do with The Law of Moses (human works). It has everything to do with **spiritual growth**. They must all climb **The Ladder** to The House of God starting with having **fear of dying**, then, to receive **mercy, wisdom, understanding, faith** and **judgment**. The last step brings **God’s love**. When they have attained **agapé love**, they have **fulfilled The Law – God’s Law**, which is His **righteousness, The Very Mind Of God** (Isaiah 55). This is **God’s Plan of Salvation**. The rest of **The Six Churches** received a stronger **warning** before Christ’s **return**. *The Book Of Revelation* is all about the **unveiling of Christ’s Bride**, who must make herself worthy. She must be **dressed in God’s righteousness** (Revelation 19:7-8).

The Church of Ephesus

Christ lists all **the good works** of The Ephesian Church. There

were many, but they lacked one thing; they had left their **First Love** – Jesus. Instead of humanitarian works, they needed to **preach and live like Jesus** (Revelation 2:1-3). They were not witnessing Christ.

He warned them He would remove their **candlestick** when He returned, unless and until **they repented** (Revelation 2:5). They should have continued to preach Jesus, The Christ, as **The Good News** to the world. They were too busy in charitable affairs and not **witnessing *The Gospel***. If they **overcame**, they would be able to eat of The Tree of Life in **The Paradise of God**. **Then their spiritual growth** would have continued in The Kingdom of God.

The Church of Smyrna

Smyrna is Christ's **Bride** who went through **much tribulation** in their human existence. Their only warning was to remain **faithful** unto **death**. They were guaranteed a **Crown of Life** as Christ's **Wife** (Revelation 2:10). Because of their **faith**, The Smyrna Church of God will not experience **The Second Death** (Revelation 2:11). They were the most spiritually rich church of the seven.

The Church of Pergamos

The Church in Pergamos held **fast** to Christ's **name**. This Church preached Jesus and did not deny **the faith**, even in **martyrdom**. They were involved with Balaam (making **The Church** into a **business**) instead of growing in love to receive **The Free Gift of Salvation**. They were, also, into **paganism**. When Jesus returns, they will be in The Tribulation. They, in Pergamos, who overcome, will be a **white stone** (meaning **righteousness**) in **The Temple of God**.

The Church of Thyatira

This church was involved in many **good works** of **charity**, **service**, **faith** and they had **patience**. The last days of this church would **be better** than when they began. This church had a **great sin**, which was **idolatry**. Those in Thyatira followed the teachings of Jezebel or **Baal worship**. Christ gave this church time to repent of **paganism**, but since she did not, it will become necessary for this church to go through **The Great Tribulation**. Then, Jesus concluded and stated those in this church should hold fast to **the good works** they were doing (Revelation 2:25). They will be **rulers in The House of God**. They will be **The Bride of Christ**, **The Morning Star** (Revelation 22:16).

The Church of Sardis

The Sardis Church was alive as Christ's **church**, but had **died**. This church was not **growing spiritually**. Jesus warned them "**to hold onto what they had**." Their **works** were not **perfect**. They stopped looking for Christ's "**return**." However, **a few were worthy** and became **righteous**. These few will become **The Wife of Christ**. They will not be removed from *The Marriage Registry*, which is *The Book of Life* (Revelation 19:9). Some may end up being **The Guests** at The Wedding.

The Church of Laodicea

(The Philadelphian Church had already been dealt with). Now to **the seventh** and final **Menorah Candlestick**, **The Laodiceans**, who should have been **witnessing Christ**, but were not. This church was **a piece of work!** They were in **love with themselves**. They thought only they had **the truth**. They did not believe any of Christ's other **churches** belonged to Him and would have **noth-**

ing to do with them. Spiritually, they were neither **cold** nor **hot**, they were **lukewarm**. They had **some truth** and thought they were **rich** and **needed nothing** more. But, Jesus wished they were either **cold** or **hot**. In the parable of **the talents**, the one with one talent was fearful their one talent would be lost. It never occurred to them to increasing it to two or more. They were satisfied with the knowledge they had and did not feel they needed to continue to grow. The Laodiceans were waiting for Him to return, to give Him **the talents** they were originally given. They never grew to “**the love level**” on **the ladder**.

Christ concluded they were **naked, spiritually poor** and **blind**. Christ’s **solution** was for them to go into **The Lake of Fire** so they can be **purged**. Then, they could **see their nakedness and begin to be clothed (spiritually) in righteousness**. Here is how Jesus concluded **His messages to His Seven Churches**, “**As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door and knock: if any man hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him and will sup with him and he with me. To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with Me in My Throne, even as I also overcame and am set down with My Father in His Throne. He that has an ear, let him hear what The Spirit says unto the churches**” (Revelation 3:19-22).

This is what **the unvailing** of *The Book of Revelation* is **all about**. It is **the unvailing of Christ’s Bride “in worthiness” to be His Wife**. **His Wife** must be **clothed in righteousness**. She must become as a **white stone** (Godly beauty) (Revelation 21:2 and Revelation 19:8).

CHAPTER 4

THE SLAIN LAMB

The Bride of Christ must overcome and become worthy. Many are not aware that Jesus, in His human existence, also had to become worthy to be The Bride's Husband. *The Book Of Revelation* is all about The Wedding Feast of The Groom and The Bride. The Bride must become worthy to be His Wife before Christ can return (Revelation 19:7). The Marriage of The Lamb cannot take place until His Bride is ready (worthy).

WHO IS WORTHY?

The purpose of The Church of God is to become exactly like Christ – perfect (Ephesians 4:11-13). Many understand it is a requirement for Salvation. God, The Father, demands that The Bride and The Groom prove their love for each other. If not, God will not approve having **the wedding** and won't allow Jesus to return. Both must prove their **worthiness**.

A Spiritual Matter

You must grow **spiritually** by God's **Holy Spirit** if you are to be **saved**. The Father, however, insists you **grow spiritually**, so The Bride and The Groom can marry. It is **an internal matter** and, it is what's in your heart and mind that counts. Just as **Salvation** is forever, marriage is forever or "**until death do us part**." If there is no death, only **life eternal**, then the marriage is, **also**, forever.

God's **kingdom** is eternal and is ruled by a **monarchy**. God as **The Great King**, Jesus as **The King of Kings** and The Bride as **Queen**. That is why when Jesus **returns** for The Bride, both will usher in The Kingdom of God. One event ties in with another.

God's Plan

You are about to find out God planned both **Salvation** and Christ's **marriage** at the same time (Ephesians 1:1-14). Read it thoroughly. In the beginning, before the creation of the universe, God predestined The Kingdom of God and The Wedding Feast. God, consisting of **agapé love**, had a **great desire to pour out His heavenly blessings, His glory**, upon His **creation** (Romans 8). He loves His **creation** and it pleases Him to bestow miraculous gifts. As humans, you seek what gives you **pleasure** from the day you are born. When you do your pleasure, you feel you are having **fun**. It is inborn or genetic in everyone, because at your **birth**, God gives you **life** from **The Spirit of Life**. Life is God – “In You.” Your only problem is, you are flesh and subject to **death**; therefore, you **sin** to survive at all **costs**. As children, you play games to fantasize, and by your imagination, you win all your games. That is probably why all games are in such demand today. When you mature and grow, your business games require the use of your talents for personal achievement of your goals. It's called **success**. For actors, receiving The Oscar or other human recognition is fun, because it **substantiates their success**. Sports champions, inventors, authors, all pursue the same motivation – self acclamation is their **pleasure**. That is what human life is all about. The problem is that it is **vain** or **temporary**. The Kingdom of God and The Wedding Feast are **eternal**. They are **for real** and **they last forever**. God, therefore, only pursues **eternal goals** which give **Him pleasure**. Love **fulfills** or **completes the entire law** (Romans 13:10). All **laws**, by God **covenant**, are **eternal**

because it achieves the same **goal**, which is **love**. Therefore, **love** is **the fulfilling or completion of The Law**. All of God's **Laws** come from **love** and, therefore, are never **destroyed**. God's **Laws** are, however, **conditional** towards **Salvation** and **The Wedding Feast**. Continuing to achieve God's **purpose** or His **will**, **does require everyone to be Holy** (Ephesians 1:4). There is a very good reason for this.

Until these **conditions are achieved**, God could not give anyone **Salvation** or an invitation to **The Wedding Feast**. Human nature does not know “**good**” from “**evil**.” God has made an **eternal covenant** with humanity for them to receive **Salvation**. God can do so by having a **perfect plan** that **lasts forever** (Paradise). This is why you are **saved by faith** – having **absolute trust in God**. Achieving **agapé love** results in **eternal trust**. This, then, is **God's Holy Plan of Salvation**. God starts His **plan** by making everyone **temporary** or subject to **death**, which causes you to strive to **survive** at any cost. Once you grow **to agapé love**, your **faith**, in God, through Christ, is **the final step to spiritual growth**. God, therefore, **adopts** you from human parents (being subject to death) to become **The Very Sons** of God. Then, you will be like Him in Holiness and **love**. God achieves this **perfection** through **His Holy Spirit**. The Holy Spirit leads you to **The Very Mind and Heart of God**. This is **the perfect plan** for **Salvation** and **The Marriage of The Groom and Bride**.

Heavenly Blessings

What **gifts** does God grant you by His **Holy Spirit**? “**Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings** [Greek “gifts”] **in heavenly places** [God's house] **in Christ**” (Ephesians 1:3). These spiritual gifts, from God's **Holy Spirit**, are what allows you to be **Holy** and be-

come blameless. This is **God's righteousness**. **The Laws of God** only reveal what **sin** is. For a **carnal society** with a **wrong heart** or **wrong desires**, **The Letter of The Law** produces a physical **civil community** with **sin**, but has **curses** or **judgments** to control **sin** (Deuteronomy 28). The Law does not **give Salvation** because it does not make anyone **sinless** (Hebrews 7). The Law, when **magnified**, makes The Law **honorable** (Isaiah 42:21). It makes you **perfect** by **writing God's Laws in your heart and mind**. Through this process, it changes your **nature** from **carnal** (a beast) to **spiritual (God's righteousness)**. That is why *The Old Covenant Law* of Moses produces **death** and *The New Covenant Law* gives **life eternal** (II Corinthians 3). *The New Covenant* makes you **righteous without sin** (Hebrews 10). There is a change of The Priesthood from Levi to Melchizedek and, by doing so, changes **The Law** (Hebrews 7:12). The Levitical Priesthood could only offer **animal sacrifices** for Israel's sins. That is why I John 3:4 only reveals **sin**, but cannot produce **righteousness**. Capital crimes produces nothing but death.

The Melchizedek Priesthood, through **faith**, can make you **righteous**. That is why Christ's **death** paid for your **sins** and by God's **Holy Spirit**, you can be changed to be **righteous**. That is why Jesus is **worthy** to be **The Groom**. Christ cleanses The Bride to make her (Christians) worthy to be **His Wife** (Ephesians 5). The definition of "**sin**" for Christians, is not I John 3:4, but I John 5:17.

The New Covenant with Christ as High Priest removes **sin**, which therefore, has **no judgments** or **curses**. The Law administered by Jesus, **gives Salvation**. It is a **better covenant based upon better promises** (Hebrews 7 and 8). What are these **better promises**? They are **the heavenly blessings – gifts from Christ**, to **His Bride**. Here are **the gifts to Christ's Bride by The Holy**

Spirit: 1) **Fear**; 2) **Mercy**; 3) **Wisdom**; 4) **Understanding**; 5) **Faith**; 6) **Judgment (Justice)**; and 7) **Love**. These gifts are **free**, which gives you **God's righteousness – His mind**. Then, you will always **know good** from evil. What a **Wonderful Counselor Christ** is (Isaiah 9:6)!

Prophecy Continues

Now you understand God's **mind** and why **He is well pleased** with **His Son**. Christ paid for **your sins**, but He bestows **gifts** upon you which makes you **righteous**. Then you will be **His Wife** at **The Wedding Feast**. The Apostle John wept when **no man** could be found **worthy** to **unseal** *The Book of Revelation*. Only then can Christ return to a **worthy wife** (Revelation 5:3-4). Then, **one of the twenty-four elders** in heaven stated Jesus was worthy to **open** *The Book* with **The Seven Seals**. **Prophetically, this is very significant!** A slain lamb had **seven horns** and **seven eyes**, which are **The Seven Spirits of God**, which reveal **the state of the world** (Revelation 5:6). This **lamb** with **seven horns** or the **seven beasts** representing **world governments** were destroyed when Jesus died on the cross (Revelation 13). **The Times of The Gentiles** will have been **fulfilled** and it will be **time** for Christ to replace **The World's Gentile Rule** with **The Kingdom of God**. It is time for **The Wedding Feast**. **The Groom** is **worthy** through **agapé love**. **The Bride** has to become **worthy** to be **The Wife**. Christ will return with **His Wife** to establish **The Kingdom of God** during **The Engagement Period** just before The Wedding takes place. This will be **The Millennium**.

CHAPTER 5

THE SEVEN SEALS

Many are not aware, but the series of world events prophesied in Revelation 6, 7 and 8 cause part of a world curse. God sent this curse to the earth because The Jews rejected John, The Baptist, who came in The Spirit of Elijah, to prepare the way for the coming of The Bridegroom (Malachi 4:5-6). Elijah was to turn the hearts of the children (Judah), back to The Father in The Keeping of The Law of Moses. Herod killed John, The Baptist and then had The Romans crucify The Bridegroom, The Christ.

The World Curse

Because they rejected Jesus as Yashua, The Messiah, He said He was going to make another nation more worthy to be His **Bride** (Matthew 21:43). God offered The Kingdom in Jerusalem to a nation which would bring forth the fruits. Jesus outlined this **world curse** because The Jews did not heed John, The Baptist and denied Christ. Pontius Pilate put Christ to death (Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 detail this curse). The first curse was the destruction of The Temple and The Tribulation of The Jews, who were scattered into all nations and lasted until 1948. This great tribulation upon Judah decimated the land, **“And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive [The Jews] into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by The Gentiles, until The Times of The Gentiles be fulfilled”** (Luke 21:24). This covers world history from 70 A.D. to the end of

Daniel 2 before **Christ's return**. This is when The Gentile Rule of The World ends. This is, **biblically**, known as **The End of Days**. Christ picks up His **prophecy** with “**the time of heavenly signs**,” with the opening of **The Seventh Seal** (Luke 21:25). **The Seventh Seal** announces **The Seven Trumpets**. This begins **The End of Days**. Thousands of years have transpired as Peter foretold in II Peter 3:7-9. During the time of these seals, God calls a remnant of Israel (The 144,000 of The Tribes of Israel) to go through **The Second World Tribulation** and **The Seven Trumpets** (Revelation 7). Then, God's Two Witnesses – The Church of God and Israel – are made **white** in this **end-time tribulation**.

The Seven Trumpets

God, with The Seven Trumpets, announces His **intervention** into world affairs. The Time of The Gentile's World Rule is coming to an **end**. Those in the world become frightened and turn to a last source – religion. They accept a **false Christ** (the anti-Christ) and The Great Whore reigns on the earth during The Great Tribulation, persecuting true Christians and The 144,000 Israelites. These are **The Two Witnesses of God**. These are those who go through The Great Tribulation because Satan is **angry** and knows his time is short. “**And the dragon [Satan] was wroth with the woman [The Bride], and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep *The Commandments* of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ** (Revelation 12:17). Those Christians, who were growing **spiritually**, go into **safety** and are protected from this **tribulation**. Those who had received **one talent** and knew Christ was returning and were too **fearful** to grow, have to go through this **great time of world trouble** (lasting 3½ years). **The Seven Trumpets**, during this time, is God's **announcement** of **The Wedding Feast**, and the world must repent. The Bride, too, must get ready for **The Return of The Groom**. These are

God's warnings. His **patience** and **longsuffering** is near an end (**The End Time**) before He **spanks** the world with **The Seven Last Plagues**. This is God's **announcement** that **The Wedding Feast** is to occur and **The Kingdom of God** will be **restored** to **Israel**. The **whole world** should get ready and **repent**, or they will receive **The Seven Last Plagues**. They will then be cursed because of **The Mark of The Beast**.

The Mark of The Beast is not a physical mark, but one that is **the mark of one's behavior**. Over and over, *The Book of Revelation* reveals those with **The Mark of The Beast** must repent. Here is what those with **The Mark of The Beast** did after God released **The Seven Plagues** upon them, "**And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent** [one hundred pounds]: **and men blasphemed God because of the plague of hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great**" (Revelation 16:21). What is **The Mark of The Beast**? A **beast** is either **wild** or **not**. Some beasts can be **tamed**, like a **horse**, an **ox**, or even a **falcon**. The best **animal** is a **lamb**, which is **docile**. **The Mark of The Beast** has to do with **the worst type of behavior**. God tells you who these **beasts** are. This **mark** has **three** outstanding **characteristics** (Revelation 13:17-18). Being in business will be difficult (that is, if you are buying and selling or attempting to be an entrepreneurial person). This is a time of **world prosperity because of globalization**. That is why **the merchants of the world cry and moan** when **The Beast** is **destroyed**. God warns **His people** to "**come out of her** [Babylon] [**repent**]" (Revelation 18:4). Some **Christians** and **Israelites**, who are not **growing spiritually** (but want to be **Christ's Bride**), must go through **The Great Tribulation**. They have **The Mark of The Beast**. They are part of **the world's system** having a **wrong behavior**. These Christians and Israelites need **deep repentance** to **love The Groom** and **God** and be willing to **die** for

Him. All world merchants will be happy and anxious to sell their products and services. This end-time is when competition is, first and foremost, in the minds of most individuals. This is a time of **The Ten Toes of The Great Image** in Daniel 2. These are The Ten Toes or ten world leaders who will be competing for the world's assets, which will be running out. Competition will be primary in all people. That is why the toes are made of iron and clay. This is a time when the world prospers because of globalization. At the same time, greedy competition keeps each of the ten world leaders in a frenzy for their share of the world's assets. The world will wonder if there will be world peace or war, just as they wonder today. The end-times are almost here!

The second sign of **The Mark of The Beast** is the number of a man. Finally, that number is 666. What three men were like beasts in control of the world? The three men who acted as beasts were Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, Cyrus of Media-Persia and Alexander, The Great. They were like a lion, bear and leopard (Revelation 13). All these three beasts were most violent. Combined, you get 666, and they become **The Fourth Beast – The Roman Empire Image**. Today's world is escalating to be **The Image of The Beast** – the last one ending at their gathering at **Armageddon** – to attack **Jerusalem**, which is now, **Babylon, The Great Whore** (Zechariah 14).

The Seventh Trump

When Joshua had The Priests march around the city blowing the trumpets for seven days, it was a warning of a very serious event which was to take place. God wants humans to repent. God pleads with mankind to change, so He can bless them. He has great love for His creation. Christ has proved Himself wor-

thy as **The Slain Lamb** (Revelation 5). With The Great Tribulation underway, those with The Mark of The Beast (competitive behavior) have God sending His **Seven Trumpets** as **warnings**. With all its global **prosperity**, **the greed** of humanity will be at its **world pinnacle**. Nothing will stop them from coveting all the world's assets. Even God's **intervention** with (**The Seven Trumpets**) the world, although fearful, they will still **not repent**. In Jericho, on The Seventh Day, when the trumpets sounded, **the city walls fell** and Jericho was taken captive. Likewise, as The Seventh Trumpet sounds, this **Gentile-ruled world** will be at an end. The **battle** of World War III is about to occur. All the nations of the world surround Jerusalem and **a great earthquake** splits the city. Half of the people are **taken captive** when Christ begins to return. Human life, as in The Days of Noah, suddenly comes to an end. Jesus has to **return to save the world** from suicide.

The Seventh Trump ushers in two **great events**. One is The Return of **The Prince for His Wife**, who is now also **worthy**. It is at this time, human rule will end and The Kingdom of God will begin on **earth**. As Christ comes out of **The East** and **the lightning strikes** in the sky, **He** meets **His Wife** in the clouds. As **He** descends as **a knight in shining armor** on **His white horse**, **The Seven Last Plagues** are unleashed upon those with **The Mark of The Beast**. Read all of Revelation 19. **The Engagement Period** of The Groom is about to be announced. For 1,000 years the world will be called continually to **The Wedding Feast**. All the world is invited. (Both **the bad** and **the good**). During this period, Christ and His **Wife-to-be** are Priests and Kings, **judging the world**. Satan and the false prophets are thrown into a Lake of Fire. **No deception** takes place during this **Engagement Period**. It is a **time** when Israel, as a nation, is **saved** and will be **God's witnesses** to the rest of the world (Romans 11:26).

CHAPTER 6

CHRIST'S WIFE

As Jesus said, “the last [Gentiles] shall be first and the first [Israel] last” (Matthew 20:16). Now, the virgins who were wise (worthy) were to be Christ’s Wife, from both The Gentiles and Israel. Chapter 11 in Romans states, “Israel is grafted back into The Natural Olive Tree.” Both are God’s Faithful Witnesses. It is time for The Wedding Feast.

What Is The Feast?

The Wedding Feast is more than a party. It is a **way of life**. Christ’s **return** ushers in The Kingdom of God and represents a Sabbath’s **delight**. God promises that **if you delight in His Sabbath**, you will be in **eternal rest**. “**Then shall you delight yourself in the Lord; and I will cause you [Israel] to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed you with the heritage [inheritance] of Jacob your father: for the mouth of The Lord has spoken it**” (Isaiah 58:14). Starting with **The Millennium**, The Kingdom of God rules and continues right into **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth** with **The Wedding Feast**, “**And in this mountain [government] shall The Lord of Hosts make unto [with] all people a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees [over abundance], of fat things full of marrow [health], of wines on the lees well refined**” (Isaiah 25:6). What is this **time period**? **Death will end** and **all the world** will know **The Truth of God** (Isaiah 25:7-9). “**...He might gather together in one all things [God is All In All] [universe] in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which**

are on earth; even in Him” (Ephesians 1:10). This is the time when the entire world will bow and acknowledge that Jesus is Lord (Philippians 2:10-12). The New Heaven and The New Earth is **a feast** for everyone who is in The Kingdom of God. The Sabbath’s Delight of **The Wedding Feast** is celebrated by everyone, except those who are not allowed, because they rejected God’s **Holy Spirit**. These are those who are not righteous and must go through **The Lake of Fire** and are, at this time, in **outer darkness** (Revelation 22:14-15). Everyone else rejoices at **The Wedding Feast**, which **does not end**, but continues – **eternally**.

CHAPTER 7

HOW THE BRIDE BECOMES THE WIFE

What does it mean for The Bride to be worthy? In general, you are to become like Christ – who is perfect (Ephesians 4:13). The Bride is to become perfect, like Her Husband. How does she become perfect?

Jesus Was Thirty

Many are not aware, but Jesus had to grow in **grace** and **knowledge**. Joseph and Mary made sure Jesus completed everything required by The Law (Luke 2:39). In fact, Christ had to be a **firstborn son**. “**As it is written in The Law of The Lord, Every male that opens the womb [firstborn] shall be called holy to The Lord**” (Luke 2:23). “**And the child grew and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon Him**” (Luke 2:40). **Jesus, as a child**, had to grow **spiritually** like all Christians. However, He had God’s **Holy Spirit** from **birth** (John 3:34). He had to climb up **the spiritual ladder** – **fear, mercy, wisdom, understanding, faith, judgment and finally, love**. When He was twelve, Jesus amazed the hierarchy with His **understanding** (Luke 2:42). “**And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature and in favor with God and man**” (Luke 2:52). Jesus did not have to **repent**, because He already knew He came to do **God’s will** and to speak **God’s word**. As a human you must **repent** and seek **God’s righteousness** – **God’s Very Word** (John 5 and 6). When Christ was thirty, a very important **event** took place. To be in The Levitical Priesthood, a man had to be thirty

years of age when he entered God's **service** as a **Priest**. Christ was thirty when He entered His **commission** as Melchizedek, God's **High Priest**. What happened next?

John, The Baptist, acknowledges Christ as The Bridegroom (John 3:29). Jesus is about to accept His **anointing** to be The Savior of The World and be **worthy** to be **The Husband** of His **Bride**. "**And Jesus, answering said unto him [John, The Baptist], *Suffer it be so now: for thus it becomes us to fulfill [complete] all righteousness***" (Matthew 3:15). Christ received baptism to show He was willing to **die** for His **Bride** and the world. He had 3½ years to complete His **mission**. After His **resurrection**, it was, then, a time for **The Church** to be **The Bride of Christ**. She must be accounted **worthy** to marry **Her Husband**. Christ did not have to **repent** since His **mind** was filled with God's **Holy Spirit** from **birth**. Now, it's time for The Bride to prove herself. The prospective **Bride**, (just as **His Disciples**) has to **repent**, be **baptized** and **grow spiritually**. Jesus asked Peter three times whether or not he **loved Him** (John 21). Christ said Peter would be **crucified**, just as He was. As with all **Christians**, **The Bride** has to **love The Groom**, as **The Groom** loves **The Wife**.

Revelation

The Book Of Revelation is about the prophecy becoming Christ's **Bride – The Wife**. What must each **virgin** do to become Christ's **Wife** (Revelation 2 and 3)? Some grew and had no need to go through more testing. Others did not grow spiritually and must go into The Tribulation to wake-up. At this time, **the remnant** of The Israelites go into The Tribulation. Twelve thousand of each tribe, except Dan, become **worthy** to be **witnesses** as Christ's **Bride**. They **prove their love** for **The Groom** by going through **The Tribulation** (they are, The 144,000) (Revelation 7:14). As

The Tribulation progresses, The Angel of The Lord declares, “**And I heard a voice from Heaven saying unto me [John], Write, Blessed *are* the dead which die in The Lord from henceforth: Yea, says The Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them**” (Revelation 14:13). The Bride, those protected by Jesus, are kept in safety because they have grown spiritually.

Now, the rest are being tested as to their love for Jesus and must qualify in The Tribulation to prove that **love** for their Husband. The next prophetic **event**, The Return of Jesus for **His Bride**, is now ready to occur. The Bride is **worthy** to be Christ’s **Wife**. She has climbed The Spiritual Ladder to God’s **agapé love** and **died** for Jesus. “**And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud *one* sat like unto The Son of Man, having on His head a golden crown, and in His hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of The Temple, crying with a loud voice to Him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in your sickle [on the earth], and reap: for the time is come for you to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe [first resurrection]. And He that sat on the cloud thrust in His sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped**” (Revelation 14:14). After The Time of The Heavenly Signs, much distress occurs in the nations because of The Six Trumpets. Humanity will be in great stress, “**for the powers of heaven shall be shaken [in turmoil]. And then shall they see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory**” (Luke 21:26-27). Revelation and Luke 21 are in **exact agreement**.

No Man Knows

For centuries, humanity has tried to **forecast The Return of Jesus**. Christ said, “**Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and *that* hour knows no**

man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither The Son, but The Father. Take you heed, watch and pray: for you know not when the time is” (Mark 13:31-33). Can't be any plainer!

No one knows The Time of Christ's **return**. Yet, preachers keep trying to tell you when **Christ will return**. Only God, The Father, will decide when Jesus comes for **His Bride**. There is **no set date** or **specific time**. God will not allow **His Son** to take a **Bride** until she **loves Him as much as He loves Her**. It is **the spiritual growth** Jesus went through and **The Bride** also will have to go through. Revelation and *The Gospels*; Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 **confirm** it. No date or **time is set**. It is **all conditional**. First, **The Groom** has been **ready** and **The Bride** must, also, get **ready** (Revelation 5). Both **prove their worthiness**. **Both must be righteous or totally good** and **Holy**, like God. *The Book of Revelation* is the last book in *The Bible*, because it foretells **The Messiah is ready to return** for **His Bride** at anytime! Once she becomes **worthy** to be **His Wife**, **Christ will come** (Revelation 19:7-9). That is what the **entire Bible** is all about. Christ will come to **restore** what **was lost** (Matthew 18:11). The Bride (Israel) was **lost** (not ready or worthy) and there can be no **Wedding Feast** until she is ready. You are about to understand why **The Wedding Feast** is so significant. It is a **feast** which **never ends**. It never **ends** for a **very good reason**. It ushers in an event which **affects the universe**. The Wedding is about to **occur**. **The Groom, Christ**, is **worthy** and so is **The Bride**.

The reason for **The Millennium** is that it is **The Engagement Period** announcing **The Coming Wedding**. The **invitation** goes out to **the entire world, both to the bad and good** (Matthew 22). No one is **excluded**. God **loves every inhabitant of the world** and will not allow anyone to be left behind! He was responsible for **the creation** of every man, woman and child.

CHAPTER 8

THE WEDDING FEAST

Paul said The Administration of Death, *The Old Covenant*, written in stone (*Ten Commandments*) had such a glory that Israel couldn't look at Moses' face (II Corinthians 3:7-14). This glory was to be done away. "How shall not the ministration of The Spirit be rather glorious" (II Corinthians 3:8)? The Administration of The Law under Christ was more glorious. In what way was Christ's glory better than Moses'? Moses had to wear a veil each time he came down from the mountain. Why?

Christ's Glory

Christ asked for God to give Him the glory He had before (John 17:5). Why did Jesus want The Father's **glory**? **God's glory is all of God's goodness or righteousness** (Exodus 33:18-19). The Hebrew and Greek words convey "weighty" – "all God's riches or heavenly blessings." God's **glory** is The Pearl of Great Price. It is all God is, can be and will be. He is the "I AM THAT I AM" (Exodus 3:14). God can be whatever He wants to be. God, through Christ, wants to give you **His glory** as He gave it to Jesus. Israel, being **blinded**, reading *The Old Testament* out of **fear**, could see **The Law of Moses and its works** as their way to **righteousness**. Because of **the veil** they could **not see or understand** all of The Goodness of God. They had a **wrong heart** and, therefore, **God blinded them**. They did not understand He allowed them to be **blind**, so their **sins would not be**

held against them (John 9:41). Many Christians today are in the same situation about **The Purpose of The Law** and are **blind** (for their own good). Israel, as Christ's **Bride**, was **not worthy** to be His **Wife** so Moses had to wear **the veil** to hide The Glory. It is so to this day. That is why, during The Tribulation, only 144,000 Israelites will be able to have their Bridal Veil removed to see **her righteousness**. Just as Esther, the future bride of a king, had to continue to be purged of **all blemishes** (to become **blameless**), so must Israel be purged. In time, you will read that **the whole world** will have this **veil** or **blindness removed**.

A Wife

When **The Wife** is **worthy** and ready, Jesus can, then, come for **His Bride**. Once the decision is made, **The Engagement** is **announced**. **The Engagement** announces The Wedding and God has allotted 1,000 years for the world to accept The Wedding Announcement. This is known as **The Millennium**. God controls **His prophecy** as conditions **unfold**. When "**prophecies**" **forecast failure** it conveys "**held back**" or "**a pause**" in Greek (I Corinthians 13:8). God does not decide for **the world** how **they should behave**. They have **free choice**. God does not **control** you, as **Satan tries** to do. Therefore, God alters His **prophecies** which are conditional upon an individual's **repentance**. Finally, by your **free choice**, God will see His desire and **pleasure come to pass** (Isaiah 46:10).

God pleads with **humanity**, but never forces or removes their **free choice**. God grants His **Holy Spirit** to those who **fear Him** and **work righteousness** (Acts 10:34-35). That is **the purpose** of **The Announcement** to **The Wedding Feast**. God has allotted 1,000 years until all the world has **The Knowledge of The True God**. If the world responds sooner, then The Time of The Engagement

will be **cut short** (Matthew 24:42). After the 1,000 years end everyone on **earth** shall know God. “**They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of The Lord, as the waters cover the sea**” (Isaiah 11:9). All will be invited to **The Wedding Feast**. The Wedding Feast is **at hand**. Both **the good** and **the bad** will know God and will be invited to The Wedding. The only question is, will **every-one** be ready. The guests are to be dressed with **The Wedding Garment of Righteousness** (Revelation 19:7-8).

No Wedding Garment

During The Millennium, Satan is kept bound in prison. Since this is The Engagement when all are invited to The Wedding, God removes all **blindness**. Everyone must know **The Truth**. **The Groom** and **The Bride** announce their coming wedding. Satan, at the end of the 1,000, years is released. **The Guests invited** to The Wedding will be tested by Satan. Everyone will know **The Truth**, because there is **no Satan** during The Announcement Period (Revelation 20:3). But, as the 1,000 years are fulfilled, Satan is released for a **short time**, to test the world again. Those in **The Second Resurrection**, must be **judged** whether or not they are qualified to attend The Wedding Feast. **The Time of The White Throne Judgment is at hand**. At The White Throne Judgment, Jesus separates the sheep from the goats (Matthew 25:32). The sheep enter **The Kingdom of God**. The goats go into the fire (Matthew 25:41). Read the outcome of Jerusalem after God’s **wrath**, in Isaiah 66:8-14. The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth is at hand. God is ready to burst forth and have His **children**. God will be calling everyone to The Wedding Feast, but those not worthy will go into **the fire**. At The Judgment, everyone has to be dressed in **righteousness**. **The Saints who are worthy will be The Wife** while **The Faithful** are **the nations** who will be

The Guests at The Wedding Feast. The Wife is resurrected in **The First Resurrection** and **The Guests** in **The Second Resurrection** (John 5:25-29). **The Bride** (Church of God and Israel) has become **worthy** to be **The Wife** of **The Groom** (Revelation 19:7-9). Now **The Groom** and **The Wife** are **both worthy**. Both, will have proved they are **willing to die** for **each other**. **God, The Father**, approves **The Wedding Feast**. Both are dressed in white (righteousness). The wife in a bridal gown and Christ on the white horse (Revelation 19:11).

The Guests

Those who are called to **The Marriage Supper of The Lamb** are **blessed** (Revelation 19:9). They are **dressed** in “**white**” which is “**righteousness.**” **The Wife** consists of **The Saints**, who are dressed in **pure white**, while **The Guests** or **Bridesmaids** have varied **colors**. Those written in *The Book of Life* are those in *The Marriage Registry*; **The Groom, Bride, Bridesmaids and Guests**. This is why **The White Throne Judgment** is called **A White Throne**. They are **royalty** dressed in **white** or **righteousness**. “**And I saw heaven opened and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True and in righteousness He does judge and make war**” (Revelation 19:11). He is **The King of Kings** getting **His Bride** and inviting all **Guests** to **The Wedding Feast**. This is **The First Group**. Before **The Wedding Feast** (on **The New Earth** and **The New Heaven**), **The White Throne Judgment** begins. Those in **The Wedding Registry** are allowed to attend **The Wedding**. The rest are **thrown into The Lake of Fire** (Revelation 21:27). **The Tree of Life** is their **Salvation**, with **no curses** or **death** (Revelation 22:1-4)! Everyone **lives, forever**, including those who were in **The Lake of Fire**. Christ is ready to come quickly, but it all depends upon **The Bride** being **worthy** (Revelation 22:7). There is **no set date**

for **The Wedding**, only a **condition**. The Bride must **cloak** herself in a **vail** until she is **not only beautiful on the outside**, but **on the inside**, too. The Guests to be worthy must be faithful. Those who are **faithful** keep God's *Commandments*, which gives them a **right** to **The Tree of Life**. **Spiritual growth** or **The Process of Salvation** continues in The New Heaven and The New Earth. This is The Second Group. Send for the book *God's Will* for details. Then, **The Third Group** is mentioned, "**For without [or left out] are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie**" (Revelation 22:15). Then, "**And The Spirit and The Bride say, Come. And let him that hear say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely**" (Revelation 22:17). This **Water of Life** comes from **The Throne of God** and Christ, which has **healing (therapia)** leaves to heal **the nations** (Revelation 22:1-2). **Salvation** or **spiritual growth** continues in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. Those in **The Lake of Fire** are changed from **mortal** to **immortal when death is swallowed up in victory** (I Corinthians 15:54). "**As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy [here]: and as is the heavenly, such are they [all humans] also that are heavenly**" (I Corinthians 15:48). "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive**" (I Corinthians 15:22). Quite plain! The word "**all**" is in the **aorist subjunctive mood**. "**All**" does not mean "**all**" until "**specific conditions take place**." What are these **conditions**? First, **death** or **The Curse of The Law** must be **defeated**, which Jesus accomplishes (I Corinthians 15:26). *The Blood Covenant* **guarantees life** for everyone when certain conditions are followed, such as **repentance**.

The point is, everyone is **made alive** or **resurrected**, even those in **The Lake of Fire**. At **The Wedding Feast (The New Heaven and The New Earth)** God makes **all things new**. The Time of

Restoration, **“For The Son of man is come to save that which was lost”** (Matthew 18:11). What was **lost** was **The Tree of Life, which will be restored in The Kingdom of God. The Process of Salvation continues in The Kingdom of God!** What happens to those at **The Wedding Feast**? Many will come and sit with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob at The Wedding Feast, while others will not be allowed into The Wedding (Matthew 8:11-12). They will be **cast out into outer darkness**. Who are they? These are those who are not allowed into New Jerusalem where The Wedding Feast takes place (Revelation 22). **The Process of Salvation** will continue in **The Kingdom of God**. To come into New Jerusalem year by year, they must **mature to The Stature of Christ** (Ephesians 4:11-15). **No deathbed repentance will be accepted!**

Now, **for The Wedding Feast**. What happens? John is told he will be shown **The Lamb’s Bride, His Wife** (Revelation 21:9). The time for **the unveiling of *The Book of Revelation* will have been completed**. The Apocalypse – **The Unveiling** takes place because **The Groom and Bride are worthy to marry**. Now **the veil** over Moses’ face (**God’s glory – The Shekinah**) is revealed to **the world** and **the beauty** of The Groom and Bride **reflect God’s glory**. Christ is **The Glory of God**, like a **diamond** reflecting **The Light of God** to everyone on **The New Earth**. Those farthest away are in **darkness** and in **torment** (“**overwhelmed**” – “**kolasis**”). Later, **Christ’s Wife, in all her righteousness of God’s glory, glistens like many diamonds of many colors with The Apostles** showing The Glory of God.

Mother Of Us All

The Wedding Feast takes place, and now, **New Jerusalem (The Wife of Christ, in The House of God)** becomes **The Mother of All**. During this **earthly existence**, the **unfaithful bore more**

children than the faithful. The **Legitimate Wife** had only a few children in **the world.** What occurs in **heaven** regarding Jerusalem? Paul relates *The Old Covenant Law* was in **bondage (slavery – representing Hagar).** *The New Covenant under Christ, The New Marriage Contract,* is **New Jerusalem in heaven and not the earthly Jerusalem** (Galatians 4:21-27). “**But Jerusalem which is above [heaven] is free, which is The Mother of Us All**” (Galatians 4:26). It includes all of mankind.

What is this “**Mother of Us All**” told to do? “**Rejoice, you barren that bears not; break forth and cry, you that travail not [birth pains]: for the desolate [outer darkness] has many more children than she which has an husband**” (Galatians 4:27). When The Wedding Feast takes place, Jesus and His **Wife, legally,** are to become parents. Christ can complete what He came to the earth to do, “**And we have seen and do testify that The Father sent The Son to be The Savior of The World**” (I John 4:14). You have a **loving God** and a **loving Son.** The Wife is **now a Mother** and will bring **Salvation to The World.** Is there a formula you are to follow? You must do your homework each and every day to become **righteous.** It’s a very big job, but God and Christ will help you along the way. Your **Spiritual Degree** is worth all your prayers. Study to show yourself approved. You have a lot of homework to do to reach The Stature of Jesus Christ. The Wedding Feast will be the talk of the world. Everyone will give their **eye teeth** to be able to be there. Make sure you are on this list. Do everything you can to be The Bride or The Guests at The Wedding Feast.

In conclusion, here is what Jesus said, “**Blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this Book**” (Revelation 22:7). You have heard what Jesus expects of you. What is your decision? It’s not too late, you still have time to make the right choice.

**GOD'S TWO
PRIESTHOODS**

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART

**BY
ART MOKAROW**

Copyright Pending – *God’s Two Priesthoods*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God’s Puzzle Solved

God’s Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God’s Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ’s Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God’s Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God’s Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God’s Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul’s Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God’s Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God’s Old And New Covenant

What’s It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan’s Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God’s Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God’s Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God’s Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God’s School

God’s Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don’t Bury Your Talents

God’s Work Vs. Man’s Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon’s Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God’s Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God’s Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God’s House

Bible Study God’s Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner’s Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>v</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>vii</i>
GOD’S REST	1
WHY TWO PRIESTHOODS?	9
THE AARONIC PRIESTHOOD	15
MANY COVENANTS—DIFFERENT PRIESTHOODS	23
THE LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD	31
THE HOLY TITHE	39
THE HEIRS	51
THE MELCHIZEDEK PRIESTHOOD	57
LETTER AND SPIRIT	65

PREFACE

Those who accepted an *Old Testament* Priesthood had to sacrifice animals when they sinned. This was done without knowing God's *purpose* behind the entire process. Intercessors who beseech God are looked upon as Holy – because their office (duty) was Holy.

When did The Priesthood begin? Furthermore, why does God have two Priesthoods instead of one? Seemingly, Abraham was confronted by a mysterious *High Priest* named *Melchizedek* and was blessed by Him. Later, God anointed Moses' brother, Aaron, as *High Priest*. (He replaced the unknown Melchizedek). Thousands of years later, Jesus became known as Melchizedek, who was the people's intercessor when they sinned. Why are there *two Priesthoods* – both Levitical and Melchizedek? The answer to this question reveals God's Plan of Salvation.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no money is accepted for these books. All books are absolutely *free*. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Please accept this information for your personal growth and maturity. This is our compensation.

Art Mokarow
Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

email: art@mokarow.com
website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com
download all books free of charge

INTRODUCTION

It all began in The Garden of Eden with two individuals. Adam and Eve were so innocent, they didn't even know they were naked (Genesis 2:25). Everything God made was *very good* during that *creation week* and there was *no sin* (Genesis 1:31). Adam was to be *a type* of Christ (Romans 5:14). Adam and Eve could have set the example for all future generations *to live with God in Paradise, forever*. However, Adam and Eve sinned and as a result, *death entered* the picture (Romans 5:12).

Sin And Transgression

Some are not aware that *sin* and *transgression* are not the same thing. “*For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law*” (Romans 5:13). There is a *difference* between *sin* and breaking *The Law*. *The Law* was not *codified*, or *in force*, until four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. Abraham lived around 2000 B.C. and *The Law* was given around 1500 B.C. Therefore, how could sin reign without *The Law*? Sin reigned because “*sin was and is the transgression of the law*” (I John 3:4). The basic meaning of “*sin*,” in Hebrew, is “*to miss the mark!*”

Sin is a *transgression*. But it is also something else. It is the condition of *not meeting God's requirements for life*. These *requirements* are not trespasses but *gifts* from God. *They are free*. These are God's *spiritual* or *heavenly gifts* (Ephesians 1:3). “*The Torah*,” in Hebrew means “*a teaching – the way or path to life*.” By your actions, you can sin and miss the mark leading to life (Galatians 3:19, 24-25).

The Torah is not The Law. The Law was added to The Torah four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. It is The Book of Deuteronomy. This covenant was not made with the fathers – Abraham, Isaac and Jacob (Deuteronomy 5:3). It was only made with The Nation of Israel because they had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

The Israelites were subject to being identified as *criminals*. “That the law is not made for a righteous man but for lawless and disobedient [the unrighteous]” (I Timothy 1:9). Codified or written Laws must be made only when people have a *wrong* or *sinful nature*. In the end, they always miss the mark leading to *life* and, therefore, they *die*. Once Adam and Eve had *sinned*, *they*, and *everyone else* who had *sinned* afterward, are *destined to die*. They missed the mark for acquiring *life*.

What was that mark? Christ gave the answer to the question about *sin*. He said, “*It is all evident, by discerning which tree they eat from*” (Matthew 7:17-20) (paraphrased). “*You shall know them by their fruits*” (Matthew 7:16). A good tree produces *good fruit – life* – while a bad tree produces *bad fruit – death*. How simple! There is no dogma! Salvation has nothing to do with Law or Doctrine. Salvation is given through *grace* and, therefore, it is a *free gift*. Humans cannot do anything to achieve it except have *faith* and *trust in God*.

You either eat from the right tree, which will nourish you to receive *life* or you eat from the tree which has *no nourishment* – and then you will *die*. Even a child is able to understand this. God, from the begin-

ning, offered everyone either *life* or *death*. The *choice* started with Adam and Eve and was passed on to *all humanity*. Eve is *the mother of us all*. To this very day, it is *not* a matter of Law, but a *choice of which tree you choose to eat*. Do you choose *life* or *death*? The Tree of Life gives you gifts and nourishment for *life*. The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil poisons you to death. If you eat from the wrong tree, then you will surely die. The Tree of Life allows your human nature to change, which gives you the power to attain *life*.

The Priesthood

Paul defines the need for a functioning Priesthood. Once sin (missing the mark) entered, God had to implement a system to restore what had been *lost*. Christ came to restore this lost element (Matthew 18:11). *Life* was lost when Adam and Eve no longer had access to God's *unmerited riches* and *heavenly gifts* – The Tree of Life. *Reconciliation to God* was now required. The Priesthood was *instituted* by God. “*Jesus, The Christ*” in the Greek language means “*The Savior, The Anointed One.*” “*Joshua*” in Hebrew is “*Savior.*” “*The Christ*” is a *title* declaring how The Anointed One will reconcile you to God. He is The High Priest. (Read about His commission in Romans 5:1). Paul said, Jesus is The One *justifying* you – so you can have *peace* and *rest* with God.

Because of Christ, you receive *grace* (mercy) when you sin (miss the mark of righteousness). *Righteousness*, through Christ, is *your goal*, so you can enter *The Kingdom of Rest* (Ephesians 4:13). Jesus set the example for revealing *the way to life*. With *agapè love* you can become *Holy* and be without blame. That is

the goal or mark – to have *life*. This *righteousness* is only achieved by God being *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28). No human Laws, deeds or efforts can achieve God’s *Holy perfect righteousness*. It is only through *faith* and it is given as a *gift of grace*. Therefore, an active Priesthood was predestined by God because of *the weakness of the flesh*. This flesh is not only human – but, in some ways, it can be very much like that of an animal.

Therefore, God prepared a physical fleshly body as a sacrifice for everyone who *missed the mark* (Hebrews 10:5-7). The Priesthood was *forever ordained* by God because of mankind’s weakness in human flesh (Hebrews 7:18-27). *The Priesthood* is defined as, “*For every high priest taken from among men [human] is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins. Who can have compassion [grace] on the ignorant [atheists and agnostics] and on them that are out of the way [sin]; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity [weakness]*” (Hebrews 5:1-2). Christ shows you *the way to life*. In this day and age, God accepts a Melchizedek High Priest and not a Levitical High Priest who would perform the animal sacrifices for sin. This Melchizedek High Priest must have the following qualifications:

- 1) Chosen from among human men. Christ was born a human and became *The Author of Life*.
- 2) Ordained for men. The purpose of The High Priest is to atone for mankind’s sin as a penalty or a *reminder* for humans they have sinned.

- 3) To make mankind acceptable to God. Sacrifice is helpful to keep a person aware he/she is *unrighteous*.
- 4) Offering *gifts* and *sacrifices* to God for sin when someone has *missed the mark* leading to life. These sacrifices (till Jesus) only reminded them they were still sinners.
- 5) Who can have grace? Those who are ignorant but choose to repent, ask for mercy and keep making the right choices; from then on, they can receive grace.

The Priesthood is a vital process for initiating human redemption – which is to bring individuals to God by continually reminding them of their *human nature*. Animals were *sacrificed* to represent the nature of their *animal behavior*: such as a lion, leopard or bear (the most violent) or an ox (stubborn) and a goat (always resisting). That is why prophecy denotes wild beasts as *unclean* and farm animals as *clean*. Only the clean animals were used for the priestly animal sacrifices.

All Animals Cleansed

Peter had an amazing vision while in a trance. This experience is found in Acts 10. In vision, Peter saw God lower a sheet with all types of animals in it, both wild and domesticated. Three times God told Peter to *eat* every kind of *beast*. Because of his prior religious training, Peter objected. Then God told Peter, “*What God has cleansed, that call not thou common*” (Acts 10:15). So a time of change was occurring in The Priesthood. This change of Priesthood required

a change of Law (Hebrews 7:12). Here is what Peter learned from this dream, “*Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation he that fears him and works righteousness, is accepted with [by] Him*” (Acts 10:34-35). In accepting these Gentiles, *God was changing The Priesthood* from The Levitical Priesthood to The Melchizedek Priesthood. Hence, *The Law* then changes from *animal sacrifice* to *Christ’s sacrifice*. With Christ’s death, *mercy* could be given. This new Priesthood accomplishes what The Levitical Priesthood could not. Jesus was the truth leading to life. The Mosaic Law only explained what sin was (John 1:17). It never could change anyone.

God Changes Prophecies

In The Garden of Eden, because there was *no sin*, no Priesthood was necessary. Once *sin* (missing the mark) entered the world, then a Priesthood was mandated. Later, Israel and Judah, God’s *people*, were in captivity as slaves. This condition of bondage would bring them to willingly change. Much later, God sought people from *all nations* who feared Him and were willing to work toward becoming *righteous*. Genealogy was no longer an issue. With the baptism of Cornelius, a Gentile, *The Kingdom of God* was now opened to *all nations*.

God gave *The Law* so Israel could see that they couldn’t keep it. You are told how *prophecies will and do fail* (I Corinthians 13:8). From the Greek language, the original word was translated into the English as “*fail*” – which means “*to stop*” or “*pause.*” Since humans always have *free choice*, God changes the direction of

His *prophecy* according to their behavior. He causes prophecy to pause or to stop – until humans make the right choice. Then, God will complete His *prophecies*. From the time when there was no Priesthood and when no sin existed down to the time of there being *two* Priesthoods, you learn how God initiated Laws with different *goals* or *objectives*. You are about to learn how God fulfills His *prophecy* through *two different Priesthoods*. Each has a *different purpose*.

CHAPTER 1

GOD'S REST

God begins with mankind existing in a perfect state. From the beginning, Adam and Eve were in Paradise. They were in God's *rest*, or His *kingdom*. There was no sin. There was "no mark to hit" but only a choice. Everything was very good (Genesis 1:31).

Innocence

Adam and Eve were created as human adults but they had not matured psychologically or spiritually. They had not experienced *life in the flesh*. They were free to do whatever they thought or desired. They were innocent like children. Physically, they were at the height of human power and agility. Remember, at this point, God's *entire creation was pristine and very good* (Genesis 1:31).

God created humanity in His *image*, but He knew *spiritual maturity was vital* in order for them to be given *eternal life*. *Spiritual growth was needed for them to live in an eternal paradise*. Maturity needed to occur for this first couple so they could enter into such a *powerful state* (Ephesians 1:3-4). Adam and Eve needed to develop absolute *faith* and trust in God by their *free choice*.

God's *purpose* was to make all mankind become just

like Him – to insure a stable *Paradise* for His *entire creation*. God was to be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28). Adam and Eve, in their *innocence*, needed *spiritual growth* to take place to insure *Salvation* (to be able to be in *The Kingdom of God*). Everything they needed was in The Garden of Eden. They had *free choice* to do whatever they wished. Always remember, they always had the opportunity to choose The Tree of Life (spiritual maturity).

Sin

Adam and Eve were innocent like little children. God warned them, just as any loving parent, about what was *safe* and what was *dangerous*. At this point, they could not function on their own. God was in The Garden with them to teach, guide and protect them. Since they were *spiritually immature*, they were *not ready* to eat from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. They were not ready to have *complete liberty* to decide right from wrong. God simply told them they could eat from every tree in The Garden – but not from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. If they did, they would die. He told them to eat from The Tree of Life – so they would *live forever*.

Human nature, when left to itself, does not have the wisdom to discern the difference between *good* and *evil*. *Sin* was now an alternative. They could *miss the mark* and *die*. At this point, it was not a Law but rather a matter of *free choice*. The sin they committed was eating from the wrong tree, which automatically produces death. The *penalty* was *automatic* rather

than something carried out by God. Laws cannot be enforced without a stated penalty. To live *eternally*, this first couple needed to be *given eternal life* as a *gift*. A Law requires you to do something which produces a specified outcome and it will be either *good* or *bad*. Eating a poisonous fruit will kill on its own without a codified law. A person is not guilty when a law is unknown (John 9:41).

However, a person who eats a poisonous fruit will pay some kind of penalty. Laws are made and, therefore, the penalty can be *carried out*. To disobey a Law is a *transgression*. Adam and Eve had *disobeyed a command*. A *sin* produces *automatic penalties by its very action*. Sin entered the world by *one man's action* (Romans 5:12-13). Adam missed the mark of *eternal life* and so *all humanity* lost access to The Tree of Life. *It wasn't a transgression of a law*, but their faulty choice was a big mistake. Their human nature, ultimately, led them to death.

It is like when a child is told not to touch a hot stove. This is not based upon *Law* but on *experience*. Any time you touch a hot stove you will get burned. When you break a law, it doesn't always immediately cause a curse. If you *miss the mark*, it can be a mistake which can be forgiven. A *skill* is given to you as a *gift*. Paul said "*all men have sinned and will die*" – there is no other ending. But, it was not a *commanded Law* with a curse. Sin was not *imputed* when there was *no law*. An example would be when you cross the middle of a street. In some cities, it is not against the law, yet in other cities, you can get a ticket. Since God is not

imputing sin as a Law, He has given grace because of His glorious purpose. God declares He will fulfill His pleasure just as He predestined believers to be Holy and blameless (Ephesians 1:4 and Isaiah 46:10).

Train Up A Child

Proverbs 22:6 promises, “*Train up a child in the way [Torah] he should go: and when he is old [mature], he will not depart from it.*” Because of Adam and Eve’s sin, God had to decide on a *different plan* for their descendants, “*That in the dispensation of the fulness [completeness] of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him*” (Ephesians 1:10). Either way, it was in God’s *plan* for Him to be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28). This world is experiencing a great deal of sin. Because of Adam and Eve’s sin, God’s *end-game* plan is to bring everyone to Christ. God trains you, as a little child, to bring you to *spiritual maturity*. In this way, when you are older, you will never turn from it. That is *spiritual maturity* or having a *mind with true wisdom – God’s mind*.

At one point or another, you must stop and make a conscious realization about what a loving Father you have and what He wants for you. When Adam and Eve were removed from The Garden of Eden and lost access to The Tree of Life, God then began to *train* them. Adam and Eve were like children and were not very teachable; so, they disobeyed. God initiated His *training system*, which is designed to make all their lineage have the choice to be *teachable* or *not*.

An Important Event

Years passed after Adam and Eve were removed from God's *rest* in The Garden. They had two children: Cain, their *firstborn* and Abel, the younger. You find them, as grown men, still living in Eden while their other brothers and sisters had left Eden. They had no access to The Tree of Life because *Cherubims* protected the entry way to it (Genesis 3:24 and Ezekiel 10:5). God, however, was still with them. They both were spiritually immature. They were not living in The Land of Nod – the wilderness. They still lived in Eden while most of their offspring had moved to Nod. Adam and Eve, along with their progeny, must become reconciled to God before they can be restored to The Tree of Life and The Garden. Everyone must become as teachable children. They must trust God. That is *true faith*.

The clue to their predicament was *sin*. Man could dwell with God but only after the destruction of sin and their resurrection (I Corinthians 15). What is God's *system* which will bring mankind back to The Garden? In answer to that, you read, "*How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?*" (Hebrews 9:14). You need God's *spirit* to be able to change. So, your Heavenly Father determined *the best path* for you was through The Blood of Christ, which restores and reconciles you to The One True God.

Jesus, The Christ, has *The Keys to The Kingdom*. That

is what Christ asked Peter in Matthew 16:15-19. Jesus is Joshua, The Savior, The Christ, and The Anointed High Priest. That is why Jesus said He came *to restore what was lost*. For everyone to enter God's *rest* (The True Seventh Day Sabbath Delight), a Priesthood is necessary. You will be amazed, but The Two Priesthoods are required so a person can have access to God's *house*. Both deal with those who are on *the pathway to God's house* – but they are in different *spiritual* conditions. Once they *spiritually mature* like Jesus, then they, themselves, can become Priests (I Peter 2:9).

The biblical scene explodes with *two grown young men*, Cain and Abel (Genesis 4). Cain was a tiller of the soil, while Abel was a sheep rancher. Each decided to give an offering to God. Both offerings were acceptable according to *The Law*. Cain offered the fruit of the ground and Abel offered sheep without blemish. Both offerings were from their own labor. This made sense. Why did God accept Abel's offering over Cain's? The biblical answer is, "*By faith Abel offered to God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he [Abel] was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh*" (Hebrews 11:4). Wow! This is a sacrifice concerning The Two Priesthoods. Abel's sacrifice was acceptable because of *his faith*, while Cain lacked that same *faith*. The sacrifices were not the issue – rather it was their *faith*. Abel, as God knew, had more *faith* than Cain. That is the reason God warned Cain concerning his human nature. God told Cain that "*sin lies at the door*" (Genesis 4:7). Christians are saved by faith! That's it. You must trust God completely.

When God accepted Abel's sacrifice over Cain's offering, then Cain *highly resented* it and showed his *displeasure*. Cain felt, as *firstborn*, he should have been accepted instead of his younger brother. That is why God told Cain that an individual's human nature can cause a person to *sin*. Everyone, therefore, must overcome sin by having *the right attitude* – which makes a person able to *repent*. Abel had a *right heart* so he had *faith* in God. God did not need to tell Abel to *repent*. Cain proved the true depths of his *faithless, wrong heart* by murdering Abel. These offerings were much more than mere *sacrifices*. These offerings had to do with The Two Priesthoods – The Levitical and The Melchizedek. One Priesthood was about *dead works*, denoting human nature before *repentance* – Levitical Priesthood. The second Priesthood required repentance and having *faith* but *without works* – Melchizedek. Abel had that faith and became a High Priest after The Order of Melchizedek. He is not Melchizedek, which is Christ, but he is of The Order of that Priesthood (I Peter 2:9).

CHAPTER 2

WHY TWO PRIESTHOODS?

The Aaronic Priesthood of The Tribe of Levi is determined through human parents, but The Melchizedek Priesthood is not chosen by genealogy. The Melchizedek Priesthood was ordained through an oath by God. Why did God institute *two different* Priesthoods? Why wasn't only one Priesthood sufficient to offer sacrifices for sins?

Remember, *sin* requires *no Law*. Adam and Eve sinned (missed the mark) even though there was *no codified Law* in force. Sin is *missing the mark* of God's *purpose and goal*. A transgression infringes upon *certain rights* such as A Law. Adam and Eve could choose to eat from either *tree*. God's *will* is to destroy everything that keeps you from His *kingdom* and your chance for *Salvation*. The Priesthoods would *intervene* on behalf of mankind's *weakness* which prevents God from completing His predestined *plan*. The Two Priesthoods, therefore, are mandatory to achieve God's *goal*. The Levitical Priesthood was A Priesthood of Works and was designed to lead The Israelites to repentance and Christ.

Many Books

A great portion of *The Bible* covers The Levitical Priesthood *under* Aaron, The High Priest. But, Melchizedek, as The High Priest, was a complete *mys-*

tery. The Bible, seemingly, reveals very little about The Priesthood of Melchizedek. Many Christians do not understand much about Melchizedek and *the order* of this Priesthood. The reason Melchizedek is unknown is because God wanted it to be *a mystery*. It was meant only for *the repentant* to understand. You may think *a sacrifice* is *merely a sacrifice*. But what do The Priesthoods have to do with *sacrifice*?

Surprisingly, scholars and many ancient books have much to say about Melchizedek. In fact, The Catholic and Orthodox *faiths* base their Priestly functions upon The Melchizedek Priesthood. *The Book of Enoch* gives you insight into The Melchizedek Priesthood. In ancient times, Enoch was The 7th Prophet of God (Jude 14). There were six Sons of God listed before Enoch (Genesis 5). The Dead Sea Scrolls and Gnostic *writings* tell all about Melchizedek. Even The Mormon "*faith*" is based upon the principle of The Two Priesthoods – The Aaronic and The Melchizedek. The Jewish religion accepts Shem as being Melchizedek, believing he lived for 800 years. *The Anchor Bible* states he may have lived for only 625 years. In either case, he lived during Abraham's day and beyond. The early fathers, like Origen, Eusebius and others, had more to say about Melchizedek than *The Bible* does. The major biblical verses about Melchizedek is when He blessed Abraham in *The Book of Genesis* (Genesis 17-24).

To learn more about The Melchizedek Priesthood, read Psalm 2, Psalm 110 and The Book of Hebrews. You will read about its *superiority* over The Levitical

Priesthood and the angels. That's about it. Any other revelation in the scriptures must be *gleaned*, because the texts relate to other *offices* given by God. With Melchizedek, *in the light of The Davidic Kingly Line*, God specifically promised that *a royal seed* would exist forever (according to the genealogy of David) (Psalm 110). The only royal line extending downward from David which could be everlasting is that of Jesus, The Christ. The eternal continuation of David's kingship is only through Christ. The prophecy of David's kingship continues forever (Jesus, as Melchizedek – Psalm 110). Both Melchizedek and Levi are concerned with atoning for *sin* through *sacrifices*. The more *The Bible* discusses these two Priesthoods, the clearer God's *pre-determined purpose* becomes.

The Weakness

Both Priesthoods were created for individuals who disobeyed God and His *commandments*. In other words, sinners need a Priesthood. The High Priest for both Priesthoods was allowed to enter *The Holy of Holies*. The Aaronic High Priest could only do so once a year, on *The Day of Atonement*. Christ, The Melchizedek High Priest, at His crucifixion, was responsible for the torn veil which had covered *The Holy of Holies*. Consequently, Jesus now entered the area reserved for *the mercy seat*. Christ did this for you and everyone else. That is the primary difference between *The Two Priesthoods*.

The Aaronic Priesthood demanded an animal sacrifice, so no mercy could be given. A curse or judg-

ment was demanded according to *the severity of the transgression*. Christ's *sacrifice* removed all these curses, including death. Then, *mercy* was available to everyone.

The Holy *items* in The Temple are summarized in Hebrews 9. Only *The Holy of Holies* contained *the mercy seat*. The Levitical Priesthood had access only once a year when The Nation of Israel came for *the purging of their sins*. Paul said animal sacrifice cannot take away sins (Hebrews 10:1-4). It was a yearly reminder that they were still not perfect. The meaning of this reminder depended upon *the animal* that was *sacrificed*. The Levitical Priesthood could not change the weakness of the flesh. All it could do was *remind* sinners of their transgressions. *The Law* defined *sin* as *a transgression*. *Sin* misses the mark for *eternal life*. Always remember, *The Law* could never transform anyone to *perfection*. *The Law* defines "*sin*" as "*the transgression of The Law*" (I John 3:4). *The Law*, itself, can do nothing to make you *perfect* or *righteous*. That was *the weakness of The Law*. It changed *nothing* – and *it will never change anyone*, no matter how many sacrifices are offered.

Reason For Animal Sacrifice

God taught Peter the real difference between clean and unclean animals (Acts 10). Peter understood that God uses animals (wild and domestic) to illustrate the different types of human behavior. Wild animals, such as lions, bears and leopards, are very violent beasts. Oxen and goats can be domesticated but they still re-

sist by being stubborn or kicking and bucking. Only sheep allow themselves to be slaughtered. Each animal, as a beast, is reactive to its own behavior. Peter was told, regardless of one's behavior, whether as a clean or unclean animal, God will accept individuals who fear Him and are working towards *righteousness*. No longer does God discriminate by genealogy. If you repent, you can become one of God's *people*. The Priesthood of Melchizedek differs from Levi in regard to sacrifices. God accepts people of all nations who fear Him and strive to be righteous (Acts 10:35). But then, God was seeking a different sacrifice which was Christ's body (Hebrews 10).

A Body

“In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure” (Hebrews 10:6). God takes no pleasure in animal sacrifice – which is the slaughter of any animal. Why not? It is because the killing of animals never makes a difference in human nature. Those who *sacrificed animals* still kept *sinning*. Sacrifice changed *no one*. *The Law* discloses that the transgressor's sacrifice only remind them that they are like the very animals they slaughtered. They are only *sanctified* through *the offering* of The Body of Jesus Christ (Hebrews 10:10). How can the killing of *one human* pay for every other human's sins? It is because Jesus is *The Author or The Way* to follow as *the example to perfection* (Hebrews 12:2). Each person must become like Christ in order to be saved. That is why, after the rich man said he kept *The Commandments*, Christ told him, *“If you will be perfect, go and sell that you*

have and give to the poor and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me" (Matthew 19:21). What makes you *perfect* is when you *follow* Jesus by *living exactly like Him* and being willing to *die for* others, if need be (just as He did). That is the example of The Priesthood of Melchizedek – laying down one's life for God and others. Jesus was *The Firstfruit, The Author of Salvation*, "*For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive*" (I Corinthians 15:22). Clearly, this is the difference between The Two Priesthoods. One is for *unrepentant people with wrong hearts* who need to be told the difference between *good* and *evil*. The sacrifice of animals merely illustrated to them the type of animal behavior they emulated. But, they were still carnal and remained like beasts. (Read the book, *Discovering God*, for more information). The Aaronic Priesthood was designed to bring you to Christ – but The Priesthood of Melchizedek takes you to *perfection* (Galatians 3:24).

God *scripturally* reveals that *spiritual growth* varies according to your heart or desires (Proverbs 18:1-2). He works with you, on an *individual level*, to make you Holy and sinless (Ephesians 1). Two Priesthoods (Levitical and Melchizedek) are *employed* by God as intermediate steps to bring you to *perfection*. The Aaronic, as a type or shadow, will *lead you to Christ*. Melchizedek can bring you to the place whereby you can *be like Christ* (Matthew 5:48).

CHAPTER 3

THE AARONIC PRIESTHOOD

Why did God wait until the time of Moses to establish The Priesthood of Aaron through The Levites? Sin (transgressions) had always existed with humans, so a *functioning* Priesthood was needed. The Order of Melchizedek was present during the life-time of Abraham. No other Priest of God was mentioned up to that time.

Jethro, Moses' father-in-law, was a Priest of Midian. It is very likely that he was of The Order of Melchizedek, since no other Priesthood was mentioned. Either way, no other Priesthood was ordained by God.

A Change Of Priesthood

It is through Jethro (who lived by Mount Horeb) that Moses had his encounter with *the flaming bush* on Holy ground. Only God is Holy, and therefore, only He can make you Holy – by you coming into the presence of His *glory*. God's *glory* is *all* of His *goodness*. (Study Exodus 1 through 20). When Moses and Aaron went to Pharaoh, they asked him to let Israel go so they could offer sacrifices and worship God. God's *presence* was there. Moses lived with Jethro (who was his Priest) for forty years just as he had lived in Egypt for forty years while being *trained in their Egyptian* customs

and learning about all their different *gods*. The difference was that Jethro lived as God's Priest (Exodus 18:1). Moses accepted Jethro's advice with regards to ruling Israel (Exodus 18). It was Jethro who gave Moses the *idea* for *The Oral Law*, which concerned the *smaller matters* of God's Law. However, *Jethro* specifically said, "*Hearken now to my voice, I will give you counsel and God shall be with you: Be you for the people to God-ward, that you may bring the causes to God: And you shall teach them ordinances and laws and shall show them the way wherein they must walk and the work that they must do*" (Exodus 18:19-20). Jethro knew God had Laws and Ordinances.

This does not sound like a suggestion. Rather, Jethro told Moses, directly, that if he accepted his counsel, God would be with him. Jethro could only have been a Priest from God to make such a *bold statement*. Then, Jethro recommended that smaller matters should be handled by *the leaders* of Israel. This certainly seems to refer to *The Oral Laws*. Then, Jethro ended with these final words, "*If you shall do this thing and God command you so, then you shall be able to endure and all this people shall also go to their place in peace*" (Exodus 18:23). Moses must have accepted Jethro's words (as from God). Here is what Moses did, "*So Moses hearkened to the voice of his father-in-law and did all that he had said*" (Exodus 18:24). Then, these leaders of Israel became *Judges*. The Office of Judges seem to have originated with Jethro (Exodus 18:26).

Jethro was *not a pagan priest* but a Priest of God, so God had him counsel Moses. Moses accepted the

counsel as if it were approved by God. Once again, this was a Priest of God in The Order of Melchizedek. (Abraham existed before The Levitical Priesthood). But a change of Priesthood was about to take place. Moses and Jethro separated from each other (Exodus 18:27). Jethro left Moses and went to his own land. Some day, it will be interesting to know the true history of Jethro. At this time, a new Priesthood was to be established to replace The Priesthood of The Order of Melchizedek. This new Priesthood – The Levitical Priesthood – was to be placed under Aaron. Jethro may have been one of *the last* of The Priests of The Melchizedek Order (until Christ).

The prophecy concerning this change was, “*Judah, you are he whom your brothers shall praise: your hand shall be in the neck of your enemies; your father’s children shall bow down before you. Judah is a lion’s whelp: from the prey, my son, you are gone up: he stooped down, he couched as a lion and as an old lion; who shall rouse him up? The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and to him shall the gathering of the people be*” (Genesis 49:8-10). What a wonderful prophecy concerning The Jews. Before Jacob’s death, this was part of his prophecy concerning The Twelve Tribes of Israel.

The prophecy is in reference to *The Last Days* which began with Christ’s *human lifetime* on earth (Genesis 49:1). (This ties in with Daniel 2). It is *the last beast* (Rome) *of the great image* representing *The Times of The Gentiles* (Hebrews 1:1-2). Christ was going to shed His *blood* for all mankind (Genesis 49:11-12).

Judah's Repentance

When Joseph's brothers left him to die, Judah (The Jews) came up with the idea to make money by selling Joseph (Genesis 37:26-27). Judah said to his brothers, "*Why should we kill Joseph and not make some money on him?*" (paraphrased). Then, Judah said, "*Let us sell him to the Ishmeelites [The Arabs] and let not our hand be upon him; for he is our brother and our flesh*" (Genesis 37:27). The brothers agreed with him. This was both *good* and *bad*. Judah saved Joseph from being murdered – but he had an ulterior motive (to make money on the *transaction*). Judah finally repented of his evil deed when he offered himself as *a pledge* for his youngest brother's life (Benjamin). Because Benjamin was the youngest, Jacob loved him deeply. Since Judah knew he had been the one who sold Joseph into slavery, he was, then, making restitution for *his sin of greed*. Later, Judah offered his life for Benjamin and finally was brought to repentance. Because of this act by Judah, The Jews were to become teachers of The Law until Shiloh came (The House of God) (Genesis 49:10). They were responsible for God's *laws* until Christ, The Anointed High Priest, came to give His *life*. A change of Priesthood and a change of *The Law* was at hand.

A Wrong Heart

When Israel left Egypt, God's *intention* was to have His chosen people enter His *physical rest* in The Land of Canaan. *The sins of The Amorites* had come to pass (just as God told Abraham) and it was time to remove

them from The Land of Palestine. (When a nation refuses to look to God and worship Him instead of His *creation*, they lose the opportunity to stay in their land). **When Israel sent spies into Canaan, they were frightened because of Canaan's huge numbers** (including giants)! **Only Joshua and Caleb had *the faith* to trust God and were willing to take over the land.** **Because of Israel's *lack of faith*, God decided to test them for *forty years* in the wilderness** (Hebrews 3:8-9). **They initially feared God at Mount Horeb when they personally received *The Ten Commandments*.** **After that shocking incident of God speaking directly to the nation, they only wanted to learn through Moses what God wanted them to know** (Exodus 20).

When Moses went up the mountain to receive *The Ten Commandments*, written on stone tablets, Israel sinned by building and worshipping the golden calf. **God wanted to kill them and build His *nation* through Moses** (of The Tribe of Levi) (Exodus 32:10). **So Moses felt compelled to intercede on Israel's behalf.** **At that time, God *added The Law of Moses to The Torah* with *the statutes and judgments*.** ***The Law of Moses* became a *legal matter* in God's court.** **No longer were God's *Commandments and Statutes* a *matter of faith*.** **Every aspect of *The Law* had *legal requirements* within it and they had to be performed exactly.** **Breaking any part of *The Law* broke *all of The Law*** (James 2:10). **It gave *no mercy* with its administration** (Exodus 23:21). ***The Law* was made for *unrighteous* humans** (who acted like animals and kept doing all the wrong things) (I Timothy 1:7-10). **Those with a *wrong heart* had to be told the difference between *right* and *wrong*.**

This was because of their *wrong nature*. God wished they had *a right heart* when He first gave them His *Ten Commandments*. God said, “*O that there were such a heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children forever*” (Deuteronomy 5:29). But, because they *lacked faith*, that generation never entered God’s *rest* and instead perished in the wilderness (Hebrews 3:10-11). God even changed the meaning of The Sabbath for them. Israel was to remember The Sabbath, because God created the earth for man in six days and then rested on *The Seventh Day* in *Paradise* (Exodus 20:11). Initially, this was why Israel was told to keep The Sabbath. After Israel *lacked faith* and *sinned*, keeping The Sabbath had an entirely different meaning. The Sabbath had a different purpose when Israel received *the second set of stone tablets*.

The *added Law of Moses* to *The Torah* said this, “*And remember that you were a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the LORD your God brought you out through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the LORD your God commanded you to keep the sabbath day*” (Deuteronomy 5:15). These are two different versions of The Sabbath. The Sabbath that Abraham was told to keep, by *faith*, dealt with *Paradise*. But now *the added Law of Moses* was a keeping of God’s *Sabbath* (as coming out of *slavery*). It was a Sabbath for man’s *rest* rather than God’s *rest*. What a difference! God’s *Sabbath* is a memorial or *a sign of Paradise*. Now, *the sign* of The Sabbath was represented by coming out of slavery into a period of *rest* from that slavery. A change of Priesthood was to take place when Christ

came. Now, a *law* was imputed for *sin* as a *transgression* which included their *human works*.

Purpose Of The Law

The Law of Moses (*The Law* administered by Moses) had a different purpose and was supported by a different Priesthood. That difference is revealed in *The Scriptures*. The Book of Hebrews was written to show *the superiority* of Melchizedek over Levi's Priesthood. Here is the answer, "*And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony [witness] of those things which were to be spoken after*" (Hebrews 3:5). *The Law of Moses* was to be a witness to bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:24). It is quite simple! *The Law of Moses*, administered by The Aaronic Priesthood, was a *shadow* or *type* of what Christ would do when He came as Melchizedek. This *would, could* and *will make you perfect*. God's *Law*, administered by Christ, is now written in your *heart* and *mind*. There were no more *Old Covenant works* which were needed to pay for sins. Your very mind and heart must be changed by God's *Holy Spirit* when you ask God for help through prayer. The Holy Spirit will help you to not *even think* of lying, stealing, murdering or dishonoring your parents or God. The Levitical Priesthood, in The Keeping of *The Law*, was only a *shadow*. *The Law*, under Moses, was only a *shadow* or *type* of *good things to come* (Christ) (Hebrews 10:1). Every aspect of *The Law of Moses* manifested in Jesus and what He was to do. That is the purpose of The Levitical Priesthood. The Law of Moses demonstrated not only Jesus, The Christ, but God's *wonderful Plan of Salvation*.

CHAPTER 4

MANY COVENANTS – DIFFERENT PRIESTHOODS

Jesus summarized what Christianity really is (Matthew 7:13-21). He said all *The Law (Torah)*, *The Prophets*, and the entire *Old Testament* comes down to this simple truth, “*Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets*” (Matthew 7:12). Jesus quoted *The Golden Rule*. Christ spelled out what Christianity was all about. He said, to enter God’s house you must eat the fruit from the right tree. Christ said *The Path* is straight and without detours. He warned that unless a Christian walks that way, he will not be able to enter through the gate to God’s house – or to be in *The Kingdom of God*. He clearly declared, “*You shall know them by their fruits*” (Matthew 7:16).

Alpha And Omega

The Book of Revelation declares God and Christ are Alpha and Omega – *the beginning and the end*. *The Bible* starts in *The Garden* with *The Tree of Life* and *The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil*. *The*

***Bible* ends in The Garden, with only The Tree of Life. There will be no Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil in the distant future. Why would this be?**

Once Adam and Eve were expelled from The Garden, mankind began writing history by doing both *good* and *evil*. This is *Babylon* which is *your human nature* (Genesis 11:6-7). When human history finally ends, everyone will bow down and confess to The Glory of God that Jesus Christ is Lord (Philippians 2:10-11). There will no longer be any need for The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Everyone will know *better*. All will have confessed Jesus is The *Master or Lord of Salvation* (I Corinthians 15:22-23).

God declares *the beginning* from *the end* and everything will be just as He had planned (Isaiah 46:10). You have just been exposed to the meaning and purpose of *the entire Bible*. Christians will be known by their fruits. What fruits are these? This concerns *The Great Commandment* which was given to Israel, *The Shema* (an affirmation of Judaism and a declaration of faith in *One God*) which is the goal (Deuteronomy 6:5). When you love God with all your heart and mind, you will also love and take care of all His *creation*. You will follow His loving *great purpose*. Anything less is *sin* or *missing the mark*. God's eventual *purpose* is to be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28).

Many Covenants

As a Christian, in what covenant or contract is your personal *sticking point*? What is causing you a prob-

lem? You are about to see that God, throughout *history*, makes many *contracts* or *covenants* with *mankind*. Which *desire* will a Christian focus upon and end up causing a problem?

In The Garden, God made Adam and Eve aware of *their free choice* concerning *the two trees*. One tree gave *Eternal Life*, while the other tree gave *death*. There was no need for a Priesthood since there was no sin (Genesis 1). After the flood, because there had been violence in the pre-flood world, God gave a commandment against murder. This was The Noachian Covenant which was between mankind and God. God personally taught His *people* about *The Commandments* and *Statutes*, without curses or judgments being added (Genesis 26:5). Abraham kept *The Commandments* and *Statutes* by *faith*, because he *trusted* God. As yet, there were no *legal requirements*, only their *free choice through faith*.

While with Moses, The Children of Israel *sinned* so God gave them *The Old Covenant* as a *Legal Codified Law*. They were not allowed to break any part of it or else they were guilty of transgressing *the whole Law* (James 2:10). *The Old Covenant* was made only with Israel and not with their fathers (Deuteronomy 5:3). The fathers included Adam, Abraham, Jacob, and Isaac. There was no *Old Covenant* until Moses came onto the scene. Before Moses, everyone was under *The New Covenant* (while waiting for Christ). That was *The Priesthood of Melchizedek*. Since sin was involved, *The Priesthood* was *changed* from Melchizedek to Aaron. This Priesthood could not make anyone

perfect, since it was only *a type* or *shadow* of Christ to come (Hebrews 10). You can see how God made many *covenants* and/or *agreements* with mankind.

Parable Of The Talents

Each *covenant* fulfilled different purposes depending upon the condition of mankind at that particular time. Why did God alter His *agreements* with the world? It is because there is a *wrong desire* in everyone's heart which destroys wisdom (Proverbs 18:1-4). You can lose your ability to tell *right* from *wrong*. A wise person can be compared to clear, running water, constantly *cleansing itself* with each ripple. God then will change any *covenant* He decides. Deep, murky water will cloud your *reason* and *logic*. It is what *repentance* is all about. The word "*repentance*" translated from the original Greek and Hebrew language means "*a change of mind*." The process of Baptism, symbolic of the cleansing by water, will give you a *new mind* (Philippians 2:5). When your *desires* turn to God, He will not turn away from you. Now you can see different *covenants* are for different *conditions*.

Jesus gave The Parable of The Talents to teach Christians about the abilities which God gives to them (Matthew 25:14-30). Christ begins and explains how *The Kingdom of God* is a lot like this parable. Humans are given different abilities and understandings, which are likened to *talents* or *money* which can be invested. These *talents* are *different covenants*. The least investment would be to put this money in a bank and receive the promised interest, "*For the kingdom of heaven is*

*as [like] a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants and delivered to them his goods” (Matthew 25:14). He gave five talents to one, to another he gave two talents and, to yet another, he gave one talent. The individual who was given the most money, invested it all and gained the greatest profit. The one who only had *one talent* was afraid to do anything with *the single talent*. So he buried the money and when *the lord* returned for his profit, he only gave back *the one talent* initially given. The lord was furious and had him thrown into *outer darkness*. Jesus tells you, through this parable, that you must continue growing until He is ready to *return*. This is the same lesson as the story about The Ten Virgins, where five are wise and five are not. The *olive oil* represents God’s *Holy Spirit* and with it, the wise keep growing *spiritually*, while the unwise do not. It is God’s *Holy Spirit* which increases your talents so you can enter *The Kingdom of God* (Matthew 24:1-13). *What is spiritual growth?* God changes His *covenants* as you increase your *spiritual talents*.*

A New Covenant

God has made various *covenants* with humans, depending upon where they stand *spiritually*. God does not require of you what you cannot do. *All the covenants* with the world and Israel are decided by each and everyone’s *free choice*. A *New Covenant*, one that offered *perfection*, was needed (Hebrews 7:19). *The Law of Moses* is a *stumbling block* for some Christians. Is *The Law*, under Christ, done away with, or is it not? No, even The Muslims believe in Moses’ and God’s

Law. The Jews and some Christians believe in *The Law of Moses*. Some think *The Law of Moses* should be enforced, while others do not. You are about to find out why there are *other options*. It isn't *The Law* that is the problem, but it is a matter of which *covenant* Christians are under. If *Salvation* comes by *The Law*, then Muslims, Christians and Jews are *all saved*. You need to know if *The Keeping of The Law* can give *Salvation*? That was *The Apostles'* real question. *The Law of Moses* never made a person *perfect* and therefore could not give anyone *Salvation*. Christ tells you, it is your duty to keep *The Commandments*, but you will still be *unprofitable* to God. The word "*unprofitable*" is defined in Greek as "*useless*," just when a person has only *one talent*. *The Commandments of God* are *talents for righteousness*. But since it cannot make you perfect, then it will not give you *Salvation* (Luke 17:10). Something more is *required*. What do Christians need for *Salvation*?

What Is Spiritual Growth?

Christ reveals how you can know when you are growing *spiritually*. It is by your character or nature that you can determine *spiritual growth* (Matthew 7). It all has to do with what type of fruit you eat. What *fruit* you eat will reveal the *real you*. If you tend to be loving, joyful, peaceful, patient, have goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance which are *the fruits* of God's Spirit, then you will know you are growing spiritually (Galatians 5:22). Now, the question is, "*How do you eat from The Tree of Life?*" Jesus said, "*Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of*

the mouth of God” (Matthew 4:4). Christ said He, only, spoke God’s *word* (John 14:24). Why is this? It is because He was *filled* with God’s *Holy Spirit* from His *birth* (John 3:34). When God’s *Holy Spirit* is given, it changes a person’s human nature (after repentance). It will promote *a desire* and *a yearning for you to have a change of mind*, much like an eager little child (Isaiah 28:9-10). Just what does God’s *Holy Spirit* do?

Here is your answer, “*For God has not given us the spirit of fear [cowardice]; but of power and of love and of a sound [disciplined] mind*” (II Timothy 1:7). Through God’s love, you are no longer a coward, but rather, you have *a disciplined* or *a sound mind*. A sound mind does not need a *written Law* to tell you what sin is. A *sound, logical mind* knows, by instinct, the difference between *good* and *evil*. Once you have matured in *Godly wisdom*, you can acquire God’s *sound mind* (II Timothy 1:7). You no longer need The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, for you will begin to gain a *spiritual mind*. “*Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus*” (Philippians 2:5). What mind did Jesus have? The answer is ahead.

What you do in *the flesh* (by *human efforts* or works) does nothing profitable or useful (John 6:63). It is only *The Spirit “In You”* that has any value for *life* or *Salvation*. The human body can do nothing. Humanly, you can only produce *confusion* or *Babylon*. On the other hand, Christianity is a *spiritual matter* (John 4). You are warned to seek God while you can and the evil person must get rid of his or her evil thoughts (Isaiah 55:6-11). You must receive the very thoughts and

mind of God and begin to learn how He thinks. When God sends forth His *word*, it never returns *empty* but will perform (good things) as it is written. That is why Hebrews 1:3 declares, Jesus is “*the express image* [character and mind of God] *of His person.*” The Glory of God is found in all of His *goodness*. God, through *His Holy Spirit* and by your *spiritual growth*, gives you *The Very Mind of God* and Jesus Christ. Christians are to grow *spiritually* in order to have *The Mind of God, Almighty.*

CHAPTER 5

THE LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD

Israel was the first nation God accepted to be His chosen people. They were accepted because of their forefathers – Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. The Tribe of *Israel* experienced *the beginning of The Abrahamic Covenant*. God had promised to bless Abraham’s children. Consequently, through his progeny, the whole world would be blessed.

When Israel sinned, God had to give them *a special covenant*, because they had *a wrong heart*. He gave them *The Law* which contained numerous works and deeds that had to be kept; so, each time they sinned, they were reminded *not to sin – again*. If they sinned, then a curse was given which included *sacrifices* and even *death* for capital crimes. This Law was made for *unrighteous people* only (I Timothy 1:7-10).

A Divine Service

Israel, as God’s *people*, went to *worship* in the temple so their *sins* could be *atoned*. When Israel first sinned, God decided He would no longer lead them to *the promised land*. God’s *messenger* would now be used to lead them. This messenger would not give them any *mercy* when they sinned. A *curse* or *judgment* would

follow (Exodus 23). As Israel spent 40 years of trial in *the wilderness*, God would meet with Moses in the tabernacle, where His *glory* appeared (Exodus 33). God would direct Moses regarding His people and what he should tell them. After the forty years (a generation of testing the adult Israelites), they all died in *the wilderness*. Then there was another problem. Their children still lacked *faith* in God. They also had *a wrong heart*. That older rebellious generation did not enter God's *rest* (Hebrews 3:9-11). Under Joshua, the new generation of Israelites, called the children of Israel, were the ones who entered The Land of Canaan which God originally planned as His *promised land*.

They had to be *circumcised* and had to keep every detail of God's Law along with its *works*. In time, when Solomon reigned, God allowed them to replace *the mobile tabernacle* with a permanent *temple*. This *temple*, with *The Law of Moses*, was intended to lead them to Christ (when He was to be The Messiah) (Galatians 3:24).

Now you will read why *the temple worship* was so vital for Israel (because of their wrong hearts). "*The Holy Ghost [Spirit] this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience*" (Hebrews 9:8-9).

The Law was a witness or type of *The True Sabbath*

Rest in The Kingdom of God. This continued as long as *the physical temple* was still standing. *The Law*, with all its *temple services*, was *divine* (Holy works and services) (Hebrews 9:1). *The Law* had to be perfectly kept, so Israel could be God's *chosen nation* and serve as a witness (testimony) to the world. Anything less than keeping *The Law perfectly* would be considered *sin* (James 2:10).

God's House

God's *true temple house* can only be occupied by those of *righteousness*. Just as *the earthly temple* had to be perfect in its works and deeds, so must the heavenly temple also be *Holy* and *perfect*. God will not dwell where sin exists (Isaiah 59:1-2). God's *house/temple* is on the top of a hill and there are questions about who shall *stand in The Holy Place* (Psalm 24:3-5). Only The High Priest could enter The Holy Place once a year on The Day of Atonement. The High Priest would offer a sacrifice for the sins of Israel. Their sins were pardoned for a year, but they *still did not receive mercy*. The *full Law*, with all its curses, still had to be kept. Why was this? It was because they had a *wrong heart*. (Read the book, *God's Plan Of Salvation*). Remember, *The Law is not for righteous Christians*, but it was made for *the unrighteous sinners*.

The Ark of The Covenant was *the mercy seat*, which held *The Ten Commandments*. To receive *mercy*, they had to keep *The Ten Commandments*, but it only pardoned their sins (with a sacrifice) for another year. It didn't make them *perpetually perfect* in their con-

science (mind or heart). Today, to receive *mercy for your sins*, you must keep God's *Ten Commandments in your heart* (you will not allow yourself to even *think* of breaking any of *The Commandments*) (Deuteronomy 5:29). Repentance, which creates a *change of mind and heart*, must take place so God can grant mercy and forgiveness for your *sins*. True to form, repentance is a state of having a pure heart. It is a heart so pure your *inner being* cannot and will not *think* of lying, stealing or breaking any of *The Laws of God*. God can, then, cause a Christian to ascend His *Holy hill* through Christ. That is why Jesus Christ could not have been a Priest on earth as long as The Priests of Levi offered gifts in *the temple* (which still existed) (Hebrews 8:4).

Once you begin to ascend God's *hill* – it is like going up Jacob's Ladder through Christ. Then you can enter God's *rest* at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth (Genesis 28, John 1:51 and Psalm 24). God will be All In All and you will have *Salvation* through God's *righteousness*. Always remember, God changes His *requirements* when humans respond to His *call for righteousness*.

Servants And Heirs

The difference between *The Law* administered under Levi and Melchizedek is dependant upon *the desires of the individual*. It was a matter of *one's state of mind*. It's also a matter of how a person thinks – whether having human thoughts or attempting to have God's *thoughts*. If a person could not be trusted, then re-

strictions needed to be imposed by means of works and deeds. This includes penalties or death for violent behavior. Paul identified those living under The Levitical Priesthood as *servants*. If one is to be an heir, as long as he/she is a child (not mature), then he/she is no different than a servant (Galatians 4:1). Keeping *The Commandments* is a duty (a dogma). There is no choice. Those living under The Aaronic Priesthood have *no free choice* (living under *The Law*) (Luke 17:10). Paul declares that the heir, as a child, is under governors and tutors. They are *not free* to do what they may want to do.

They need to have *The Mind of Christ* in order to be made free. That is why *The Law* had to be kept perfectly without the slightest infringement. If anyone touched a dead animal, that person couldn't come into *the camp of Israel* until nightfall. This provided insight regarding *the value of life*. If a sacrificial animal was *blemished*, then it couldn't be offered. This was a remarkable reminder for the sinner to strive for *perfection*. *The Law of Moses, The Old Covenant*, was replete with *works* and *deeds* showing the people had a *wrong heart*. That is why Paul said *The Deed of a Law* was intended for *unrighteous people*. When and if people are *righteous*, then they need no Law (they never will need *The Law*).

All Laws needed to be imposed for all *the little infractions* of *The Law* – even when small sins were committed. Under The Levitical Priesthood, The Oral Laws were just as *binding* as The Letter of *The Law*. Jesus said, “*The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat*”

(Matthew 23:2). They had the same authority as Moses. Ironically, their *Oral Laws* were so severe, the people were not able to keep them. Christ revealed *The Law* had a much higher standard which wasn't manifested in *The Law of Moses* (such as, *mercy, judgment and faith*) (Matthew 23:23). Jesus revealed this *magnified* part of *The Law* which was to be kept, as well as the *trivial* parts of *The Law*. The *magnified Law* was more honorable because it *manifested* what *righteousness* actually was (Isaiah 42:21). It was God's *righteousness* being more *honorable* than *The Law of Moses*, which was only meant for *an unrighteous person*.

As long as one was under The Levitical Priesthood, that person was a servant, even though he/she was to become *an heir*. As long as you have not repented and are not willing to have your *mind changed*, then you are under *the bondage of your human nature* (Babylon). You would need *The Law*, with all of its works, to be accepted by God (Ephesians 4:13 and Isaiah 1).

Human nature is a mixture of *good and evil*. Humans are motivated by *survival* of the fittest. If your *life* is threatened, in any way, psychologically, physically or mentally, then you justify your actions with your need for *self-survival*. That is why God accepted animal sacrifices. It was to remind a human what their nature was really like.

God took no pleasure in animal sacrifices (Hebrews 10:8). God allows sacrifice as a lesson in life so a person can stop breaking *The Law*. It is the same with wars, except when humans are ready to commit world-

genocide. Then Christ must and will step in. A person who is growing *spiritually*, with *a new mind, a new heart* and new desires, will never need any *restrictions*. They become *teachable* and no longer need penalties to keep them from sinning. They become free to choose what is *right* (on their own, by *faith*).

The Law still exists, but *righteousness* is still *righteousness*. *Holiness* is still *Holiness*. *The Law* still reveals sin, but now, you are *free to choose* what you desire with your *new pure heart*. Christ's death removed the curses or penalty of *The Law*. You do not sin because you make a decision *not to sin*. You choose by *faith* to follow God. You live by *faith* just like Abraham and keep *The Law* of Righteousness because *you want to* and it isn't *in you to think of sinning*. Works or deeds of *The Law*, Holy Days or sacrifices are no longer needed to keep you from sinning. You now live *righteously by faith*. You are heirs and not servants any longer. With your *free choice*, you have decided to be a servant of Christ and to determine, on your own, not to sin. You no longer need *The Law* to tell you *right* from *wrong*. You now have *The Mind of Christ* which, in turn, is also The Mind of God. At that time, you become a Son of God (Romans 8:14-15). God's *power "In You"* never allows you to sin, because you made your choice *not to do so*. Then, in *The Resurrection*, you will be *perfect*.

CHAPTER 6

THE HOLY TITHE

Why did God command tithes be given to The Levitical Priesthood? Why did Jacob promise to tithe to God if He delivered him from adversity? Why do some Christian ministers believe they can take tithes from the people? Man's human nature (in error) decides for God what is *right* and *wrong*. *Tithing* is an important and Holy requirement – but *only for The Priesthood* which was without an inheritance. Tithing and The Priesthood are one and the same issue.

Origin Of Tithing

Why did God command tithing? What does it have to do with The Priesthood? *The Law on tithing* is very clear. God specifies for tithes to be given to The Priesthood of Levi. Mechizedek also received *tithes*. Furthermore, Jacob offered to give tithes to God. Obviously, The Priesthood has a legal right to accept tithes. You are about to prove why tithes are Holy and *sacred* and any other use of this *tithe* will mean you are *breaking God's Law*. To break one of God's Laws means a person, unknowingly, attempts to abort His *purpose and plan*. No one can ever decide for God how to use His tithe. Why did God allow the giving

of tithes to The Levites (in *The Law*)? Part of the answer lies within this text, “*And the Levite, (because he has no part nor inheritance with you) and the stranger and the fatherless and the widow, which are within your gates, shall come and shall eat and be satisfied; that the LORD your God may bless you in all the work of your hand which you do*” (Deuteronomy 14:29). You have just read about *who can receive tithes*. God allowed *tithes* to be given, but for what reason? God, specifically in *The Law*, reveals how *tithes* are only to be *paid* to those who *do not receive an inheritance*. God can't make it any clearer.

God includes not only *The Priests* but also *strangers* (foreigners), *orphans* and *widows*. Why does God restrict the giving of tithes only to these groups? It is because The Levite has no *inheritance in the land*. Since Levites have *no land inheritance*, and with *no specified blessings* from *God*, they are allowed to receive *tithes*. How plain does God have to make it for you to understand, exactly, who can receive *tithes*? In *The Promised Land*, tithing is *a tax* obtained from the people who have been *blessed* by God. God makes you as *rich* and *prosperous* in proportion to how much you are willing to work and succeed.

The widow is included in this because she receives no inheritance since her husband is dead and his inheritance, probably, went to his sons. The firstborn son receives *twice* as much as the other sons and therefore becomes responsible for all the family's needs when the father dies (Deuteronomy 21:17). The stranger has no inheritance in *the land*, since they are *immigrants*

and have *no rights of inheritance*. Only God's *chosen people* have any *rights of inheritance to the land*. God blesses the *land* and, thereby, the landowners are also blessed by God. Tithing is from *the land* which God *blessed*.

God's Law is *Holy, just and good*. Do you believe it? The proceeds of tithing are to be *given*, only, to those who *do not have an inheritance*. Once one receives an inheritance, then one cannot take *tithes*. That is what God's Law *commands*.

Why Levites Receive Tithes

Why did God choose Moses, a Levite, to lead His *people*? Jacob was dying so he gave this prophecy about what would happen to his children (The Tribes of Simeon and Levi) in *The Last Days* (Genesis 49:5-7). Because Moses was hot-tempered and violent, God chose The Tribe of Levi to be *the servants* of His *people* (Genesis 49:5-17). Moses, while still living in Egypt, killed an Egyptian to protect an Israelite. He also became angry with Israel and smote the rock to provide water to a thirsty nation. Because Moses did this instead of trusting God, he was not permitted to enter God's inheritance – The Promised Land.

Miriam and Aaron (the sister and brother of Moses) tried to usurp the authority of Moses. By doing so, they were not allowed to enter The Promised Land or receive their inheritance. Why did God exclude The Tribe of Levi from *an inheritance*? Levi and Simeon's sister, Dinah, was raped by one of The Canaanites.

His name was Shechem and he wanted to marry her. Dinah's father Jacob agreed to the marriage, providing all the males were circumcised. The Canaanites agreed.

While they were healing from the circumcision, Levi and Simeon secretly entered the city and killed all the males. Because they dishonored their father's agreement and cruelly and very violently killed all the males, they lost their *inheritance in the land*. There seems to always be a penalty when *Commandments* are broken. That is why Jacob gave the stern prophecy against the cruelty Levi and Simeon performed (Genesis 34).

Abraham, Jacob And Melchizedek

Both Abraham and Jacob obeyed God by *faith* under The Priesthood of Melchizedek. Melchizedek served in A Priesthood of *Righteousness and Faith*. All obeyed *The Commandments* and Statutes or Covenants of God through their *faith*. *The Law* was not *codified* until four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. No Law was *in force* because no curses were required. These Godly commands were kept by *faith* and *not* by *law*. This is exactly what Peter said after Cornelius, The Gentile Centurion, was converted. God accepts anyone from any *nation* if they *fear Him* and *work righteousness* (Acts 10:35). This is without a *law*.

The Priesthood was changed from *Levi* to *Melchizedek* by *faith*. *The Old Covenant* commanded obedience by *law* – with *penalties* and *curses*. *The New Covenant* was by *faith*, where the convert *sought righteousness*

through his fear – but he still had *trust* in God. This *New Covenant* was maintained by their *free choice* to seek God and *His righteousness*. This included *The Magnified Law* under Christ, which made *The Law* a *spiritual matter*. This gave *The Law* more honor because this *Spiritual Law* had *mercy, judgment and faith* (Matthew 23:23). Now, Christians obey God and *His righteousness* because they *want to and not because they are ordered to and feel they must* (because of a curse).

Christian Giving

If *tithes* are based upon an inheritance, then can Christians give *ten percent to the needy*? Of course they can, but not by *a command* as stated in *The Law*. *The Law*, by *command*, allows you to give to *The Levites, the widows and strangers* who have *no inheritance*. Even *the tithing* to Melchizedek was by *faith* and was not a *command*. That is what Abraham and Jacob did. It was Abraham's *free choice decision* to give *tithes* to Melchizedek (God's High Priest). Why was this? It was because Abraham chose to acknowledge God, so he was blessed and was made *rich*. Abraham gave 10% to show his *faith* in God (Genesis 14:18-24). Abraham and Jacob wanted to give 10% because they *desired to do so* – and it was *not by any command*. Abraham took nothing for himself. He did not keep the 90% remaining left from the spoils.

Jacob also tithed because he had made a deal with God. Jacob felt God knew he would keep his promise after God answered his prayer. Jacob, on his own, made

the choice to tithe. This was based upon his being *blessed by God*, just like with Abraham (Genesis 28:18-22). Jacob did not *tithe* by *Law* but by *faith*. Jacob's *faith made him look to God*. While Levi was serving *in the temple*, Christ never could have been a *Priest on earth* (Hebrews 8:4). Jesus, as Melchizedek, is *A High Priest but only in heaven*. For Christians to be able to *tithe* by *faith*, they would be required to go to *heaven* to *tithe* to *Melchizedek*. The other possibility, since presently there is no physical *temple*, is that Christ would have to return as *High Priest* for Christians to *tithe* to Him. There is *no place* in scripture that has *Christian ministers* replacing *Levi* or *Melchizedek* as *Priests*. Although, Israel and Christians *will* become *Priests in the future* (Revelation 5:10). *Atonement* for a Christian who *sins* must be from Jesus in *heaven*, who *sits* next to God and is interceding for you because of all your short comings (Hebrews 8-10). Ministers are not *special priests*, but rather all Christians are to be a *chosen generation* – which is *A Royal Priesthood*, comprising a *Holy nation* (I Peter 2:9).

You are about to see how Christians (as Abraham) are to give *all they have* to God in *faith*. This is because they offered their *very lives* as a *living sacrifice* (Romans 12:1). When you forsake all, even your *life* for Christ, you can, then, approach Jesus, as your *High Priest*, to *atone for your sins*. No religion or faith, nor anyone else, can be your intercessor for *sin*. That is why Jesus gave the example of *the widow*, who had no inheritance, yet she gave *two mites* (all she had) (Mark 12:42-44). Jesus said “*don't pray for what you need as God knows what you need*” (paraphrased). Tithing

for Christians isn't commanded – only *faith* is required. Christians, as *A Royal Priesthood themselves*, gave all they had to the impoverished when there was a need (Matthew 19:21). Paul sets the example for the preaching ministry by saying, “*For yourselves know how you ought to follow us: for we [ministers] behaved not ourselves disorderly among you; Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought; but wrought with labor and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you: Not because we have not power, but to make ourselves an example to you to follow us. For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat*” (II Thessalonians 3:7-10).

Ministers who preach and teach *The Gospel do* have a right to be helped, but they should also be *willing to work* and provide for themselves and their families. If *ministers* had a *right to take tithes*, then Paul would never have told the ministry *to work*. That would have broken *The Law*. Paul knew they weren't *Priests*, nor were any of them a *Levite* or of *Melchizedek*. There is *no scripture* that states *preaching* or *teaching ministers* are called *Priests*. Only The Mormon Faith, Catholic and Orthodox *believers* call their ministers by the title of “*A Priesthood Ministry*.” The Catholics and The Orthodox, also, claim they are of The Order of Melchizedek. The Mormons consider their males under 20 to be of The Levitical Priesthood. When they reach 20 years of age they are considered to be of The Order of Melchizedek.

Mormons, Catholics and Orthodox have places of

worship constructed like The Temple in Jerusalem. Therefore, they feel, *scripturally*, they can claim a *right to tithes*.

Biblically, only Levites with a temple in Palestine have that right.

- 1) You must be a Levite.
- 2) You must be a Levite serving in a temple.
- 3) The temple must be in Palestine.

Today, The Melchizedek Priesthood's *temple* is composed of every repentant *Christian's* body and *not some physical area or temple on earth*. Christians are not yet Priests. Each Christian is a *living sacrifice* with *only One Author or Priesthood* who is Jesus, The Christ (I Corinthians 3). Christ was that *High Priest only once* (Hebrews 5:10). Tithing is a *Holy, sacred Law* that is *only for those serving in God's temple who do not have an inheritance*. Abraham and Jacob clearly *tithed* to show how God made them to prosper, even though they still had not received the inheritance (Hebrews 11:8-10).

As a Christian, you have received *an earnest of your inheritance* when you received *God's Holy Spirit* (Ephesians 1:13-14). *The Holy Spirit* bestows God's *heavenly blessings*, which in the Greek language refers to *gifts from God* (Ephesians 1:3). (The gifts are listed in I Corinthians, Chapters 12, 13 and 14). *Preaching or teaching* ministers have *no right* (scripturally) to take

tithes from Christians. They can only receive help in preaching *The Gospel* when they are “*in need.*” The *laborer is worthy of his reward.* What reward is this? It is the minister who sets a *right example* by personally working for his needs. A minister should receive help in *eating* and *drinking* when doing God’s *work*, which includes their families (I Corinthians 9:4-8). If *tithing* was biblical to pay ministers, then why did Paul use the scripture, “*You shall not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treads out the corn*” (I Corinthians 9:9). The Priests in *the temple could eat* of the offerings, *so not once is tithing used.* There are no salaries, but only expenses are allowed for doing God’s *work.*

It is just like Paul, when he was in prison (in Rome) and asked for help. Paul referred to receiving *wages* like a Roman soldier. Roman soldiers received *no salaries*, but only their *daily rations* and a *part of the booty* in a *war.* In every case, *scripturally*, it refers to *daily rations* of only *eating* and *drinking.* Christ gave *the biblical answer*, “*the laborer is worthy of his hire*” (Luke 10:7). He, also, said to *go not from house to house for a minister’s needs.* Wherever you go to preach *The Gospel* and some people take you in, giving you a place to stay and eat their food – then *bless that house.* If no one does this, when you leave town, shake the dust (of that town) off your *feet.* When doing God’s *work*, they must not take a salary. But they can live off those people who *choose to help* with the mission. Then, the preacher would ask God’s *blessings* upon them. That’s it! There is no *tithe* collecting. Only God’s *appointed Priests* can take *tithes* (Summarizing Luke 10:4-8).

God's System Of Finance

God has explained His *entire system of finance* for The Church in I Timothy 5:1-21. Paul declares how to help an *elder in need* who preaches or teaches *The Gospel* (I Timothy 5:17). The rest of the elders only receive what some *in need* require. The biblical definition of an *elder* in *The Church* is given in I Timothy 5:1. *Elders* are *the older men*, and in Greek, the word “*presbyters*” means “*one over a household.*” “*Episkopos*” in Greek means “*the overseer over a household,*” which is usually *the firstborn*, when a grandfather and/or a father has died (I Timothy 5:8). Later, you will see when a Bishop or overseer refers to *the firstborn*, this is referring to *the firstborn son*, who is worthy of double honor (Deuteronomy 21:17).

Remember, Cain was a *firstborn* who was not worthy. *All elder men or elder women* should be treated as *Fathers and Mothers* or *sisters*. This is quite clear! Consequently, for any widows whose husbands have died, let them take care of the widow, as she helps care for her relative's house. Give honor to *widows* who are *destitute* and *alone*, who spend their time praying and doing *good works*. Then, Paul declares that any Heads, Bishops or those who are to oversee their *house* or *family* and don't *work* and/or provide for their own have *denied the faith*. They are considered to be *worse than an infidel* (an unbeliever) (I Timothy 5:8). There are *no tithes* for *the widows* here because there is *no Priesthood*. Paul addresses *the elders in the church* – those who are either *over households* or have *households*. But they *also* teach God's *word* and

preach *The Gospel*. Those who do *church work* and are God's *firstborn sons* are *worthy of double honor*. (Read exactly what *The Law* declares in Deuteronomy 21:17). Those elders oversee the needs of their families and do *God's work*. They receive double honor. They earn or make *money* from their private or secular *work*. Should their job not provide adequately, they can receive help for their *daily expenses* while preaching or teaching. But it is only a soldier's ration – which is food and shelter. It is only a meal and a bed if they travel and their job doesn't provide extra needs. A perfect God has considered everything! It is truly a shame to have ministers, on salaries, who *live better than most of their congregation*.

The *greatest servant* is the one who *serves the most*. Jesus clearly states concerning The Christians, whether it is an Apostle, Prophet, Prophetess, Elder or anyone who serves the most. That last category is The Greatest (Matthew 20:25-28). *Preaching ministers, teachers, family overseers, the one who gives the most secular, physical things and/or spiritual things* is considered to be *The Greatest by God*. "*Christian giving*" is based upon "*total sacrifice of the self*" and is *not The Law*. That is why Paul said, "*love [agapé love] is the fulfilling [completing] of the law*" (Romans 13:10). Jesus summarizes the whole message by giving *the golden rule*, which is to "*treat people as you want to be treated*" (Matthew 7:12) (paraphrased). That rule completes not only *The Law*, but what all *The Prophets said in the entire Bible*. *Tithes* are only "*for those in The Priesthood who do not have an inheritance from God.*"

CHAPTER 7

THE HEIRS

Once a Christian inherits God's Holy Spirit, he/she becomes a Son of God. As long as you are led by The Spirit of God, even though *still in the flesh* (human form), you are considered to be one of God's sons (Romans 8:14).

An Adoption

Paul spells out what a Christian is, "*For you have not received the spirit [human nature] of bondage [slavery] again to fear [self-survival]; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba [Daddy], Father*" (Romans 8:15).

The Israelites at Mount Horeb *feared* God. They obeyed Him, so they wouldn't be destroyed. They did not understand that God wanted them to have a *right heart* (Deuteronomy 5:29). He accepts *fear* as *obedience*, because when you have fear, it is *the beginning of knowledge and wisdom* (Proverbs 2 and 8). God has predestined you to be adopted from *human parents* by means of a *spiritual circumcision of your hearts* (Romans 2:29). You will become *Sons of God* and *inheritors of all of God's goodness and riches*. Just as *tithing is no longer an issue to be debated or necessary*, so likewise, *The Old Covenant is no longer relevant for*

Christians. You, now, have God's *Holy Spirit* which is writing *His Law* in your heart and mind (Romans 5:5 and Romans 8:26-30). You have come *to Christ* and do not need to do *the physical works*. Instead, the believer's *heart and mind* (their desire) wants only to do the same as Christ did.

Perfect Love

Of all the heavenly *gifts* which God gives to *Christians*, the ultimate gift He will grant is *agapé love* (I Corinthians 13:13). Any act a Christian performs – whether prophecy, mysteries, knowledge, faith, charity to the poor or even, martyrdom – yet, without having *agapé love* – it will profit them nothing (I Corinthians 13:1-3). Why not? It is because “*There is no fear* [cowardice] *in love* [agapé]; *but perfect love casts out fear: because fear has torment* [kolasis]. *He that fears is not made perfect in love*” (I John 4:18).

The word “*torment*” in Greek is “*kolasis*” – and its definition means “*overwhelming.*” This means “*one in torment is in constant fear or stress.*” Once you *love God enough to die* for Him (like Jesus), then you no longer obey God, *out of fear* – but rather it is because *you love Him* and would never ever want to disobey Him. You now obey God out of *love* because *you want to* and not because *you must* or because of some *written law*. *The Law* has been internalized (within your heart) on a *higher level*.

Thereby, *The Law is more honorable* (Isaiah 42:21). Then, God is *well-pleased* because of *His righteousness*

which is working “*In You.*” You will actually think like God and begin to share part of His *mind* (Philippians 2:5).

Christians Are Heirs

Through *the adoption* of God’s *Holy Spirit*, Paul declares, “*Wherefore you are no more a servant [slave] but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ*” (Galatians 4:7). Now, you are *free* from *slavery* and any *Law*. Why is this? It is because, now, *God’s Law* is written in your *heart*. You, along with every other *true* Christian, are the fulfillment of *The Law of God, The Torah* or “*path to life.*” You are truly *free*. You are *free* to choose. *You will always choose rightly* and God will be very pleased. You would never do harm to *anyone* or any part of God’s *creation*. You have complete *liberty* and *freedom* to make your *own choices*, since you are *no longer in the flesh*.

As Christ said, “*flesh is flesh and...Spirit is Spirit*” (John 3:6). You cannot be *both*! And, every Christian should strive to be like God and Christ. In the *flesh*, everyone dies. But in *the spirit*, you will *live* forever. Once you put your *flesh* to *death* and are granted *the spirit*, then you have *life*. (It is as though your conscience bothers you so much you could not and would not succumb to any fleshly desires). You are “*delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God*” (Romans 8:21). You are at *liberty* and *free* to receive *all* of *The Glory of God’s riches*. You are, truly, *the heirs* of all that God has created and will create.

Gifts Of The Spirit

God has predetermined that you should be Holy and *without blame* (Ephesians 1:3-4). This is what God had predestined for Christians from the very beginning. That is God's *mystery formula* otherwise known as *The Path to Salvation*. It is by means of these *spiritual gifts* which are given from heaven through God's *Holy Spirit*, that you will learn His entire unique *purpose* for you. When you come to God in *fear*, He takes *His Law* and enlarges it to *perfection*. Then, you will receive *mercy, wisdom, understanding, faith, judgment* and finally, *love*. When you are given this gift of love, then, all your *fears* will end.

The Law is then *magnified* and it gives *more honor or glory*. *The Law* is written in your *heart and mind*. You, now, are on *the strait and narrow path* to God's *gate*, which allows you to enter *His House of Rest* (Matthew 7). On that *path, sin* was in your *flesh*. But because *your flesh* literally died *in baptism*, then Christ's blood covers your *sins*, so now you can reach *The Kingdom of God*. Forgiveness of *sin* can only come by means of *The Priesthood of Melchizedek* (and not Levi).

Tree Of Life

In God's *house* (The Kingdom of God) you will find only *The Tree of Life* since there is no *Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil* (Revelation 22:1-3). Why not? It is because God's *house* has been placed upon the land in *New Jerusalem*. The *New Earth* is God's designated *place* for humanity, where only *spirits* or *im-*

mortals live (I Corinthians 15:50-55). Since there is no more *flesh*, then *sin* will have been *destroyed* by God. Death will be *gone*. *The Kingdom of God* (The New Earth) will be ruled from His *house* in New Jerusalem by The Family of God – which is *The Royal Family*. Christ's *Bride* will become the *mother of us all* (Galatians 4:26). Christ's *royal family* will *nurture* those on The New Earth with The Tree of Life. *The Kingdom of God* will have *His Sabbath Rest* for everyone on The New Earth. They will be drinking from the waters of the healing leaves taken from the river. This process continually cleanses those in this new world with its *healing leaves* (Revelation 22:2). The river is symbolic of God's Holy Spirit (John 7:38). The *free-choice* was theirs to make (Revelation 22:17).

Liberty Through Christ

Paul declares, “*Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage [slavery]*” (Galatians 5:1). The bondage was *The Old Covenant*, which demanded *The Keeping of The Law* by circumcision and all the legal demands (including the little tedious laws). Once *the curse* was removed from *The Law*, that *covenant* had no *power* whatsoever. Now, you are *justified by faith* and free from any *Law* with all its demands. Without *a curse*, you will have *liberty* by being *an heir* with Christ. This is when *The Hope of Righteousness* comes by *faith*.

Your faith – *In Christ* – leads you to all of God's *heavenly gifts*. This, in turn, imbeds His *Law* into your

heart and mind. No longer will you need a written law with all of its legal physical demands to keep you righteous or on the right path to righteousness. This can only be considered as The Righteousness of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25). God's righteousness changes your basic nature so you can acquire His mind and heart. Only The Priesthood of Melchizedek keeps you sinless and on the spiritual path toward The Kingdom of God. That is why Christ explained how you shall see God's angels, as they ascend and descend upon The Son of Man – and they are helping as Christians ascend the ladder to be given the ultimate gift which is love (not man's love but God's love) (John 1:51). No longer will it be Jacob's ladder through Israel. Rather, you will ascend to God's house through Christ and His ladder. At this point, The Priesthood of Levi is now changed into The Priesthood of Melchizedek – which will give you righteousness by God's Holy Spirit. The Priesthood changed and therefore it changed The Administration of The Law.

CHAPTER 8

THE MELCHIZEDEK PRIESTHOOD

As long as sin existed, The Priesthood had to exist so it could atone for the people's sins. Remember, sin is missing the mark of perfection for righteousness. A transgression concerns *The Law*. A Law is only required when people are *not righteous*. If they are not righteous in their hearts, it means they are *not righteous* in their everyday deeds. The Levitical Priesthood does not make anyone perfect or righteous. Their strict adherence to *The Law* was demanded in *The Torah*. *The Law* never changed people. *The Law* merely told them what sin was. A Priesthood of *works* and *deeds* would keep reminding them of all the wrong things they continued to do. Therefore, A Priesthood was required. The Melchizedek Priesthood differs in that it can lead you to perfection and righteousness.

Christ, The Firstborn

Christ is of *The Order of Melchizedek* forever and He will restore *peace* by bringing *order* to Zion (Psalm 110:4). This was King David's commission to The Nation of Israel. Jesus, The Christ, was anointed as The High Priest in The Order of Melchizedek. This

occurred after the sacrifice of His *life* for everyone's sins. He, now, sits on the right hand of God's *throne*. He will *be there until all enemies are defeated, including death*. Then, He fulfills King David's commission of bringing peace on earth with His *return*. Jesus is God's First Begotten Son and, therefore, responsible for God's human family (John 1).

Being God's *firstborn*, Jesus received The Holy Spirit (without measure) so He could complete the job He was given (Deuteronomy 21:17). Jesus, in His human existence, proved Himself worthy by giving His life for everyone (Revelation 5). He now sits as your High Priest after The Order of Melchizedek and atones for mankind's sins (Acts 2:30-35). Jesus is The Final Melchizedek to atone for your sins. He will do this until death no longer exists with the destruction of sin. (I Corinthians 15:53-56). Jesus truly is The Author of Your Salvation (Hebrews 12:2). Christ is The Overseer of *your life* – so He can lead you to enter God's *house*.

Prerequisites

Christ, as Melchizedek, is superior to the angels. Jesus *loved righteousness* and, as a human, He had *faith* (Hebrews 1). The remainder of Hebrews discloses *the superiority of The Melchizedek Priesthood over The Levitical Priesthood*. This is because only The Melchizedek Priesthood has the power to make you *perfect* (Hebrews 7). When going back to the time of Abraham, The Melchizedek Priesthood revealed how Abraham was *faithful* and obeyed God's *voice* (Gen-

esis 26:5). So, Abraham was *blessed* by Melchizedek. Abraham became *rich*, both *spiritually* and *physically*. Abraham *tithed* to show *his faith* in trusting God to make him rich. This was long before he could receive an inheritance. Jacob did the same. The Aaronic Priesthood, under The Tribe of Levi, could never make The Israelites *perfect* or *righteous* because of *Israel's wrong heart*.

All *the works* and *deeds* could accomplish was to remind them of *the shadows* of *true righteousness*. Israel's righteousness could only occur through *The Law* by *The Old Covenant* (Deuteronomy 6:25). Therefore, *Salvation* could not come by means of *The Law* or *The Levitical Priesthood*. Melchizedek, who *loved righteousness* and *faith*, can and will make you *perfect*. It is not a *righteousness* derived from any *Law*, but rather it is a change of *nature* and *heart* by means of God *writing His Law* in your *heart* and *mind*.

In fact, this change of your *nature* and *conscience* actually *magnifies God's Law* and makes it more *honorable*. Since the time of the conversion of Cornelius (a Gentile), God considers everyone to be clean, as long as they fear Him and work towards righteousness (Acts 10:34-35). Becoming perfect is a process. This process is a spiritual journey. It only transpires through the heavenly blessings obtained from God which will make you Holy and blameless (in love) (John 4 and Ephesians 1:1-4). There are 7 Spiritual Steps in the ascent to The Kingdom of God – which is His *house of rest and peace*. How can these 7 Steps make you perfect?

A Matter Of Mind

Jesus presented *the parable of the sower and the seed* (Matthew 13). Christ explains how God sowed *wheat*. But then, Satan came along and sowed weeds among the wheat. What, exactly, are the *weeds* which Satan sowed and what do the weeds do? The *weeds* are not derived from *Satan*. Rather, he only does *the sowing* – or allows them to seduce Christians who are weak. Jesus tells you why some seeds do not flourish and what the weeds do:

- 1) Some seeds fall on stony ground without any nutrition and therefore, they dry up.
- 2) Some seeds fall among thorns, so do not have any nutrition. They are choked out and then they die.
- 3) Some seeds are eaten by fowls.
- 4) Some seeds fall on good ground and produce fruit.

The First Group occurs when a person hears God's *word* and rejoices. But this person still has one foot in this life and, in time, he forgets *the word*. So, his/her dedication *doesn't last long* and soon dries up (Matthew 13:20-21). The Second Group refers to a person who hears *the word* but is persecuted by others who do not believe. The person may be humiliated by family or friends and therefore goes back to living *their own human life* – so that *the word* which they heard is

choked (Matthew 13:22). The Third Group consists of individuals who hear *God's word* and at first, it may not make any sense. Satan distracts them. Their interest turns back to what he/she had been doing originally (Matthew 13:19). Their personal desires can be an idol, like fame, power or money. Or, it could be as mundane as just being too lazy. They prefer to just be a couch potato. They decide to choose their own desire over God's intended purpose for them. The Fourth Group consists of seeds which fall into the good soil and produce fruit. What you must not forget is how Jesus warns that only Christians who have repented (literally are having a change of mind) can understand *God's word*. The rest of the population will not discern *what it's all about!* The *seed* God plants is *His word* or *truth* (John 17:17). The seed will take hold but only *for* those who decide to want, in earnest, to know *God's word*. Why is this?

It is because of your own *personal desires*. You want to understand what life is all about and the true meaning of anticipated events after death. Then, *God's word* will make so much sense to you. It is through your *personal desire* which determines what is so important in your life (Proverbs 18:1-4). You may not want to have *wisdom*. That is the entire point of *the parable of the sower and the seed*. What is *really important* in your life? If you seek *wisdom*, then you will be like a spring of water, which is clear as crystal and running downstream, getting cleaner and clearer. *To get to be wise, there are seven pillars* of support which are: *love* (Romans 13:10), *understanding, fear* (Proverbs 9:10), *wisdom* (Psalm 51:6), *mercy, faith and judgment* (Matthew

23:23) (Proverbs 9:1). That is why Paul said, “*Love fulfills The Law.*” If you love *righteousness*, then follow The Melchizedek Priesthood to *perfection* by using The 7 Steps to *The House of God*. This will allow you to succeed. Clearly, it is how you *think* which becomes *the cardinal point*. You must have a love for God and His *creation* – which is *The Great Commandment*. As a child, you may have memorized *The Ten Commandments*. As a result, you learned, early on, how the first four commandments are designed to honor God. God gave *The Great Commandment* to Israel. But how could they obey when they had *wrong desires* or a *hard heart* (Deuteronomy 6:5)?

When you *repent* and seek *God's desires* and not your own, then you can understand *God's word*. That is why some individuals are *blinded* by *The Law* (under The Levitical Priesthood) (II Corinthians 3:13-14). It is Satan who keeps them *blinded* with *The Old Covenant* (II Corinthians 4:4). Some Christians, today, are in the same condition. They are blinded by Satan in the understanding of *The Old and New Covenant*. *The Letter of The Law* (doing human works) cannot make you *perfect*. The Levitical Priesthood never offered *Salvation*. Only *The Priesthood of Melchizedek*, which changes *The Law* from *physical* to *spiritual*, can make you *perfect* (Hebrews 7). How is this? It comes by climbing *The 7 Spiritual Steps* or *the ladder*. This way you will, finally, take the steps to achieve *a new mind*.

God's Holy Spirit

The Spirit of God can bestow many spiritual benefits.

But always remember, they are gifts and you did nothing to deserve them. The greatest gift you can receive is *agapé love* (Romans 5:5). The receiving of this gift will lead you to *the truth* (John 17:17). When you believe something is *good* for everyone else, rather than yourself, then you tend to have *generosity, kindness, wisdom and understanding*. This increases your *faith* by giving you *judgment*. This finalizes all of God's *purpose*, which is *love*. This truth brings you to *true agapé love* for *God and His creation*. You are finally coming to see and know God as He really is. How is this? The answer is: "*For God has not given us the spirit of fear [cowardice]; but of power and of love and of a sound mind*" (II Timothy 1:7).

Now, to most individuals, this level of *love* can be incomprehensible. The problem is they do not understand you have God and His Son (The Holy Spirit) along with all The Angels to help you grow in this *Godly love*. When you no longer have a private *agenda*, then you see *truth* or *facts* as they really are. God has finally brought you to the place where you are becoming *one* with God and Christ. Because Israel was not in agreement with Him, God said, "*Can two walk together, except they be agreed?*" (Amos 3:3). Humans can only walk together when they see *things the same way*. They must *think alike*.

The Prophet states that you must *seek God while He can still be found* (Isaiah 55:6-11). How is this? It comes in time when you receive some of *His thoughts* and *His mind!* Humans, on their own, cannot think like God. Why not? As long as you think of *yourself*

first, you cannot *think like God!* Paul said, “*Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus*” (Philippians 2:5).

God's *Holy Spirit* is what leads you to *The Mind of Christ*, which is *The Mind of God*. You must first begin to crawl and then, you *walk* (or perhaps run) *towards The Kingdom of God*. Then you will *live in God's house in God's Sabbath Rest*. Your Father has fine-tuned His *plan* and thought of everything *perfectly!* Christ and The Melchizedek Priesthood is *the only priestly order* which can make you *perfect with The Mind of God*. Christ's Priesthood, “*Has made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth*” (Revelation 5:10). This is *Christ's Bride* who is becoming *worthy* to be His *wife* (Revelation 19:7-8). Then, *The King of Kings* and *His royal wife* will reign with *Him*. God will invite *the whole world* to *The Wedding Feast*. That is the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*.

CHAPTER 9

LETTER AND SPIRIT

*“Precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little and there a little” (Isaiah 28:13). God’s word is purposefully written like a puzzle. Only those who want (on their own) to follow God’s ways will be able to understand. They are the only ones who can begin to put the pieces of the puzzle together. Why is this? Doesn’t God want everyone to know the truth and how He thinks? (Read the book, *God’s Puzzle Solved*).*

You will learn how God has a specific time-frame for each of you. That time is when you want, above all else, to do what God expects of you as a Christian. *The Great Commandment* given to Israel is “*The Shema*.” It is “*the goal*” (Deuteronomy 6:5). When you love God with all your heart and mind, you will also love His *creation* and His *great purpose*. Anything less is *sin* or *missing the goal*. Then, when missing the mark or the goal, you cannot reach the level to which you must attain. God’s *purpose* is to be *All In All* (I Corinthians 15:28).

A Guarantee

God’s *great thoughts* will guarantee a *Kingdom of*

Peace, Prosperity and Joy, lasting forever and subject to everyone being in complete agreement. In *agreement*, you can walk together (Amos 3:3). Amazingly, God has a *mystery* or a *puzzle* for you to solve (Ephesians 1:9). That *mystery* is to be revealed to *the saints* and *the faithful* (Ephesians 1:1). God reveals how you can solve the puzzle of His *mystery* through The Priesthood of Melchizedek (through Jesus) (Colossians 1:26-27). Amazingly, God keeps His *plan a mystery to purposely blind the world*.

Only those who are *ready to be called* and truly desire to know the truth are able to understand *the truth* (Matthew 13:14-17). Why is this? It is simply because, if you don't understand God's *word* then you are not held responsible for your sins of *missing the mark* (John 9:41). You may understand *The Law* and still not transgress *The Law* (which is sin). Yet, you may not understand God's *mystery*, which is still *sin*. Some Christians, Israelites and Muslims know and keep *The Law*, but they still *miss the mark of perfection* which is *righteousness*. That is why the definition of *righteousness* is, "*All unrighteousness is sin* [never hitting the mark]" (I John 5:17).

Perfection is required and it is not by *The Keeping of The Law of Moses*. That is why *The Law* is designed to bring you to Christ – but it will not make you *perfect* (Hebrews 7 and I John 3:4). Only Melchizedek can give you *Salvation*, as a gift. *The Mystery of God* manifests God's *great love*. By being a *mystery*, those who sin just do not know or understand, so they are *not regarded as guilty*. "*There is a sin not unto death* [Lake

of Fire]” (I John 5:17). What is *the sin unto death*? It is missing *the mark of perfection*.

You can only be held responsible if you know what you have done in the past or what you are doing now may be wrong. Only those who know the *truth* and continue to *sin* are considered to be *responsible* for their sins. You can only know the truth through *God’s Holy Spirit*. If you have ever rejected, refused or turned against God’s *Holy Spirit*, then you have *committed a sin unto death* (Matthew 12:31-32). That is why those Christians who *refuse to keep growing spiritually* will be *held more responsible* than those individuals who God calls *the ignorant* or *the foolish*. These are the ones who never considered or wanted to know The Truth of God. (Read Luke 12:42-49 for a clearer understanding). It clearly covers the spectrum of mankind either responding to God’s *Holy Spirit* or rejecting it. Only those who, *knowingly*, reject God’s *great love* (His Holy Spirit) will be found guilty. *Knowingly*, they *miss the mark*.

Letter Of The Law

The Book of Isaiah explains how Israel comprises The Congregation of God. Israel believed in doing The Works of *The Law*. They accepted *The Old Covenant of The Law* with all its legal demands. However, you must realize what God thinks about all this. Understand that *The Letter of The Law* was intended to bring Israel to The Spirit of *The Law*. Instead, The Letter actually blinded Israel (Hebrews 9:8-9 and II Corinthians 3:13-14). They never seemed to look for The Messiah.

They, instead, only concentrated on the *physical works of The Law*. Read and compare how some Christians are just as blind today, “*To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices to me? Says the Lord: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks or of lambs or of he goats. When you come to appear before me, who has required this at your hand, to tread my courts? Bring no more vain oblations [offerings]; incense is an abomination to me; the new moons and sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with [stop doing the works of The Law]; it is iniquity [sin], even the solemn meeting. Your new moons and your appointed feasts my soul hates: they are a trouble to me; I am weary to bear them*” (Isaiah 1:11-14).

Israel kept *the works and deeds of The Letter of The Law*, but it did not bring them to repentance. It also did not allow them to have *a change of their minds*. The Letter of *The Law* was intended to bring them to Christ, but it didn't accomplish this purpose (Galatians 3:24). Israel seemed to think all *the legalism of The Law* pleased God (when it did not). The Letter of *The Law* is designed for *criminals*. Israel didn't understand how *The Law* was only *a shadow or type of Christ*. The Letter of *The Law* could not and did not change them. They were still *criminals*. The giving of *sacrifices and death for capital crimes* would need to continue, *forever*. The Letter of *The Law* could never change them or make them *perfect*. It couldn't make them able to enter *The Sabbath Rest of God*. All *The Old Covenant* could do was to tell them what *sin* was, so they could stop sinning. They did not know *The*

Law was spiritual and it was not the doing of the physical works of The Law (Romans 7:14). That is why God said, “*When you make prayers, I will not hear*” (Isaiah 1:15).

The Levitical Priesthood was instituted to remind Israel of their sins. But it could never change their hearts. God summarizes the difference between The Letter of *The Law* and The Spirit of *The Law* by referring to *fasting* on The Day of Atonement. They fasted because of their sins on The Day of Atonement, but *it taught them absolutely nothing*. Keeping The Day of Atonement didn't *give them any new knowledge* so they could change their hearts (Isaiah 58:3). Israel still kept fighting in *strife* and continued to do *wickedness* (Isaiah 58:4). Then, God declares the spiritual meaning of The Day of Atonement “*Live in peace and help everyone in need*” (paraphrased). Give food and clothing to the poor and take care of your own family (Isaiah 58:6-10). Isaiah was revealing The Spirit of *The Law*. But they were oblivious to the real meaning.

Christ said, “*the weightier matters of the law [are] judgment, mercy and faith*” (Matthew 23:23). These are of greater consequence to God than doing *The Works of The Letter of The Law*. The Letter of *The Law* only keeps people from committing *crimes* because they do not want to pay the penalty of *The Law*. The Letter reveals *sin* and its consequences, but it doesn't change anyone's *heart* or *mind*. The *magnification* of *The Law* clarifies *what is not seen by* The Letter of *The Law*. The *magnification* is in The Spirit of your mind (Isaiah 42:21). Are you beginning to understand *the purpose*

of *The Law*, which affects your conscience? When God grants you *spiritual gifts*, such as mercy, wisdom, understanding, faith, judgment and love, you begin to internalize *the truth*. Once you live by The Spirit of *The Law*, there is no need for The Letter of *The Law*, with all of its dos and don'ts. It only defines *sin* as a *transgression of a Law*. The Spirit of *The Law* gives *The Law* honor, because you understand its *purpose*. It gives you *wisdom* to make *loving judgments* – which will increase your *faith* in God. This is manifested by *the fruits*. That is why Jesus said it is “*by their fruits you shall know them*” (Matthew 7:20). What fruits *prove* you possess The Spirit of *The Law*? When do you know you have *completed the spiritual keeping of The Law*? This is how you do it: “*Love is the fulfilling [completes] of the law [making it honorable]*” (Romans 13:10).

Jesus said, “*By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one to another*” (John 13:35). *The Law of Righteousness* is a *spiritual matter* which gives *honor* to *The Law* and it makes perfect *sense*. It is *the wise* thing to do. Its fruit produces peace, prosperity, joy and all the other fruits of The Spirit. In addition, you receive *The Gift of Salvation*. It's so simple, a child can understand. Know, for a surety, only The Melchizedek Priesthood can give you *Salvation*. Through *faith* and the deep desire for God's *righteousness*, you can be granted *heavenly blessings*. This will make you into *a new creature*. After Adam and Eve sinned and missed the mark by not eating of The Tree of Life, it became necessary for a *second Adam* to restore The Tree of Life. The Order of

Melchizedek began from Abel and continued until *the time* when Christ *came* to earth. It was that particular *body* which God *prepared* for The High Priest's sacrifice. It was for you and all of God's children. *The Old Covenant* is no more. There are no more animal sacrifices. There are no more *dos and don'ts* (works) of *The Law*. Christ is your sacrifice. You are now *free* to do *good works* by helping the poor, the sick, the weak, prisoners, the orphans, the widows, the strangers, the homeless, other Christians and any needy members of your family.

All A Gift

You cannot think that by doing works you deserve Salvation. Jesus was God's *First Begotten Son* by the *gift* of His *Holy Spirit*. Jesus was filled with God's *Holy Spirit* (Mary's miraculous birth of Christ) (John 3). Christ, from birth, was *blessed* by God to become *worthy to be your sacrifice*. Once sin is defeated, you are *granted mercy* by *The Holy Spirit of God*. You will begin to climb The Ladder of Salvation to God's *house*. Christ was The Firstborn *human* to receive *life*, as proof of God's *plan*. Jesus was resurrected by His Father from *death* and sits at God's *right hand*. Through Christ, as *The Author of Your Salvation* by The Order of Melchizedek, you shall reign with Him as Priests and Kings. God's *love* never ceases. His *truth* about *The Kingdom of God* should be your primary goal. You can enter The Kingdom of God (God's House of Rest) forever. Are you planning for your life to follow God's *path* so you can receive The Gift of Salvation? You can receive *the greatest gift* anyone has ever received

– which is ***THE OPPORTUNITY TO LIVE FOREVER IN GOD'S REST – PARADISE*** (Hebrews 4:9). That will be your ultimate gift. You will love every minute of it (no clocks will be necessary). Time continues forever. It's time to turn your thoughts to God and start following His directions. This means you will be on the most *sought-after list* of all. There are royal blue-bloods who would die to be on this list. Strive to have your name written in the book to receive the ultimate prize – The Gift of Eternal Life.

TRUTHS, CREEDS AND DOCTRINES

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART

**BY
ART MOKAROW**

Copyright Pending – *Truths, Creeds And Doctrines*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>Preface</i>	v
<i>Introduction</i>	vii
WHAT IS TRUTH?	1
TRUTH GIVES LIBERTY	7
CREEDS AND CREEDS	13
A TEACHING AND A LEARNING	19
A GUARANTEED SYSTEM	27

PREFACE

Christians have debated, argued, persecuted and even murdered hapless souls over the notion of *what is the truth*. Creeds and doctrines have developed as points of antagonism between groups and denominations – hence, they compete with each other.

However, Christ wants His people to be united in love. The subject of this book is to biblically substantiate what can be identified as the scriptural truth. What roles do creeds or doctrines play in The Christian Community? These questions need to be resolved in order to unite The Christian Faith.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no money is accepted for these books. All books are absolutely free. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given). Your job is to pray and study to show yourself approved.

Art Mokarow
Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

email: art@mokarow.com
website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com
download all books free of charge

INTRODUCTION

The Greatest Gift

The Gift of Eternal Life is far and above the greatest of all the gifts God will bestow upon His churches. This is a most precious gift from God. It is to be sought above all other blessings (I Corinthians 13). This gift is the doorway to The Kingdom of God.

I Corinthians 13

The Apostle Paul describes the many gifts Christians have received and the trials they had to endure to obtain Salvation. Here is what Paul concluded, “*Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels and have not charity [love], I am become as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy and understand all mysteries and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains and have not charity [love], I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor and though I give my body to be burned and have not charity [love], it profits me nothing*” (I Corinthians 13:1-3). Do you grasp the importance of these words written by Paul? No matter what Christians personally do for God or what truth or doctrines they have, without agapé love, any human work is useless to God. You profit nothing. All your human works are vanity. This is the reason why The Apostle Paul declared how *love fulfills The Law* (Romans 13:10). *Love is the supreme Gift of God. Why is this? It is because*

agapé love is what God is! “*He that loves not, knows not God; for God is love*” (I John 4:8). Obviously, Godly *love* surpasses any truth, creed or doctrine.

All of God’s Laws, physical and spiritual, not only originated from Him but actually manifest The Almighty Father and what is in His heart and mind.

God’s power, greatness, abilities, joy, blessings, goodness and The Gift of Life are magnified, because *God is love*. God has no ego. He is *a completely giving God* and is only motivated by love. How dare anyone seek revenge, argue and even destroy His creation! God, through His longsuffering (severe pain) and patience, allows people to despise or hate each other. God has endured the evilness of individuals for thousands of years. Because of His great love toward the whole world, you are called upon to repent. This is through your free choice, so you, likewise, can manifest His great love for Himself and His creation (I John 4:8).

Job had to learn this lesson, just as others have had to learn it and will be required to learn it. Here is what Job finally came to understand, “*I know that you can do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from you. Who is he that hides counsel without knowledge? Therefore have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not [his ego]*” (Job 42:2-3).

Job did not understand the identity of The True God. He did not comprehend the superior greatness of God’s love. His *ego* got in the way because of his own *doctrine of self-love* or *righteousness*.

Here was the final lesson about God's great love and how it was taught to Job, "*I have heard of you by the hearing of the ear [preaching]: but now mine eye sees you. Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes*" (Job 42:5-6). Job only knew of God by The Prophets preaching about Him. But Job didn't know who The True God really was. Once Job began to see who God truly was, he abhorred himself and repented. In short, he put his own ego to death.

Offending God's People

Here is Christ's attitude towards sinning Christians, "*Should not you also have had compassion on your fellowservant, even as I had pity on you*" (Matthew 18:33). You must understand the depth of Christ's love. He forgives all sins, even the sins of those whom you do not agree with (about truth or doctrines). Jesus only holds Christians responsible for what they understand. He does not hold them responsible for the truth (what they do not know or understand) (John 9:41). That is why Paul said, "*Whatsoever is not of faith [belief] is sin*" (Romans 14:23).

You all have different levels of spiritual understanding. Only God knows your individual hearts and your inherent level of comprehension. You are His servants and therefore no human is your spiritual master. Heretics, who are trouble-makers in the church, should be disfellowshipped after two or three warnings. Discussing different doctrines or levels of spiritual understanding is fine, but do not offend each other in the church causing dis-

unity. Being in minor disagreement over beliefs in the church is fine, such as concerning The Gentiles and *The Law* (Acts 15). It was *the believing* Pharisees (a sect in the church) who caused the disagreement over the issue of The Gentiles. The Gentiles had not been circumcised, nor did they keep *The Law of Moses* (Acts 15:5). The English word “sect” in Greek is “*heretic*.” Once the question was settled, no problems ensued from The Pharisees, even if they didn’t agree with the decision in Acts 15.

Christians must have *the liberty* or *freedom* to grow spiritually at their own level or time-frame. They should be unrestricted. Each must be respected as long as they are not trouble-makers concerning doctrines. God’s church should be unified by God’s love and should not argue over some point of truth, creed or doctrine. Competition should not exist among God’s people. Jesus revealed what a real Christian is, “*By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love [agapé] one to another*” (John 13:35).

Understanding truth, creeds or doctrines matters not – if a Godly *love* prevails. Here is the reason why this gift is the greatest, “*Charity [love] never fails: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge [truth and doctrine], it shall vanish away*” (I Corinthians 13:8). Creeds, doctrines and all knowledge will vanish. Why is this? It is because the knowledge you possess only allows you to know *in part* (I Corinthians 13:9). On the other hand, agapé love never fails a Christian. It is eternal because God is eternal and God is love!

CHAPTER 1

WHAT IS TRUTH?

Jesus said, “*Sanctify them [Christians] through your truth: your word is truth*” (John 17:17). Since God gave life and He is The One who created all things, He is The Only One to know what the truth is. Truth is knowledge – which concerns true facts and not theories. God sanctifies or sets apart His people who know and understand His truth.

Is Truth Always The Truth?

According to Christ, *the truth* is absolute (John 17:17). You can always count on *the truth*, or can you? There is always a danger in handling *the truth*. Is it all the totality of truth? The difficulty with knowledge is that it can vanish. How can this be? When you only know *in part*, there must be a vacuum of understanding. For example, to comprehend mathematics, you first need to start with simple arithmetic. Then, you must go on to grasp algebra. Only then can you hope to understand geometry. That is the nature of knowledge. Truth is progressive. (It unfolds step by step). Human nature is such that when you just begin to perceive information, you will tend to think you have a greater grasp than you actually possess. A person doesn't know what they don't know. However, once you experience truth, you will understand it

more deeply. As children, it is inherent to confuse perception with knowledge. This is because of a basic difference between sensation and cognition or thinking. As you grow by having experience, your thoughts will allow you to understand truth in greater depth. Concerning the knowledge of Salvation, The Old Prophets inquired about the *grace* that can be given to you (I Peter 1:10-11). These Prophets were led by God's Holy Spirit. They did not know how The Glory of God would be given by Christ. They only knew and perceived *in part* – but they were certain it would be given. Then, that knowledge was only given to The Apostles in Peter's day (I Peter 1:12). It will take time before you grow to the point of being given The Gift of Salvation. Truth is progressive. Another major human error of logic concerns the identity of the truth (which also can be regressive). By the end of The First Century, Jude had to plead, "*you should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered to the saints*" (Jude 3). There is another cog in the wheel concerning truth. Human nature and your inherent tendencies can cause you to experience many other problems.

What Is Babylon?

At The Tower of Babel, it became necessary for God to intervene and confuse the languages. Why was this? It is because God intentionally stopped the process of humans sharing information! With the weakness of the flesh, God halted *informational growth*. God knows that when you have received

too much knowledge or truth, it can be destructive (as was already proven at the time of the building of The Tower of Babel). Here is what The Apostle Paul tells you, “*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness*” (Romans 1:18).

Human logic can get you into trouble. Knowledge or truth (given ahead of time) can produce evil results. Read the biblical answer to what Babylon represents, “*And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do*” (Genesis 11:6). This is God’s definition of *Babylon* or (the first head of) *The Beast in The Book of Revelation*. The people, who were living at the time of The Tower of Babel, had taken *the truth* of The One God in The Garden of Eden and transformed it into *polytheism*. They turned the teaching about The One God into a concept proclaiming a multitude of mini-gods. With the loss of The Tree of Life, they began to worship other gods. They worshipped The Tree of Life, which they renamed The Christmas Tree (Jeremiah 10). (Read the book, *Satan’s Image*). Knowledge or truth now added many new human ideas. Their use of logic, along with their human reasonings (partial truths), only allowed them to reach *a theory*. It is man’s nature to guess and to come to *unsound so-called truths*. The entire system of *alleged science* is predicated upon human imagination – with no end in sight (conclu-

sion). Some ideas are good while others are evil. That is what happens to you when you leave God out of the picture. Only God knows *the truth* (all the truth). Therefore, it would be prudent if you hesitate to condemn anyone.

God Knows Better

Only God knows how much truth should be disclosed to each individual at any given time. God grants truth or knowledge, in part, for a very wise reason. In church groups, without the proper attitude, the act of being dogmatic can be dangerous. You have seen how truth can be *progressive* as well as *regressive*. Also, too much knowledge can be very dangerous. Only God knows your heart and mind – and when *more* truth can be given to you. To give truth *individually* is relative, but if it is given too early, then it can be damaging. When Israel came before God to receive *The Ten Commandments*, they found The Glory of God to be very frightening. The people were scared to death. God's *glory*, which is *all of God's goodness*, was overwhelming. They only wanted Moses to tell them what God wanted them to do. Then, they declared they would do God's will through Moses and without getting it *first-hand* from God. The Israelites already understood how *the many gods of Egypt* had to be placated. The True God appeared not to be that different so they were frightened of Him and His power. When Israel felt Moses had been absent too long on the mountain, they built something to worship. After God told them not to

worship idols, they disobeyed and built a golden calf. God knew they had a wrong heart and had to start with *The Old Covenant Law of Moses*, so they could understand what *sin was* (Deuteronomy 5:29 and I John 3:4). That proved to be more than they wanted to handle. God knew they would learn more truth in the future. So, that generation died in the wilderness because they didn't seek faith in God.

Truth, *in part*, is the only way God divulges knowledge. God gives free choice to you. When you are ready to obey or desire more truth with a right heart, then God will allow you to begin to understand. As time goes by, with added prayer and studying, God will give you additional truth. God declares how He can only give knowledge or truth to those who are like little babes (they must be teachable) (Isaiah 28). If, after that, you receive too much truth, it may be overwhelming and you might give up and quit. That's what is wrong with the world's educational system. They either give too much or too little. Either that or they mix too many *untruths* in with *the truth*. Either way, it damages many wonderful minds. Only God knows best. *Isaiah 55:6-9* declares, "*Seek God while He might be found.*" The Truth – God's *word* – shows who God is (John 17:17)! You need to discover through Bible study just how God thinks. You need to know what gives God pleasure and what His *will* is. That is The Truth or The Word of God! Jesus said, "*For The Law [doctrine] was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ*" (John 1:17).

CHAPTER 2

TRUTH GIVES LIBERTY

Now you know what happened to Adam and Eve when they ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. There was nothing wrong with The Tree of Good and Evil – they just were not ready for so much *overwhelming truth*. God said all the trees in The Garden were very good (Genesis 1:31). What if they only ate from The Tree of Life (first)? Then, you might wonder what would have happened if Eve never had eaten from The Tree of Good and Evil. What would have happened? That is a good question.

Too Much – Too Soon

Under The New Heaven and on The New Earth, when God will dwell with man, there will not be a Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. It isn't necessary, because everyone will have confessed and will seek The Tree of Life. They will want *to drink from the fountain of waters* along with consuming the healing leaves. Everyone is growing to spiritual maturity and coming to know good and evil on a natural basis.

Cain was told by God that “*sin lies at the door.*” This tendency is resident within your genes and

leads to sin (from birth). It is because of your desire to survive at any cost. You struggle to live even when you know, in the end, you will die. It is truly a dichotomy. God said Cain must master his sins.

When Cain murdered Abel, God forced Cain to leave His property and live in The Land of Nod (the wilderness). Cain knew he was “*going it*” alone (without God) so He said, “*My punishment is greater than I can bear*” (Genesis 4:13). According to the book, *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, Cain wandered in the wilderness looking for the fountain of waters so he could find the healing leaves and repent. But Cain never found the waters. Likewise, you, with your human nature, cannot find The Truth.

Humanity cannot know *truth* on its own. To fully understand good and evil, you must be taught. Only God understands *right* from *wrong*, because God is *love* and without an ego. God, only, is The One who is good. Jesus answers the human contradiction of life and death. Then Jesus said, “*When you have lifted up the Son of man [Christ’s body], then shall you know that I am he and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father has taught me, I speak these things*” (John 8:28).

Christ, from birth, was filled with The Holy Spirit without measure. God’s *words* are true – Jesus was sealed with The Truth. “*For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God: for God gives not the Spirit by measure to Him*” (John 3:33-34).

Christ, from childhood, had to grow in wisdom. (Most learn by the hard-knocks of life and therefore suffer too many penalties). **The difference concerns the realization of Jesus being born with God's Holy Spirit.** But still, He had to mature physically and spiritually. Jesus, as a child, "*grew and waxed [became] strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon Him*" (Luke 2:40). That is why The Pharisees were amazed at His wisdom (at age twelve) when He spoke to them in The Temple. Physically, humans mature rather rapidly. But *spiritual maturity* takes much more time. This is because you are the one who must choose to seek *truth and wisdom*.

Too many are occupied with their place in the world and it captivates them. This is because when you think or function (especially when you are in the prime of your life), you tend to believe you are capable of knowing truth (knowing exactly, what is good for you) on your own.

Jesus, from His birth, knew better, "*And he that sent me is with me: the Father has not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him*" (John 8:29). Now you have the solution for knowing The Truth. When you, on your own, try to decide for yourself what is good and evil, then you will be like Cain who wandered in the wilderness all his life. You may take too much, too soon, on your own. Even Jesus knew better.

Only God can give you His goodness by His Holy

Spirit. Until you turn to God and diligently seek Him, you are on your own. You have already proven this when you are left to yourself and you are in a state of confusion (or Babylon). It is your lack of truth to discern good from evil because of your vivid imaginations (Genesis 11:6).

What causes your delay in seeking God? It is your personal wants or true inner *desires* that keep you from being wise (Proverbs 18:1-6). Idolatry is the problem. Remember, *covetousness* is *idolatry* (Colossians 3:5).

Whatever you desire, above all else, is what you worship. It has become your idol. Even life, itself, can become an idol. You seek to be part of this world and all the things in it. This is long before you seek The True God. It may cause a hindrance in your eventual quest to begin searching for The Truth. God is The Only One who has The Truth.

As Paul said, being *human* means it is the best you can know – it is only *a part* (I Corinthians 13:9). Paul also reminds you not to think so highly of yourself (Galatians 6:3).

Knowing The Truth

It is only God's Holy Spirit which can give or reveal the truth. How can you be sure that you, on your own, have the truth? God's word, *The Bible*, should be read for what it really states. Don't interpret it and try to make it mean what you think

it should mean. Each time you study, you need to ask yourself, “*Does The Word of God really mean what it seems to be telling me?*” Does your interpretation come from your imagination or from your personal reasonings? Be candid with yourself and don’t think you are so superior. Always be open, as a little child, to learn more about God’s truth. That is why God warns by explaining how He only gives knowledge to those who are teachable (as babes) (Isaiah 28).

This is Principle #1. Don’t be so insistent in thinking that only you know the truth. Stop offending God’s other children. Once you stay humble and remain eager to be taught, then God will give you more of The Truth. How can you know when you have received the truth? Jesus again gives you the answer, “*And you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free*” (John 8:32).

The English word “*free*” in Greek is “*eleutheroo*” or “*complete liberty*.” Where in *The Bible* will you find a contradiction? For hundreds of years, *Science* has tried to explain what *the truth of evolution is*. To this day, cosmologists are still seeking *the mother of all theories*.

Each time Science believes they have found the answer, then new options or possible truths appear on the horizon. Given tens or hundreds of years, Science will have millions of new answers. It is unending – forever guessing with more and more options. *Absolute truth is absolute*. There are no

more variables or any unanswered options. You must apply this same criteria to *The Bible*.

Once *The Bible* makes a clear and simple statement (which no honest person can deny) then no contradictions to that truth should appear in any part of The Word of God. That is why the scholars of Jesus' day were overwhelmed by His wisdom when He was not yet a teenager. As adults, The Pharisees asked, "*How can Jesus speak so authoritatively when He was not a scholar with letters or degrees?*" (Paraphrased). He could not be contradicted. His truth was free and was so simple that everyone could grasp it. No one could contradict Him. When Jesus chose to speak in parables, it was only to those who were being directed and allowed to understand by means of God's Holy Spirit. That is why in His parables, He said, "*Those who had ears to hear and eyes to see could understand the truth of His teachings*" (Matthew 13:11).

How do you know the difference when no contradictions are found? Again, Jesus states, "*A good man out of the good treasure of the heart brings forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things. But I say to you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by your words you shalt be justified and by your words you shall be condemned*" (Matthew 12:35-37).

CHAPTER 3

CREEDS AND CREEDS

A “creed” is “the foundation of everything you believe as *the truth*.” The problem is – there are *creeds* and then, there are *creeds*. Every Christian denomination has some difference in its foundational beliefs of faith. How can there be so many creeds which only seem to produce competition in Christianity? Some believers have killed and murdered others over these creeds. *The Bible* does not contain any example of Christians killing Christians. How can this be? You are about to scripturally discover how God has only *one foundational creed*.

Only One Creed

It is an error for Christians to base their creed upon notions that divide one another. *The Bible* only mandates *one creed*. You might say it is the only true creed.

Too many groups feel they must openly declare what truth they presume to know – then, label it as a creed. Paul clearly said that Christians only know *in part*. If *acceptance* by a particular church demands that Christians be at the same level of spiritual understanding just like everyone else, then no group will ever be *in unity*. Paul told Chris-

tians to “*work out your own Salvation with fear and trembling*” (Philippians 2:12).

If you adhere to Paul’s statement as being a creed, then you would have less trouble (doctrinally). Any denominational church who abides by a certain creed creates a situation where any debate about how to keep that creed tends to divide their members into competing groups. *The Bible* contains a very general or broad *creed* concerning who God accepts.

This is what The Apostle Peter (who had the keys to The Kingdom) had to say about which individuals God would accept (Matthew 16), “*But in every nation he that fears Him and works righteousness, is accepted with Him [by God]*” (Acts 10:35).

This statement is quite broad. As long as you fear God and labor intensely to be *righteous*, then God will accept you. What you may accept as *righteousness* varies according to your own understanding. This becomes your personal level of *doctrinal knowledge*. Christians in The First Century were known as God-fearers – God does accept them as legitimate believers of The Way.

The differences in doctrinal comprehension during The First Century were vast in all of *Christ’s churches* (Revelation 2 and 3). Most had many beliefs – which included false doctrines. Jesus’ answer was that He *loved them all* but would chastise those who were not growing *spiritually in the truth*.

In fact, Jesus allowed this diversity in His churches. He will not make a judgment until He returns to earth. Wow! What great love and grace will be bestowed upon you – all His followers. Paul determined to write an entire chapter to clearly show *the love and tolerance* Christians should have for each other and future Christians (Romans 14). You may hold to a doctrine about the need for being a *vegetarian* or about *judging what day you feel the need to observe for worship*. Furthermore, you may think *it is a sin to drink wine*. But, God allows you the free choice to drink wine or to be a vegetarian – or even to choose which day you wish to keep. If it is okay with God, then why are you meddling with another Christian’s level of growth? That is why Paul ends with a warning, “*for whatsoever is not of faith is sin*” (Romans 14:23). The verse is saying, “*that whatever level of belief you accept, you better keep [to] it faithfully.*” Why is this? It is because *what is not of faith (belief) is sin*. Never, ever compare yourself to another.

To coerce someone to accept another’s standard of Christianity is *very unchristian*. After three warnings, troublemakers who continue to cause division are to be expelled from brotherly companionship. Paul said, “*And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual, but as to carnal [beasts], even as to babes in Christ. I have fed you with milk [baby food] and not with meat [spiritual]: for hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able. For you are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you [Christians] envying and strife and divisions [de-*

nominations], *are you not carnal* [beasts] *and walk as men* [unconverted]?” (I Corinthians 3:1-3). These **troublemakers** (after two or three warnings) are to be asked to leave the fellowship, so The Church can dwell in unity within the rest of the body. Those troublemakers upset everyone which is contrary to The Spirit of God.

That is also the reason Paul said, when you follow Christ, you are not to be “*tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine*” (Ephesians 4). Doctrine is important, but *different faiths of belief* should not cause dissension – especially when churches strive to have *brotherly love*. *Christian love* does not cause *dissension*.

Christ – *In You*

What does Christ “*In You*” mean (Colossians 1:27)? *The Book of Colossians* defines Christ “*In You,*” as “*Whom we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect* [mature] *in Christ Jesus*” (Colossians 1:28). This is accomplished by following Christ and allowing Him to be duplicated – “*In You.*” Why is this? “*For in Him* [Christ] *dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily* [fully]” (Colossians 2:9). You become complete whenever you are just like Jesus. At that time, you will be *perfect*.

Spiritual growth does not occur when you judge people concerning when or whether they choose to keep certain Holy Days, Sabbaths or even to ad-

here to other doctrines. Those are their own individual personal responsibilities. You must strive to be just *like Jesus*. Christ said He did only God's *will* and spoke only God's *words*. Christ admonished you to follow the same path, "*For the Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ*" (John 1:17).

Arguing or debating about *The Law* is not the way to be a Christian. You should, instead, be like Christ so you can receive His grace and truth. *Truth* only comes by being like Jesus in following the example He had set. It is not a matter of doctrine concerning *The Law*.

The Law tells what *sin is*, but *life eternal* only comes through Christ. Are you finally coming to understand what *the creed* for Christians really is? "*For other foundation [creed] can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ*" (I Corinthians 3:11). It can't be said any simpler. Doctrine isn't the main point – but rather to be like Jesus is what Christianity should be all about. Paul reveals that every preacher will be tried by fire (tested) concerning what he teaches. This trial of fire purges sin away (the dross) (Isaiah 6:5-7).

Paul warns that the content of what a man preaches will be put to the test (of fire) (I Corinthians 3). The false doctrine will be lost, but the preacher will be saved because of the fire which will purge him. The negative result points to that church denomination as being guaranteed to split!

Clearly, there is only one creed for Christians. That creed is *to be, to do and to think* like Christ. That is Christ – “*In You.*” Jesus brings mercy, grace and truth. That is why Jesus said He is The Master of The Sabbath when you keep The Sabbath. Therefore, in principle, it is *lawful* to do hard work even on The Sabbath, as long as it is a *good work*.

Jesus said He gives mercy and so there will be no Sabbath-breaking *penalty* (a sacrifice). This hard work can be as laborious as pulling a lamb out of the ditch. Why is this? It is because The Sabbath was originally made for man – not man for The Sabbath (when everything was very good) (Genesis 1:31). It is lawful to do good works on The Sabbath – including hard work (Matthew 12:12).

There is only one creed for Christians – that is to be like Christ. Moreover, exactly like Christ. That’s it! Doctrine does not matter, which is totally another point addressed elsewhere. Now you know what *creed The Bible* demands. It is Christ – “*In You.*” There is nothing more. Doctrine is conditional and is extremely vital to Christian growth but your priority is to be like Christ.

CHAPTER 4

A TEACHING AND A LEARNING

Any school which you may attend or have attended has different levels of understanding concerning almost every subject. As a student, you will progress from arithmetic to higher levels of mathematics – such as algebra, geometry and calculus. Each has its own mode of being taught because different learning processes are involved. That process compares with the meaning of “*doctrine*” in Hebrew and Greek.

Doctrines

What is generally not understood about truth is how God chooses to teach it. It is taught by the same method in any school – when the instructor teaches a specific subject. Salvation, as a biblical subject or doctrine, can be learned by any Disciple of Christ. It only depends upon the level which a person has reached. One Disciple may have one talent, another two, five or ten talents (Matthew 25).

Everyone is at a different level – *spiritually*. A student cannot proceed to algebra until he understands arithmetic. Geometry cannot be mastered without some basic knowledge of algebra. So it is with Salvation – or receiving your *pass* to enter

The Kingdom of God (as a gift). To learn Godly knowledge, you must begin at a *kindergarten level* as a mere babe (Isaiah 28). “*Doctrine*” in Hebrew or Greek means “*a learning or teaching.*” In God’s school, He starts doctrinal teaching in a very basic method. In The Garden of Eden, God’s first two students or Disciples were Adam and Eve. All they had to do was grow from their original innocence by using *alphabet blocks* (just as in kindergarten). Literally, the word “*kindergarten*” in German means “*a child’s garden.*”

Salvation was achievable by eating from The Tree of Life instead of from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Then, the first couple learned in kindergarten the reason they must die. It was because they chose to eat the fruit from the wrong tree. It is exactly like teaching a child not to touch a hot stove – or not to run across a busy street. This is the first recorded Godly *doctrine* in *The Bible*.

This was the beginning of Babylon. Adam and Eve chose to learn by themselves without God’s input, who was not only their Father, but their teacher. They were home-schooled. However, they chose to learn doctrine on their own without listening to their Father. They also chose not to be taught by a teacher (about their future). This is the reason Cain said, when he had to leave Eden and go to Nod, “*My punishment is greater than I can bear*” (Genesis 4:13). He was completely on his own, in the wilderness, where many wanted to kill him. This was a harsh choice for Cain, so God had to place

a mark upon him so other members of his family would not kill him. Cain had to exist on his own. He was in the ultimate *Babylon* with his carnal human nature. Adam and Eve chose to turn their backs on God (their doctrinal teacher). Still, they were in Eden where God walked with them – but no longer dwelt with them. They had to survive by themselves, although they still lived on God’s land or property. They were secure on God’s farm, but now they had to do all the work. No longer were they in God’s *rest* where God did the work. In The Garden, their only chore was to dress and keep God’s garden. Cain was completely on his own. He was required to learn like any animal and was forced to survive by living with the wild beasts. In the first four chapters of *The Bible*, God changed His doctrine or teachings three different times:

- 1) In the beginning, Salvation could be gained by eating from The Tree of Life.
- 2) When Adam and Eve sinned, God changed his doctrine to let them learn on their own. When Adam and Eve chose to learn by themselves, it meant that without God, they were living in Babylon (Genesis 11:6).
- 3) Cain, the killer, had to learn by himself, but he also had to make every effort to survive. These are biblical examples of the three methods for illustrating *the doctrines* which God taught. Your *Bible* documents these facts.

Noah To Moses

When The Noachian Flood receded, God started to teach doctrine, once more. He needed to lay down *The Law*. Later, He changed His teaching about doctrine. This time, since the world ended in violence, God needed to protect *the people* from themselves. Eventually, He would, again, offer Salvation. God knew humans would only learn an important lesson when they made a decision to do so on their own. Teaching someone *by force* doesn't work. In The Kingdom of God, everyone has liberty or freedom to do what they choose to do (Romans 8:21). Therefore, God gives total free choice, so He can allow individuals to choose whether they would like to be in His *kingdom* or not (this is when they are ready to make their personal decision). When you mature *spiritually*, like Christ, God will know you are ready to decide by yourselves what is good and evil. Christ – “*In You*” is the only way you will be able to do it (Colossians 1:27).

It is vital to realize how this method of *doctrinal change* came later. With the flood occurring in the past, God once again turned to His Prophets, who served as His substitute teachers (Hebrews 1). However, for the world's good, God needed to institute His first codified Law (circumcision and the rainbow). A New Law was taught in this classroom. When a man murders someone or an animal kills a person, that person or animal must be put to death. This creates a healthy respect in the society, so no one will be inclined to kill again. This wouldn't

completely stop murder – but it would cause a hindrance to the aggressive ones. Societies needed to be protected from murderers. There will be no repeat murder in God’s school.

Today, convicted murderers can wait twenty years before they are put to death. On the other hand, when a vicious animal kills a human, they are put to death within a day or two. This was God’s fourth doctrinal change in His method of teaching. A murderer, if proven or if he/she confesses to the crime, should not be spared for years and years. This is intrinsically unjust, when considering the rights of the victim. By the time Israel came along as a nation and was directed by Moses, a new teaching method was once again adopted by God. No longer would God use Prophets to instruct people *one on one*. Rather, you find, now, a nation was involved in this very different process.

God had to issue a textbook for Salvation. It was called *The Torah* – known in Hebrew as “*the way*” or “*the path*.” Because His people still didn’t want to learn or obey, God would need to add further instructions to *The Torah*.

When God gave them His *Ten Commandments*, orally, He knew they still had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29). Sure enough, when Moses went to meet with God on the mountain for forty days, Israel worshipped the golden calf down below. They did this even though they knew God’s Commandments would forbid any *idolatry*. God was ready

to lead them and be their *teacher*. Israel did *not want to learn*, so God didn't lead them. He doesn't force anyone. Once again, He had to institute *The Old Covenant* (only to Israel) because their hearts led them to follow the wrong paths (Deuteronomy 5:3).

That is why Paul said, "*The Law, with its curses, was made for the unrighteous or criminals with a wrong heart*" (I Timothy 1:7-10 and Deuteronomy 28). The Israelites could not enter God's rest or The Promised Land until they were tested in the wilderness. *The Book of Deuteronomy* was added to *The Torah* and then, *The Torah* or *The Way* had a codified law to include God's people – the bad and the good. No longer would God lead them. He appointed an angel, not as a teacher but as a judge (Exodus 23:20-21).

God would still teach them through Moses, as this instruction came through God's glory from The Tabernacle. Israel, who had a wrong heart, now had a judge (an angel) to watch them (Hebrews 3:8-10). Once again God changes His *doctrine* or *way of teaching*. This was God's fifth doctrinal change.

Jesus, The Author

When Christ came, a totally new doctrinal teaching was to be instituted. This was after He paid for everyone's sins. Now the curse of *The Law* was removed and grace (mercy) was given in its place. "*For the law was given by Moses, but grace* [mercy]

and truth came by Jesus Christ" (John 1:17). This is God's sixth doctrinal change. No longer is *The Old Covenant Law* in force along with its curses. Now, Jesus was the genesis of a new method of doctrinal teaching, which would lead them to the truth. With this *New Covenant* or *teacher's contract* all set, *The Old Covenant doctrine* would vanish away. This happened in 70 A.D. with the destruction of The Temple (Hebrews 8:13).

God's new doctrine of teaching actually writes His Law in your heart and mind without *The Letter of The Law*. *The Letter of The Law* only outlines for you the definition of sin (Hebrews 10). By God's Holy Spirit changing your heart, you can be taught The Truth through Christ, The Author of Salvation (Romans 5:5, Philippians 2:12 and Hebrews 12:2).

This sixth doctrinal change occurred when God removed the judge of *The Old Covenant*. Now, instead, God teaches Christians with His chosen new teacher, His Son, Christ (Hebrews 1:1-2). This new teacher is qualified to teach you since He has the experience of having lived what He now preaches. What a doctrinal change! *The New Covenant* or doctrine (teaching) guarantees success by means of having a tutor and a teacher – which are The Holy Spirit and Christ! Wow! The seventh doctrinal change to come is for World Salvation. It can be found under the teaching about The New Heaven and The New Earth. This is where everyone will finally have access to *the restored* Tree of Life. There will be the healing leaves for all the

saved nations. This tree and the leaves accompany God's Fountain of Life. Always remember how truth comes only through Christ (John 1:17).

Grace or mercy is given to everyone who confesses before God. Then Salvation will be made available to everyone in The Kingdom of God (Romans 10:10). Truths, creeds and doctrines will then be simple to understand *scripturally*. God has indeed planned a wonderful eternal life for you. Truth comes from Christ through *grace*. Your only creed should be focused on Jesus, the only foundation upon which you will need to emulate and grow.

CHAPTER 5

A GUARANTEED SYSTEM

Throughout the world, when God teaches His children, He does it with a perfect plan in mind (Psalm 24:1-2). It is time for you to put God's all inclusive puzzle together. God's *word* is what will set you free, so you can be in The Kingdom of God. This process includes God's *creeds* and *doctrines*.

The Puzzle

The puzzle of God is called The Mystery of God. Satan always attempts to confuse God's *mystery* by sowing his tares among God's growing seeds (Matthew 13). The tares comprise the deception Satan sows. Eve believed Satan when he told her she could eat of any tree in The Garden of Eden (in particular – The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil). She was only told she would know the difference between good and evil. She had no idea she would die. Adam followed his wife by also eating the fruit. Both were now left to themselves to decide right from wrong. This was the beginning of The Mystery of Babylon. Long after The Flood (3,000 – 2,500 B.C.) at The Tower of Babel, everyone spoke one language. They stood united and began to build The Tower of Babel to accompany their heathen worship. God ended this union for a very good reason. He confused their languages

and divided the nations worldwide. Why is this? Read Genesis 11:6. Human nature does not and cannot know good or evil without God. Humans, left to themselves, are in a state of *Babylon*. *The tares of Satan* had been sown worldwide and are still being sown.

The Torah

The Torah did not become God's Law until four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. This codified *Torah* was added to *The Original Torah*, which then became *The Torah Law* (Galatians 3:17). Moses wrote the first five books of *The Bible* from Genesis to Deuteronomy. The definition for the two words of "*The Torah*" in Hebrew and Greek, merely means "*the way*" or "*the path.*" But, it is the path to what? It is *The Law*, or all *The Torah* which was added and is included in The Book of Deuteronomy. This was now known as *The Old Covenant* (Galatians 3:24 and Deuteronomy 5:3).

The Old Covenant was added to *The Torah* (the way or path) because Israel had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29). They needed homework or perhaps time in a corner to mull over what they had done wrong and make a decision never to do that particular sin again. Israel proved they had a wrong heart by worshipping *the golden calf*. God then had to add *The Law of Moses* because all Israel was unrighteous. Then, *The Torah* became a law so the unrighteous could be led to The Path or The Way. The Way declares how *The Torah Law* was

designed to lead them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). Christ is *The Torah* or *The Way*.

Christ, The Way

With *The Added Law of Moses*, *The Torah* made it possible for the unrighteous to find Salvation along with *the righteous*. God made a path for the whole world to follow, so the people could eventually be saved. God sent His Son, Jesus, so they could be saved (I John 4:14). Christ came to give grace (forgiveness/mercy) and truth (John 1:17). *The Law*, brought by Moses, was meant to bring you to Christ. Only Jesus, The Christ, brought mercy and truth. You have discovered how truth is defined as God's *word*. It will make you free. You will become a Son of God through adoption from your human parents. (Read the book, *Sons Of God*). Jesus was crucified and through His sacrifice, He paid for the sins of the world. You don't need The Letter of *The Law* with its works to bring you to perfection (Ephesians 4:11-13). Jesus is The Author or Way to Salvation. With this *gift* from Christ of God's Holy Spirit, He writes His Laws in your heart and mind. The Letter of The Law is no longer needed as God changes your human nature from *an all-too-human mind* into The Mind of Christ (Philippians 2:5). The Mystery of God is revealed, which is Christ – "*In You*" (Colossians 1:27). You can possess Christ's heart and mind by God's love, which is given to you by His Holy Spirit (Romans 5). Your creed is now Christ – "*In You*" which is The Foundation of God. *The Way* is

The Doctrine of Christ. Christians are The Temple of God (1 Corinthians 3). Paul said, “*There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh [Babylon], but after the Spirit*” (Romans 8:1). Through Christ, you receive grace/mercy and truth. “*For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh [Babylon], God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh*” (Romans 8:3). Through *The Law of Christ*, God gives Christians freedom from death to become The Very Sons of God. These are the ones who are led by The Spirit of God (Romans 8:14). By following Christ through The Holy Spirit, you have The True Creed, which is Christ – “*In You.*” You also have the doctrines or teachings for everyone to be in The Kingdom of God. Your only creed should be Christ, who will give you *truth*. You need to concentrate only on what is important (which is Christ – “*In You*”). Let the carnal and the unrighteous argue about doctrine. You have more important matters which you must attend to. You have to make sure you steer yourself to follow God, your Father and Christ, your Brother. It’s a big job – but with Christ “*In You,*” you can do it. *The light* at the end of *the tunnel* is so fabulous you must never, ever, take it for granted. It’s to your advantage to ask God to help you to be prepared for The First Resurrection. God, Christ, The Angels and *The Bible* are there as tutors to help you to grow so you can pass the tests and finally obtain God’s mind – “*In You.*” Then you can be in God’s *kingdom*, eternally. You and God can walk together because you, Christ and God are in complete agreement (Amos 3:3).

HOUSE OF GOD

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 9

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *HOUSE OF GOD*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple – Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christians Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

God's Image – Vol. XIV

Seeking God

God's Free Choice

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
PARADISE LOST	1
WHAT IS PARADISE	7
FROM PHYSICAL TO SPIRIT	13
CHRIST'S SPIRITUAL TEMPLE	19
PAUL'S THIRD HEAVEN	25
GOD'S CLOTHES	31
GOD'S LOVE	37
LOVE FULFILLS THE LAW	43
EVERLASTING COVENANT	49
GOD'S EXPANDING HOUSE	57
THE END A NEW BEGINNING	63

PREFACE

God smiled when David wanted to build a house for Him. Moses was told when he builds God's house to make it specifically like God told him.

Christ said even when one builds a house, make sure it is of stone to withstand all forces and not crumble. Spiritually building a house has a great purpose unknown by humans or angels.

This book is entirely free and no money is accepted. Use your funds to aid the orphans, widows and those who are truly poor or helpless.

Comments and criticisms are appreciated.

There are, now, three new CDs. They are in PDF format, which allows you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God's Puzzle Solved, Part I, II, III, IV and V. CD #2: 29 Other Books. CD #3: Articles on various subjects.

We are sorry if countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for packages containing these books. Perhaps requesting CDs will be the answer.

**Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Website: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Articles)**

INTRODUCTION

A house is a place where one or more people live. It not those who live in the House. God has allowed people to build a place for Him to dwell.

God, by man's works, has lived in a tent known as a tabernacle, a stone house not hewn with cut stones, and finally a man-made temple cut out of stone. God seems very particular.

Paul in Hebrews 9 speaks of God's House as divine and with exact parts and furniture as the House of God in heaven.

God's House has a hidden mystery behind it and even Ezekiel's House of God during the millennium has detailed requirements.

Paul disclosed one aspect of this House that actually begins with God's original house in heaven because something happened to it in the beginning.

PAUL'S VISION

Paul, in II Corinthians 12:1-5, writes he knew a man once, whether in spirit or body he didn't know, but this man found himself up in God's House in the Third Heaven. He actually was in Paradise. Paul said this he believes and gloried in it because he actually saw things unlawful to talk about.

This Paradise in heaven was secret and to be a mystery. This was a mystery of God. Years later, Paul tells Timothy about a house, but there was something

wrong with it, “*But in a great house there are many vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth, and some to honour, [highly treasured] and some to dishonour [valueless]*” (II Timothy 2:20).

First, Paul warns Timothy this is not a small house but great and massive. The subject is how to behave in this huge house, “*If a man purge himself from there, he shall be a vessel to honour, sanctified [annointed] and meet [ready] for the Master’s use, and prepared to every good work*” (II Timothy 2:21).

Wow! This House of God is how God makes you in His Image. This Temple House is Salvation in the Kingdom of God. Paul earlier told who this House was, “*But if I tarry long, that you may know how to behave yourself in the house of God, Which is the church of the living [eternal] God, the pillar and ground of truth [God’s Word]*” (John 17:17) (I Timothy 3:15).

Now you know not only is this house massive, but it is also corrupt and needs to be purged. This house is God’s Church which needs to grow in God’s truth which is God’s Word.

This house is a mystery, “*And without controversy [debate] great is the mystery of godliness: God [Christ] was manifest [a human] in the flesh, justified in the Spirit [perfect], seen of angels, preached to the Gentiles, [without God] believed on in the world, received to glory*” (I Timothy 3:16).

My, my, the House of God in Paradise is huge. It isn’t a five-hundred square foot house or a 1500-mile square foot house or in New Jerusalem. It is larger

and larger until there is no end. It is God's Kingdom and therefore infinite.

How great is God. The House of God is the Temple of God. I Corinthians 3:16 the church of God is God's Temple because God's people are those who have God's Holy Spirit.

WHO DOES THE PURGING

“Flee also [run] youthful lusts: [stay away] but follow righteousness [God's] faith [in Christ – God] charity, [loving to help] peace, [don't argue] with them that call on the Lord out of a pure [honest] heart. But foolish and unlearned [lack the truth] questions avoid, knowing that they do gender [grow] strifes [harm]. And the servant of the Lord must not strive [fight], but be gentle to all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth. And that they recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive at his will” (II Timothy 3:22-26).

Even the ministry aren't to be dogmatic, forcing their flock to believe all they know or do not know. You are to be servants helping others but not telling them what to do. Humans purge your sins by being faithful, loving, and serving. Those are to be the works of the church of God, as examples but not overlords.

GOD'S HEART

King David was a man after God's heart. He was a terrible sinner, but behaved like God in his heart. God

is love, therefore always ready to forgive. His mercy does not tolerate sin and therefore will not give mercy until one is ready to change how they think and honor and respect God to obey His voice like Abraham.

Read all of Psalm 51, where David repents as well as showing the heart he had like God. David wanted God to purge him and make him whiter than snow, no matter what he had to do.

God's Great House mixed with good, bad and not so bad needs to be purged. Only God with Christ does the purging. Your works are to be teachable as babes, ready to be taught by your Father so you can live in His Holy House Eternally, a Paradise.

CHAPTER 1

PARADISE LOST

When did God's house become dishonorable? History is prophecy after it happens. History is God's Story how God makes you in His Image.

THE REBELLION

In the beginning the devil's angels did not have a war with God and his angels but were in rebellion. Jude clearly tells what happened, "*And the angels which kept not their first estate but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day*" (Jude 6).

The historical account in *The Book of Enoch* describes this revolution, insidious and deceptive under Satan's clever intellect. He took one third of the angels with this rebellion. Angels, as many of God's Prophets viewed them divine until the angel of God would only claim he was a fellow servant like Daniel (Hebrews 1:14).

Satan and his angels wanted to be like God as divine beings (Isaiah 14:13-14). Their contact with humans who knew not God easily accepted them as divine, "*Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write to you of the common [known] Salvation, it was needful for me to*

write to you, and exhort you that you should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered to the Saints. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of pld [ancients] ordained [prepared] to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, [evil] and denying the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ” (Jude 3-4).

Quite complete. With angels foreordained to be in revolt and viewed as divine you now have many gods, polytheism, to worship fighting other gods.

Egypt to Greece duplicated these religious views and it became their philosophy of life. Rome copied the Greek teaching into their religion having a high priest, Pontius Maximus, just like Egypt.

These were gnostic teachings who crept into God’s churches as Jude disclosed. By the end of the first century, Christian churches were in Babylon.

DREAMS AND VISIONS

There are dreams and visions that are of God or Satan, *“Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh [bodies], despise dominion and speak evil of dignities” (Jude 8).*

Satan has made an image which looked like Christians but was in Babylon. Paradise was lost. Now the world has two mysteries to solve Satan’s and God’s.

The Apostle Paul said they held the truth of God in

unrighteousness. The world from ancient times now worshipped the creation instead of the Creator (Romans 1).

The Mystery of God and the mystery of Satan are hard to distinguish. Both have Saviors and are compassionate on the surface, always acting as they are concerned for the good of mankind like Eve with Satan.

Angels whether good or bad can influence humans. You call it demon possession. Both angels God's and Satan's can influence humans by dreams and visions. True people of God must take Jude's words to heart seriously.

All the world is in Babylon as Christ warned His people to come out of Babylon. Christians and Messianic Jews can be deceived and even involved in this evil world (Revelation 18:4).

HISTORY OF GOD'S HOUSE

From the genesis of the creation, corruption of God's great house was underway. It contained both vessels of honor and dishonor from angels to the earth including humanity.

By the first century after Christ, gnostic teaching gained supremacy of God's churches. Dead sea scroll gnostic manuscripts, Egyptian, Ethiopian, Jewish and others.

By the end of the first century, one could choose the

church of their choice. God's House badly needed a house cleaning. Satan and his angels were making inroads, polluting the truth given to the saints of old.

THE GREAT FALLING AWAY

Between 100 to 300 C.E., the churches were in Babylon where they were killing each other. Constantine came along as a Savior by force uniting God's churches with Greek teaching and made Old Rome its head.

Now Satan built a new beast not from the Great Sea, but an image of those before it (Revelation 13). To our contemporary time, this earthly beast like a lamb and a dragon combined dominated the earth.

Charlemagne, Napoleon, Hitler and more to come were prophesied. The end of days will see this image of the beast destroyed by The Messiah on his feet made of iron (strong militarily) and clay (weak and human) (Daniel 2). Christ decimates the final anti-Christ.

THE BIG QUESTION

God's House is a growing entity. Christ told you His Father's House is for all people. How big does that house have to be?

God's House has a temple where God and The Son live (Revelation 21:22). Some will be pillars with many other chambers. There are two great courts. One is for The Israelites as guests. The other is for Gentiles as guests.

Solomon's porch allows guests to visit as well. The foundation is for the twelve original twelve apostles (Revelation 21). How many once the temple and its area is cleansed can the House of God handle?

On earth it started as a tabernacle with The Holy of Holies. In Herod's day, it was really considered to be large and beautiful. The problem is that it was a business and full of bribery and corruption. There were no honorable vessels.

Paradise was lost. God continually has to start over and over with His House. Each time The New House as Solomon's Temple had a wonderful beginning when he asked for wisdom.

In the end, Israel and Judah corrupted the temple both ending in captivity with Judah to return from Babylon to rebuild the House of God.

Christianity corrupted itself even by building a spiritual house which was The Church of God. The story repeats itself and The Churches of God end up dishonorable as well.

God is surely patient and loving to be so long suffering. Thousands of years have gone by and God's House in spirit isn't ready for God to dwell in Paradise.

CHAPTER 2

WHAT IS PARADISE?

God is perfect, powerful, and Holy as well. God is a lover of pleasure. In Ephesians 1:4, Paul writes God is the one who has many spiritual blessings (Ephesians 1:3).

He gives you these blessings or gifts because he wants you to be Holy, without blame (sinless) and in His love (Ephesians 1:4). Why?

GOD'S PLEASURE

Everyone likes fun or to have pleasure. God's House and pleasure are one and the same. Humans enjoying their lives and having pleasure is happiness.

Happiness is an elusive reality for humanity. As people on earth will attest, happiness which gives pleasure differs with each person alive.

How is Paradise eternally possible with such diversity of thought and emotions? Babylon is confusion because each person is so diverse from one another. Is a perpetual Paradise possible for everyone?

Humans constantly run to and fro, dreaming up what is happiness so you can achieve pleasure.

Ecclesiastes, the preacher is Solomon writing about human life and the best it can be. God granted Solomon wisdom to know how to rule the nation of Israel.

Being king and super-wealthy, he tried all of what human existence can achieve. Knowledge, adventure, folly, partying, sports, and every human possibility for paradise and pleasure he tells us the best human life can be. Above all, he realized your physical existence has no purpose in itself. Over and over he claimed the best of our earthly life is vanity as for on useful purpose. Read Ecclesiastes prayerfully and with deep thought.

The best your human experience can achieve was very simple. The preacher summarizes the best human life can be. *“Go your way [your choice], Eat your bread with joy [good food], and drink your wine [no stress] with a merry heart [optimistic]; for God now accepts your works [industrious]. Let your garments [clothed] be always white [goodness], and let your head lack no ointment [active]. Live joyfully with the wife whom you love all the days of the life of your vanity, [one wife] which he has given you under the sun, [too many wives trouble] all the days of your vanity; for that is the portion [purpose] in this life, and in your labor [work] which you take under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do [life’s work], Do it with your might; [dedicated] for there is no work or device [imagine] nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither you go”* (Ecclesiastes 9:7-10).

That is the best human living can do. This life was not

meant to succeed but to learn. You were made human to be in God's Image. That is the real goal of your physical lives.

The best as humans that you can do, Solomon finalized in Ecclesiastes 12:13-14, when your life is completed on earth your human bodies return to the Earth as dust and your spirit goes back to God who gave it. Read with all your God-given abilities the only way God intended you to get the most out of this meaningless existence is very clear, "*Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter [human existence]: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the duty [responsibility] of man [human works]*" (Ecclesiastes 12:13). Humanity cannot by its deeds and works achieve anything more by their efforts to be good. Why? "*For God shall bring every work [human] into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil*" (Ecclesiastes 12:14).

Humans as with Adam and Eve cannot know what is good or bad. All your religious human deeds are for nothing. Just like using a prayer wheel to spin around to hasten the number of your prayers.

You can do nothing, keep nothing of yourselves because in the end it is vanity which is of no profit to God or anyone else. That's the point of this life.

Keeping the fear of God and His *Commandments* grants you the best human life you can have, but no Salvation. Why not? Very simply. It doesn't produce a Paradise Eternally. God from the beginning is

the real answer for an Eternal Paradise and that is to let God make you into His image by your free choice (Genesis 1:26).

***The Ten Commandments* and their works never change you they do guarantee the best human life can be. Should you keep them, yes, as Solomon said, it is your duty by God. It in the resurrection does not make you God's sons, like Christ.**

The Mystery of God solved is being in Christ, the Hope of Glory (Colossians 1:27). Why? Only then can you be part of an Eternal Paradise because you will be like Christ who is like God. You must be in God's image for God to know His House will be an Eternal Paradise.

God is a special spirit of which there is only one. His Son, The Messiah was His Firstbegotten as you will be as well. The only way for you to be like God and Christ is to let Him make you in His Image.

GOD'S IMAGE

What is paradise? It is a spiritual state and condition. Paradise is not a place but a way of being in God's image. The House of God in reality must be perfect, holy and unblemished, just like God.

God's House is beautiful and gorgeous beyond human belief or even what the angels know. Spirit is internal and external to be the House of God for God to guarantee an Eternal Paradise.

Enoch, the seventh prophet of God, found himself in the seventh heaven and said God was the most beautiful being he had ever seen beyond any description.

How glorious. God and His greatness and beauty is beyond description. Can one imagine all of humanity looking like Christ and God! Wow!

PARADISE FOUND

Matthew 18:11 your Savior came to restore what was lost. The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life and its healing waters need to be restored.

Only those who are perfect become holy when resurrected and clothed in God's glory, appearing as a duplicate of your Father who looks like a rainbow. His orderly values of colors blending into themselves from white to bronze is what the Bride of Christ will look like. They are Christ's Bride but your Father's sons, just like His First Begotten Son, The Christ. Hallelujah!

Then and only then are you in Paradise spiritually in all its glory of goodness. As sons of God who never need rest except to appreciate your works as God did and say it is very good.

Paradise is a most fruitful place with God, Christ and His Bride being productive, profitable bringing more sons to glory exhilarating everyone like the angels who sing for joy on that first day and God said it was good. Matthew 7 your Savior said you shall know them by

their fruits. No laziness, unprofitability, no blaming others, just sons of God contributing to God's House and Kingdom.

What began in a Garden to a tabernacle (tent) to a building now has an Eternity to grow and always becomes more than it is.

CHAPTER 3

FROM PHYSICAL TO SPIRIT

Christ told you Spirit is not flesh and flesh is not Spirit. You know you are flesh because you are flesh and experience it.

You have no idea what Spirit is, since only God and the angels are spirit beings. God is making you in His image and He is a Spirit which makes you need to know how that happens.

MIND AND BODY

What is a being? Simple English words which must be understood to know what the word really means. Shakespeare said, "To be, or not to be, that is the question." Well said.

To be, or not to be, is merely to exist. A being is one therefore who exists. That is quite broad and very general. In Genesis, God called it, kind after kind. That covers a lot. There are many kinds, forms, types, abilities, etc.

Human kind, a human being, exists as a human and nothing else. Other beings or species vary widely. A spirit being is entirely foreign to you, since you do not know any. That is why Christ said you need to com-

pare physical things to spiritual to comprehend the spiritual (John 3).

The Apostle Paul told you the invisible (spiritual) things of God are clearly seen in the physical universe (Romans 1). Christ and Paul knew God created the physical because it is an image of the spiritual.

There is a spiritual dimension which exists just like the physical. Science calls them dimensions demanding different systems of measurement. Each functions by different laws. Physical laws do not apply to spiritual and vice versa.

Humans do not understand or know what laws or what their substance is. Only God knows how He created the spiritual world or even His own eternal spiritual being. He is the only one who has life and even gave it to Christ (John 5:16).

You also have in another spiritual dimension like Christ another spiritual existence.

PHYSICAL KIND

Physical species as you know vary. Birds are not beasts and beasts are not fishes. All have life, but differ in D.N.A.

Humans were created the sixth day with the animal kingdom. What sets you apart? The human mind is not like the animal mind. The human intellect can actually create and imagine like God.

Homo sapiens differ on an intellectual level. Animals can be trained to do many human activities but cannot reason to create new entities like we humans. What is the difference?

Job 32:8 writes God puts a spirit in man, which gives you the ability to understand. Quite clear. The difference between mankind and animals is you have a spiritual power within you which grants you power to imagine new creations. You are not merely humanoids or Homo erectus like Neanderthal man who walk upright, but Homo sapiens can be able to imagine new nonexistent creation.

Adam and Eve were the first Homo sapiens when God breathed His breath into Adam's nostrils. Eve came from Adam therefore having that spiritual power within her. Homo sapiens have physical bodies like any animal, but also have a spirit in you. Romans 8 discusses you initially began completely useless, not inventive, like any animal. When God gave Adam His spiritual energy, he became the first Homo sapien, animal and god-like. Humans, having spiritual power, can imagine new creations but has one spiritual weakness. You lack the ability to know good and evil. Unless you test your logic and thoughts to experience what is harmful, you do not have the ability to know the difference between good and evil. The best humans can do is guess.

WHAT HUMANITY LACKS

Not having the natural ability to know what to avoid

or do, you stumble through life making many errors which produce many painful and horrible ideas for right and wrong. You, left to yourselves and your own way of thinking, end up causing much harm like war.

Jesus from birth was given God's Holy Spirit which gave Christ the ability to have God's power, love, and His sound mind (II Timothy 2:7). The Holy Spirit is God's voice speaking to you and revealing God's Truth (Romans 8:14). You are then God's Sons to become in His image.

From complete physical animal beings, you as Homo sapiens can by the spirit in man have understanding, but need God's Holy Spirit to know good and evil which is the truth.

For God to make you in His image is an evolutionary process to become like God and ultimately all spirit, like God.

Summarizing, you are born from the animal kingdom and then given the spirit in man as humans to realize your weakness to tell good from evil is lacking.

You repeat, wanting and desiring to change the way you think to God's mind by His Holy Spirit. You are still human even though with God's Holy Spirit you know better. Your flesh is still weak to keep sinning.

POWER OF FAITH

You no longer need a law to tell you sin since The Holy

Spirit now leads you to the truth, even to know prophecy (John 14-17). Knowing the truth by God's Holy Spirit now trust or faith in God is required instead of a law. You still sin but by Christ's sacrifice you are forgiven when you sin when you repent.

Faith looks to Christ and your Father for making you in God's image. Psalm 51 is David who was a true sinner instantly repented praying to keep God's Holy Spirit and forgive him from his sins.

You need to remain faithful till your death and resurrection to be completely spirit by God's glory which is God's goodness. The flesh no longer exists and sin is also dead and you are completely spirit like God in His image.

Faith builds substance (reality) for both the new Son of God and for God Himself with Christ (Hebrews 11:1).

As your faith grows, as God teaches you by His spirit, you find God is with you knowing how God changes you you increase your faith.

God likewise observes your faith in Him and continues your growth because you are teachable. God has more faith in you. God's trust in you makes Him a friend and He tells you any changes He intends to do.

Christ, when you sin and He observes your repentance, is more willing to forgive your sins by His blood. The entire system of spiritual growth increases your power to become perfect like Him and God. You are growing

in God's image. You know as you remain faithful you are saved.

You started as part of the animal kingdom and motivated by survival of the fittest devouring everyone. You've grown from an animal to increase to a creative being to perfection. You are then part of Christ and God in you. You need one more step to be clothed as Christ.

GOD'S HOUSE

This is how God's House is cleansed with vessels of honor. Each person is responsible for purging their own sins. You become like God and can become His Bride. When Jesus returns all accept Him to be resurrected in God's Glory. God's House with all those becoming personal friends of God as His sons increase His House and Temple.

CHAPTER 4

CHRIST'S SPIRITUAL TEMPLE

What is a spiritual temple? God is a spiritual temple. To be in God's image is to be a spiritual temple, God's Holy House.

God can be whatever He chooses to be. As the One God, He is everyone's Father, including Christ.

The invisible things of God are clearly seen and known by every thing in the universe. God is Elohim because He is everything that is. He is one body with numerous parts.

THE BODY OF CHRIST

Your Messiah is every word of God without measure. To be like Jesus is to be like God, Father of all. God is the temple and with Christ being in His exact image as God's word He is the temple as well.

Jesus was fathered by God but you were adopted from human parents. Eternal Life is a gift but your works decide your reward.

Jesus from birth was Holy because He received the Holy Spirit from birth (Luke 1:35). You were not. As God's word from His birth, He was God's body.

You by adoption have the gift of Eternal Life but your works are rewarded to be a part of the body of Christ and The Father.

You find by faith you grow spiritually to receive your reward. You can be a hand, foot, ear, eyes, or any part you spiritually grow to be.

Christ is all the body of God and you therefore are parts of that same body by your works (I Corinthians 15:23).

God is The Temple and Christ as the Word of God is the chief cornerstone made without human hands but by the complete measure of God's Spirit. By the Holy Spirit He was God from Christ's birth.

His human body was flesh as a Son of Man but God The Father was in Him totally from birth. As you say He was "a chip off the old block," The Ancient of Days.

The entire House of God had to become exactly as the chief corner stone. No other foundation can be laid (I Corinthians 3:11).

Christ in you demands you be perfect like your Savior. Perfection is the goal of *The New Covenant*, "*With man [human effort] it is impossible but with God all things are possible*" (Matthew 19:26).

Only God can reproduce Himself. God always does the work even with Jesus, The Son of Man (John 5:19).

You, by adoption, receive only an earnest, a portion of God's Spirit. That is why you only know in part. You can only be a part of the body of Christ and therefore a part of your Father's body, "You also, as lively stones [eternal] are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood [Melchizedek], to offer up spiritual sacrifices [I Peter 1:5-8] acceptable to God by Jesus Christ" (I Peter 2:5).

MANY MEMBERS

"For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office [works – responsibility]: So, we being many [beings], are one body in Christ, and every one members [separate] one of another... Having gifts [abilities] differing according to the grace [mercy] that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy [preach] according to the proportion of faith... or ministry, let us wait [do] on our ministering: or he that teaches, on teaching; Or he that exhorts, [warn] on exhortation; he that gives [helps], let him do it with simplicity; he that rules [in charge], with diligence [disciplined]; he that shows mercy, with cheerfulness" (Romans 12:4-8).

The one body in Christ, though diversified denominationally, must each use their diversities as if the entire body is one. How can that be?

UNITED BODY

"Let love be without dissimulation [separated]. Abhor [avoid] that which is evil; cleave [hold on] to that which

is good [no harm]. *Be kindly affectioned* [desire] *one to another with brotherly* [family] *love; in honour* [respect] *preferring one another*" (Romans 12:9-10).

Though Christ's body be widely diversified even in prophetic understanding, Christian works and abilities yet the glue that binds the body is love above all.

Even your differences cannot separate you in any way for you all have the same kind of mind, "*Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things* [superior], *but condescend* [humble] *to men of low* [meager] *estate, Be not wise* [superior] *in your own conceits* [ego]" (Romans 12:16).

Too many Christian groups believing in harmony demean others in Christ demanding only they have God's Truth.

Romans 12 and I Corinthians 12, Paul said exactly the opposite. The uniting gifts of God, given the diversity of understanding and works, should be loving each other instead of being alien to each other.

The only ones who should be rejected are trouble makers, causing division in the whole body. After the first and second warning, they should be avoided.

Anyone doing harm to each other, whether fornicating, stealing, etc., should be told to stop or leave the body.

The Church of God should only have brotherly love

causing no harm to the world and especially the family of God. Spiritual gifts to understand prophecy or a giving person who is blessed are of God on an individual basis.

SALVATION

God is making each man (human) in His image which because of each person's differences vary widely. If each of you have brotherly love one toward another and do not cause harm to the body of Christ in any way, though understanding differs, they should be highly esteemed in the body so they as individuals are free to grow at their own pace as God decides. You are not to be a church of vengeance.

Paul is very clear about this spiritual point. *“Dearly beloved, avenge [against] not yourselves, but rather give place to wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine, I will repay [make right], said the Lord. Therefore, if your enemy hunger, feed him, if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good [no harm]”* (Romans 12:19-21). There is your Biblical answer clearly.

Christians, though differing, as long as it doesn't harm anyone, should love one another and highly respect varieties of understanding.

THE HOUSE OF GOD

God's spiritual temple with Christ The Chief Corner-

stone is your example of God's very words to become perfect. That is the difference between God's people purging themselves as opposed to a church denominationally doing the purging.

Only God should bestow vengeance because only He knows each person's heart.

Christ's spiritual temple, God's house, has a variety of vessels in it. Some are of dishonor (weak) and others are honorable. Everyone in God's house must purge themselves or be marked for God's vengeance.

CHAPTER 5

PAUL'S THIRD HEAVEN

Paul wrote about God's great House to Timothy. He made that house less than perfect. God is Holy, perfect, and good. He is making you in His image. This is a process and therefore you are not Holy, perfect, or good instantly. You need to study this great house and how God makes every vessel in it honorable.

TEN HEAVENS

When God unites heaven and earth as one, God's House only will then be perfect. Studying *The Bible* with all *The Covenant* changes with various people, nations, empires, and races can really be mayhem to comprehend.

Picking one *Covenant* with its laws can be a sin in itself. We could be burying God's talent. God demands that you keep making profit to be in His image. For God's House ultimately must be in His exact image.

Each vessel, singularly, must work out their own Salvation as Paul wrote in Philippians 2:12. To do so your Father has a very large house.

The Prophet Enoch in his books and Isaiah both expe-

rienced that God has Ten Heavens. These Ten Heavens reveal the total of God's present House.

- 1) Heaven one – earth's atmosphere.**
- 2) Second heaven – darkness of space.**
- 3) Third heaven – Paul wrote is where Paradise is located (II Corinthians 12:1-5).**
- 4) Fourth to seventh heavens – expand God's House that in the seventh heaven is God's Throne.**
- 5) Eighth, ninth, and tenth heavens – are all empty for future growth.**

God's present House has its second heaven all in the darkness of space where outer darkness has God's prison. God's light can reveal all of God's house even His second heaven which is also a prison. It is "tartaroo" in Greek, a second hell.

Hell number one is "sheol" in Hebrew, which is the grave, when all die. Hell number two is tartaroo, Satan's hell, where he and his angels are imprisoned from time to time which is age to age.

The third hell is gehenna, which is a valley south of the temple in Jerusalem during Christ's time on earth. It was the city dump that at The End of Days grows into the hell of The White Throne Judgment. As God descends, this city dump because of God being a con-

suming fire ignites the entire universe to be burned and destroyed. God becomes The Lake of Fire at The End of Days (Deuteronomy 32:22).

GOD'S PROPHETS

Many of God's prophets in dreams and visions God disclosed these ten heavens. From Enoch to Paul as well as Peter, James, John (Matthew 17) and Moses, Daniel and others, God revealed so they could prophesy.

According to mankind's needs at a particular time, God intervenes to help the world become like God and the house He dwells in at a particular age. God's love for His creation is primary. This is a large house even with a prison. Prophets only know in part as Paul wrote in I Corinthians 13:9. Each prophet has a specific commission by God for a particular need of God's people or for the whole world as in Noah's age.

- 1) Adam was the first Christ and Melchizedek order of Priesthood because of Adam and Eve's sin.
- 2) Abraham was shown his inheritance of the land of Canaan, as well as the genealogy of his people from Isaac to Jacob, (Israel) as God's people. These promises included the genealogy of The Messiah. It was based on His faith.
- 3) Moses saw in vision paradise and God's throne to lead Israel to the promised land.

- 4) Daniel was chosen as God's prophet in dreams to restore Judah and rebuild The Temple in Jerusalem.**

All prophets in *The Bible* fulfill God's purpose for everyone to be in God's Image. Until then, The Temple of God still has vessels of dishonor.

God even uses beast powers like Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon as God's Servant. God in dreams, like prophets of God, informed The King of Babylon to know future events. Daniel 2, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed a huge image with the head of gold was the king himself. Following this image had three other heads of this image to follow.

God informs not only His prophets of fulfilling a prophet's role but those Gentiles God at a period of time to fulfill His purpose.

You must remember God's initial house, after Adam and Eve's sin, was corrupt with vessels of honor and dishonor.

A CORRUPT HOUSE

From Adam and Eve's sin, the majority were vessels of dishonor. At one time or another, only one human obeyed God's voice like Noah, and Abraham. They had faith and always trusted God first and foremost.

At best of any group or tribe of people, only a remnant in varying degrees had faith and followed God and His

word. Throughout world history, every group claiming they follow God either used human interpretation for truth or were deceived by Satan and his followers, both angels and people.

God's initial earthly house was the entire world, "*The earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof; the world and they that dwell therein*" (Psalm 24:1). Quite simple. The whole world was God's property and every human in it. He loved them all since He was love. God's great house included every human on earth. Each thought and belief was an individual decision just like their forefathers as Adam and Eve.

It becomes easy to see the difficulty for God to make man in His image. Only God can do the work since He is the only one knowing good and evil. God being goodness immediately knows what is evil. The foundational premise must be love and the lack of its fruit was manifested. Anyone causing harm to anyone was the key and produced evil fruit. It was what Jesus said in Matthew 7. You shall know them by their fruit.

God's Holy House was a great house from Adam and Eve to your present time. God's House has too many of dishonor a very few of honor, a remnant.

MYSTERY OF GOD

Most followed Babylon in their human confusion. Even many of God's Servants are in Babylon. Christ trumpets, "*Come out of her, my people*" (Revelation 18:4). Wow!

The entire world was deceived and lured into following Satan. The Time of The Gentiles is their rule over world governments and religion. God allowed it just as He did with Neo-Babylon in King Nebuchadnezzar's time. God, if they listened and respected Him, worked with them.

When God's people by free choice, like Adam and Eve chose to follow their own Babylonian ways, God allows it for them to learn their way never works. Only death is the result which God can resurrect and start over. Christ plainly reveals why God makes His truth a mystery, *"He answered and said to them, Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. For whosoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever has not, from him shall be taken away even that He has"* (Matthew 13:11-12).

Only those few, the remnant, who deeply desire in their hearts to be taught will God reveal The Mystery of God's Kingdom. A remnant is what is a piece of a whole cloth. What cloth?

CHAPTER 6

GOD'S CLOTHES

Isaiah 40:22 God tells the prophet the earth is a circle with 360° and not flat. He declares the heavens of space is stretched out like a curtain, a piece of cloth dressing the space of heaven.

God dwells in the heavens hidden in space and beyond. By God's Spirit God lifts the curtain of space to see His kingdom.

DARKNESS OF SPACE

Adam and Eve as adults did not know they were naked. The Laodicean Church in Revelation 3 did not know they were spiritually naked.

Adam and Eve were physically naked where The Laodicean Church was spiritually naked. Neither were aware they were naked. Adam and Eve needed physical clothes, the other spiritual clothes.

In both cases they needed to be clothed. *The Bible* overall deals with the type of clothing you wear. God tells you the answer. What clothing did Adam and Eve Need? “*To Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them*” (Genesis 3:21).

Since they weren't beasts but humans why didn't He clothe them with more skin? God gives you the reason, "*And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take [pick] also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever*" (Genesis 3:22).

This is the same problem as The Laodicean Church. They couldn't know spiritual truths. Both as humans Adam and Eve as the Laodiceans thought they could survive by their own works.

They were told they would die and only Adam knew better but not Eve (II Timothy 2:13-14). Peter as well speaking of being human describes your human body as a tent, "*Yea, I think it meet [proper], as long as I am in this tabernacle [tent – temporary], to stir you up by putting you in remembrance; Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ has showed me*" (II Peter 1:13-14).

It's all about clothes. Born physical, God clothed Adam and Eve in animal skins. Paleontology claims it was leopard skins as beasts.

With death for certain in their future, it was survival of the fittest, like any animal. Not only did they have to struggle for survival, but protect themselves from wild animals.

Humans as you read, can intellectually understand but did not know right from wrong. They were born to sin without God.

The Laodiceans, not knowing good and evil, thought they knew it all spiritually as well but were also naked.

Physical beings including mankind are all like animals but which one? A lamb, ox, goat, lion, bear, or leopard or even worse like the last three all as one devouring beast. Those are the worst, The Mark of The Beast.

You need the right clothes like Jesus, The Lamb, gentle and non-violent, easily going to the death. That is why The Israelites eat a lamb for Passover.

God is making you in His image, just like Christ is at present (Hebrews 1). What kind of clothes does God wear?

As long as you are in darkness like space, you cannot see and therefore are not able to know the truth. You are truly naked but to do so you need to be able to see and hear the truth.

PROPER CLOTHING

What new garment do you need to be like God? Psalm 8:3-6 is a startling song about mankind's creation, "*When I consider your heavens [plural], the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars, which you have ordained [put in place]; What is man, that you are mindful of him? And the son of man [genealogy], that you visit [bother] him? For you have made him a little lower than the angels, and has crowned him [royalty] with glory [God's Goodness] and honor [high respect].*

You made him to have dominion over the works of your [God's] hands; you have put all things under his feet [control].”

You have just read how God makes you in His image like Christ. Your comparison with the angels is unique. How are you a little lower than the angels? Both have Spirits but you have one weakness, your flesh. You were created to sin because you do not know good and evil naturally. You therefore die at least once (Hebrews 9:27).

Your flesh leaves you naked as progeny of Adam and Eve. You have the wrong clothes, you can die. The earth is your training ground to become like God to be Sons of God like Him. You are to be kings and priests, royalty like God. Ultimately, like Christ you are over all things done by God's personal work. Each of you receives an earned personal reward by your individual works (Revelation 22:12-13).

SATAN IS PERFECT

Can a perfect being sin? Yes, “*You are the anointed [commissioned] cherub [archangel] that covers [God's throne]; and I [God] have set you so: you was upon the holy mountain of God [temple]; you has walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire [gems – diamonds], You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity [harm] was found in you”* (Ezekiel 28:14-15).

Satan was made perfect as God could have done with

you. Jesus The Son of Man was perfect as well. Satan and Christ knew the truth of who God was and His will and purpose. Both could have sinned. Christ by faith of His own free will with His human weaknesses always obeyed God.

He was like Abraham who always by faith obeyed God. Christ's difference was He always knew the truth by God's Holy Spirit in Him from birth. Abraham did not but still obeyed.

Satan from his beginning knew God's truth of the kingdom and Paradise. Satan knowing better by his free will chose to rebel against God. He truly is the father of lies, the worst of all beings, spirit and human.

God is awesome and perfect justice and goodness.

HOLY AND PERFECT

To be in God's image one must not only become perfect but also Holy. "Hagios" in Greek means totally unblemished in dress or covering, inside and out.

"Tsedaq" in Hebrew is one who is faithful but not necessarily holy, which is unblemished. To be faithful is to be like Abraham but still not Holy. The faithful are the guests at The Wedding Feast but are not The Bride.

Clear and simple. To be Holy exactly in God's image like Christ requires a holy garment completely unblemished internally (spiritually) and physically as

well. Outer garments and inner clothing must be absolutely pure without spot or wrinkle, just as the Levitical high priest portrayed.

His clothing had to be without any blemish, no matter how small. More than perfect in his ways, causing no harm is not enough but having no darkness (blemish) no ego or self interest.

The Mystery of God is “*Christ in you the hope of glory* [future of God’s Glory]” (Colossians 1:27). God’s glory is all of God’s goodness, nothing better, above perfection to succeed (Exodus 33:19).

God’s image can only be given by God because only He has it to give. You will be clothed and not naked with God’s glory of all goodness, “*That they [sons] all may be one; as you Father, are in me, and I in you, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me. And the glory [goodness] which you gave me I have given them; that they may be one [united], even as we are one*” (John 17:21-22).

CHAPTER 7

GOD'S LOVE

The King James translation of *The Bible* uses the word charity (giving) for God's love. God's love is a lot more than charity denoting a giving nature. We also know in Greek *The Bible* speaks of three loves: eros (passion-feelings), phileo, which is friendship, and agape, God's love. What is agape love?

GOD'S POWER, LOVE AND MIND

II Timothy 1:7 describes God's Holy Spirit as His power, love, and a sound mind. God's Holy Spirit is what God is and His various attributes. Besides being Almighty, He is loving and of a superior mind.

The Holy Spirit is three of God's cardinal and prime, personal capabilities. Power denotes supremacy of control. He is El Elyon, God of all Hosts.

A sound mind is His superiority of wisdom, logic and great mind. There is no equal. No S.A.T. for Him He is far beyond. Love of God, "agape" in Greek, is much more than passion, sociability and charity.

These three loves are in perfect wholeness and always function in harmony to reveal a right and perfect atti-

tude for every aspect of behavior. His Passion is never self thinking but always toward righteousness.

God, having no ego, self-directed, displaces anger for the good of all there is. This is only the limited understanding of the Greek. The reality would obviously be far more because God is without the slightest blemish.

WELLNESS

Jesus told us that a perfectly well man needs no physician. He came to restore the sick. Then He said He did not come to heal those who are whole, but those who are sick (Matthew 9:12-13). He came to show mercy to sinners to repent.

Sin, missing the mark in this case, relates to the well-being of the entire body, mind and spirit. Without flaw or a blemish. God's being has no birth marks, teenage blemishes or old age brown spots, or warts.

God's holiness is being completely well and whole from every aspect of being human. Humans are extremely limited as far as being a complete or whole being like God. God does not have one iota of less than perfect.

God experiences His existence always at a peak of His energy and wholeness. His pleasure, happiness and joy is beyond human comprehension. God therefore loves, agapé, to make Him in His image. That is agapé, God's love and undoubtedly more.

Without ego all motivation is toward perfection, the

best. Since God is not competitive to be the best because He already is and only experiences thankfulness wanting to share His goodness with everyone for their good.

Humans, when they appreciate hearing someone they care for is happy for the gift given to them makes you feel good throughout your being is an inkling how God feels.

GOD'S SENSES

You are limited to your five senses, which allow you to perceive. God has unlimited senses to experience joy, happiness, and pleasure. Wow! Wow! Even His words and mind have power to create. He can be here and there at the same time because He has not time, He is eternal. On and on you can go with what *The Bible* tells you God is. Remember, you only know in part.

Your five senses can only know what your God-given powers can conceive as real. God, being far beyond your human conceptions, there is no end of all His love really is.

Enoch, the seventh prophet of God when being before God's throne tries to describe God's awesome beauty and greatness but couldn't. God was so much as He wrote in one of His books that He said God was indescribable but that His five senses overwhelmed Enoch.

That is why only when God makes you like His Son

which is in the Father's image, you will only know God when you are exactly what He is (I Corinthians 13:12).

HUMAN VANITY

Humans over time know your time of feeling happy is limited. This physical existence can only know bliss and joy temporarily. It is extremely rare to come close to God's type love.

Your physical bodies are so limited that pleasure is just being at rest. God never rests from exhaustion, "*Behold, the Lord God will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold his reward is with him, and his work before him*" (Isaiah 40:10).

God is your loving Master who chooses to of you rewards or gifts but He does the work for you. That's love, "*He shall feed [Shepherd] his flock like a shepherd [fruitful]: he shall gather the lambs [gentle] with his arms, and carry them in his bosom [loving], and shall gently lead [lovingly] those that are young*" (Isaiah 40:11). Those like lambs will be blessed, protected, and cared for by God because of His love, "*Who has measured the waters in the hollow of his hand [or can] and meted out [measured] heaven with the span [space], and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure [how God created], and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in balance? Who has directed the Spirit [Holy Spirit] of the LORD, or being his counsellor has taught Him? With whom took he counsel [advice], and who instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgment*

[justice], *and taught him knowledge* [facts], *and showed to him the way of understanding?* *Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket* [vanity], *and are counted as the small dust of the balance* [scales]: *behold, he takes up the isles* [continents] *as a very little thing.* *And Lebanon* [forests] *is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts therefore of sufficient for a burnt offering.* *All nations* [world] *before him are as nothing* [vanity], *and they are counted to him less than nothing* [useless] *and vanity*” (Isaiah 40:12-17). Job got the same message. God, in all His love and caring sees human life as vain and useless, that is no profit.

Human nature pursues its false idols wrapped up in their own uselessness observes human existence as worthwhile. Idols as loving ourselves have no real value (Isaiah 40:18-20).

Didn't you know better (see reality and truth) that God who made your round earth and its foundation as well as space all stretched out as a curtain and continues its growth that all princes and it is judges (élite) as vanity. Finally, all withers and dies (black holes) (Isaiah 40:21-23). **Wow!**

EQUAL TO GOD

“To whom then will you liken me, or shall I be equal? said the Holy One. Lift up your eyes on high and behold who has created these things, that brings out their host by numbers [highest math]: *he calls them all by names by the greatness of his might* [Almighty], *for that he is strong in power* [Holy Spirit], *not one fails...Have*

you not known? Have you not heard [prophets] that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, faints not [tired], neither is weary? There is no searching of his understanding” (Isaiah 40:25-26 and 28).

Do you grasp the truth of who God is by His own words comparing it to humanity’s vanity?

Isaiah 40:29-30 God is The One who gives strength even to those youthful at the top of their energy. Even the young finally tire out.

When God rested on the seventh day, He didn’t do it because He needed to rest from His work as humans do, but actually to absorb the beauty and pleasure of His work.

Here is God’s future promise when He makes you in His image, “*But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles [high flying and sight]: they shall run and not be weary; and they shall walk and not faint” (Isaiah 40:31).*

That is God’s love, the greatest gift of all to be like God Himself.

CHAPTER 8

LOVE FULFILLS THE LAW

Simple truths can be confusing. Confusion is Babylon and how human nature works. You know God's Great House has vessels of honor and dishonor.

Jesus in Matthew 5:17-18 gives you two different meanings for the English word fulfill. You have read these two definitions carry thoughts in diverse directions if misapplied.

LAW IS RESTRICTION

You view *Law* as good. In reality it all depends. *Laws* are only needed when humans aren't behaving properly for achievement of a Paradise.

An anarchy is the right of each individual to do what is right in their own eyes. That is exactly what God permitted Israel to be in the days of the Judges. Every man did what was right in his own eyes (Judges 25:21). What mayhem.

There was no king or ruler in that day. No government existed. A governor has one function to restrict. The vehicle the ruler uses to control the actions of its citizens can be good or bad.

Law is really the ruler's word. A ***Law*** in a nation replaces the governor's word. Jesus gave you the definition of the summary of God's, "***Man shall not live by bread alone*** [human needs], ***but by every word of God***" (Matthew 4:4).

If you combine all of God's words, it fulfills all His ***Laws***. These can be contractually given as covenants specifically designated to control people for defined sins or transgressions.

Israel was given ***The Old Covenant Law of Moses*** because of their idolatry. They were transgressors who couldn't live by every word of God given them. They were criminals. For the good of themselves and others, ***Law*** kept perfectly had to be enjoined. If transgressed, a penalty or curse with pain had to be enforced to stop them from sinning.

This ***Law of Moses*** was as restrictive as King Hammirabe's time in Assyria. An eye for an eye. It really didn't change people, but the fear of pain and loss controlled them so a civil society could function.

All ***Laws*** with their ***Covenants*** were imposed by God to control specific behavior by various ***Laws***. The question becomes can people be given liberty? Complete liberty is anarchy where each person does whatever they choose. Why would God ultimately give you full liberty and then qualify to live in Paradise in God's House?

God has to know how to teach you internally to not

only know good and evil but how to do only what is good.

GOD'S REPRODUCTION

“Because the creature [animal] itself also shall be delivered [saved] from the bondage [slavery – not perfect] to the glorious liberty of the children of God” (Romans 8:21).

Just one verse tells it all. All *Covenant*, governmental diversity, laws or no law or anarchy the way to live in God's House in an Eternal Paradise is to be in God's Image. God's answer to the human problem is to be like God, your Father.

GOD'S TEACHING SYSTEM

Philippians 2 Paul writes how Jesus was God's first begotten Son and through Him each individual can do the same by free choice. Christ did not think it was robbery to be equal or like His Father. He became a humble servant of God having absolute faith in His dad.

Philippians 2:12 Paul answers your same dilemma. God teaches each of you individually. No student is left behind. God's method of teaching is one on one. That is why God predetermined families.

As each child is born, they receive personal attention from their fathers and mothers. No child is to be left out or forsaken. In God's way, family life is the Cra-

dle of all learning.

Passing a child to another to teach and obey can be dangerous. How do you know? A child should not leave their parents until they choose to be with other children and want to learn with them. Leaving a child by force with a nanny or teacher can leave lifetime damage.

God, as long as you seek Him first leaves you alone (Isaiah 55:6). Since you are adopted by God unlike Christ, God will wait until you realize, He made you all and are His real children, He leaves you alone with your earthly parents. Teaching is only God's profession and never anyone else's until it becomes their profession. Today, as in the past, too many claim to teach when it is only a job. A job people are paid to do and not a profession.

Why is it in school only a relatively few really want to teach? Motive and desire of heart is the key. You likewise only should teach children when they want to go to school.

WHAT IS A PROFESSION?

“Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle [one sent] and High Priest [mercy] of our profession, Christ Jesus” (Hebrews 3:1).

What was Paul telling you? He first told you God called you to be taught from heaven. He knew you were ready. Why? Paul continued and said you

should look to your Apostle which in Greek defines as “one sent from God, to profess Him as Christ Jesus.” Profession in Greek is like a vow or contract with God to confess your calling in Him. There is the attitude one has to have to become a disciple or a teacher. A teacher of another human being is a heart-felt calling from God and life dedication. A true teacher is compelled in their heart they are to teach because God called them.

For teachers to argue about money and what they should be paid is a sin. Here is Paul’s teaching to Timothy, an Evangelist teacher of the truth, *“But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment [clothing] let us be content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: they have erred from the faith [Christianity], and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But you, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness”* (I Timothy 6:10-11).

Quite plain. A profession is not a job. Teaching is supposed to be a profession and certainly not a job or career. Parents are your first teachers and it certainly isn’t a job. Debating and arguing about money rights is not a Christian.

POWER OF LOVE

Agape love is what God is, “*He that loves not knows not God, for God is love [agapé]*” (I John 4:8). Love fulfills all *Laws* and *Covenants* of God because that is what God is. To be in God’s image is to be the love of God. That is final.

When you are filled with God’s agapé love, God has reproduced Himself in His image. All *Laws* and *Covenants* are fulfilled.

God’s House when everyone honors God above all else out of His love then God’s Holy House inherits Paradise Eternally.

God’s House, a Great House, having vessels of honor and dishonor needs many chambers to make it Holy and faithful Eternally. The only *Covenant* which has no law is *The Everlasting Covenant*.

CHAPTER 9

EVERLASTING COVENANT

Just like the Abrahamic promises predicated upon faith, *The Everlasting Covenant* has no *Laws* or penalties as well. This *Unending Covenant* is also founded upon faith.

FAITH

Faith is like a profession. It is a confession of what is sincerely and earnestly believed. That is why spiritually growing people grow from faith to faith and are justified (Romans 1:17).

Faith is your works because as Paul said, it is what makes you have God's righteousness. All of God's righteousness commits no sin (I John 5:17).

Faith replaces the need for a *Law*. *Laws* restrict human choice. Faith by itself is unlimited. Each human can change at any time with no penalty. *Laws* are limited to two choices, obey or not and if one doesn't there is a downside, a curse which is a penalty.

Faith is an anarchy except it functions by its faith and therefore has limitations within one's faith. Anarchy is totally without any restraints. Faith in opposition to limits has limits determined by one's faith or belief. Faith believes in some ideology. An ideology is exactly

what the idea is that a person accepts as fact. One can be an atheist and not believe in God and therefore can function under a true anarchy, what they of themselves believe to be right. Atheists have no limitations except themselves. They only worship their own ideas or ideologies.

An agnostic is not sure but anyone with a faith has agreed to follow what their faith demands. Faith in itself is a *Law* by its belief.

Faith in God always allows choice. God never forces or demands anything of you without your own choice. That is why God leaves you alone until you decide to seek Him.

God is super-longsuffering until you repent. Once you repent, you are coming to God your Father to teach you. He is so concerned for you by His love that He never forces Himself upon you until you desire to have His teaching.

COVENANTS

God only intervenes when you are in such trouble that you would end up killing each other. Then God changes and repents with a change of His mind to save you because of His love.

All *Covenants* of God, by human rulers like Hammurabe or God's personal *Covenants* are designed to make you better with penalties to insure you do not stray from God's agreements with you.

Only one covenant by God has no penalties like The Lake of Fire in it. The Everlasting (Unending - Eternal) Covenant has only two requirements to succeed in its goal.

- 1) Complete mercy from God like King David. God immediately forgave him for his terrible sins because he instantly repented. Then God still had the child born of the adultery die and because David gave her husband duties whereby he was killed, God gave him wars all his life.**

Again, instantly David obeyed God by accepting the cost God imposed.

- 2) This Covenant also included God purging him of his sins at any cost but not to take God's Holy Spirit from him (Psalm 51). That is a man after God's heart. Whatever God decided when David sinned, King David accepted wholeheartedly.**

That's it. Psalm 51 is very clear. *The Everlasting Covenant* is a *Divine Covenant* where David had such faith in his Father David believed God in faith totally. *The Old Covenant, Law of Moses*, left God out of the picture. Built in were the blessings and curses as Deuteronomy 27 and 28 demanded. No mercy or grace.

This *Everlasting Covenant* is exactly what contract Adam and Eve understood. They were free to on their own eat from The Tree of Life and have eternity. They

chose not to, and wanted to decide right and wrong on their own. They knew they would die. They had complete free choice.

DEATH AND LIFE

God only gives life and He never commits murder. If God permits killing or suicide, He always resurrects them. That is exactly what baptism is all about (Romans 6:3-4).

Death is nonexistence. It can only occur by your free choice. If you eat of The Tree of Life, you are guaranteed you live forever. It is a gift from God. Angels have that gift, but not humans.

You are born as babes and then you age until your bodies decay with death as your outcome. That's it. God does not cause death. Humans just weren't given the free gift of life.

God in His love wanting to make you in His image, does so to make you kings and priests (Revelation 5:10). You must cease from thinking death is ever caused by God. He only kills because He always resurrects you. God is only the God of the living. What a Father. God has no interest in death.

What a *Covenant*. All other *Covenants* have severe penalties. If you in faith obey God's every word, you can be the Bride of Christ. If not, God still allows you to be guests at The Wedding Feast because you were faithful but not willing to die for Him like His son did.

Even then, after having your bodies destroyed in The Lake of Fire, your spirits still live in outer darkness to be healed by God's living waters. *The Ever Lasting Covenant* never ends for the whole world to be potentially saved with no set date or time.

ETERNITY AND LAW

Eternity is more than forever. Forever presumes time, but eternity has no time. It is unending, where forever is measurable. Forever presumes ages, which is what the Hebrew and Greek mean.

Law also demands an end. If you keep the Law, you are perfect. If you are guilty of transgression, you have a penalty. Law requires intelligence somehow Law is an awareness of rules if followed have a conclusion.

Laws cannot be accidental just because they exist. Laws which have conclusions reveal order and structure.

To be accidental by chance or to produce order, you need to mathematically experience all variants or ideas possible.

To be accidental, you would need to test every possibility of thought by human nature. This process would never end.

The reason mathematical hypotheses work and are proven over time in itself substantiates the need of super-human intelligence. This is why over the centu-

ries science is confronted with new truth, completely changing your former scientific so-called facts.

Presently, you by human science are at the brink of altering the meaning of what you thought was eternal truths. Your so-called truths change over just decades at present as you design better systems of detection.

GOD IS ONE

God claims He is the only God and Creator of all things because of His superior intellect (Isaiah 45:5). God being eternal has ages in the past having no beginning to counsel with Himself. In fact, with all the past, He even measured His intellect.

He considered His wisdom as a separate entity. Proverbs 8 personifies wisdom, understanding, and that wisdom gives prudence or caution, “*I wisdom dwell with precedence, and find out knowledge, facts of witty [amazing] inventions [creations]*” (Proverbs 8:12).

God speaks of these attributes as if they are separate beings. You being human attributes personalities to these Godly attributes of His intellect.

What He is really telling us in ages past, He even dissected His own intellect and comprehend His own mind and how God functions. For God to reproduce Himself must by His own counsel know in detail what reproduction is in detail.

The Everlasting Covenant being eternal is a *Contract*

with God which leads to becoming like God and lovingly create righteousness for the entire universe, “*For we know that the whole creation groaneth [pain] and travails in pain together until now*” (Romans 8:22). What is the expectation of the universe? “*For the earnest [desire] expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of the sons of God*” (Romans 8:19).

CHAPTER 10

GOD'S EXPANDING HOUSE

God's Great House is organic, it continues to grow. As God reproduces Himself, He grows. God at present is the entire universe. On earth, God dwelt in a Tabernacle, but in reality was the entire universe as your five senses can discern. God is far ahead of you as The Ancient of Days, no beginning and end, it is humorous for you to compete. Only Satan himself and his angels are so in love with themselves. His methodology of teaching is deception.

A PROPHETIC HOUSE

God's great house is prophetic. The House of God is eternal and like God it keeps growing by reproducing Himself so God can be All in All just like the universe. Even the darkness of space has a duplicate spiritual universe within itself with laws. Spirit is what God is and only He by His Holy Spirit reveals the truth. Scripture and ancient history substantiates this House of God never ends and is therefore prophetic with a growing future without end.

BURYING GOD'S TALENT

God, as you know, is involved not only with the entire

universe, nations, and even empires, but specifically with every person on earth. Salvation is an individual responsibility with God. Hallelujah! Praise God. That is God's love.

Christ told you God knows every hair in your head. That takes deep personal interest. God being great and Almighty He also takes care of the entire universe as well.

Angels you know were created by God to be servants to the Heirs of Salvation (Hebrews 1). By God's Throne as written in Revelation 4, is a host of higher order of angels and even twenty-four elders to keep Him informed concerning every aspect of the universe.

A sea of glass like a mirror reflects everything occurring on earth. God is and was well-informed as He personally went to the earth as a theophony to find out if Sodom and Gomorrah were as wicked as He was told. God knows everything each human does as well as what their life produces.

World faiths, religions, ideologies all follow strongly ensconced personal beliefs. God is a continual growing Almighty being. Burying a personal gift God gives us is ludicrous and foolish.

Since God continually increases and grows, you should be doing likewise. Doctrines, faiths, truths should all be increasing like God does. *Covenants*, *Laws*, and even promises should be in a continual state of becoming more in your knowledge and understanding than

when you first understood a new truth. God never stops growing and increasing in value or profitability. How foolish.

When Jesus left to be with His Father in heaven, He told you God has many mansions or huge houses and Christ went to prepare a place for you (John 14).

These mansions are determined by your works of faith based upon what you produce. Even your personal rewards are growing and will never stop. It is foolish to bury any talent God gives you and not think God wants you to continually grow spiritually.

Your inheritance or 401(k) must never lose or be static but ever increasing in value and riches just like your Father who is making you in His image.

Perpetual growth with God is eternal because it gives God pleasure not of yourselves, but God and His Kingdom. God decrees universal pleasure for evermore.

TEN HEAVENS

God's purpose is to unite Heaven and Earth as His House of God where He dwells (Matthew 6). God will be All in All with *The Everlasting Covenant*. Presently, God's Great House has ten heavens, each at various levels of growth. The second heaven is outer darkness for those who refuse God's will and purpose. There are still vessels of honor and dishonor in it.

Each vessel is personal with God and He will refine

it to be of extreme value as an asset in God's House. In your human form you are made of clay like dust. He likens Himself to a potter who constantly remolds you by keeping you watered so you can be remolded. Keeping you pliable is a type of baptism.

Only when God achieves the right image of Himself does He burn it in fire, having a gorgeous, without blemish image of Himself. This represents God's people where judgment begins with the House of God (I Peter 4:17). Peter relates if judgment begins with you, what will be the end of those who do not believe the gospel of the Kingdom of God.

The White Throne Judgment is their time of decision and the goats end up having their flesh destroyed in the fire. The mold of clay is destroyed to start over again with the spiritual man just as God began with Adam and Eve. Your bodies are only tents and now your naked spirits need a new set of clothes.

JACOB'S LADDER

Genesis 28 Jacob had a dream with a ladder going to heaven's gate which he calls God's House, Bethel. Angels, each step of the ladder, assist him to God's House and gateway. John 1:51 with truth now given to Christ (Hebrews 1) the angels run up and down your Savior just like Jacob's Ladder to God, Christ in you, Christ is every word of God.

Some believe your Messiah is an Archangel as the High Priest. Listen to what Hebrews tells you, "*Be-*

ing made so much better than the angels, as he has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For to which of the angels [messengers] said he at any time, You are my son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son” (Hebrews 1:4-5).

Pretty certain and absolute. Angels helped Jacob achieve God's House and now angels helped Christ that is why admitted the same to Christ in the wilderness, *“And said to him [Christ], If you be the Son of God, Cast yourself down: for it is written [Psalm 91:11] He shall give his angels charge concerning you: and in your hands they shall bear you up, lest at any time you dash your foot against a stone”* (Matthew 4:6).

Christ is way above the angels who were made to be servants like you but a Son of God is not only divine and Holy but royalty, a King and Priest just as you are to be (Revelation 5:10).

JOHN'S WRITINGS

The Apostle John's gospel is unlike the other three. Matthew, Mark and Luke follow a chronology but not so with John's gospel. *The Book of John*, written later than the first three, is a spiritual gospel disclosing spiritual subjects like the word of God in John 1.

The last chapter of John ends with an amazing statement. Since Jesus was the word of God, all of God's thoughts, a logos, there is no end, *“And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they*

should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen” (John 21:25).

Christ as God’s every word has no end. *The Bible* is a book of clues, partial truths which can be approached from a multitude of ways.

As many human minds that have and will and do exist separate books can be written. This book has repeated the truth of God’s House from a multitude of viewpoints. They all intertwine together into one whole God!

Concluding in the next chapter, you will see the immeasurable superiority of God’s mind and abilities. The journey is awesome, gorgeous, beautiful and overwhelming concerning God’s goodness and righteousness in His House. You all need to worship Him and His loving greatness.

CHAPTER 11

THE END A NEW BEGINNING

Revelation 21:5 in *The New Heaven and The New Earth* God declares He makes all things new. Amazingly, the beginning is the end, the alpha and omega. Wait there is much more to God's Holy House.

The New Heaven and New Earth as well as being the beginning is also a different kind of new beginning. God is starting all over again to restart that which was lost, The Tree of Life in God's House.

THE BIBLE CONTINUES

Just like *The Book of Acts* ends with Paul imprisoned at Rome, likewise *The Bible* ends as well with so much more to be done in its future than is written. Read the end of *The Book of Revelation*, "*He which testifieth these things said, Surely I come quickly [any time]. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace [mercy] of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen*" (Revelation 22:20-21).

The subject of *The Book of Revelation* is all about prophecy when Christ will return. Revelation is all about the dilemma of Babylon defeated so His Bride is ready and worthy, ending with The Time of The Gen-

tiles or Babylon. The purpose of the book is to get God's people going in the right way to God's House so the marriage of the Bride and Groom takes place.

Because Babylon with Satan and his image ended as God's image Revelation has a new beginning with no end. A new potential, an Eternal potential; *The Ever Lasting Covenant*.

TEMPLE CLEANSING

Denominations debate when did The Messiah come and cleanse The Temple. A cleansed temple must be perfect, holy and without blemish. Malachi, the prophet, gives the process of purging God's Temple, *"Behold I will send my messenger [John the Baptist] and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom you seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom you delight in; behold, he shall come, said the Lord of hosts. But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appears? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap. And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer to the Lord an offering in righteousness. Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant to the Lord, as in the days of old [Moses – Solomon], and as in former years"* (Malachi 3:1-3).

This as yet has not happened but is future. Christ and John came but the temple was so corrupt as a business for profit, God destroyed it using Titus, Caesar's son.

Your Savior was so horrified He turned over tables and whipped the whole area saying, you shall not make my Father's House a place of merchandise (John 2:16). He didn't cleanse it, He foretold its destruction, "*Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up*" (John 2:19). He didn't cleanse the Temple, but God destroyed it. Now for a big surprise, "*But he [Christ] spoke of the temple of his body*" (John 2:21).

After three days in the grave, His Father resurrected Him. Christ in you was to be the New Temple (I Corinthians 3:16). After the coming of the Holy Spirit on Pentecost, God's spiritual temple by the Holy Spirit was the church.

As you know, even Christianity as a whole was not cleansed, but only a remnant until your era. Only a remnant of The Jews and a remnant of The Gentiles are The Bride of Christ. God's Temple in Jerusalem as yet has not been cleansed. In fact, there hasn't even been a Temple built as yet to be cleansed.

THE MILLENNIUM

When Christ restores the Temple during the Millennium, He starts the cleansing. Jesus came to save the world (I John 4:14). Gog and Magog rebelled and God destroyed them. Now the cleansing includes the whole world.

The Old Covenant, Law of Moses, will be restored to bring the world to Christ. When they did, they received God's Holy spirit, as did the Bride of Christ.

The whole world doesn't have their chance to live in God's House or enter the pearly gates as guests until The New Heaven and The New Earth.

The Old Covenant and The New Covenants have been fulfilled. Now The Everlasting Covenant is restored as in the beginning. The Temple from this age God makes all things new with Christ (Matthew 18:11), "And I saw no [physical] temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb [Christ] are the temple of it" (Revelation 21:22).

THE NEW BEGINNING

God's House with the Temple are all spiritual as The Ten Heavens. God's Great House still has vessels of honor and dishonor. The criminals, after their bodies are destroyed in The Lake of Fire, are spirits like Satan and his angles imprisoned in outer darkness, the second heaven.

The process of uniting heaven and earth starts and all seven heavens are to grow even more. God's Great House continues purging the dishonorable vessels to be thoroughly cleansed.

The Apostle Paul knew the third heaven and Enoch and Isaiah all ten. These are all mansions or massive domains, even with one prison in God's House.

Jacob's Ladder had several steps, and Christ as God's Temple sharing God's Throne have angels as messengers to help the world to have access to all seven.

God makes all things new, the House of God continues the purging with God's Holy Spirit and The Bride. The Bride are priests and kings, instituting *The Everlasting Covenant* by the power of God's Holy Spirit.

THE END CONTINUES

Revelation 22, as with Acts, both have history and prophecy to come. *The Bible* doesn't end with *The Book of Revelation*. When God unites heaven and earth as one, then God will be all in all (I Corinthians 15:28).

God and Christ as the Temple of God in God's Great House still had purging to complete. Matthew 5:18 Christ clearly foretells until The New Heaven and The New Earth all things in *The Law* will not be fulfilled.

It is during the uniting of The New Heaven and The New Earth that God's House must be cleansed. Doctrinal teaching in part must organically grow, becoming more and more like God.

You know the eighth to the tenth heavens are still hidden and not known. There is a lot prophetically still unknown and needs to be written.

God continues growing by reproducing Himself and Christ as well, "*But thanks be to God [Father] which gives us the victory [death] through our Lord Jesus Christ*" (I Corinthians 15:57).

God's Great House ultimately with free choice to

make His will and *Covenant* to stand, “*Remember the former things [history] of old: for I am God, and there is none else, I am God, and there is none like me [including Christ]. Declaring the end from the beginning, and from Ancient Times [history] the things that are not yet done, saying, my counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure*” (Isaiah 46:9-10). Praise be God!

KINGS AND RULERS

VARIOUS OTHER SUBJECTS – VOL. XV

PART 10

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *KINGS AND RULERS*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
WHO IS THE MIGHTIEST GOD?	1
GOD IS ALL	7
GOD'S CHOSEN PEOPLE, ISRAEL	13
GOD REJECTED	19
COVENANTS AND TEACHING	25
WORLD RULE WITH NO GOD	31
GOD'S KINGDOM	39

PREFACE

World history substantiates in the beginning the only form of government was a Monarchy. No oligarchies, dictatorships or democracies existed. Kings could become Emperors over many nations, but archeological history proves that monarchies were the governmental structure of the time. Even more so, besides being kings, they controlled the national religion as Priest/Kings. The lives of the citizens were controlled by faith and religion, as well as their physical lives were controlled. Why, and how did it all start?

This book is entirely free and no money is accepted. Use your funds to aid the orphans, widows and those who are truly poor or helpless.

Comments and criticisms are always appreciated. There are, now, three new CDs, in PDF format, which allow you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God's Puzzle Solved, Part I, II, III, IV and V; CD #2: 29 Other Books; CD #3: Articles on various Christian subjects.

We are sorry if countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for packages containing these books. Perhaps requesting CDs will be the answer.

Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Website: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Christian articles)

INTRODUCTION

Historical scholars teach that people inherently believe in religion because they do not want to die. Where is their proof? As usual, what seems to make sense is generally believed but not proven.

Biblically, scriptural history reveals a completely different reason. Many scholars believe it is faith with no proof.

Until recently, the ancients were viewed as ignorant cave men. Recently, a new discovery of early human writing proves the original civilizations knew much more than we thought and, in many ways, knew even more truth than our present day.

ARCHEOLOGICAL TRUTH

The first archeological findings were from around 700 B.C.E. Pots, urns, statues and everyday items have been excavated and, until recently they were thought to be a myth.

These early civilizations were “Polytheistic,” believing in many gods. They always debated which god was “*the mightiest*.” Each city-state had its own god which led to war after war. They were Polytheistic for a very good reason.

God created a *spiritual* world – called heaven, which is unseen by the physical world. There are many heavens, or dimensions, which cannot be seen by the physical universe. Spiritual beings existed and were known as angels or messengers. Many scholars call

them “aliens” today. As spirits, they cannot be seen by mankind. These beings are either “*The Messengers of God*” or “*rebellious angels.*”

These angels were arranged into a hierarchy based on their various abilities. The top were The Archangels or Seraphims. Then came the cherubs who were very intelligent and powerful using nuclear energy.

God chose a cherub, to teach Adam and Eve. This bright and morning star believed he could be equal with God (Isaiah 14 and Ephesians 28). He and one third of the angels believed the same and chose to leave their estate and responsibility.

This cherub became Satan, The Deceiver and his angels were called demons. Demons have an unbalanced use of their minds. These rebellious angels and Satan had contact with the ancient humans as well as the other angels.

As spirits, they could influence human thinking. They even had the ability to appear as humans, which was called a theophany. These two groups were in opposition.

Ancient humanity, considered these angels to be divine since they came from heaven and were called “gods.” They knew they were opposed to each other and God.

It was natural for humans to seek an afterlife. However, because of personal contact they knew there was disagreement between God and His angels and Satan and his followers. Satan was in disagreement with God and two-thirds of His Angels.

THE MIGHTIEST

The human population, because of experience, worshipped these gods as well as God Almighty. The debate concerned who was the most powerful of all the gods. Angels, appearing as humans, were also considered divine.

Because of this confusion, God allowed humans to have free choice, and each city-state had its own divinity. War was natural and God left them to their own imaginations and became known as the unknown Skygod.

You have covered archeological history, which most scholars accept reality and truth today. It is no longer a myth and archeological history has been studied from its beginning.

The Book of Genesis begins with Adam and Eve (homo-sapiens) and their sin of choosing to eat of the Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Satan deceived Eve and Adam followed his wife. This changed how God would make man in His own image. Adam and Eve decided to make their own life choices rather than let God be their Father and Teacher.

With free choice, humans had to decide for themselves who was the mightiest and true God. God decided a promised seed, His first begotten Son, was the best way to prove He was the only God to follow (Genesis 3:15). This coming Savior would prove humans, with The Holy Spirit of God, through faith, could be sinless.

CHAPTER 1

WHO IS THE MIGHTIEST GOD?

In Romans 1, Paul wrote how the early civilization knew The Truth of the one God and, because of Satan and his angels opposing God, they considered angelic beings to be divine like God.

They held The Truth in unrighteousness (Romans 1:18). They knew The Truth of The One Real God and Father of all but also viewed angels as gods. Idolatry was born. Anyone who had contact with the angels were accepted as divine as well.

CITY/STATES

As populations grew from Mesopotamia to Egypt and Ethiopia, each had their own gods. War was inevitable. In time, walls were built for security and defense. Before horses were used in war, cities that were farther away were safer. Once the military used horses, more wars occurred and violence increased.

Protection and self defense increased because they felt they were victims and had to protect themselves. Because other cities had spies, they felt they should attack first to protect themselves. Civilization began worshipping those human heroes as gods and saviors. People knew a human would be The Savior of The

World, so they worshipped their rulers as if they were the possible promised Savior of The World.

Those mighty men of renown became famous. In Noah's day, the world became so violent and wicked God flooded it and only saved Noah and his family in the ark. Noah and his family grew into many tribes, races and nations. Because of Noah's teaching everyone knew about the gospel of righteousness and yet they did what pre-flood people did and had many saviors and king-priests.

Knowing what happened to those before the flood, they decided it was necessary to be One Empire with One Emperor. Nimrod, a great hunter, provided food and protection, and became the world's first Emperor. His Kingdom was in The Land of Shinar and The Tower of Babel was to be The Temple of God. He was considered to be The Messiah and was followed by many more as the centuries passed.

"Babel" in Hebrew means "Gateway to the House of God." They all spoke of one language. Babylon was their capitol (Genesis 10:10). Each person could have their own god but they were united in worship at the Tower of Babel. God saw the world was headed toward the same end as before the flood because each human could do anything they imagined to do (Genesis 11:6).

ERROR OF SAVIORS

Nimrod, as the world's first Emperor, left a bad ex-

ample. Once again, kings were considered divine and ruled over them. To avoid this, God confused their languages. To reduce evil and the number of wars, he divided the nations and races according to their own inheritance.

Genesis 10:25 tells you God divided the nations and races into continents in the days of Peleg. The earth, before this, was one large square surrounded by water and appeared to be flat on the circle of the earth (Isaiah 40).

Each group looked to its heroes as saviors and priest-kings. Over the centuries, each group would lose their original teachings from the days of Noah. Shem, Ham, and Japheth, Noah's three sons, went their own ways and, of the three, only Shem and his genealogy followed the true teachings of Noah and The One God and Father of all.

Religious beliefs, faiths, ideologies and governments, from generation to generation, lost sight of the past and followed what was politically correct in their specific time period. The "politically correct" were considered "The Elite" and told the citizens how to live and what to think.

Priests, prophets, and scholars all touted their own historical rendition of the past. Abraham, from the line of Shem strictly adhered to the original thinking of God. Human nature, as God warned at the days of The Tower of Babel, allowed each individual to imagine whatever their teaching and experience taught

them. A world of false heroes and saviors being idolized as gods emerged. Only Abraham and his family remained faithful to The Truth of God.

ISAAC TO ISRAEL

Abraham, because of his faith and obeying every word of God, was given two promises. The first promise was to inherit the land of God in Canaan, and the second promise was to have a child born who would bless the whole world.

Isaac was miraculously born like Christ. Abraham's wife, Sarah, was ninety and Abraham one hundred. She was way beyond her natural child-bearing years, so God miraculously gave her the birth of Isaac.

Isaac was their first legal son. Ishmael was born to a concubine and could not inherit from Abraham. Isaac's genealogy would produce The Son who would bless the whole world. Isaac's birth was a miracle from God and he was the legal, chosen one by God.

Isaac had Jacob and Jacob had twelve sons who became The Tribe of Israel. They knew The Savior was to come from them. Israel became a nation and its genealogy grew. No repentance was necessary and one only need to be part of the line of Jacob, genealogically.

DAVID, A KING

Even though anyone of Israel could be The Savior, God looks at the heart and not just the birth. God will

choose the promised seed, by watching one's heart to see if he/she is desiring to be like God. God will not demand any human be like Him if that person does not desire first, to become like The Father. God is long-suffering and you need to be like Him in every way. Human kings are man-made and not of God. All governments and rulers are the result of human choices, which God permits.

After Adam and Eve sinned, it was foretold a seed of Eve would come and restore all things (I Peter 1: 10-12 and Genesis 3:15). Peter reveals even The Prophets, like Enoch (Genesis 5) and others, including the angels, did not know who would have The Spirit of Christ (which was also in the prophets).

The Spirit in The Promised Seed and The Prophets was The Holy Spirit of God (II Peter 1). The Holy Spirit of God does the Work of God and not any human, even Christ. Jesus could not do anything of himself as a Son of Man (John 5:19).

Since the ancient world knew of a coming Messiah they made a giant error believing any human could be The Savior. They thought it could be any person that others proclaimed was The Messiah. Only God knew who The Messiah would be. To be The Christ, one had to be like God, do the will of God and do everything God said. Any ruler who was the world's hero and provided the way to survive was considered a king and savior. In reality, this fallacy produced many anti-Christ's claiming to be God. In David's time, God to chose from whom The Promised Seed

would come. The goal of God is to make man in His Image and God is the only one who knows who He is.

King after king and ruler after ruler has claimed to be the one who will save the world without God. That is why after the captivity of Israel and Judah, The Time of the Gentiles began. Christ will not return until their time without God is over (Luke 21:24).

From Nimrod to the present, humanity keeps choosing their kings, rulers or form of government. Presently, the world is operating the same way it did in The Land of Shinar, at the Tower of Babel. No one knows what is right or wrong. The world is in a state of total chaos.

GOD'S CHOICE

Letting the world make their own choices is conditional and is determined by human guessing. What is missing is the choice of God. Only He knows who and what He is. Only God should be allowed to choose The Messiah, who must be in the exact image of God though *faith*.

You are ready to find out why God has “*The World*” under a curse of their own choices. Mankind has too many variations of what is right or wrong.

God, with His Son and The Power of The Holy Spirit of God, teaches you how to become like Him (Genesis 1:26).

CHAPTER 2

GOD IS ALL

How does God reproduce Himself? As with any sperm from a human father, God uses His energy from within Himself to transfer “*life*” through His Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit of God creates all things.

THE BEGINNING

The “*spirit*” of God moved the waters of the earth during The Creation, and God said, “*Let there be light.*”

Everything was in darkness. The light revealed what was in the darkness. God said it was good. God divided “*the light*” from “*the darkness.*” The Holy Spirit of God energized the creation to have “*life.*” The angels shouted for joy for what they beheld (Genesis 1:1-4).

When Job was afflicted by Satan, Job cursed (Job 3:1), “*Let the day perish wherein I was born, and the night in which it was said, There is a man child conceived*” (Job 3:2). Out of the night he was born. Then Job describes a process, “*Let that day be darkness; let not God regard it from above, neither let the Light shine upon it*” (Job 3:4). Job stated exactly what occurred in the beginning of Genesis 1:1-4. What was in the darkness that was revealed? Hebrews 12:9 declares The Heavenly Father is The Father of Spirits. Christ said “*spirit*” is

like “wind,” which has power but is invisible. Wind is energy just as it turns a windmill. If it is severe, like a tornado, it is destructive. Job understood this truth about his birth.

In Job 3:15, he goes into even greater detail and, ultimately, discloses the source of his birth, “*Why did I not from the womb? Why did I not give up the Spirit when I came out of the belly?*” (Job 3:11).

The Holy Spirit of God is The Power of God, Himself (II Timothy 1:7). The Holy Spirit of God creates all things. God can be “*All In All*” through His Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit of God is The Word of God (John 17:17-21). God speaks His “word” through His Holy Spirit, “*Wherefore (as the Holy Spirit) saith, Today if you will hear His voice*” (Hebrews 3:7).

The Spirit “*world*” of God is in the darkness and The Holy Spirit of God said, “*let there be light and that light was good.*” In Job’s day, the actual forces of the creation were known as Godly “*science.*”

GODLY SCIENCE

“*O Timothy, keep that which is committed to your trust, avoiding profane [human] and vain [useless] babblings, [guesses] and oppositions of science [gnosis] so called*” (I Timothy 6:20). This proves the apostolic Christians knew The Truth of God just like Job and others.

Only Godly science, from the beginning, gives the truth. The word “science” in Greek is “gnosis” or

“knowledge.” True knowledge comes from God and not the human experiments of mankind.

Godly science has the truth from the beginning as it actually happened. Human science keeps changing over the centuries. Today, science changes so often no discipline can keep up with it. Various scientists do not agree with each other. The latest admit there is more than the physical universe and, in the darkness of space, there is another universe possessing a completely different set of laws. To know “*the truth*” of Godly “*science*,” one needs to know how everything began before “*the big bang*.” The Holy Spirit of God is the Truth of The Word of God.

Romans 1:20 declares “*the invisible*” (spiritual) things of God are clearly seen and understood by His creation. What is seen?

The Godhead and Power of God are manifested in His creation of the universe. The *spiritual* things hidden in darkness are made known by The Holy Spirit of God, which is the “*word*” and “*power*” of God. How clear.

HUMAN WEAKNESS

What is it that keeps you from the truth of reality? Fact is fact. Human science changes too often. Fact is fact and God reveals His Truth by His Holy Spirit.

The Old Covenant Law of Moses* could not make anyone “*perfect*” but *The New Covenant Law of Christ

could (Hebrews 7:7 and 11).

The Old Covenant was only “*a shadow*” (darkness) of heavenly things. ***The Law of Moses*** is a shadow in darkness of what is known in the heavens (Hebrews 8:5).

“Human weakness” is *biblically* defined as “flesh” which Christ said in John 6:63. The flesh is of no use because all it can do is “*works of human deeds.*”

When mankind was given life by God, “*The Spirit In Man*” only gave humanity an intellect to understand but not know good and evil (Job 32:8). One can comprehend but not know what is moral (no harm) or not. To know “*the truth*” of good and evil, one needs The Word of God which is revealed by The Power of The Holy Spirit of God.

“*The Godhead*” is “*all that God is*” or “*can be.*” Only the intelligence of God is superior enough to know all things. The flesh is only a tent, or temporary dwelling place, for the spirit of God.

The intellect of God is of such superiority no one can understand it or measure it. God is also eternal, always being, with all His power and energy. God is eternal, has unlimited intelligence and is the mightiest source of energy as well.

When God reproduces Himself, it is not through a system of human sex. Human sex initiates life when the male sperm unites with the mother’s egg. The womb nour-

ishes this life to grow as a fetus until it is ready to be born. At birth the baby knows nothing. The baby can understand but not reason.

At birth, humans do not comprehend death, life or anything. Everyone must be taught or learn through experience in order to guess what they believe as true.

GOD'S IMAGE

God's method of reproduction is entirely different from human birth and growth. Human birth is a shadow or a type but not reality.

For God to be all, free choice is required. Human reproduction obeys physical laws from conception to maturity to death. It happens every time a baby is born.

Because of free choice, each son of God becomes like Him on an individual basis. Human birth does not require free choice. The reproduction of God does. A big difference.

When God makes you in His "*image*," it is an individual process (free choice) predicated upon each Son of God becoming like Him.

"*Free choice*" is "*liberty*," which means you are free to do whatever you desire and are willing to do. God has complete "*liberty*" and "*free choice*." God is "*The I Am*" to be whatever He decides, and you are to be just like Him.

For God to make you in His “*image*,” you must be able to choose to be whatever you want to be.

The rest of *The Bible* is the written prophecy and final history to guide you to choose to be like Him. At that time, God will be “*All In All*” (I Corinthians 15:28).

CHAPTER 3

GOD'S CHOSEN PEOPLE, ISRAEL

Abraham's progeny was The Nation of Israel. The Abrahamic Promises of the land of God and a promised seed to bless the world were fulfilled through Israel.

Israel, good or bad, was His chosen people through Abraham's faith. God even allowed them to go through slavery to appreciate their freedom.

GENES AND MUTATION

Exodus 20:1-4 Knowing Israel had a wrong heart, God instructed them to not to listen to the other "gods" they observed while living in Egypt. If they disobeyed and sinned, their habits would finally entrap them.

Human genes mutate and are subject to change depending upon their condition and environment. "*A double minded man is unstable in all his ways*" (James 1:14-15).

A person cannot serve two gods or authorities, "*But every man is tempted when he is drawn [enticed] away of his own lust, [idols] and enticed. Then when lust [Idol] was conceived, it brought forth sin: and sin when it is finished, will bring forth death*" (James 1:14-15).

“Sin” is always “idolatry.” You worship what you desire in your hearts above all else. Then, you get caught in your own snare which actually mutates your genes, **“You shalt not make to you any graven image, or any likeness or any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: You shalt not bow down yourself [worship] to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD your God am a jealous [the love of God] God, visiting the iniquities of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generation”** (Exodus 20:4-5).

When you sin through **“idolatry,”** three or four generations must pass before they can be free to think like Adam and Eve before they sinned. Your genes mutate toward good or evil depending upon your way of life. You are creatures of habit. Over time, your habits become a way of life just like taking drugs. You become addicted.

COVENANTS

God gives many *Covenants* which are **“contracts”** in a court of law. Laws need to be kept perfectly in order to be effective. The Laws of God, when transgressed, lead to His judgement and penalties. Laws are given in a **“contract”** when people cannot control themselves. Penalties are called **“curses”** in *The Bible*.

Some **“contracts”** are made without any judgements or curses and only dictate what each party must do. God makes these Covenants with honorable people who are determined to do what God wants them to do

for their good.

ISRAEL'S PERSONAL COVENANT

“The LORD our God made a covenant with us [Israel] in Horeb. The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, [Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob] but with us, even us, who are all here alive this day” (Deuteronomy 5:2-3). ***The Old Covenant Law of Moses was only made with those Israelites because they sinned*** (Galatians 3:19).

Paul asked The Gentiles why they bothered serving *The Law*? He said it was “*added*” because of “*transgressions*” until Christ came. Quite Plain.

The Law of Moses was only given to criminals because they did not have a good or right heart (I Timothy 1:6-11 and Deuteronomy 5:29).

God wished they had a right heart so they could keep His Commandments by “*faith*” like Abraham (Genesis 26:5). **Abraham needed no Law and did whatever God told him through faith. He was willing to offer his son, Isaac as a sacrifice. He needed no specific covenant.**

Their *Old Covenant* clearly, was to end when Christ came. In fact, *The Law of Moses* was to prove they could not keep any law and needed a Savior (Galatians 3:24).

Their flesh was to make them realize The Messiah

would teach them faith like Abraham.

REBELLIOUS CHILDREN

The Law of Moses was supposed to bring them their Savior. However, they became steeped in *The Law of Moses* and its works, like The Sabbath, holy days, new moons, etc. They could do the rituals which pictured good things to come, but it changed nothing in their behavior. They were still rebellious children. Read Isaiah 1. God was fed up with The Holy Days, feasts, sacrifices and rituals and would no longer pay attention to Israel and their works. A *New Covenant* based on “*faith*” was required which would eternally make them perfect. The Law could make Israel “*righteous*” (Deuteronomy 6:25).

In *The Old Covenant* “*righteousness*” was predicated on keeping The Law rather than becoming like God as a Son of God. Being like Christ (perfect) and having The Commandments in your heart would give you Salvation. How does “*perfection*” happen besides keeping The Commandments? (Read all of Matthew 19). Becoming “*perfect*” is a gift only God can bestow on you and it is not through any works you may do, “*With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible*” (Matthew 19:26). God alone saves you by being like Christ in faith. He is The Author of Salvation (Hebrews 12:2).

CHANGING THE PRIESTHOOD CHANGES THE LAW

When a Priesthood changes – The Law changes (He-

brews 7:12). Laws are made by God to accomplish specific goals. Once completed, a *New Covenant* is necessary to make you in The Image of God.

Christ said He did not come to destroy *The Law* and Prophets, but to fulfill or complete them (Matthew 5:17). Once done, everything in *The Law* remains until heaven and earth are new (Matthew 5:18).

Individuals either stay in *The Law* until The New Heavens and The New Earth or they can grow *spiritually* with *The New Covenant* which makes them “*perfect.*” “*Covenants*” are “*agreements*” God makes so you can stay on the right path to be like Him. Each Covenant always gives free choice so humans can have complete “*liberty*” as God does.

Covenants restrict some of the choices which lead you into error and, finally, death. God loves you and always provides a way to life instead of death. The High Priest's garments, in each detail, witness the divine ability of Christ as Melchizedek. Each piece He wears has a *spiritual* connotation that Christ possesses. Christ became The Perfect High Priest when God gave him His Glory.

ISRAEL'S CAPTIVITY

In Canaan, Israel had total free choice to live the way of God. They chose not to follow God and ended in captivity. They became slaves and ended up with The Gentiles and their many gods. So, who was the most powerful god?

Israel, from the time that they entered the land of God, followed the pagan ways although God warned against it (Isaiah 1). They willingly transgressed The Commandments God gave them.

Like any child warned not to do something and then goes right ahead and does it, Israel dishonored their Father. God was furious and had to make a Covenant that demanded total perfection or else they were guilty and were cursed. They needed to learn that on their own, with a Law and curses, they could not be perfect.

This *Old Covenant* was not designed for people seeking God in their hearts but for the unrighteous criminals. Christians with The Holy Spirit of God want “*The Truth*” and are grateful to please God, their Father.

Now you understand why Israel was responsible for wanting a king to protect them and provide for their survival. They were very carnal after being slaves in Egypt. They believed they were victims.

CHAPTER 4

GOD REJECTED

Why did the nations choose to have a monarchy rule them when there were so many alternatives? Since the beginning, each nation has always chosen to have a King.

THE PROPHECY

Kings ruled because that is what the people chose and were a very important benefit to each nation. From the “*beginning of man,*” a Savior was promised and come and guarantee a Paradise for everyone (Genesis 3:15).

Each city-state and nation believed their ruler was a king/priest, and, could be the Savior to bless the whole world. Their mothers, therefore, were considered to be The Queen of Heaven. That family was considered a divine and royal family from heaven.

Christians in Peter’s day believed the same thing, “*Receiving the end (aim] of your faith, even the salvation of your souls (lives]*” (I Peter 1:9). Peter told those around modern-day Turkey about this savior to come. The prophets of old predicted it would be so (Hebrews 1:2). This message from God was passed on through The Prophets, Psalms (songs), Proverbs and

traditions, “Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come to you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them [prophets] [The Holy Spirit of God] did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. To whom it was revealed, that not to themselves, but to us they did minister [serve] the things, which are now reported to you by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost [spirit] sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into” (I Peter 10:10-12). This is amazing.

The world knew all about Christ from the beginning. They knew he would suffer and pay for their sins and give grace by faith. It was proclaimed by the world until the birth of The Messiah. That is why The Wise Men from The East knew and came to witness His birth.

Even the angels and The Prophets did not know who He would be or when He would come. The Wise Men from the east only knew because His star (astronomy) appeared.

From the time of Cain and Abel, The Savior was anticipated, and it is the reason Cain was so jealous of Able being chosen. Thus, Cain killed Abel. When Cain was exiled, he still searched for the waters of The Fountain of Life, but he never repented.

This historical battle has continued ever since even to the present time with Satan. Satan, as a cherub,

knew, the Messiah would be The Royal Savior of the world. Satan continually tries to be like God and he believes he should be the one Savior of The World.

Now you *scripturally*, prophetically and historically know why, from the beginning, a monarchy was chosen over every other form of government. Every ruler wanted to be The Christ since no one knew when He would come.

Wars between city-states, nations and empires are easily predictable when each ruler claims to be the chosen Son of God. Satan kept trying until Christ defeated him in the wilderness. He is no longer Satan (Agagel) The Deceiver, but now he is The Devil, The Destroyer as a roaring lion, killing the people of God.

GOD THE KING REJECTED

After Moses, Joshua and the elders died, Israel became an anarchy. Israel enjoyed "*the liberty*" of being able to do what was right in their own eyes (Judges 21:25). If they needed a Savior, God sent them a Judge. When Samuel, The Prophet and Priest came along, Israel was tired of not having a king to protect them. They loved ruling themselves but were worn out from waiting for a judge, especially from The Philistines. They wanted to replace Samuel, Israel's last judge, with a human king.

SAUL AND BENJAMIN

Kish, the father of Saul, was of The Tribe of Benjamin

and not Judah as Genesis 49:10 predicted it should be. Samuel was greatly disturbed because Israel chose to replace him as Judge and King with this young man – Saul.

God told Samuel in a dream the night before that He was picking Saul (I Samuel 9:16-17). Saul, with The Prophets, spoke against The Philistines (Palestinians). It was believed Saul was also a prophet (I Samuel 10:12).

Samuel warned the people of Israel that they were rejecting God, who was their Savior and protector in favor of a man of their choice, “*And all went to Gilgal; and there they made Saul king before the LORD in Gilgal, and there they sacrificed sacrifices of peace offerings before the LORD, and there Saul and all the men of Israel rejoiced greatly*” (I Samuel 10:19 and 11:15).

God always gives free choice, Israel rejected their God, Father and King for a “*human king.*” Still Samuel said if they would remain faithful to God, then He would watch over them and their human king. Read all of I Samuel in detail.

The Israelites rejected God as their King and not Samuel, “*Behold, you are old, and your sons walk not in your ways: now make us a king to judge us like all the nations. But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed to the LORD. And the LORD said to Samuel, Hearken to the voice of the people [free choice] in all that they say to you: for they have not rejected you, but they have*

rejected me, that I should not reign over them (I Samuel 8:5-7). **God is The King over all and everything. He created everything. God owns it all as their King (Psalm 24). God is King over all He creates. That is final.**

SEEK YOU THE LORD

“Seek you the LORD while He may be found” (Isaiah 55:6). **Why would a loving God require you to make those He loves to seek Him?**

Obviously, any nation who wants to live on their own without God, like Israel, will not listen to God. Why would God try to force people to do what they choose not to do?

It is similar to many schools in the world trying to teach students who do not want to learn. They hate school and tell everyone openly.

Private schools do considerably better because the parents and children have a positive experience. Most students in *private schools* look forward to going to school because they spend their own money and choose to attend that school.

God would be wasting His time fighting these rebellious children until they want to learn from Him.

PAIN AND SUFFERING

God does not want pain and suffering for any of His

children. God is long-suffering (II Peter 3). God is willing to suffer for the good of everyone until everyone comes to repentance.

Pain and suffering is the choice of humanity just like Adam and Eve. Pain is of Satan's doing through the free choice of humanity. Fun is fun. Pleasure, however, is a free choice no matter what the pleasure of a person is.

Risky fun can be pleasurable but it is your own decision. Risk leads to failure along with all its pain and disappointment. The higher the risk, the greater and more damaging it can be to your life, which may include pain and suffering.

How much do you need to suffer through, or lose, before you are willing to learn? Some must lose everything and "bottom out."

How long are you willing to fail before you ask for help and be teachable? That is the question.

FROM GENEALOGY TO LIBERTY

Over thousands of years, God has chosen carefully selected individuals who obeyed God of their own free choice to be His people. Then, God gave preference to the progeny of the faithful people. It became a genealogical choice by God. Kind after kind.

CHAPTER 5

COVENANTS AND TEACHING

Covenants are contracts or agreements. Why would God have so many *Covenants* or changes in His agreements? Christ said Christians should not have to swear by “*a vow.*” Your “yes” should be “yes” and your “no” – “no” (Matthew 5)!

PATHWAY TO THE HOUSE OF GOD

Covenants are more than commands from God. They are methods of teaching where God leads His people from one level to another to become like HIM. Each agreement between God and His people is founded on their ability to learn and become more like Him. The process of reproduction of God is not like human sexual reproduction. Human sex is animalistic and does not necessarily demand intelligence. God reproduces Himself with well-defined goals to make everyone in His likeness to be just like Him. God, besides giving life, wants you to be just like Him.

Humans can have many children that vary widely from each other even in the same family. Each child comes from a single sperm. Identical twins, obviously, are closer in likeness because they come from the same sperm. How can a family live in the same house in perpetual peace and prosperity forever? Children grow

until, finally, they come to the stage when they want to have their own house. God must reproduce Himself so everyone can always be in eternal bliss while living in the same house. It is like an entire town being of one family and loving it. This is unique.

The House of God is enormous with many mansions, but it is still one house. (Please request the free book, God's House). Everyone is together but there is an area for each person to have their own hopes, desires and space. A family like this is not only exceptional but unique. God calls his people "*peculiar*" because they are so rare. They are all royalty, and that is divine, but it is hard to find.

They are different than most human families because they all want to come out of "*darkness*" and be in The Magnificent Light of God – forever.

COVENANTS ARE SPECIFIC

Each contract God enters into has well-defined goals and purposes. They are unique and have well-defined goals and requirements for The People of God to fulfill because of their lacking abilities.

Noah's "*contract*" with God was to keep the people from causing violence and killing themselves. God made two promises with Abraham – they could have been given property and, with it, came blessings for them.

When Israel sinned, God had to remove The Promised

Land from their original contract and use an alternate way to enter His “*promised land.*” They lacked the *faith* to enter His “*property.*”

They needed to circumvent the “*land*” of God in The Wilderness and be taught “*faith*” through their free choice. During their forty years in the wilderness, they angered God ten times and that generation died in “*the wilderness.*”

When Israel had to go into “*the wilderness*” for one generation of (forty years), God changed the sign of The Sabbath from a promise of His “*land in paradise*” to a reminder of “*coming out of slavery.*” The Sabbath was “*a sign*” of the people of God *entering paradise* (Exodus 20). But “*the sign*” of The Sabbath in Deuteronomy 5 was to remind them of when they came out of slavery. The perfection of God is amazing.

Joshua and the *faithful*, like Caleb, led an entirely “*new generation*” into The Promised Land. They had to prove their *faithfulness* right from the beginning in Jericho. Over the years, Israel waxed rich and chose to be like the other Gentile nations with a king of their own. God still loved them and, as long as their King agreed to obey God, they were still considered The People of God. As King, Saul tried, but ultimately failed by relying upon his own thinking and was replaced by David.

GOD’S HEART

In the heart of God heart, His intense passionate,

zealous heart, He wanted His “*children*,” first and foremost, to “*love*” Him (Deuteronomy 6:5). Love is above any Law or attribute because The Love of God is “*eternal*.” “*Love*” fulfills every *Law* or *Covenant* (Romans 13:10).

That is The Heart of God, just as King David wrote in Psalm 51. David was a terrible sinner, but his heart was just like The Heart of God.

If you have the “*heart*,” of God then when you sin and immediately “*repent*,” you are still expected to pay penalties like David. Then, as you accept The Will of God, He will eventually answer your prayers. But, as with David, the penalties may continue. For example, his son with Bathsheba died and he experienced war for the rest of his life.

Whatever your Father deems best you should willingly accept it. The teaching methodology of God is altered to meet the needs of the student or the disciple. God never quits teaching for your good. Teaching is a profession and not merely a job to be able to survive.

ISRAEL'S KINGS

Saul failed to follow God, but King David definitely was a man after the “*heart*” of God.

Israel and Judah, as two tribes, had their own “*kings*” and were accepted by God. Israel and Judah experienced a host of both good and evil “*kings*.” The love of God for Israel caused Him, with each failing king,

to bring them back to a Godly king.

When Israel and Judah kept loving the lifestyle of The Gentile Nations, God gave them that “*way of life*” by sending them into captivity under The Gentiles. The Gentiles had many “*gods*” and ignored The One True God.

GENTILE TIMES

The Time of The Gentiles is very simple to understand. Gentile “*times*” are when God allows even His “*people*” to have their king just like the Gentiles. No Jewish or Israelite “*kings*” are allowed until The Messiah returns and conquers them during The Millennium.

The Millennium will teach *the world* how their kingdoms should have been under the rule of God all along. Everyone (both good and bad) will be invited to The Wedding Feast by Christ, The Groom, and His Bride.

Prophetically, The Israelites cannot rule until The Time of The Gentiles is fulfilled (Luke 21:24). Israel cannot rule anytime during The Time of The Gentiles as it would negate the reason God allowed Gentile Kings to rule over Israel and Judah.

It does not mean some Israelites are not involved in Gentile “*rule*” as when Daniel sat on King Nebuchadnezzar’s Cabinet of Advisors. However, “*the rulers*” must be Gentiles in order to fulfill this “*prophecy*.”

All Nebuchadnezzar had to do is acknowledge that it

is The God Almighty who blesses him and his rule. When the king took credit for the success of God, his penalty was to become a wild maniac – a devouring lion in “*the wilderness*” – for seven years. Once he came to his senses and praised God for his accomplishments, God blessed him and restored his rule.

God never forsakes His “*people*” or the world because His goal is to make man in The Image of God.

NO IMAGE LIKE HIM

Why does God not want you to make “*any images*” of Him? You are not to make a representation of Him for a very important reason.

No one knows what God looks like, so any “*image*” would be false and, therefore, an “*idol*.” It is a sin according to The Commandments of God. Gentile Kings can rule over the world as long as they believe that God Almighty in heaven is always The One True Ruler.

All “*covenants*” with God must fulfill the intended purpose of God. All kings must know where their real *power* and rule come from. This must be the belief of every king or ruler in order for God to let them stay in power.

CHAPTER 6

WORLD RULE WITH NO GOD

From Nebuchadnezzar, King of Neo (new) Babylon, until The Renaissance, and The Age of Reason, God was always in the picture. From 1500 C.E. to this day, God is considered dead and not really needed.

It was like the days of “*the judges*” when each person did what was right in their own eyes. Even worse, there were no judges sent from God. God was completely out of the picture except for a remnant of true believers. The Renaissance was when humans wanted to rule without God.

Universities started to change from knowing that God created all things to accepting a “*new god*” called science. Science allows them to guess and, through mathematical probability, determine what is right and what is wrong.

Evolution was born, and now it is all “*accidental.*” Science did not need God and, thus, society was left with those who claimed to know what was best for everyone.

You are following “*the politically correct,*” who claim to know what is best for all others.

A WORLD IN CONFUSION

There has been “Revolution” after “revolution” for the last two thousand years and most forms of monarchies have been removed. The monarchies that have remained are far more democratic and have very little authority.

RULERS OF THE PEOPLE

Except for a remnant who are growing *faithful*, Christians are hard to find. As Christ asked, “*will there be any faith or love when He returns?*” It is a very good question.

Now you can begin to understand why God confused the languages and separated the nations in The Days of Peleg. God knew globalization would end in total confusion because the people had so many deposed kings or emperors. When people have so many opposing opinions, there can never be peace for very long.

As Genesis 11 warns, because of their heart’s desires they believe they have the truth and want to be led their way. The end will be a worldwide war, which will end in genocide. When you come to realize you need God, you can be weaned off of the disease of “Babylon.”

Eventually, when kings and monarchs were gone, a new breed of rulers replaced the old. Who were they? Human nature without God stepped in with all of its hypothetical guesses. As they used to say in The

Twenties – *anything goes!* Each human ruler, even in a democracy, was chosen by the people to save them.

POLITICALLY CORRECT

What is political correctness? Is it founded on fact and truth? Of course not, it is based on who sells the best. It is dominated by those who can convince others the most. Also, those who have enough money are able to get to most of the citizens. Human rulership, by the choice of people, is really bribery, based on who can provide the most.

The winner has the most money and is the best salesman or saleswoman. Rulers, today, buy their way in and claim they can give the most to their country. The people eventually become slaves to their leaders.

It sounds good, but there is a real flaw in it. Like they say, “there are no free lunches.” There is one exception – God blesses all those who have a humble heart and want to follow God.

VICTIMS AND THE OPPRESSED

Any act done out of “*love*” cannot have any victims or oppressed individuals. The one doing the giving must do so by their own willingness. Demanding someone else pay more than they have is ridiculous and foolish. The rich steal from the poor and the poor steal from the rich. The poor always lose.

God is the richest of all in every way. He is the only

One who always gives “*the most*” and “*loves the most,*” but it is only by His “*free choice.*” That is real love and it is not forced by anyone.

Without free choice, it would not be love or charity. “*Forced giving*” by *Law* from any government is simply thievery. Only those who have should be able to decide who receives their help. No government, non profit organization or tear jerking television advertisements should receive any help.

ELECTION IS A CONTRACT

When someone is elected to be the leader of a government, it is a binding legal contract no matter what form of government.

Those who make their choice through an election are doing so only if the person or politician elected does what the voters really want. Taking an “Oath of Office” is a legal binding contract.

For example, in The United States, The Constitution is the legal contract binding “the elected one” through their oath.

If the citizens elect a ruler, they are not bound by what the elected one thinks. The contract states how they believe is what the contract demands, legally, and what it means.

If a property owner hires someone to cut their lawn and they only cut part, it does not matter what the

grass cutter thought. What matters is what the owner requested since it is his property. Jesus, in the parable of the money paid to His workers, showed what is fair and how *contracts* should legally stand.

PARABLE OF THE PENNY

Christ's "*parable of the penny*" is about "*a master*" or property owner who hired workers by the hour.

He offered each of them work for the entire day. Some worked all day. But, because it seemed the work would not be completed by the end of the day, the employer offered a penny to others to work the rest of the day. So the first workers and the last workers received a penny for their work. The ones who worked all day claimed they should be paid more because they worked more hours. They thought it was not fair to them.

Christ reminded them of their agreement to work for the penny. Then, he said it was fair.

Should not the owner, who owns the property be able to decide how much he pays everyone for the work he wants done?

The workers thought they were victims and felt the owner was the one who was guilty. Not so, Jesus clearly said. It was his to give and it was just and fair. If they thought it was not fair, they should not have taken the job. It was their free choice. How clear. It does not matter if the workers saw the contract differ-

ently. What mattered was how the property owner interpreted the contract. (Read all of Matthew 20:1-16).

The property owners should determine what the agreement means and how they want the job done.

The Constitution must always mean what it says and not be subject to what human interpretations. Once interpretations are allowed, there is no valid Constitution. It is anyone's "guess." Any new point of view by a lawyer or politician negates "the simple truth" of The Constitution. Then you have no Constitution, only "interpretations" which are guesses at best.

It is the same with The Word of God. No man should interpret any part of *The Bible*. Every Word of God and what it says is The Way to The Truth. The Holy Spirit of God leads everyone. God Himself is the only One who can teach you His Word and what it means. God, alone, should be your King because of His great love for His creation.

Most humans know their desires and goals. However, some do not know their own heart. Christ and God know everyone's heart.

NO ONE KNOWS

In conclusion, no human knows what is good or evil. That is why the world is in such confusion today. God and Christ are The Only Ones who know good from evil. It is hard to find any two people in the world who really know what true goodness is.

Whether it is a king, a ruler or a government, there is no one who can rule the world “*correctly.*” Only God and His Son have the supreme intelligence. Whether you know it or not, mankind desperately needs God and Christ.

CHAPTER 7

GOD'S KINGDOM

Archeological history shows the ancients had kings and a full royal host of angels. They were even told that a future human, born of a woman, would become King of Kings. Each dynasty ruled over the world as their “*human*” savior.

HUMAN REASON

Human imagination ran amuck and empires world-wide, claimed their king was the prophesied one to bring a paradise on earth.

Alexander, The Great, from his birth, was taught by his mother that he was “*the chosen one.*” After conquering Egypt and being crowned Pharaoh, he pushed his conquests to India. He spread Greek “*culture*” everywhere he went, leaving generals to take charge and implement Greek-Macedonian, or the God-given prophecy, rule.

The Greeks became The Wise of The World and everyone without a Greek education were considered to be unlearned. In Roman days, they were called Pagans – uneducated country people. When Rome conquered the four ruling generals after Alexander’s death, they claimed the inheritance from The Greeks.

After Rome fell, “*the dark ages*” brought chaos and havoc to Europe, allowing The Muslims to take over the region from Turkey to Spain.

They were defeated, in time, by the crusades and, finally, new kingdoms from the north like Charlemagne and Napoleon became the new saviors to rule over the area.

The Renaissance was “*the age of reason*” with human intelligence and no man-made god, king and no ruler or God. The politically correct were the new priesthood and human science was its god.

SATAN’S RULE

Satan’s original goal was to be equal with God and The True Messiah (Isaiah 14 - Ezekiel 28). Satan was the real ruler of Babylon as The Prince of Tyre controlling all world commerce with The Silk Road running from China to Europe. That is worldwide rule from Asia to Europe. It is exactly what is happening today. However, today there is a route to The Americas.

These world rulers are not in charge, but Satan has completed his purpose by replacing God, “*And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it*” (Colossians 2:15). What “*principalities*” did Christ defeat? “*Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind*” (Colossians 2:18).

False “*prophets*” interpreted *The Bible* as if they knew everything about the heavenly host and the host of angels, yet they never had contact with any of them.

Christ knew His battle was with Satan and “*his fallen angels.*” He defeated Satan in “*the wilderness*” through His resurrection (Matthew 4). Christ only gloried those who, “*in vision,*” went to the third heaven and saw Paradise and heard unspeakable (hidden) words which are not lawful for a man to utter (II Corinthians 12:2-7).

Christ’s “*triumph*” was over Satan and his demons. It was not by human rulers or governments of any form. Listen to what Paul said, “*It is not expedient of me doubtless to glory. I will come to visions and revelations of the LORD*” (II Corinthians 12:1). How clear. The battle is not with human governments but with the fallen heavenly ones (Satan and his fallen angels.)

Paul describes his human adversaries, “*For if he that comes preaching another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if you receive another spirit, [Satan’s] which you have not received, or another gospel, which you have not accepted, you might well bear with him*” (II Corinthians 11:4). There was no doubt. Paul absolutely knew and warned that the real fight was not with human rulers, although subject to Satan, but with Satan himself and his followers.

THE DECEIVED WORLD

Whether it be kings or any type of human rule, it was

the same scenario Satan played out with Eve in The Garden.

Eve desired to rule herself by choosing to eat of The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which is human nature when one is left to themselves and decides everything according to their own desires.

Human “gods,” as “heroes” and “conquerors,” were accepted as their Messiah. None were aware that their battle was really with Satan and his angels. The end result is too clear.

When humanity idolizes their own “*human reasonings*,” they duplicate what happened in The Days of Noah. The world continued as always (or so they thought) but doom came upon them suddenly. When? When The Ark was completed, they all drowned. The End of Days, this time, is predicated upon when The Bride of Christ is worthy to be The Wife of Christ (Revelation 19).

One more prophecy that has to be fulfilled is the completion of the rule of The Gentiles. The Beast (wars) will turn upon the whore (Babylon) and all civil society will fall apart with “*the gathering*” at Armageddon to attack Jerusalem (Zechariah 14)!

In the not to distant future, God will have to intervene again. The world is drunk and drugged into confusion with everyone blaming the other. All are victims and do not know who the real culprit is. That is Satan and his demons.

PROPHECY FULFILLED

Daniel describes The End of Days of The Gentile “rule” without God, “You, O king, [Nebuchadnezzar] saw, and behold a great image [Babylon]. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before you; and the form thereof was terrible. This image’s head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron, [strong] and part of clay [weak]. You saw till a stone [cornerstone] was cut out without hands, [human] which smote the image upon his feet of iron [strong] and clay, [weak like dust] and broke them to pieces” (Daniel 2:31-34).

The united world will proclaim “peace on earth” until suddenly it falls apart into a world war with everyone blaming the other.

Asians, Muslims and the rest of the world will gather together for The Battle at Armageddon, and everyone will blame Jerusalem as the main cause of all the world’s trouble.

CHRIST’S VICTORY

Christ, the real Messiah, becomes a great Mountain. What is this Mountain? “And in the days of these kings [ten] shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to another people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all those kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever” (Daniel 2:35, 44).

You have had a lesson in world history from the beginning to the end. Prophetically you now understand why mankind began with kings/priests, and rulers to make human decisions. It was the best way to govern the world without God.

Satanic rule finally ends in utter failure and destroys itself by attempted genocide. Then, The Christ returns with His angels and defeats Satan and his followers (Revelation 29).

The True King defeats Babylon and brings a Millennium of Peace. The Way of God commences with The New Heavens and The New Earth and is followed by a Paradise *eternally*. Mankind must begin to realize that only God and Christ have a “*perfect plan*” and their “*blueprint*” is ready to be finalized. This could happen in your lifetime.